





# HISTORY'S NO. 1 FOUNDER

BOOK 08

*August Eagle*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# History's Number 1 Founder

(史上第一祖师爷)

by

**August Eagle**

(八月飞鹰)

# Synopsis

---

He time-traveled and got a system but Ling Feng's pressure is as big as a mountain.

System main quest: Ling Feng creates a school, establishing history's number 1 sect, Ling Feng himself becoming the number 1 founder.

And so to become history's number 1 founder Ling Feng started to work hard.

“Your name is Shi Tianhao? Natural born supreme king but it was stolen by your cousin.

Now being raised in a little village your father placed you in? Come come come, come with master, we'll let those people know that justice that is owed must be returned!”

“Your name is Xiao Yan? A genius in the past, now a loser. Your fiance even came over and humiliated you by breaking off the engagement? Come come come, come with master, we'll let that brat know the meaning of don't bully a youngster because he's poor!”

“Your name is Zhu Yi? The bastard son of a marquis, suppressed by your father. Your mother was the previous saint but she was killed? Come come come, come with master, we'll let your dad know the meaning of the world is big, fists are... no, reason is the biggest!”

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Sylver135, JUSTATRANSLATOR @ [Sylver Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 701: Fireproof! Theft-proof! Lolicon-proof!

---

While he felt that something was amiss, Lin Feng nonetheless accepted the Spiritual Feather Vine.

A general can fight off incoming soldiers just as how enough earth can stop a flood. However, the condition to all these was that one's own strength must increase consistently. Only then can one be in charge of one's destiny.

"In this case, I just need two more ingredients before I can cultivate the Trāyastriṃśa Elixir of Creation. One of them, the Starry Purplish Grass Pill, is still easy to obtain. The other one, the Curled Condensed Crystal, appears only in legends. There doesn't seem to any hint of it in the Grand Celestial World."

Lin Feng thought about it again, "The only record of the Curled Condensed Crystal mentions that it could be found in Penglai, one of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea."

The edges of his mouth curled upwards as he looked at the Grand Advisor of the Great Zhou Empire, the Marquis of Xuanji Zhu Hongwu. Then, he thought, "I must go to the Ying Sea. I just hope that the Curled Condensed Crystal can really be found in Penglai. If not, I would have wasted a trip."

Zhu Hongwu was perplexed by Lin Feng's stare. He furrowed his eyebrows and then, he relaxed and calmed himself.

Yue Hongyan turned her head to look at Yang Qing and said with a smile, "Fifth Junior, I remember you telling Zhou Yuncong that he can only use the Yang-Incinerating Vital Spirit. However, you didn't say that he can use the Nine Complete Yang Destructive Spell, right?"

Yang Qing shook his head and sighed, "Using that move now is too early."

Luo Qingwu laughed softly and said, "It appears that he was too triggered by Chen Xingyu's Yin-Terminating aura."

Li Yuanfang said seriously, "He has much to learn in terms of self-control."

Yue Hongyan shook her head and said, "Yuncong's will and self-control had always been exceptional. However, as his form is too unique, pushing his mana to its extreme would affect his own self-control. Had it been someone with a weaker sense of self-control, they may already have lost it."

She looked at Chen Xingyu, who was walking out of the arena along with Zhou Yuncong, and said, "This person is a Yin-Terminating entity. Cultivating a spell such as the Yin-Terminating Hell will affect his mental state too. This may make him colder and crueller."

"Fortunately, his mental state is still rather good. Coupled with the teaching of the Great Void Sect, he was able to stay normal."

Yang Qing smiled bitterly and said, "Regardless, I will continue to train Yuncong after the spiritual conference."

While the few of them were criticizing Zhou Yuncong, they were all rather relaxed. Zhou Yuncong's ability to defeat Chen Xingyu, and his subsequent final match with Dao Yuting, meant that the top two positions would be swept by the Celestial Sect of Wonders. Regardless who emerged as the winner, the champion would be from the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

Ever since Dao Yuting joined the Celestial Sect of Wonders, she had been training intensely. She merged the teachings of the Heaven Lake Sect together with the teachings of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, bringing both to the next level of mastery.

However, the final result was that Zhou Yuncong managed to get the upper hand. His Yang-Incinerating aura was able to check her River Styx Primordial Water and his Yang-Incinerating Vital Spirit

was able to suppress Dao Yuting's Burning Ice Technique.

Dao Yuting's trump card was her Extreme Ice Spring, which was able to freeze Zhou Yuncong's Everlasting Heavenly Yang Explosion. However, Zhou Yuncong's Nine Complete Yang Destructive Spell appeared once again and Dao Yuting decided that if she continued to use her Extreme Ice Spring as a counter, it would be unsuccessful. While she was not afraid of his Yang-Incinerating Vital Spirit, she was unable to defeat the explosive powers of the Nine Complete Yang Destructive Spell.

Finally, in the ultimate battle between the second-generation disciples of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, Zhou Yuncong emerged victorious.

While Dao Yuting's mastery was reduced to the Advanced Foundation Establishment stage, she was much stronger than her Advanced Foundation Establishment stage self many years ago.

Dao Yuting's defeat meant that Yang Qing's disciple, Zhou Yuncong, became the most powerful second-generation Celestial Sect of Wonders disciple.

While the overall best second-generation disciple must be evaluated based on many factors, Zhou Yuncong was the strongest based on his battling abilities.

This result shocked many people present. Before the spiritual conference, no one predicted this result.

Many disciples of the Celestial Sect of Wonders were shocked too.

The Marquis of Jingheng folded his fan and tapped his palm with it. He shook his head while laughing, "What an interesting fellow."

He turned his head to look at Wang Le and Xiang Heng and said, "The master is right. Now I know what he is planning."

In the luxurious lounge of the Great Qin Empire, Shi Xingyun smiled and said, "It appears that while Yang Qing's own cultivation had been slow, it is because he devoted much of his effort to raising



his disciple. His ability to raise such a disciple is a great contribution to the Celestial Sect of Wonders."

In the luxurious lounge of the Sword of Radiance Sect, the Purple Cloud Grandmaster had a complex expression on his face as he sighed and said, "The Celestial Sect of Wonders does indeed have many talented disciples to carry on its legacy."

Regardless whether it's Xu Yunsheng, Ying Luozha, Liu Xiafeng, Li Xingfei, Zhuge Wanqiu or anyone else, they were genius-level personalities. Their existence guaranteed the growth of the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

Dao Yuting's performance was indeed eye-catching. This created a lot of pressure for other Aurous Core stage disciples. Even Nascent Soul stage grandmasters could feel the pressure. The more junior disciples could only look on in awe.

However, Zhou Yuncong's performance based solely on his Advanced Foundation Establishment stage mastery too shocked many Immortal Soul stage elders.

An exceptionally talented youth with such a gift could dazzle an entire generation as long as he did not die prematurely.

Zhou Yuncong's performance was reflective of his masters' and fellow disciples' exceptional talents and bright futures.

Lin Feng could feel the mood in the Dharma Hall changing and he chuckled in his heart, "This is natural. This is an exceptional combatant I had chosen from my second-generation disciples. If he had not performed up to par, Yang Qing will have hell to pay."

He remembered the day when Zhu Yi and Yang Qing brought Zhou Yuncong back to see him. Upon meeting Zhou Yuncong, Lin Feng's mouth twitched as he thought, "One has a Fortune Value of 10 and the other has a Fortune Value of 7. Together, they can really find some good stuff!"

"Innate Ability—>9;Intelligence—>9;Determination—>7; Fortune

—>7."

"In conclusion, the target is extremely talented and it is highly recommended that you take him as a disciple. Careful teaching and training would guarantee that he can become an important member of the sect."

Zhu Yi and Yang Qing were able to bring back a prodigy with a total value of 32, making Lin Feng speechless.

After careful deliberation, Lin Feng did not personally train Zhou Yuncong. However, his mind was gradually changing now. This was not because he sought to take all talented individuals as his disciple. However, the Celestial Sect of Wonders guaranteed that whoever joined it shall not have their talents wasted.

For one's sect to have continuity as well as growth, other than outwards expansion one must ensure that there was a clear line of succession too.

The right way to do so was to ensure that there were talented individuals in every generation.

Hence, Lin Feng did not take him in as a disciple. Instead, he made him undergo the same test as every other disciple.

Finally, Zhou Yuncong joined Yang Qing's Nirvana World, becoming Yang Qing's only successive disciple.

Lin Feng chuckled and he cast his gaze towards the Dharma Hall. In the two different luxurious lounges, the many disciples discussed earnestly, including Shi Tianhao's Huang Zhenting and Zhu Yi's Yang Tie.

Looking at the two of them, Lin Feng smiled contentedly.

In comparison to Zhou Yuncong, the two of them still needed more training. Hence, they were unable to perform well during this spiritual conference. However, they too would reveal their talents one day.

Huang Zhenting and Yang Tie were both deliberately placed by Lin Feng in the second-generation of disciples. The total value of their four traits was more than 30.

However, as there were many problems that were not yet resolved, such as Huang Zhenting's childishness. Compared to his master, who appeared young and cute but was actually extremely cunning, Huang Zhenting's mental age may actually be lower than his biological age

Hence, Huang Zhenting's potential could not be fully realized yet. Yang Tie joined the sect too late and he had just entered the Foundation Establishment stage when the spiritual conference commenced. In the first round, he met with Huang Zhenting, who was no less talented than he was and who possessed a much higher mastery. As he did not want to encircle and attack Huang Zhenting with the Nieyang Beast, he naturally lost.

Many reasons caused them to appear less impressive than they actually were.

"However, that's alright. A good dish does not fear being served late. If other sects choose to underestimate you, they can't fault my sect for hiding our true potential," laughed Lin Feng. His gaze once again pierced through the space and landed in the Central Great Pavilion. " However, the two of you better be careful. Don't let others overtake you. My third sect-opening ceremony attracted many talented individuals."

Till now, the victor of the spiritual conference had been decided. However, it was not yet over. The group of cultivators watching the battle were extremely excited as soon, they would get to watch the first-generation disciples of the Celestial Sect of Wonders take on challengers from those who had been forfeited.

Amongst them, Xu Yunsheng and Lin Tong were both members of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. This could be seen as a battle where the earlier generation instructed the later generation.

Lin Feng's gaze turned as he looked at his few immediate disciples. Xiao Yan and the rest looked at each other with smiles on their faces. Many of them turned to look at Luo Qingwu and Li Yuanfang. After all, their mastery was the lowest amongst them.

If anyone wished to create a name for himself, they were the easiest target.

Xiao Yan smiled and used his mana to project his voice to Lin Feng and asked, "Master, looking at the way you are staring at us, I bet you have a plan already?"

Lin Feng smiled and replied, "Lin Tong will surely challenge you, Yunsheng will surely Zhu Yi. These two are for sure."

"Lei Jie of the Lei Family would forfeit his chance. As for Chu Yang of the Ethereal Mountain Sect...", Lin Feng laughed silently, "He will surely challenge Luo Qingwu."

Luo Qingwu was slightly perplexed as she asked, "Lei Jie had been famous for a long while and it is apparent that he is proud. However, for some unknown reason, he chose to throw in the towel in his match against Chen Xingyu and admitted defeat. Thinking about it, it appears that he wishes to put himself on an equal level as us, instead of taking part in such a battle where it appears that we are tutoring him."

"However, why will Chu Yang battle me instead of one of my seniors?"

Lin Feng smiled and said, "Let's see if I'm right, shall we?"

Reality proved him right. Lin Tong chose to battle against her 'father' while Xu Yunsheng chose to battle Zhu Yi. However, it was more of a symbolic gesture than anything else.

Lei Jie did forgo his right to a battle.

Chu Yang, as predicted, chose to battle Luo Qingwu!

The battle between Lin Tong and Xiao Yan, Xu Yunsheng and

Zhu Yi ended rather quickly. After these battles ended, Luo Qingwu stood up, with her pretty little brows all bunched up as she thought, "He really did pick me, how did master see this coming?"

# Chapter 702: Young Man, Your Script Was Wrong Since The Very Start

---

Luo Qingwu looked at Lin Feng curiously. She was puzzled as to how her master would know that Chu Yang would choose her as his target.

However, all he saw was a half-smile on Lin Feng's face. Lin Feng then telepathically communicated to her, "Qingwu, do you remember what I told you to be careful of in these few years?"

Luo Qingwu's heart beat quickly as Lin Feng's warning surfaced in her mind.

"In this world, some grown men like very young girls like yourself. Hence, they will come up with you ways to trick and hurt you. When you meet these people, remember to stay away from them."

"If he still continues to pester you, you must be fierce with him. If that doesn't work, you can find me and your fellow disciples. All of them will help you."

Luo Qingwu swallowed and looked at Chu Yang in the light projection. Then, she looked at Lin Feng and asked, "Master, could this person be..."

Lin Feng smiled slightly and said, "Today, you are much older. It's time for you to know that this b\*stard has been eyeing you since you were ten."

Lin Feng paused for a while and then said with certainty, "It's not the typical love an adult has for a child, but rather a romantic kind of love."

Luo Qingwu coughed, "But I don't know him."

"Thus, this kind of person is the most despicable," Lin Feng sighed softly. Luo Qingwu asked carefully, "Now...now that I'm

older, I don't match his taste anymore, right?"

Lin Feng smiled and said, "He chose to battle you, what do you think?"

Luo Qingwu's face turned sullen and Xiao Yan, by her side, laughed coldly, "Junior Luo, what's the matter? Beat him good and all will be resolved."

"I believe everything that master said," Luo Qingwu said. "However, if he does not do anything overtly evil, wouldn't it be wrong for me to be harsh on him? Doing so in front of so many people may create misunderstandings."

"The Ethereal Mountain Sect is close to our sect. If we don't show them any face, then that wouldn't be good, would it?"

Xiao Yan smiled and said, "Silly girl, that would have been the case if Chen Xingyu had not appeared. However, now that Chen Xingyu revealed himself to be a Yin-Terminating Entity, others would think that we are doing so in a response to the Great Void Sect."

"The Ethereal Mountain Sect can only feel unlucky that they have been embroiled in a fight between the Great Void Sect and us."

Yue Hongyan smiled coldly and said, "For people who love underage girls, they deserve a good lesson. With the protection of the Dharma Hall, he will not die. Junior Luo, he may not even be injured if you settle him quickly."

Lin Feng listened and laughed loudly in his heart, "Heehee, am I too evil here? Nah... I'm just regular evil."

As he said that, an image appeared in his mind.

With Luo Qingwu as their leader, his disciples appeared to be playing a game of Whack-A-Mole. Every single mole that appeared had Chu Yang's face...

That image is too beautiful! Lin Feng couldn't bear to continue thinking of it.

Lin Feng shook his head and laughed. Everything that he said there was ultimately a joke and could not be taken seriously. Everyone had their own fortunes in love and life. If he really was a lolicon, Lin Feng may not actually interfere. Everything was up to Luo Qingwu to decide.

If Lin Feng really wished to interfere, the two of them would not even have the chance to meet. If the two of them had never seen each other before, let alone talk, how could a relationship form?

"Man, look at you thick eyebrows and big eyes. You don't look bad and you even possess the charisma of a hero. That's not all you got, is it?" Lin Feng looked at Chu Yang in the light projection and smiled in his heart. "Now, let me see if you have only a few sword talisman or did you manage to learn the Heaven's Gate Sword Manual?"

Chu Yang of the Ethereal Mountain Sect walked out from the luxurious lounge. Those who did not know much did not care much about his fight with Luo Qingwu.

As a first-generation, immediate disciple of Lin Feng, Luo Qingwu, together with Li Yuanfang, possessed the lowest mastery as they joined the sect the latest. In the eyes of bystanders, it was normal for Chu Yang to challenge Luo Qingwu.

Many people wished to thank Chu Yang too. While Luo Qingwu and Li Yuanfang ventured out before after joining the sect, they did not take part in any fights so far. Hence, few people knew of the extent of their powers and many were curious.

"Calm, calm..." Chu Yang inhaled non-stop as he redid his mental calculations once again.

He could not possibly say, at the first instance, that she was his destined wife and that he was hell-bent on marrying her. Saying



that would be insane.

"Take it slow, take it slow, leave a good impression..." The normally cool Chu Yang could feel his heart rate increasing and his thoughts becoming scattered. "A good start is the key to success. You must seize the chance!"

As he thought about it, he felt a chill up his spine. He turned his head and noticed Shi Tianhao beaming at him.

"As both of you are sword cultivators, you can use your weapons here," said Shi Tianhao with a smile.

Chu Yang nodded, "I understand." He then looked at Shi Tianhao curiously. He could not help but feel that something was off. The strange sense of terror was now gone, it was as if he had been in an illusion. Shi Tianhao then continued, "As the challenger, you can pick the battleground."

Without any hesitation, Chu Yang picked a blazing hot battleground that was disadvantageous to Luo Qingwu, as she would be unable to optimize her pure Yin powers.

He did so out of his respect for Luo Qingwu.

If he picked a neutral battleground or one suited for Luo Qingwu, then who was the challenger here?

For such a challenge, it was meant a more senior cultivator to instruct a more junior cultivator and hence, it was inherently unfair. That was why Lei Jie chose to forgo it.

Chu Yang chose to take it slow and hence, he must leave a good impression on the Celestial Sect of Wonders and Luo Qingwu. Humbling himself was the right thing to do. Furthermore, he was a disciple of the Ethereal Mountain Sect, a sect dependent on the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

Of course, it had to be like his battle against Dao Yuting. If he were to lose, he must lose with style, regardless whether it's a narrow loss or an abject defeat he must show off his style and leave

a good impression on his opponent.

He was fearful that he would be like a simple passer-by , easily forgettable. If that was the case, then all of his efforts would have been for nothing.

As Chu Yang pondered, a purple-robed young girl appeared before him. This jolted him slightly.

Her facial features did not appear to have changed. It was the person from his memory. However, she changed her red robes for the purple robes of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. The sabre she usually carried with her turned into a black, ice sword brimming with an icy aura.

Looking at the ice sword, Chu Yang appeared triggered. He regained his composure and as a sword cultivator, he could feel the dangers of this black, icy sword.

It was三尺长 and it appeared to have been forged from pure black ice. It was without any impurity and its blade was completely black, without any gleam.

The black sword not only did not reflect light, but it was as dark as a cave. It swallowed every light that touched it and even its tip resembled a cosmic black hole.

It brimmed with endless amount of Yin energy. It was a truly heart-stopping sword.

Chu Yang was extremely apt at controlling his emotions. If not for the fact that Luo Qingwu had already been warned and that she was paying special attention to his actions, she really would not have noticed anything that was amiss.

"Lucky master warned me beforehand..." The young girl mumbled to herself. Her face betrayed nothing as she gripped the ice sword in her right hand. Coldly, she smiled and said, "Daoist Chu, please."

Chu Yang nodded his head and he unsheathed his sword. The

sword spun in mid-air and one could see traces of the Heaven's Gate Great Nine Heavens Holy Sword Technique's Southwest You Heaven Sword along with the Ethereal Mountain Sect's own teachings.

However, when the Immortal Soul stage elders saw this, all of them shook their heads and said, "This was what he managed to understand after studying those sword talisman and not the actual Southwest You Heaven Sword."

"Daoist Luo... please teach me," said Chu Yang. With that, he flew straight at Luo Qingwu.

He had already planned out what he was going to do next. Suddenly, the hairs on his back stood up and a chill ran over his heart.

He looked over and realized that an icy-blue sword aura was bursting forth from Luo Qingwu's body. It brimmed with an extreme freeze, as if it was about to destroy the Heavens and Earth and Yin and Yang.

Luo Qingwu performed a sword gesture with her left hand and together with the Xuanche Sword in her right hand. A pale white appeared to swirl in her icy-blue sword aura, which then turned into a cold sword aura. It passed through space and appeared right before Chu Yang.

Chu Yang's sword aura froze into ice before disintegrating upon coming in contact with this cold sword aura.

In the Grand Heavens Pavilion, Lin Daohan's eyebrows furrowed tightly. Yan Mingyue too looked surprised as she asked, "Yin-Terminating power?"

The Great Void Sect cultivators in the luxurious lounge, such as Fan Xuefeng and company, too looked on dumbfounded. They turned their heads in Chen Xingyu's direction.

The normally calm and collected Chen Xingyu too looked

shocked as he said, "This is really the Yin-Terminating power, she actually..."

Everyone in the Dharma Hall and the Grand Heavens Pavilion were all shocked by Luo Qingwu's sword technique.

After studying the Great Celestial Way of the Eight Trigrams, Luo Qingwu came up with her own sword techniques.

The Fifth Sword of the Heaven-Given Six Unity Sword Mantra, the Ten Terrestrial Yin-Terminating Sword!

Using her own Pure Yin power, she was able to condense her Yin energy to its maximum and then it to an unparalleled destructive power in the form of an Yin-Terminating sword!

She was able to emulate the destructive Yin-Terminating powers through her own efforts. Compared to Chen Xingyu, it was inferior in no way and in some aspects, it even surpassed his powers. Together with her own swordplay techniques, it became one of the most powerful and destructive moves that did not claim descent from the Mount Shu, turning eyeballs everywhere!

Faced with this powerful sword, Chu Yang was at a loss as to what to do. He did not expect Luo Qingwu to be so fierce as to start her first move with such a powerful attack. This was completely different from his memory of Luo Qingwu.

This was supposed to be a normal spar, but Luo Qingwu was evidently trying to snatch victory at the soonest possible instance in one single move.

This was completely different from what he had expected!

In the Grand Heavens Pavilion, Lin Feng smiled in his heart as he thought, "Young man, your script was wrong since the very start."

# Chapter 703: Tearful Chu Yang

---

Faced with the extremely powerful Ten Terrestrial Yin-Terminating Sword, Chu Yang's sword radiance was destroyed at the first instance.

The sword shadow in his soul shook from Luo Qingwu's attack. Faced with her relentless attack, the sword shadow strained and tried to retaliate.

"Stabilize!" Chu Yang forced the sword shadow in his soul to quiet. Under everyone's gaze, it was not about whether he could resist her moves. If he were to reveal his actual skills, he would not be able to hide from Lin Feng and the rest.

In the time it took for him to do that, Chu Yang himself stood at this original position, unmoving. He did not even try to dodge but instead, remained grounded to where he was like a mud doll. He was like a dummy for Luo Qingwu as he bore the full brunt of this attack.

The protective enchantments of the Dharma Hall kicked in and saved Chu Yang.

He did not try to parry it nor avoid it. Luo Qingwu's move was hence, lethal to him. However, he did not feel any pain but instead, he was sent out of the arena.

Chu Yang was dazed for a while. Then, he regained his composure. He realized he had lost.

The purple-robed girl in the battleground retracted her sword radiance, inverted her Xuanche Sword and bowed to Chu Yang, saying, "Daoist Chu, thank you." With that, she disappeared. A purple light flashed in the void. She had already been sent back to the Grand Heavens Pavilion.

The black-robed young man awkwardly turned his neck and looked at his surroundings. Then, he looked at his palms.

Immediately, he had a strong desire to look tearfully into the sky.

He was defeated by Luo Qingwu in a single second!

"This was not how it should have played out..." Chu Yang did not know whether he should cry or laugh. If he tried with all his powers, the results may not be like this. While he could not use his true powers, the results should not have been so awkward.

Earlier on, in his battle with Dao Yuting, while he lost it was nowhere as pathetic as his defeat right now.

It was a pity that he had tried to calculate every possible outcome earlier. He went through every possible result in his mind many times and he deliberate every single step. He went through every single detail of his plan, which to him seemed foolproof.

The only thing he did not consider was how strong Luo Qingwu was and that she would use her most powerful move first. It was as if she was fighting against someone she had to kill immediately and could only kill with all her strength.

Chu Yang vowed that the move Luo Qingwu used just now would have been as dangerous to Nascent Soul stage cultivators as it was to Aurous Core stage cultivators.

"Regardless whether it's my performance or your impression of me, I know that I, as a disciple of the Ethereal Mountain Sect, is not match for an immediate disciple of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. However, must you really treat me as such?" Chu Yang's tears flowed freely in the wind as he felt a deep pain in his heart.

Earlier on, he did not fear losing. Instead, he feared losing too plainly and without being able to demonstrate his skills. He feared being forgettable.

Looking at it now, was there a more embarrassing way to lose than losing to one's opponent in a single move?

Showing off his own skills? He did not even have a chance to act before he was beaten unceremoniously. How could he still talk

about showing off his skills and leaving an impression?

Perhaps his opponent would even be puzzled as to why was he so weak.

As he had to control the sword shadow in his soul, when Luo Qingwu displayed her skills, Chu Yang was immobile. Hence, it appeared to others that he was paralyzed by fears by Luo Qingwu's attack.

"This impression is no good," Chu Yang chuckled bitterly to himself. "It's fine, it's fine. Doing so, Luo Qingwu's performance appeared extremely outstanding. It's still worth it."

Just as Chu Yang had thought, his defeat was too abject. It was the typical, humiliating kind of defeat and was a stain on his previous performance.

Cultivators in the Dharma Hall discussed intently and many of them were changing their opinions of him. Many of them began to suspect that Chu Yang's ability to progress so fast was because of luck.

The cultivators of the Ethereal Mountain Sect had their heads lowered and all of them were sighing. While they were in their own luxurious lounge, they could feel themselves getting mocked by the others.

The Scarlet Cloud Sect was extremely gleeful. The group of young cultivators from the Scarlet Cloud Sect were almost delirious with joy. The sadness they exhibited earlier when Chu Yang entered the third round was almost completely gone.

Some of them looked at Chu Yang and thought, "Could this guy have fallen in love with the disciple of the Celestial Sect of Wonders? That was why he could not react and instead, could only stand there dumfounded like a puppet, causing him to be struck by the sword radiance so quickly."

"Who knows? He doesn't appear too dumb though. Furthermore,

if he marries the disciple of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, then he would have truly won."

"He is not the only smart one. How many people do you think have the same plan as him? Many of them probably gave more serious thoughts to this plan and realized that it isn't feasible, unlike him, who dumbly chose to go ahead with it."

"You are right, the idea is good but he lacks the ability to execute it. Hence, it can only be a fantasy."

"Speaking about it, the immediate disciples of the Master of the Celestial Sect are truly exceptional, including Luo Qingwu. The move she just used would have struck terror into the hearts of Nascent Soul stage cultivators too. You can't really blame Chu Yang for failing."

"That's right."

Due to his performance just now, Chu Yang had an idea on how others would critique him. He did not care what others think, but he just extremely unsatisfied with his performance against Luo Qingwu just now. This would probably leave a bad impression on her and hence, all Chu Yang could do was to shake his head in regret.

"Sigh, all I can do is to wait for another chance. However, Qingwu more than adequately showed off her abilities. That is worth celebrating."

As Chu Yang walked away at his own pace, he sighed silently to himself, "Now, I have to think of a way to appease First Disciple and Master. I disappointed them this time. However, with my earlier performance, I believe I managed to help the Ethereal Mountain Sect."

"Qingwu, Qingwu... she should be back in the Grand Heavens Pavilion now, right?"

After she finished her spar with Chu Yang, Luo Qingwu was sent



back to the Grand Heavens Pavilion. Her jet-black Xuanche Sword had disappeared and Luo Qingwu bowed to the many elders in the pavilion. "Greetings everyone, I hope my performance did not disappoint."

With that, she returned to her seat.

Yan Mingyue smiled and said, "Using your Pure Yin powers to form Yin-Terminating powers, you are truly astounding."

There had been pure Yin disciples in the Great Void Sect. While they managed to cultivate their Pure Yin powers to its maximum, they were unable to use it to form Yin-Terminating powers.

Luo Qingwu smiled and replied, "You are too kind, Senior Yan. I was only able to do so under my master's guidance."

Lin Feng, who was on the master's seat, smiled and said, "My disciple just started learning the way of the sword. I hope her performance had been satisfactory."

The Heavenly Master Swordmaster looked at Luo Qingwu for a long while. Then he shook his head and said, "It has been more than satisfactory. The Master of the Celestial Sect of Wonders is too humble. You are truly an expert swordsman too. While your disciple's technique is different from your Heaven-Destroying Sword Qi, it has its own strong points and unique aspects. While it may appear slightly clumsy right now, I can see a bright future ahead for her."

The many Immortal Soul stage elders all stared at Luo Qingwu. In their hearts, they agreed.

While Chu Yang did lose very clumsily, everyone on-scene was more than able to recognize that Luo Qingwu's Ten Terrestrial Yin-Terminating Sword was superior to many of the later-generation cultivators of this spiritual conference.

Fewer than ten of them would be able to parry her move, let alone defeat her in a fight. Furthermore, many of those who could

do so hailed from her own Celestial Sect of Wonders.

"Earlier on, we all thought that the Yin-Terminating Entity from the Great Void Sect, Chen Xingyu, may be able to defeat Luo Qingwu. Looking at it now, it does not appear to be the case." Many people on scene sighed. "This is the power of an immediate disciple of the Celestial Sect of Wonders."

"While the Celestial Sect of Wonders does not claim to be sword sect, the Master of the Celestial Sect, along with his disciples, are all well-versed in the way of the sword."

The disciples of the Heavenly Master Sword Sect, the Sun Moon Sword Sect, the Vast Sea Sword Sect and the Sword of Radiance Sect all bore painful expressions on their faces. "Let's not talk about the Mount Shu Sword Sect, even the sword cultivators of the Celestial Sect of Wonders are so strong."

In the luxurious lounge of the Great Void Sect, Chen Xingyu's expression had returned to normal. He stared blankly into space and the other disciples of the Great Void Sect around him said nothing. After a long while, Fan Xuefeng asked, "Junior Chen, if it were you..."

Chen Xingyu smiled warmly and said honestly, "If it's only one move, then it's fine."

Fan Xuefeng and the rest opened their mouths, then they decided to say nothing

After a long while, Fan Xuefeng asked suddenly, "In our Great Void Sect, we have pure Yang entities too. Would they be able to derive Yang-Incinerating powers like Zhou Yuncong?"

Chen Xingyu thought for a while. He did not give an immediate response. Then, Lin Daohan's voice rang in the luxurious lounge, "It's possible, but extremely difficult."

After saying that, Lin Daohan's voice rang no more.

In the Grand Heavens Pavilion, Yan Mingyue turned her head to

look at him. Telepathically, she asked, "Luo Qingwu was able to use her Pure Yin powers and turn them into supremely-powerful Yin-Terminating powers. While it can be attributed to her innate ability as a Pure Yin entity, we cannot neglect the efforts put in by her sect and master too."

Lin Daohan nodded his head and then shook it, sighing, "Other than that, there are other reasons too. Based on preliminary speculations, I believe that she required a place that's extremely cold and brimming with Yin energy to train it along with a special object."

Yan Mingyue's gaze flashed and she said, "Underneath Mount Yujing, there's a black sea. Perhaps that's the place you are talking about. What about the special object?"

Lin Daohan shook his head slowly, "I can't be certain."

Lin Daohan thought for a while and then shook his head again. "Nope, that can't be it."

Yan Mingyue asked, "Big Senior, when the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea appear, would our sect intervene?"

Lin Daohan replied, "Strange things are happening in the Barren Expanses and our masters are observing it very carefully. I need to be careful about the Samsara Sect's actions too. Hence, we won't intervene with the appearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea this time. All we will do is to sit tight and observe."

"While the Great Zhou Empire has geographical and first-mover advantage, too many factors would affect the events of the Ying Sea now. Hence, no one can predict what will happen."

Lin Daohan paused for a while and then said quietly, "In comparison to the Ying Sea, the sect and I are more concerned with Lin Feng's Stone Flute and Stone Steps."

Yan Mingyue fell silent for a while and then asked, "I understand. The Stone Steps is linked to the Stone Flute that had gone missing

earlier. Big Senior, what are the uses of these treasures?"

# Chapter 704: A Successful Conclusion to the Spiritual Conference

---

After Lin Daohan heard Yan Mingyue ask about the Stone Flute and the Stone Steps, he did not try to conceal anything from her despite their divergent views and paths. He said quietly, "The Stone Flute and the Stone Steps are linked to the Realm beyond the Heavens."

"The Realm beyond the Heavens?!" Yan Mingyue's normally calm face betrayed an expression of shock. "Legend has this is the realm above the Great Void Sect's Nine Heavenly Palaces. However, wasn't it sealed off since 10 000 years ago?"

Lin Daohan said calmly, "Correct, 10 000 years ago, thanks to one of our Great Void Sect predecessors, no one can ascend into the Realm beyond the Heavens anymore. However, our seniors and masters have been trying to re-open the path into the Realm beyond the Heavens. They made much progress."

"The Stone Flute and the Stone Steps are the results of their hard work."

Yan Mingyue arched her eyebrows and asked, "However, these items are currently in Lin Feng's possession..."

"It's alright," said Lin Daohan quietly. "Our masters and Kuang Heng once suspected that Lin Feng is related to the Realm beyond the Heavens. After a while, however, they concluded that the time is not yet ripe. Even if the items are in his possession, he cannot do much with them."

Yan Mingyue's gaze swept over Shen Qifeng, the Heavenly Cloud Holy Man, of the Path of the Heaven-Born of the Samsara Sect and asked quietly, "What exactly is Shen Qifeng thinking? What is the Samsara Sect thinking?"

Lin Daohan shook his head slightly and said, "Sit tight and

observe."

Up till this point, the spiritual conference had finally ended.

Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi, and the rest who were in charge of welcoming guests during the start of the conference were now in charge of sending their guests off.

Xu Yunsheng, Li Xingfei, Liu Xiafeng and the many other disciples under them busied themselves with their respective tasks.

As the other cultivators looked at Zhou Yuncong, Dao Yuting, Lin Tong, Huang Zhenting, Xu Yunsheng and company, many emotions surfaced in their hearts.

The Celestial Sect of Wonders of today was no longer the new sect that the Lin Feng and his few disciples started off with.

The new generation of disciples were beginning to show their skills. The Celestial Sect of Wonders was full of talented individuals, earning the admiration of many.

Currently, while their mastery was still low, they had already demonstrated astounding level of potential. Under the Celestial Sect of Wonders, they had bright futures ahead of them.

Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and the other immediate disciples of Lin Feng grew stronger and stronger with each day. A new super-sect and a potential Holy Ground was in the making.

Many leaders of the other sects thought that Lin Feng would take advantage of this conference to arrogantly show off the powers of his many disciples and help them build a name for themselves.

However, he did not do so. Shi Yu and the other elders thought and came to the same conclusion. "The Master of the Celestial Sect is truly far-sighted."

Lin Feng's thinking was simple. To him, the Nascent Soul stage and the Aurous Core stage meant nothing. He wanted to wait for his disciples to enter the Immortal Soul stage. Only then would he

shake the world.

"The Master of the Celestial Sect is really confident. He believes that his disciples are all Immortal Soul stage calibre? The Immortal Soul stage is completely different from all the stages below it in terms of difficulty. Ascending into the Immortal Soul stage is infinitely more difficult than progression in all the other stages combined! How many talented individuals in history failed to make it?"

Some of them had doubts, but once they thought of the potential that Xiao Yan, Shi Tianhao, and the rest had exhibited, they realized suddenly that it was not... as far-fetched as it seemed.

However, thinking about it, the disciples of the other sects could only feel a huge pressure, as large as a mountain, upon them.

The Celestial Sect of Wonders at this point in time had already transformed into a large, unmoving animal.

To the Celestial Sect of Wonders, this spiritual conference ended on a good note. It could called a peaceful, successful spiritual conference that went smoothly.

Shen Qifeng brought the Path of the Heaven-Born of the Samsara Sect off Mount Yujing and left the Kunlun Mountains. They headed home.

On the way back, the entire group was quiet. After all, their visit to the Kunlun Mountains this time could not be seen as some glorious affair.

Before they even reached the place, their disciples scuffled with the disciples of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. Even their own Nascent Soul stage cultivator had his magic item confiscated by Zhu Yi. They lost a great amount of face even before the conference.

During the conference, one of the main disciples of their sect, Yang Likun, was crippled with Zhou Yuncong.

Shen Qifeng too lost in his bet against Lin Feng. He did not even get a chance to save his face and he lost a Spiritual Feather Vine in the process.

The Samsara Sect may not know about the significance of the Spiritual Feather Vine to Lin Feng, and they surely knew nothing about the Trāyastriṃśa Elixir of Creation. However, the Spiritual Feather Vine was still an extremely valuable herb that was extremely difficult to grow and extremely rare. It was extremely potent too and hence, it was used in the cultivation of many pills and medicines.

The entire Path of the Heaven-Born of the Samsara Sect was filled with anger. They believed that Shen Qifeng behaved too weakly in front of Lin Feng. However, not only was Shen Qifeng the leader of the delegation, he was an Immortal Soul stage cultivator too. Hence, there was nothing much they could do.

The Samsara Sect was plagued with internal strife. However, it was still one of the few, large entities in the Divine Lands and it normally took a hardliner stance on many issues. Faced with the Great Void Sect, the Mount Shu Sword Sect and the Great Zhou Empire, it had rarely been in a submissive position.

Shen Qifeng's expression was neutral and emotionless. His supernatural awareness was able to pick out the unhappiness and resentment towards him. However, he chose to ignore them.

As the group of them returned to their abode, Shen Qifeng was immediately summoned by the leaders of his sect for questioning.

The subject was naturally about their visit to the Kunlun Mountains. Under Shen Qifeng's leadership, the Samsara Sect Path of the Heaven-Born lost both the battle and had one of their disciples crippled.

Undoubtedly, Shen Qifeng's action did not earn him any points with the other elders. Many thought that he was too soft and lost face for the Samsara Sect. Even though Shen Qifeng was the First



Disciple and an immediate disciple of the sect, he too must be questioned for his actions.

"While our Samsara Sect is plagued with internal strife, we will still band together against any external threats. Hence, other powerful sects don't dare to look down on us," said Shen Qifeng calmly. "However, the Celestial Sect of Wonders evidently received help from both the Path of Hell and the Path of Humanity. They were hoping that we would become sworn enemies with the Celestial Sect of Wonders, and then they would be able to ally with the Celestial Sect."

"This time, the situation was different compared to before. Our sect had already been divided. Becoming enemies with the Celestial Sect of Wonders is not beneficial to the Path of the Heaven-Born."

An Immortal Soul stage of the Path of the Heaven Born sneered coldly, "Shen Qifeng, don't try to wriggle out this time. While the Celestial Sect of Wonders, and its master Lin Feng, are strong now, don't they have any enemy too?"

"The Great Void Sect, the Mount Shu Sword Sect are no in way inferior to them. Even if the Celestial Sect of Wonders ally with the Great Qin Empire and the Great Zhou Empire, they may not be able to resist against them. Furthermore, the Celestial Sect of Wonders may not even be able to ally itself successfully with the Great Zhou Empire."

Shen Qifeng replied, "Uncle (Translator's Note: In terms of cultivation, not relative) is right. However, the Master of the Celestial Sect has proven his power. In the Battle of Xiling City, the power that he had shown could be rivalled by only a rare few in the Divine Lands today. Without any magic treasure, he was able to resist the Mount Shu Sword Sect's Celestial Sword."

"Furthermore, he was able to trigger the Alpha Destiny Tribulations with his own powers. While we do not know the limits of his power, this is more than enough to prove that his

power was at least past that Tribulation."

The Immortal Soul stage elder's expression did not change as he said, "You are right in saying that. I too respect the power of the Master of the Celestial Sect. But don't forget, the Great Void Sect still has the Zheng Yi Holy Man, the Tai Yi Holy Man, the Qing Yi Holy Woman and the Xuan Yi Holy Man."

Shen Qifeng smiled slightly, "I know. However, the bulk of the Great Void Sect's attention right now is still on the developments in the Barren Expanses. In their long history, there were only three times when their Supreme Heavenly Mirror was pointed at the Divine Lands."

"I notice from the interactions between Lin Daohan, Yan Mingyue and Lin Feng that the Great Void Sect has no intention of making enemies with the Celestial Sect of Wonders right now."

The elder shook his head and said, "You only know parts of it..."

A loud voice rang suddenly, "The discussion ends here."

Shen Qifeng bowed and said, "Yes, master." The other elders of the Path of the Heaven-Born quietened down too as they waited for instructions.

Shi Tianfang of the Path of the Heaven-Born of the Samsara Sect said, "Qifeng, while you have given thoughts to it, it is not enough. Your performance is lacklustre and hence, you shall go to the Heaven's Canyon and reflect."

Shen Qifeng replied politely, "I understand." With that, he took his leave and headed as per instructed to the punitive place of the Path of the Heaven-Born.

After he entered the Heaven's Canyon, he sat on the lowest level of the void and suffered the many tribulations there. Shen Qifeng's expression was calm and he smiled and said, "It's fine, I'll be fine. All I need to do is to wait."

Unlike Shen Qifeng, who no longer cared about this anymore,

another person was feeling very excited.

The Marquis of Jingheng looked at the monk before him, smiled and asked, "You finally decided to act?"

The middle-aged monk smiled slightly. He brimmed with intelligence and wisdom and he was without any trace of anger. "Act, not quite. However, with the re-appearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea, I have a feeling that someone will finally claim them this time."

He smiled and looked at the Marquis of Jingheng, "You surely don't wish to be left behind. Let me help you."

The Marquis of Jingheng laughed, shook his head and said, "Please don't play games with me, I suppose that your real target is the disciples of the Master of the Celestial Sect. Helping me is only part of your plan, right?"

The middle-aged monk did not rebut him. Instead, he smiled and said, "Do you want my help?"

"Of course, of course I need your help," said the Marquis of Jingheng without any hesitation. "While I am not weak, the appearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea is no small affair. Let's not talk about other sects, the Great Zhou Empire view this as critical to its future, so how can I sit and do nothing?"

"With your help, I will be granted entrance, so how could I be only a bystander then?"

The middle-aged monk smiled and said, "If that's the case, I'll meet you at the Ying Sea."

The Marquis of Jingheng nodded his head. Suddenly, he looked straight at the monk and asked, "It's good to be able to see you. However, I wonder if you would make a trip down personally."

The middle-aged monk smiled and said, "You will find out."

He looked to the sky and sighed, "The Master of the Celestial Sect

wishes to go to the Ying Sea. I wonder what is his plan?"

The Marquis of Jingheng smiled and said, "This is for His Majesty and the Marquis of Xuanji to decide. According to what I know, the Great Zhou Empire has made many preparations to welcome anyone who ventures into the Ying Sea."

"If the Celestial Sect of Wonders and the Great Qin Empire cannot attract their attention, then I may need to do something."

# Chapter 705: A Wild Hero

---

While the spiritual conference may have ended, the situation in the Divine Lands was even more precarious.

With the third sect-opening ceremony of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, troubles in the Divine Lands, which had been calm for three years, once again began to stir.

All factions and sects, big and small, began to plan as they sought to protect themselves in the upcoming storm, or perhaps even benefit from it.

Wu Yunliang of the Ethereal Mountain Sect was one such person. After the spiritual conference had ended, he finally obtained a chance to meet Lin Feng face-to-face.

However, Lin Feng only met with him. The other members of the Ethereal Mountain Sect did not receive the right to meet him, not even Meng Chaoran

"Senior, your action will determine the future of our Ethereal Mountain Sect, please be... careful!" A middle-aged cultivator next to Wu Yunliang said to him in a low voice. It was the second-most important person of the Ethereal Mountain Sect, Li Botao.

Meng Chaoran said from the side, "This was all planned beforehand. Please don't worry too much, Second Senior. With his current position, the Master of the Celestial Sect of Wonders won't ask unreasonable requests of us."

Li Botao turned and looked at Meng Chaoran. He nodded his head and said nothing.

Wu Yunliang said, "Junior Meng is right. Everything shall according to plan."

Li Botao looked Wu Yunliang in the eyes and said slowly, "All the best, Senior."

"I hope so too," said Wu Yunliang. With that, he stepped into the Grand Heavens Pavilion.

In the main seat of the pavilion, Lin Feng sat quietly. Behind him, there was an expressionless young maiden. Her hair was half-black and half-white and she carried a huge scabbard.

When Wu Yunliang came in, Lin Feng smiled and said, "It appears that you have made your choice."

Wu Yunliang bowed solemnly to Lin Feng and said, "The Ethereal Mountain Sect shall look only to the Celestial Sect of Wonders from now. We only hope that in the turbulent days to come, you would be able to come our aid, if needed, and save us. I will be forever in your debt."

Lin Feng asked, "Do you mean everyone in your sect?"

Wu Yunliang sighed and said, "I don't dare to make false promises, but I can assure you, Master of the Celestial Sect, that most members of my sect prefer you."

Lin Feng laughed softly and said, "If that's the case, all you need to know is we shall try our very best to help all sects that are dependent on us. However, if any sect seeks to undermine us, we shall destroy them no matter who and where they are."

"I know what your intention already. For the specific details, you can liaise with my disciples."

Wu Yunliang said politely, "I shall follow your every instruction, Master of the Celestial Sect."

After they finished their exchange, Wu Yunliang exited the Grand Heavens Pavilion. Li Botao and Meng Chaoran gazed at him.

Wu Yunliang's expression was calm but his gaze was complicated. He met their gazes and nodded slowly.

Li Botao sighed and said, "Now, all we can do is to wait." While his gaze appeared relaxed, there were signs of worry. Like Wu

Yunliang, his gaze was slightly complicated.

Wu Yunliang said nothing. His expression was heavy but when his gaze met Meng Chaoran and the rest, the flash of worry disappeared as quickly as it came.

However, Chu Yang, who was most familiar with Meng Chaoran, could feel that he had relaxed his usually anxious heart in that split second.

"That's good, that's good..." Chu Yang's expression did not change but he exhaled in his heart. "In future clashes, our Ethereal Mountain Sect may be able to avoid calamities."

Silently, he followed behind Meng Chaoran and the other seniors as they descended from Mount Yujing and left the territory of the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

Chu Yang could not help but to look into the void. He sighed, "Qingwu..."

While he had only seen her for a short while, the purple-robed silhouette in the Dharma Hall of Mount Yujing matched the red-robed outline in his memory.

He did not know if it was a dream or a memory from a past life. However, after he dreamed/visualized that Ethereal Mountain Sect was destroyed, he devoted all of his effort to cultivation to find out the reason for it.

In the process, he managed to obtain the Passion Ending Way of the Middle Ages, which required him to fall in love before extinguishing all sentiments. He chose to use the red-robed young girl of his memory to cultivate.

Actually, the young girl knew of all these. However, like a moth that was attracted to fire, she still chose to love up without regret till her death.

However, Chu Yang, till the moment he died in this memory, realized that he was unable to extinguish his feelings for her.

Regret, guilt, hate and pity filled Chu Yang's heart. He could not fully get rid of this feeling.

Chu Yang could feel the wind of the Kunlun Mountains gently ruffling against him. He slowly closed his eyes and then opened them again. He could only hear himself mumbling, "Regardless whether it's a dream or memories from a past life, since I have another chance at it, I shall not make the same mistake."

"Qingwu, this time, let's be together!"

The black-robed youth's eyes regained their clarity. However, another silhouette appeared in his heart.

The person looked ordinary. However, he brimmed with vast amount of powers that nothing under the Heavens could rival. He was clad in purple robes.

Chu Yang coughed bitterly, "The Master of the Celestial Sect. In my memory, this person had never appeared. Because of that, I fear looking at him directly. I just want him to leave. I only want to get away from him.

He smiled bitterly, "However, before him, I can't hide my secrets."

In his heart, Chu Yang felt that while others had yet to see the secret of the sword shadow in his soul, Lin Feng saw it.

He had no proof, only intuition. However, Chu Yang felt that Lin Feng was the one who helped him to cover up this secret of his from others.

Because of Lin Feng's subtle hints, many people who wished to kill him because of their intuitions decided against it. They realized that it was not worth to do something that no concrete proof at the risk of offending Lin Feng.

"The Master of the Celestial Sect helped rid me of my problem so easily. However, he did not seem to be claiming credit for it, nor does he want me to join him," sighed Chu Yang. "I am really in his



debt."

Thinking about it here, Chu Yang smiled suddenly, "Qingwu is able to find such an interesting personality to be her master. She is truly destined for greatness. I am chasing the impossible."

"Sigh, I need to continue working hard. If not, I will be crying more in the future," Chu Yang smiled in his heart. "Men who eye the young disciple of the Master of the Celestial Sect, watch yourselves. That is my wife!"

On Mount Yujing, Lin Feng looked thoughtlessly at the void underneath the mountain. Then, he retracted his gaze and shook his head. Interestedly, he thought, "I managed to recruit four of the destined heroes I had met into my sect, but not him."

"Eh, young man, let me see how far can you progress," Lin Feng smiled, "If you want to marry my disciple, you have to see your own abilities. I don't need to say much, but you have many obstacles you need to surmount."

Smiling slyly, he looked at Luo Qingwu, and the many people standing behind her, such as Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi, Shi Tianhao etc.

Luo Qingwu felt his gaze and lowered her head to look at herself. Did she wear her clothes inside-out?

"Master?" She tried to ask but Lin Feng waved his hands at her. "Today, you managed to make a name for yourself. While Yuanfang did nothing, no one will underestimate him too."

"Today, the two of you can have your own abodes too."

With that, Lin Feng smiled and pushed his palm forward. Just like how he made the Inferno Precipice, the Heavenly Temple, the Forest Abode and the other abodes, he used the rocks of Mount Yujing and the leaves from the Black Heavenly Treasure Tree and turned them into a Rainbow Clouds Bridge and a separate mountain. While they were connected to Mount Yujing, they existed independently.

Li Yuanfang, who was usually calm, could feel his heart pumping. Luo Qingwu began to exclaim, "Master, is this for Senior Yuanfang and I?"

Lin Feng smiled and said, "You can design it to your heart's content. I will help you."

Just like how Xiao Yan and the rest customized their abodes, Li Yuanfang and Luo Qingwu customized their abodes according to their cultivation and their personal styles.

With Lin Feng's help, the mountain rocks began to take many different shapes and forms. He also incorporated the image of the Eight Trigrams inside.

The Eight Trigrams formed a huge formation and in its center, there stood a small house.

The center of the house was uncomplicated. It was a simple house with a garden. However, the materials that were used to construct the house were all arranged perfectly without any mistake. The various types of stones appeared to have been measured with a ruler before they were laid into the foundation. There was no imperfection.

Xiao Yan and the rest looked at each other and smiled. Shi Tianhao shook his head and said, "Sixth Senior's life is tiring."

Li Yuanfang did not rebut. Instead, he smiled and the words "River Abode" appeared in the plaque above his house.

Up next, Luo Qingwu too started to work on her abode. She used the rocks from Mount Yujing to fashion a canyon and the canyon, she built a tiny pavilion. While it appeared exquisitely made, it was slightly haphazard in many areas.

The black seawater in the Yin-Yang Sea underneath Mount Yujing were summoned by her. They turned into a flowing spring of black and white water that surrounded the pavilion. It looked exceptionally other-worldly.

Outside of the pavilion, she casually wrote "Qingwu Pavilion" on a rock.

Xiao Yan smiled and said, "Junior Luo, you are lazier than Little Junior!"

Luo Qingwu giggled, "I know."

Shi Tianhao protested, "Big Senior, you aren't much better."

Li Yuanfang looked at Lin Feng and asked, "Master, does this mean that Junior Luo and I can start taking in disciples too?"

Lin Feng nodded and smiled, "That's right. During the next assessment of our disciples, they can choose to be either your or Qingwu's disciples."

Shi Tianhao said suddenly, "Master, other cultivators have honorary names when they are in their Nascent Soul stage, or even Aurous Core stage. However, we don't. Won't it be more awe-inspiring to have one?"

Lin Feng pointed at them and asked, "Aren't you lot awe-inspiring enough?"

Then, he said with a smile, "Furthermore, who says that you lot don't have them?"

Lin Feng waved his fingers in mid-air and before everyone, a screen of light appeared. When they looked at it carefully, they could see names on them.

# Chapter 706: Internal Daoist Naming Order

---

The light flashed in mid-air and many jade plaques appeared. On every single jade plaque, a person's name was carved. Xiao Yan and the rest all crowded forward to look at them curiously.

They noticed that one jade plaque was twice as big as the other jade plaques. There was only a single word carved on it, and that was the word 'Founder'.

Underneath the plaque with the word 'Founder', there were eight smaller plaques. On every single of them, a single name was carved.

Lin Feng laughed softly and said, "The reason why I did not bestow honorary titles to you lot after you had formed your Aurous Cores and your Nascent Souls was because I much rather see you make a name for yourself first."

"Isn't it more awe-inspiring if everyone know you guys first before you have your names?"

He pointed to the name on the plaque and said, "Internally, we have our own Daoist Names that we use to denote seniority and succession."

Lin Feng smiled and said, "The only one that doesn't have one is me."

There was no need for him to have one. In the entire sect, he was its founders and the teacher of all teachers. He had no seniors and no one belonged to the same generation as him.

Xiao Yan looked at the eight jade plaques in the second row. The right-most one had the words "Xuan Yan" written on it. He pointed to it and asked with a smile, "Master, that's for me right?"

Lin Feng nodded and smiled, "Correct, as my first bunch of disciples, all of you shall have the word 'Xuan' in your names."

Zhu Yi, Shi Tianhao and the rest smiled and bowed to Xiao Yan. "Xuan Yan Master, we offer our respects."

Xiao Yan smiled at them and said, "You guys should check yours out too."

Zhu Yi stepped forward. In terms of order, he was right after Xiao Yan. He noticed that the jade plaque next to Xiao Yan's one bore the words 'Xuan Yi'.

Lin Feng looked at him and smiled, "Your mother named you 'Yi' in hopes that the fortunes of the world would come to you. I await that day."

Zhu Yi smiled and said, "These few years, through my cultivation and research, I have some views of my own. After I organize them, I hope master can help me vet them."

Lin Feng nodded his head and said, "I will be delighted to do that."

Wang Lin looked at the third jade plaque and inquired, "Xuan... Ni?" His fellow disciples looked at the words curiously, and their gazes alternated between Wang Lin and the name. They all had confused expressions on their faces.

Lin Feng smiled slightly and said, "Think about this name carefully. This is related to your cultivation. There's no need to look too far into the future, when you try for the Immortal Soul stage, your rewards will be abundant."

Wang Lin nodded his head seriously and said, "I understand, master."

Shi Tianhao smiled and said, "Third Senior, only your jade plaque has something else to it."

Indeed, including Xuan Yan jade plaque and the Xuan Yi jade plaque, the other jade plaques had nothing underneath them. Only the one with the words Xuan Ni had another jade plaque, which was the only one in the third row.

On that jade plaque, one could see the words 'Tian Quan'.

Yang Qing looked at it and asked, "Is this for Yuting?"

Lin Feng smiled and said, "Correct, this is for Dao Yuting, the Tian Quan Priestess, of the Celestial Sect of Wonders."

He then said, "Second-generation disciples shall have the word 'Tian' in their names."

Everyone raised their heads and Li Yuanfang said, "They must form their Aurous Core first before they could be listed here."

Lin Feng's left hand sliced through the air again and another light flashed. This time, it was a ball of golden light. Lin Feng smiled and said, "Every single disciple of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, including Foundational Disciples, shall be included in the Natal Light. However, only those who formed their Aurous Cores shall have their names in jade plaques."

Luo Qingwu clasped her hands together and smiled at Wang Lin, "Congratulations Third Senior, congratulations Xuan Ni Master."

Wang Lin shook his head and laughed, "Yuting joined the sect when she was in her Advanced Foundation Establishment stage. It is normal for her to advance into the Aurous Core stage before everyone else. We still need to see her performance in the future."

The other disciples smiled and their gaze went back to the second row of jade plaques. To the left of Wang Lin's one, they noticed that the fourth one had the words 'Xuan Lan' carved on it.

Yue Hongyan's lips twitched as she bowed to Lin Feng and said, "Thank you master."

Shi Tianhao, Luo Qingwu and the rest looked at her curiously. Zhu Yi explained quietly to them from the side, "Many years ago, the capital of the Arctic State was known as Xuelan City. The reason why was because there was a mountain outside of the capital known as Mount Lan."

Yue Hongyan smiled and her sword-like eyebrows became a lot more gentler. "I grew up in Mount Lan. That is my hometown."

The other disciples nodded their heads in silent as they tried to divert the conversation away. Luo Qingwu said, "Let's look at Fifth Senior's! Oh.... Xuan Ming?"

Yang Qing noticed that the fifth jade plaque had the words 'Xuan Ming' carved on it. He tried to understand the meaning behind it as he thought, "Yin and Yang come together and the Way of the Dao is mysterious. This represents the hopes master has for me...."

Luo Qingwu smiled and said, "Looking at it now, it is very likely that Fifth Senior may have another jade plaque underneath his own."

Yang Qing waved his hands hurriedly and he said with a smile, "Yuncong still has much to learn. While his battling style is ferocious, it does not mean that his mastery would increase quickly. He still has much to learn."

Xiao Yan smiled and said, "I wonder who would be the next one to form his/her Aurous Core after Tian Quan."

Li Yuanfang said quietly, "It should be either Zhou Yuncong, Xu Yunsheng, Liu Xiafeng, Li Xingfei or Ying Luozha. Lin Tong, Zhuge Wanqiu and Huang Zhenting still have a long way to go."

Shi Tianhao smiled and said, "You are right, Senior Xuan Luo."

On the sixth jade plaque that represented Li Yuanfang, there was the name 'Xuan Luo'.

As they thought of the name Li Yuanfang had given to his own abode, the group of disciples began to laugh, "Master knows us all very well."

Li Yuanfang looked at the words 'Xuan Luo' on the jade plaque and his gaze flashed slightly. He turned and bowed solemnly to Lin Feng, "Thank you master."

Lin Feng smiled and shook his head and said nothing. On the other side, Luo Qingwu's gaze turned to the last two jade plaques. "The seventh one should be Little Senior's! Oh, ?"

"The last one should be mine! Let me see what is it! Xuan Che?" Luo Qingwu smiled and looked at Lin Feng. "Master, you have thought of it since the day you gave me the Xuanche Sword!"

Lin Feng smiled and said, "Of course!"

Shi Tianhao mumbled, "Master is the real lazy one here. Giving names is the hardest!"

Lin Feng looked at him as a hint of a smile crept on his face. "If I want to save time, I would have carved 'Tianhao' on your jade plaque. Isn't that the most convenient way?"

Shi Tianhao opened his mouth and said, "Then it would mean that I am in the wrong generation of disciples!"

Xiao Yan laughed loudly, "Tianhao Master! have a present for you...hahaha!" Before he could finish, he could not help but to burst out laughing. Yue Hongyan and Luo Qingwu joined in too.

Zhu Yi, Wang Lin, Yang Qing and Li Yuanfang too smiled.

Shi Tianhao ignored Xiao Yan and said, "Xuan Huang sounds much nicer."

Lin Feng pat his head and said, "Silly child, like the 'Ni' in your Third Senior's name, your 'Huang' is related to your entire cultivation life. Do you think I'm really as lazy as you?"

Ever since Shi Tianhao grew up and matured, Xiao Yan and the rest no longer pat his head anymore. Only Lin Feng continued to do so, just as how he did when Shi Tianhao was younger.

Shi Tianhao did not mind. He giggled, "I understand. Let's not talk about the future, my very own Xuanhuang Four-Words Mantra had the word 'huang' in it. I understand Master's expectations."



Lin Feng nodded his head contentedly and then pointed at the 'Tian Quan' jade plaque under Wang Lin's 'Xuan Ni' and said to Wang Lin, "Originally, you should be able to pick your disciple's Daoist Names. However, due to Tian Quan's special circumstances, I had to pick hers."

Wang Lin thought about and said, "I don't mind. You must have your own reasons."

"I wonder if it's related to Mr Dual Polarity Peak who had joined our sect."

Lin Feng nodded his head and said, "Correct, that's why. This is part of my promise to him and hence, I must keep it."

"The Heaven Lack Sect?" Shi Tianhao said dismissively. "They deserve what they got. Since that's the case? Why don't we just call Yuting 'Heaven Lake' instead?"

Lin Feng smiled and said, "You will understand."

With that, Shi Tianhao was taken aback. His gaze flashed as he thought about it. Then, he slowly nodded his head.

At that moment, Xiao Yan began to laugh in earnest. The group of them turned their heads to look at him. Xiao Yan said while laughing, "I suddenly thought of the Xuan Lin Holy Man."

Everyone began to laugh. Zhu Yi shook his head and laughed, "He got his name from his Natal Magic Treasure, the Supreme Xuan Light Jade Tablet. Hence, he got such a honorary name."

"However, while his Supreme Xuan Light Jade Tablet was destroyed in the War of the Two Worlds, everyone was used to calling him the Xuan Lin Holy Man and hence, everyone continued calling him that. However, in the Great Void Sect, he was known as something else."

Xiao Yan smiled and said, "I know about this, but it's still interesting."

As he listened to his disciples, Lin Feng stood by the side and chuckled too. His gaze occasionally fell onto the three rows of jade plaques and he paid special focus to the second row of jade plaques.

Heavens could attest to the fact that the names he wanted to give to Xiao Yan and the rest at first were definitely not as proper as Xuan Yan Master, Xuan Yi Master, Xuan Ni Master, Xuan Huang Master, Xuan Lan Master, Xuan Ming Master, Xuan Luo Master and Xuan Che Master...

He considered naming them 'Torch', 'Nerd', 'Butcher of the River Styx', 'Big-Mouthed Shi', 'Black Widow'...

As his mastery became higher, Lin Feng became more and more adventurous and mischievous. Before others, he must act like a master and a teacher. However, his desire for mischief had never been greater.

Lin Feng looked down at his body, brimming with power and the formality of a Daoist. Then, he arched his head and looked into the sky and thought, "The road of life is truly lonely. As you gain, you lose too."

# Chapter 707: First Disciple

---

Lin Feng retrieved the jade plaques and looked at the group of immediate disciples and said with a smile, "My words don't change. Everything that is carved here is used for our sect's internal succession. I hope that one day, you will be able to make a name for yourselves outside."

Xiao Yan and the rest looked at Lin Feng and bowed solemnly and said, "We will not disappoint you, master. We will continue to do our best to raise the prestige of our sect."

Lin Feng smiled and waved his hand, "I have always been very pleased with you lot."

His gaze turned to the screen of light next to him and continued, "All of you are pleased with your disciples too."

Xiao Yan and the rest began to laugh. The group of them looked at Yang Qing and Xiao Yan said with a smile, "None of them is more outstanding than Yuncong, who is under Fifth Disciple."

Yang Qing could not help but to chuckle along with the other disciples.

The rest of them continued to smile and said nothing. Actually, Zhou Yuncong's status as the First Disciple had already been decided before the spiritual conference. While it was partially due to the effort Yang Qing had spent in training him, he himself played a role too.

If not, the position of the First Disciple of the Nirvana World would still be empty. As Yang Qing planned to continue taking in disciples, it should not be empty for too long.

Furthermore, Zhou Yuncong had already progressed from the Beginner Foundation Establishment Stage to the Intermediate Foundation Establishment Stage. He had started to form his spiritual altar and began to cultivate the Great Celestial Way of the

## Eight Trigrams.

While it was not a very systemic training, under Yang Qing's guidance, his foundation was well-established.

It was not because of favouritism on Yang Qing's part, but Lin Feng's special instructions instead. Xiao Yan and the rest knew about it.

Speaking about it, while it may be unfair to the other disciples, Zhou Yuncong's situation was simply too unique. It was extremely dangerous for Yang-Incinerating Entities to cultivate and any mistake may result in self-immolation. In an instant, he may be reduced to ashes with no hope of redemption.

If he did not carefully study the ways of the Great Celestial Way of the Eight Trigrams, or if he did not listen carefully to his master's prompts, Zhou Yuncong may make an irredeemable mistake.

Chen Xingyu of the Great Void Sect was taught the Yin Yang Mantra of the Void by Lin Daohan, who spent a lot of effort following his progress. He did not dare to neglect anything, for the consequences would be a frosty death for Chen Xingyu.

In comparison to Pure Yin and Pure Yang entities, Yin-Terminating and Yang-Incinerating entities were much better at battling. However, the price to pay was an extremely dangerous cultivation process filled with traps.

Lin Feng looked at Yang Qing and said, "Through this spiritual conference, Yuncong was able to increase his experiences. Now, his foundation has been well-established. You can begin to teach him the Great Celestial Way of the Eight Trigrams in earnest in preparation for his core formation."

Yang Qing nodded his head and said, "I understand."

Lin Feng looked at him and said with a smile, "Don't forget your own cultivation too. I know that you are very confident of passing

the Tribulation of the Yin Wind now."

"Handing Yuncong over to you is good for both you and him."

Yang Qing smiled and said, "Relax, master. I don't dare to forget about such an important thing."

Lin Feng looked at Xiao Yan and the rest and said, "All of you know what to do after this conference too."

"For the Inferno Precipice, the position of First Disciple is likely to remain empty," said Xiao Yan. "Lin Tong is not yet mentally ready and hence, she can't assume such an important role. Furthermore, neither I nor Zhen'er want her to bear such a heavy responsibility at such a young age."

After discussion with his fellow disciples, the First Disciple would also be responsible for the cultivation of the other successive disciples. If Xiao Yan and the rest were to do closed-door trainings for themselves, then the First Disciple would be in for a long and difficult period.

Even if they did their closed-door training in the Heavenly Cosmic Ray World, the flow of time in the Greater world would not slow. Furthermore, the few of them still wanted to venture beyond Mount Yujing.

"For the little fatty Wuwei, while he matured, he is not suitable for the position of the First Disciple because of his mentality and his mastery level," said Xiao Yan, shaking his head. "Liu Xiaofeng isn't too bad, but he is too free-spirited."

"Before this conference, he was hell-bent on challenging Zhou Yuncong. In the end, he almost lost his Grand Sun Primordial Flame. Hence, his performance during the spiritual conference was lacklustre."

Shi Tianhao smiled and asked, "Big Senior, you won't punish him because of that, right?"

Xiao Yan smiled and said, "How could I? In my opinion, his

personality matches mine the best. He believes in brotherhood and he is well-respected in both the Inferno Precipice and the entire sect."

"However, with a personality like his, he is not suitable to become my First Disciple, at least not now," sighed Xiao Yan. "He still needs a period of training, if not, while he may have the burst, he cannot last long. Also, he does what his heart tells him to and he seeks short-term thrills. He cannot see far ahead into the future and in some cases, he may worsen a situation."

As Xiao Yan said that, he also drew from his own personal experiences. He like Liu Xiafeng's personality as he himself liked freedom too.

After Lin Feng placed the responsibility of the First Disciple on him, he underwent many trials and tribulations. In comparison to his youthful self, many of his views changed. He was still headstrong, proud and loud, but in many other things he acted bravely and thoughtfully.

"You have another person in mind, don't you? That's why you can't make up your mind?" Lin Feng looked at Xiao Yan and asked with a smile.

"Hehe, I can't hide anything from master," laughed Xiao Yan

The other disciples watched this exchange, confused. Zhu Yi's gaze flashed and then he smiled while pointing at Xiao Yan, "Is Big Senior eyeing one of the new Foundational Disciples we recruited during the sect-opening ceremony?"

Xiao Yan did not deny it. He nodded and said, "Looking at his performance on the Heart-Revealing Steps, I am impressed. If he becomes a successive disciple and chooses not to join me, it's fine. If he does join me, I will spend extra effort cultivating him."

"The future First Disciple of the Inferno Precipice will be either him or Liu Xiafeng."

As he said that, Wang Lin, Shi Tianhao, Yue Hongyan and the rest thought about it for a while. Then, they realized who he was talking about. "Is it the youth called Tang Jun?"

"Correct," said Xiao Yan. "It's him."

Shi Tianhao's mouth twitched as he said, "In terms of calibre, he does seem most-suited to be your disciple, Big Senior."

Lin Feng looked at Zhu Yi, who said, "The First Disciple of the Heavenly Temple is not yet decided too."

Yang Qing asked quietly, "Do you plan to give it to Yang Tie, or do you want to wait for Yunsheng's return?"

Yang Tie was still in the Beginner Foundation Establishment stage. During the spiritual conference, he unfortunately clashed with Huang Zhenting, who was in the Advanced Foundation Establishment stage, and thus he did not have much chance to perform.

Not only did he join the sect late, his mastery was not very high either. Very few outsiders would consider him for the position of First Disciple of the Heavenly Temple.

However, Zhu Yi, Xiao Yan and Yang Qing all planned to give special attention to Yang Tie's cultivation.

Ying Luozha's mastery was decent and his battling abilities were fearsome. However, he was not a good candidate for the position of the First Disciple. He himself did not want it too.

Zhu Yi replied, "Right now, it's too early to say. We need to look at Yang Tie's circumstances. If all go well, then Yang Tie may become the First Disciple of the Heavenly Temple."

Yue Hongyan sighed and said, "If not for the Great Zhou Empire, Yunsheng would have been Second Senior's top choice for the position of First Disciple."

Zhu Yi shook his head, "One can still turn around after a single

wrong step, but one will still miss much in the process."

Xiao Yan asked, "Do you plan on saving his relative from the Great Zhou Empire?"

"Correct," said Zhu Yi. "I will soon act on this matter."

Next, without waiting for anyone to ask, Wang Lin said quietly, "I have not yet decided who will be the First Disciple of the Forest Abode."

"I have other plans for Tian Quan, and Xingfei still needs practice."

Hearing that, Lin Feng smiled and nodded his head. While Wang Lin appeared cold and quiet, he thought through things very thoroughly. Earlier on, when he mentioned Dao Yuting and her circumstances that were linked to the Dual Polarity Peak, Wang Lin was able to understand his master's intentions.

Everyone began to nod their heads and then, Yue Hongyan said, "The First Disciple of the Blizzard Valley will be Zhao Huan."

Shi Tianhao smiled and said, "What if you have better disciples in the future, Fourth Senior?"

Yue Hongyan's eyebrows danced as she said with a smile, "Then, it's up to him"

Yang Qing laughed from the side and said, "I don't have much of a choice, do I? Right now, Yuncong is not suited for the position of the First Disciple, however after he forms his core and improves his self-control, he may be more suited."

Shi Tianhao smiled and said, "The First Disciple of the Wasteland Valley will be Huang Zhenting."

"Wanqiu's personality is too soft and while Huang Zhenting is not fully mature, it's still fine. With Wanqiu watching over her, nothing bad may happen."

His fellow disciples pointed at him and laughed, "Lucky Zhenting



is not a troublemaker like you."

Lin Feng waved his hand and said, "That's enough. Every bring your own disciples back to your respective abodes and carefully summarize the lessons from this spiritual conference. Despite it being held in the Dharma Hall, there are still many lessons we can learn from it."

Xiao Yan and the rest nodded their heads as they went off.

Lin Feng sat quietly in the Grand Heavens Pavilion as he watched the void tremble.

A tall, handsome youth appeared in the center of the Grand Heavens Pavilion. He wore a purple robes with gold embroidery and he was tall and slim. His skin was white and his brows perfect. As he appeared, one could smell a faint fragrance in the air.

Lin Feng's mouth twitched as he heard the youth coyly said, "My lord, I haven't seen you in a long while, do you miss me?"

Who else could it be but Miao Shihao?

"Eh, are you in your Advanced Nascent Soul stage?" After interacting with Miao Shihao for so long, Lin Feng had grown slightly immune to him. He disregarded his girly ways and looked at Miao Shihao. He noticed that after Miao Shihao had completed his closed-door training, he was in the peak of the Advanced Nascent Soul stage and was only a step away from the Immortal Soul stage.

When he mentioned that, Miao Shihao sighed and said, "Your Brother Shihao wants to stop his closed-door training after he reached the Immortal Soul stage. I was so close!"

The look of worry then disappeared from his face as he smiled, "However, I have a plan for that. I stopped my closed-door training just in time."

"Oh, that's good," said Lin Feng uninterestedly.

Wait, something's amiss!

Lin Feng squinted his eyes and said, "Just in time... what do you mean?"

# Chapter 708: Let Me Show You the Way

---

Hearing the words 'just in time', an ominous feeling rose in his heart.

Then, he heard Miao Shihao laugh, "My lord, you should know, right? Or have you been too busy lately? Penglai, Yingzhou and Fangzhang, the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea, are going to appear any time soon. Ever since Emperor Tai of the Antiquity Age explored the Ying Sea, the timing of their appearances had more or less been fixed."

"Penglai, Yingzhou and Fangzhang appear in the world after a certain fixed time, with a three year margin of error. After calculations, I realise that they are about to appear soon."

Suddenly, a nail-file appeared in his hand. He carefully filed his nails as he said, "Your Brother Shihao needs one thing to advance into the Immortal Soul stage. With that thing, I will be able to advance successfully."

"However, this thing is extremely rare and valuable. I can't find it anywhere in the Grand Celestial World other than on one of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea. Hence, when these three mountains appear, I must go."

He looked at Lin Feng and asked with a smile, "My lord, you are interested too right?"

Lin Feng's mouth twitched as he said, "I... am not really interested in them right now."

Miao Shihao arched his eyebrows and cooed, "My lord, you can't think in this way. Even if you want nothing yourself, could you bear to watch the Ying Sea fall into the hands of other powers? Particularly the Great Zhou Empire, which is very close to the Ying Sea and had been planning to take control over it for years. If they controlled the Ying Sea, then their powers would reach a new

level."

Lin Feng smiled drily and said, "I wish you all the best in your endeavour, may you find what you need."

Miao Shihao smiled and said, "Let's go together, my lord. Close your eyes and imagine the vast, open sea and the never-ending skies. In such a beautiful setting, you and I shall pair up and go together. Just thinking about it gives me the thrills."

"Nope, I can't feel anything," Lin Feng tried to divert the topic as he said, "Since you have completed your closed-door training, then there's something I need your help with. I have been suspecting it for a long while but because the Great Void Sect has always been secretive, my knowledge of them is limited."

As he said that, Lin Feng waved his hands in mid-air and a light projection appeared.

The light projection recorded the happenings of the spiritual conference. This time, it showed the battle between Chen Xingyu and Zhou Yuncong in the third round.

It was not as meticulous as the records of the Dharma Hall and only an image.

Miao Shihao lazily swept his gaze over it. Then, his eyes flashed as the lazy look on his face disappeared. A rare, serious look crossed his face.

"Yang-Incinerating entity, Yin-Terminating entity..." Miao Shihao mumbled to himself. His expression was slightly dazed as he carefully observed Zhou Yuncong and Chen Xingyu. Then, he laughed coldly, "Hehe."

After he laughed, his expression remained dazed. He appeared to have slightly lost his wits.

His entire aura began to change. He was no longer girly and feminine any more but instead, while he was still coy, he became much more manly. He looked worried.

Miao Shihao turned from a girly boy into an intellectual-looking young man as he stared at Zhou Yuncong and Miao Shihao. After a while, he shook his head and looked at Lin Feng.

"My lord, what do you suspect?" Miao Shihao looked slightly worried and dazed. His gaze became clearer as if he had just woken up from a dream.

Lin Feng voiced out his suspicions and Miao Shihao nodded his head, "Correct, my lord, your guess is likely correct."

He could not resist as he looked one last time at Zhou Yuncong and Chen Xingyu. After a while, he said, "I'm afraid you 99% correct, my lord."

Lin Feng put his hands behind his back as he stared at Zhou Yuncong and Chen Xingyu. After a long while, he asked solemnly, "Can you see his origins?"

Miao Shihao shook his head regretfully and said, "While there are very few of them, the Grand Celestial World has existed for a long time. A substantial number of them existed and in the Great Void Sect alone, there is bound to be more than just one."

"If that's the case, then we shall continue to monitor," Lin Feng nodded his head and the light projection disappeared.

After the light projection disappeared, Miao Shihao fell into deep thought.

"If there's any development, I will tell you," said Lin Feng.

Miao Shihao jolted himself out of his stupor as he gently shook his head. Light returned to his eyes and the lazy, playful smile returned to his face. His entire body immediately became more feminine and coy and as all vestige of the serious intellectual disappeared. He returned to his old self.

"My lord, shall we now talk about our upcoming adventure to the Ying Sea?" Miao Shihao asked seductively.

Lin Feng pretended to have not heard him as he said blandly, "If you want to go the Ying Sea, then spend the next few days resting your mana and make the preparations."

Miao Shihao looked at him and laughed, "My lord, if you don't go, who will be there to entertain me?"

With that, he turned and left. Lin Feng stared at him dismissively and thought, "Now, I really don't want to go to the Ying Sea."

As he thought about that, Lin Feng could feel a slight twitch in his heart. He asked with a smile, "What day is it today? Why is everyone completing their closed-door training today?"

A deep voice came from the outside of the Grand Heavens Pavilion. "Jieyu and his wife wishes to pay their compliments to you."

Lin Feng smiled and said, "There's no need for such formality, come in."

A big black man and a tall, white-robed woman walked into the Grand Heavens Pavilion. It was the Black Dragon Jieyu, who had taken a human form, and his wife, the White Dragon Baiguang

Lin Feng's gaze swept over Jieyu as he said, "Wow, not bad, you are already in your Intermediate Demonic Lord stage. You are very close to the Advanced Demonic Lord stage."

Jieyu shook his head hurriedly and said, "I'm no good, I can't progress to the Advanced Demonic Lord stage and hence, I have disappointed my lord."

Earlier, he obtained the entire remains of an Undying Demon Soul stage Yellow Dragon and he used it for cultivation. Hence, he easily progressed to the Intermediate Demonic Lord Stage. However, once he reached the peak of his Intermediate Demonic Lord Stage, his progress stopped and he entered a bottleneck.

The Advanced Demonic Lord stage was an inch away, but he was unable to reach it.

This made the Black Dragon depressed. He was 100% certain that had it been his wife, Baiguang, she would have advanced to the Advanced Demonic Lord stage with the help of the remains.

Baiguang looked pitifully at Jieyu. Both Jieyu and she knew that the reason he was stuck in a bottleneck was primarily due to his psychology, which had been affected by Baiguang.

Jieyu loved and feared his wife. In terms of cultivation, she was both his source of motivation and his source of pressure. The complex emotions he felt was unfathomable to outsiders.

"Never mind, it's fine," said Lin Feng, extending his palm forward. A few bright crystals shone in the center of his palm. From these crystals, one could feel waves of dragon aura, which rattled against the hearts of Jieyu and Baiguang.

"Dragon Scale Jades?" Jieyu blurted out. Baiguang too looked shocked. The crystals before them were from the scales of a Dragon King who had formed his Undying Demon Soul. After it was buried together with a bunch of rare minerals and then merged with them, it took on a new form when unearthed.

They carried the powerful essence and powers of the dragons and also perfectly absorbed the spiritual energy of other treasures. It was rarer than the normal scales of a Dragon King.

To dragons, these were extremely valuable treasures for cultivation.

Lin Feng carried these Dragon Scale Jade and said with a smile, "Since you had been doing your closed-door training earlier on, you may have missed out on this. Three years ago, our sect occupied a Middle World and named it the Celestial Wonders World."

Jieyu and Baiguang nodded their heads and said, "While we are unsure of the details, we heard many people in our sect mentioning it after we completed our closed-door training."

"The Celestial Wonders World is full of resources. Not only does our own sect use these resources, we use them to barter with other sects," Lin Feng said as he smiled and passed the Jade Dragon Scales to Jieyu. "This is what the Great Qin Empire traded us."

Jieyu and Baiguang were shocked. The Great Qin Empire occupied the Heavenly Dragon Ancient Land and naturally would have a stockpile of Dragon Scales Jade.

"Ma...master, how..." Jieyu almost wanted to happily take these Dragon Scale Jade but then, Baiguang shot a gaze at him. He then reacted and stuttered, "I don't deserve it, you have already given the remains of a Dragon King."

Lin Feng said casually, "You are loyal to our sect and hence, I will not ill-treat you. The same principle applies for Nine-Talons, the Kui Cow and the rest. When you were doing your closed door training, they obtained much benefits already. This is the reward you deserved."

Only then did Jieyu happily take these Dragon Scale Jades. He looked at Baiguang and decided that since he had received the remains earlier, these Dragon Scale Jades shall belong to his wife.

"These Dragon Scale Jades are yours. I have other arrangements for Baiguang," Lin Feng appeared to have seen through him. He then said, "These Dragon Scale Jades are meant for you to use after you had entered the Advanced Demonic Lord stage so that you can nurture your demonic powers and your cosmic form."

Jieyu and Baiguang were both shocked. Lin Feng said with a smile, "Later, after you had entered the Advanced Demonic Lord stage, I have something for the two of you to do. It could be seen as a task, or fate."

Baiguang thanked him profusely but with a slight hint of fear, "Master Lin, I..."

"There's nothing much for me to say right now. You will



understand when the time comes," Lin Feng waved his hand to interrupt her. Baiguang fell silent for a while and looked at her husband, Jieyu, by her side. She then nodded her head.

Jieyu probed, "My lord, you mentioned that I can only do the task after I had entered the Advanced Demonic Lord stage? But I..."

Lin Feng smiled and said, "I kind of know why are you in a bottleneck right now."

Hearing that, Jieyu lowered his head shamefully. Baiguang appeared slightly ashamed too.

Lin Feng said slowly, "Because I know, I shall show you the way. Follow my instructions and you will soon enter the Advanced Demonic Lord stage."

"My lord, what should I do?" Jieyu's eyes brightened and Baiguang too looked on expectantly. She was happy that her husband could progress even further.

Lin Feng pointed in the direction of the Inferno Precipice and said, "Go and find my disciple Xiao Yan, he can help you."

Hearing that, Jieyu said gratefully, "I shall repay my debt to the sect with my life!"

Baiguang too was grateful to Lin Feng, "Joining your sect is indeed a fateful and fortunate event for my husband."

# Chapter 709: Scapegoat!

---

Jieyu and his wife went to the Inferno Precipice filled with hope.

After they explained their purpose, Xiao Yan looked at Jieyu and handed him a medicine bottle and said, "Use it judiciously, as I factor in the inherent strength of your bodies, the medicine is more potent."

Before they came, Jieyu and wife predicted that the assistance Xiao Yan would render them would come in the form of medicines. This was because he was placed in charge of the medicine room and he was also the best pill-cultivator of the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

"Could it be some medicine that could help me break through the bottleneck in one shot?" Jieyu thought, "However, I'm a dragon. Medicines used by humans don't really work on me."

As he thought about, Jieyu took the medicine bottle and read its label.

"My...Love...For...A... Stick...Of...Firewood? What is this?" Jieyu opened his eyes and scratched his head in confusion. He looked quizzically at Xiao Yan. Next to him, Baiguang looked confused too.

Xiao Yan coughed drily and said, "After you use it, you will know. Erm... Baiguang can use it too, but the medicine is only for the two of you."

"Also, don't take it here or anywhere else on the mountain. Go back to your quiet chamber, close the door and then take it."

Jieyu said confusedly, "I will definitely take this medicine behind closed doors. Elder Xiao, you don't have to remind me of that."

Xiao Yan looked at him and said solemnly, "Everything I just said is important. However, what I'm about to say next is much more important."

Jieyu and Baiguang exchanged a glance and then said in unison, "What is it?"

"Regardless who take the medicine, the other one must be on scene. Especially after you take the medicine, the two of you must be together," Xiao Yan's expression was serious but he spoke with a stammer. "At the same time, there cannot be a third person."

Jieyu and Baiguang were even more confused. They tried to probe more information from Xiao Yan but he refused to say anything. All he did was to send them away.

As he watched the two of them leave, Xiao Yan could cold sweats breaking out on his back. He could taste something bitter in his mouth.

"I feel that this is really unreliable."

As Xiao Yan thought about it, he heard Shi Tianhao's loud voice from the Wasteland Valley. "You s\*um! You ate more than half of the Tao Wu I just hunted! How did it not choke you?"

"Eh? Is... Tun Tun back?" Xiao Yan was stunned for a while but he soon regained his sense.

In the past few years, Tun Tun spent more than half her time in the Celestial Wonders World, causing much headache for the household managers and the disciples of the Celestial Sect of Wonders training there.

The glutton was rather happy there as she could eat everything inside. As long as it brimmed with spiritual energy, she did not care whether it was hot or cold, or even dead or alive, she devoured everything happily.

Even during the Spiritual Conference of the Kunlun Mountains, Tun Tun did not come back because she was having too much fun inside.

However, Xiao Yan and Shi Tianhao heightened their sense of security. Every time Tun Tun returned to the sect, she would

ravage the beasts Shi Tianhao raised in the Wasteland Valley and the medicine room that Xiao Yan was in charge of.

If they lowered their guard, she could devour more than half of everything there.

Xiao Yan did not say anything. Instead, he headed straight for the Celestial Golden Pavilion. "I need to keep the medicines in the Celestial Golden Pavilion. If not, Tun Tun will eat every single one of them. Her appetite is getting bigger and bigger."

At that moment, the Wasteland Valley was in chaos. Shi Tianhao grabbed Tun Tun by her collar and lifted her in mid-air and snarled, "You are truly capable. You ate the Tao Wu I just hunted before I could even enjoy it."

The lifespan of a Tao Tie is much longer than that of a human. Hence, for Tun Tun who had formed her Demon Soul in the past few years, that was not a lot of time. Her human form was still that of a little girl, just that she appeared slightly older.

Through Lin Feng's and Xiao Yan's adjustment, Lin Tong could cultivate like a human. However, after she took up a human form, she aged as quickly as a normal human. Hence, she appeared much older than Tun Tun right now.

Tun Tun, whose collar was caught by Shi Tianhao, grunted.

The Tao Wu that Shi Tianhao had hunted and she ate was in the Demonic Saint stage. Tun Tun used her special Tao Tie ability, 'Devour', to eat it. However, she still needed time to digest it.

"It doesn't taste really good. If you want it, you can have the rest," Tun Tun made a face at Shi Tianhao.

With a 'swish', Shi Tianhao took out a giant bowl. The opening of the bowl was as vast as an ocean. Immediately, he threw Tun Tun into it.

"Rubbish, do you think I'll let you eat the entire Tao Wu?" Shi Tianhao smiled coldly at her. "You ate my Tao Wu, today I'll taste

Tao Tie."

"No! The flesh on my body is not the original flesh of a Tao Tie," Tun Tun shouted as she flailed and tried to escape from the bowl. As she reached its mouth, Shi Tianhao shoved her back inside.

Shi Tianhao stroked his chin and nodded, "The essence of the Tao Wu you just ate had not yet dissipated. If I eat your meat now, perhaps I can retrieve some of its essence."

Tun Tun bared her teeth at him and said, "Stop dreaming! I've digested it completely!"

In the Wasteland Valley, Huang Zhenting sat with her legs crossed. She cradled her head in her hands and sighed, "Aunt Tun Tun ate master's food again. This time, master threw her into a bowl. She will surely be punished. Why doesn't she learn?"

The successive disciples of the Wasteland Valley looked at him and laughed. Zhuge Wanqiu slapped his wrist gently and said, "How can you say anything about Aunt Tun Tun when you yourself were once in a similar predicament?"

The group of the them started to laugh. Suddenly, a giant tremor came from one of the many abodes in Mount Yujing. It was as if a fight was going on.

Tun Tun forgot that she was arguing with Shi Tianhao. She poked her head out of the bowl and asked, "What's going on? What's going on?"

In the next instant, Shi Tianhao slapped her back into the bowl. However, Shi Tianhao too turned his head over to look, "This feeling... it's as if two Nascent Soul stage cultivators, or two demons with their Demon Souls, are fighting."

"Oh, this energy feels like Demonic Energy to me, in this Demonic Energy, I could sense a trace of dragon too?" Shi Tianhao was hooked. "Are two dragons battling? On Mount Yujing, there are only Jieyu and his wife.

"Unless the two of them are fighting? These aura, it does not feel as if they are sparring, it feels like a real fight."

Tun Tun supported her weight using her elbows as she climbed to the mouth of the bowl. Hearing what Shi Tianhao said, she snorted, "Jieyu? Forget it, if his opponent is Sister Baiguang, he won't dare to retaliate. Retaliation will be more painful than just taking it."

Thinking about it after a while, Tun Tun appeared puzzled. "That's not right, that's really the direction of their abodes."

Shi Tianhao said slightly gleefully, "It appears that Jieyu is finally standing up for himself. Just like what master said, where there is oppression, there shall be resistance!"

With that, he slapped Tun Tun back into the bowl. Shi Tianhao smiled and said, "I'm going to watch the battle."

Shi Tianhao no longer cared about Tun Tun as he flew out of the Wasteland Valley. He arrived at Mount Yujing and was just about to head to their abodes when Xiao Yan, who had returned from the Celestial Golden Pavilion, stopped him.

"Hehe, Little Junior, please don't go," Xiao Yan coughed dryly. "We should not intervene in the private affairs between a couple."

Shi Tianhao asked curiously, "Big Senior, do you know anything about it?"

Xiao Yan shook his head awkwardly and said, "No, no, just that we should not intervene in others' private affairs."

As he said that, the Demonic Energy from the abode started to tone down. However, it was still present in the atmosphere, almost as if the battle had entered a stalemate.

After a while, the waves of Demonic Energy died down. Nearing the end, it burst forth once more before a final calm settled over.

Tun Tun and the rest came up to Xiao Yan and Shi Tianhao.

Everyone of them looked curiously in the direction of Jieyu's abode. Suddenly, a single wave of Demonic Energy began to spread. It felt immense.

Tun Tun, a demon herself, reacted immediately, "Is... is this the cosmic form one forms as one progresses from the Intermediate Demonic Lord stage to the Advanced Demonic Lord stage? This wave of Demonic Energy is coming not just from Sister Baiguang, but also Jieyu?"

"Something is wong?"

Xiao Yan's lower lips twitched. "Psychological reasons did cause the bottleneck..."

"Big Senior, what do you mean?" Shi Tianhao turned his head and Xiao Yan said, in a slightly mortified manner, "I think I should hide... I mean, I have other things to do. I need to go back to the Grand Heavens Pavilion to look for master. I'll see you later."

As he said that, he turned to leave. Before he could even take a single step, he heard an angry roar from behind him, "Xiao Yan, where do you think you are going!"

In the time it took for the words to fall, the speakers had arrived. A white and black shadowed appeared right before Xiao Yan and Shi Tianhao.

One of them was Jieyu, who had just progressed into the Advanced Demonic Lord stage. His entire body brimmed with the vitality of youth, but he was not gleeful. Instead, he appeared slightly embarrassed and awkward.

The other one was his wife, Baiguang. She stared angrily at Xiao Yan as she snarled, "Well done, you gave him something like that, what did you plan on doing?"

Baiguang was normally courteous to everyone and she would only rarely show her anger and violent side to Jieyu. For her to appear as such, it must mean that she was truly angry.

Xiao Yan smiled bitterly and turned around. He clasped his hands together and said, "Please don't be angry, all I want to do is help. I have no ill intention."

Baiguang said angrily, "Even so, you can't use such a medicine to trick us!"

Xiao Yan awkwardly scratched his head and said helplessly, "If... if I say that it's master's plan, do you believe me?"

"No!"

This time, both Jieyu and Baiguang said without any hesitation, "Impossible!"

Xiao Yan suddenly felt an urge to jump off the mountain.

"I know it will end up like this..."



## Chapter 710: Let's See How You Escape!

---

At that point, Xiao Yan wanted to cry but suddenly, he thought of something very important.

Earlier, Lin Feng only told him about this task verbally. He did not give anything, not even an instruction. Xiao Yan had to come up with everything himself.

In other words, let's not even talk about whether the others believe Lin Feng or him, even if he wanted to prove that it was Lin Feng's intentions, he had nothing concrete to show for it.

Now, as he faced Jieyu and his wife, who stared at him slightly contemptuously, he knew that they thought that he was trying to blame his master for his own misdeed. This made him appear even more shameless.

Coming to this realization, Xiao Yan almost broke down in tears as he thought, "This time, there's no way I can explain myself."

He turned his head to look at Shi Tianhao, who looked lost. He did not appear to have understood the situation at all.

Helplessly, Xiao Yan lowered his head. He had no choice but to be a scapegoat this time. Right now, he had an urge to cry in wind as he thought, "Everyone says that Little Junior is becoming more and more devious and similar to master. However, looking at it now, Little Junior looks as innocent as a baby."

Dejectedly, he wringed his hands and said, "It's alright, it's alright. I was reckless, please forgive me."

Jieyu clasped his hands together and came before Baiguang and said with a slight smile, "Dear, Elder Xiao did so out of good intentions...."

Baiguang's eyes widened as she glared at him. Jieyu felt as if his breath was stuck in his throat, but he continued to mumble, "I'm not the only one who took it, you took it too..."

"You still dare to talk about it!" Baiguang's face turned slightly red. She was both angry and embarrassed. Jieyu raised his hands hurriedly in defeat as he said, "Ok, ok, we won't talk about it."

Jieyu took out the little bottle and shamefully passed it to Xiao Yan and said, "Elder Xiao, I think this belongs to you."

Baiguang said fiercely, "Why are you still holding onto it? It should have been destroyed instantly."

Xiao Yan took the medicine bottle and secretly telepathically asked Jieyu, "Has the problem been completely solved? I really have no ill intention. The reason why you are unable to progress to the Advanced Demonic Lord stage is mainly psychological, and a good part of it was because of your wife."

"You need to continue loving her but stop fearing her. This is beneficial not only to your cultivation, but also to your marital life. However, the reason why you broke through the bottleneck and progress into the Advanced Demonic Lord stage was not because... not because you and your wife made love."

Jieyu blushed and said, "Now I know, don't worry, the problem has been solved. Actually, I was only a paper screen away and once I broke through that, all is fine."

Xiao Yan nodded his head and said, "That's good, that's good, and it's partially because of me too."

"Yes, yes, we were slightly angry because we felt cheated. However, thinking about it, we really must thank Elder Xiao."

The two of them shared a dry laugh. However, it was still awkward.

At that moment, Xiao Yan felt a weight on his hand. It was Tun Tun, who grabbed the porcelain medicine bottle.

Xiao Yan arched his eyebrows and asked, "What the hell do you want?"

Tun Tun said unhappily, "I want this medicine too!"

"Kekekekekekekeke!"

After she said that, Xiao Yan, Jieyu and Baiguang almost choked on their saliva.

"Stop talking nonsense, do you know what is this?" Xiao Yan was not sure whether to laugh or cry. "My side is messy enough as it is, please don't create any more trouble for me."

Tun Tun snorted unhappily, "Why does that old Black Dragon get the good stuff but not me?"

Jieyu laughed into the sky, "Good... good stuff? Right, it is really some good stuff....ow!"

Baiguang, who was next to him, elbowed him. Jieyu was unable to speak for a while. Baiguang smiled bitterly and said to Tun Tun, "Tun Tun, this really isn't something good."

Tun Tun mumbled, "I know, whenever Jieyu meets with any sort of trouble, Sister Baiguang will protect him."

"I really don't know what does 'My Love For A Stick Of Firewood' do, but I can see that Jieyu is only able to progress from the Intermediate Demonic Lord stage to the Advanced Demonic Lord stage thanks to this pill."

Xiao Yan's face was complex and Jieyu looked embarrassed. Baiguang was almost bright red. The three of them looked at each other as they were completely at a loss as to how should they rebut her.

Tun Tun looked please with herself as she snatched a full medicine bottle over and said, "I want this medicine to advance too!"

She made a face at Jieyu and said, "Even this hen-pecked old dragon is in the Advanced Demonic Lord stage while I am still in the Beginner Demonic Lord Stage. How can this be? Before my

physical body was destroyed, I was already in the Demonic Lord stage and this old dragon had yet to form his Demon Soul. Then, he was still in the Demonic Commander stage."

Different types of demons would meet with different types of problems during cultivation due to their different make-up.

For some demons, they may be full of potential when they were borne, but they did not possess any level of cultivation. They needed to cultivate step-by-step to improve their mastery level, which had nothing to do with that of their parents.

However, for other demons, if their parents had a high level of mastery, the child they create would be a powerful demon since birth. At birth, some of them could be in the Demonic Commander, or even Demonic Lord stage.

Tun Tun was one of these examples. Her father was a Undying Demon Soul Second Level Tao Tie Grand Sage and her mother was the Purple Zephyr Tao Tie Demonic Lord, who was in the peak of her Advanced Demonic Lord stage. Hence, when they gave birth to Tun Tun, she was already in the Beginner Demonic Lord stage.

Due to this special trait of demons, they may appear much more powerful than Shi Tianhao who was only in the Foundation Establishment when he was born. However, Nature had its balances and while Tun Tun appeared powerful, her path of cultivation was filled with difficulties.

First of all, for these demons who could inherit their parents' powers, reproduction was extremely difficult for them. It was even more difficult to do so than for pure-bred dragons to reproduce.

Tun Tun's parents lived for almost ten thousand ears but they only gave birth to her. The entire Tao Tie tribe could only count a few members amongst themselves.

Then, for demons such as Tun Tun, while they brimmed with potential, they would require a lot of cultivation afterwards to

advance to the next stage. It was at least a hundred times more difficult for her compared to any other ordinary demons.

This situation would only get better after she advanced to the Undying Demon Soul stage.

Here, she was radically different from Shi Tianhao and other human cultivators.

Hence, for demons such as Tun Tun, they would be stuck in a very awkward situation.

For example, for a demon that was in the Demonic Commander stage at birth, he could look down on other demons of his generation. However, it was extremely difficult for him to advance and he could only be a Demonic Commander for his entire life. In the end, he may be surpassed by those he formerly looked down on.

While the lifespan of demons were longer than that of humans, their lifespan would still be limited if they did not form their Demon Soul. As they watched themselves approached the end of their lives without having formed their Demon Soul, the bitterness and desperation they would feel is unimaginable.

Many demons who were born with potential shared this fate.

To get something, one must give something up in the meantime too.

At birth, they could reach heights that others may not reach despite many years of cultivation. In their youths, they would demonstrate exceptional powers.

However, the price of doing so was a much more difficult cultivation path.

As to whether it was a blessing or a curse, it was entirely dependent on one's progress later in life. If one was able to overcome all difficulties and form one's Undying Demon Soul, then they may be on the same level as ordinary demons.

However, Tun Tun was already in the Beginner Demonic Lord stage at birth. This was a rarely-seen situation even within the Tao Tie tribe and she was much more powerful compared to her friends who were Demonic Generals or Demonic Commanders at birth.

At the same time, however, it was much more difficult for her to improve. One could say that even if she were given an entire ocean's worth of resources, without luck, she would be permanently stuck as a Demonic Lord.

From a certain perspective, when she destroyed her body initially and was left with only a remnant soul, this caused her powers to fall but also allowed her to break free from the chains Fate had placed on her. Now, it was much easier for Tun Tun to advance compared to before her physical body was destroyed.

Blessing and curse are different sides of the same coin. This could be Fate's hand in play.

However, compared to other demons, Tun Tun would still find progressing extremely difficult. Hence, when she saw Jieyu progressing from the Intermediate Demonic Lord stage to the Advanced Demonic Lord stage because of the pills in the medicine bottle, she began to covet it

Upon obtaining the medicine bottle, Tun Tun was elated.

Xiao Yan smiled bitterly and said, "I can only tell her the truth. If not, the real nightmare will begin after she takes the medicine."

Baiguang's face was so red that it appeared as if she was bleeding. Jieyu smiled bitterly like Xiao Yan. However, there was no other way to do so. To prevent Tun Tun from getting into more trouble, all he could do was to telepathically communicate the truth to Tun Tun.

Hearing that, Tun Tun's eyes widened and she appeared slightly dazed.

After a long while, she regained her sense. She swept Xiao Yan and Jieyu with her eyes and snorted, "I don't believe you."

She looked at Baiguang and asked, "Sister Baiguang, is what they say true?"

Xiao Yan and Jieyu looked helplessly at Baiguang, who sighed and said quietly, "Tun Tun, behave, this is really a 'dirty' thing."

Tun Tun's eyes widened and she said, "So it's real?"

"It's real! It's real!" Xiao Yan, Jieyu and Baiguang nodded their heads vigorously.

Who knew that Tun Tun burst out laughing, "Hahaha! That's good! That's really good!"

Xiao Yan smiled bitterly and said, "Why don't you believe us?"

Tun Tun stopped laughing and smiled gleefully, "I believe, but I don't believe you, I only believe Sister Baiguang."

Xiao Yan and the rest were perplexed. "Then, why do you still..."

Tun Tun swallowed the medicine bottle, but it was not to each the medicine. Instead, she temporarily stored it inside her.

Then, she placed her hands on her hips and said with a smile, "While it's not for cultivation, which is regretful, to me this is better than a cultivation pill!"

Tun Tun danced with her fist in the air as she chuckled gleefully, "With a 'My Love For A Stick Of Firewood', let's see how you escape, Dark Aqua Xuanming! Hahahahaha!"

Xiao Yan, "..."

Jieyu, "...."

Baiguang, "..."

# Chapter 711: Ready to Move Out!

---

As he looked at Tun Tun laugh, Lin Feng, who was sitting in the Grand Heavens Pavilion, did not know what to say.

"You..." Lin Feng shook his head as he did not know whether he should laugh or cry. Then, he began to think seriously if he should confiscate the medicine bottle from Tun Tun for fears that she may ruin the Dark Aqua Xuanming's life

Jieyu's advancement into the Advanced Demonic Lord stage and Tun Tun's return to Mount Yujing were both small matters for the Celestial Sect of Wonders and Mount Yujing

On Lin Feng's side, there were many things that he needed to do.

While Xiao Yan and the rest went to refine their mantras and instruct their own disciples, they also needed to look after the new Foundational disciples.

As the Celestial Sect of Wonders continued its upward trend and the successive disciples started to enter the Foundation Establishment stage one-by-one, the Foundational disciples were mainly taught by Liu Xiaofeng, Zhuge Wanqiu and the other successive disciples.

Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and the other immediate disciples would occasionally pop down and give lectures, which were targeted at both Foundational disciples and successive disciples.

However, after the Spiritual Conference of the Kunlun Mountains had ended, as they had recently concluded their sect-opening ceremony, many new disciples with no foundation joined the sect. Hence, Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and the rest were personally involved in the training of these Foundational disciples.

In this process, they too sought to understand the calibre of these disciples.

"In the third sect-opening ceremony, there were many more



talented disciples than the previous two sect-opening ceremonies," said Xiao Yan sincerely. "The top two may be even better than Yuncong in the future."

In comparison to the previous two sect-opening ceremonies, the Celestial Sect of Wonders was much more famous and prestigious right now. Coupled with a bit of luck, the third sect-opening ceremony could be seen as the best in the sect's history.

Yue Hongyan smiled and said, "You are referring to Tang Jun and Han Yang, right?"

Shi Tianhao said cheekily, "Big Senior wants Tang Jun, right? Hehe, a Natural Fire-Type Entity and a Fire Lord Body, I recall that such an individual had only appeared once in the history of the entire Grand Celestial World, and that was in the Antiquity Age."

Tang Jun and Han Yang both went through the trial of the Heart-Revealing Steps. Their performances were the best and Tang Jun himself already possessed the mastery of a Foundation Establishment stage cultivator, which was the highest amongst all Foundational disciples who joined the sect then.

While he was only 15, his potential was exceptional.

Xiao Yan said honestly, "The kid's innate ability is special, and he has a good mindset too, which I respect."

He paused for a while and then said, "However, he seems to carry some sort of secret with him. Master mentioned that he may be working for either the Great Zhou Empire or the Lei Family."

The few disciples nodded their heads. They were all on Mount Yujing but in unison, they cast their gaze onto the Yun Peak.

A light image was projected from there. At the moment, it showed a young boy who was no older than ten. He appeared elegant and his gaze was bright. While he was still a child, one knew that he would become handsome when he grew up.

The young boy was called Han Yang. His performance on the

Heart-Revealing Step was as exceptional as Tang Jun's and way superior to everyone else's. Initially, when Zhu Yi brought him back to Mount Yujing, it was a rather interesting affair as he had previously been a beggar.

He was intelligent and observant. While he was young, he was full of ideas.

However, he had some personality flaws too. If he wished, he could get along well with many people. However, Han Yang's personality was rather proud and it appeared that he would only befriend those who took the initiative to befriend him first.

Shi Tianhao smiled and said, "I wonder who will he join, I kind of like him."

The others all ribbed him, "You really are not bad, eh? Not only did you scam Huang Zhenting, you want to scam another one now? Or did Huang Zhenting disappoint you? Do you want to produce a troublemaker like yourself."

Shi Tianhao laughed and said nothing. He looked at Zhu Yi and said, "You brought him back Second Senior, don't you like him?"

Zhu Yi said with a smile, "He is innately good and like a piece of rough jade. He is still young and with the right guidance and cultivation, he will surely become someone respectable."

With that, Zhu Yi noticed suddenly noticed that Luo Qingwu was staring straight at Han Yang.

"What's the matter, Junior Luo?" Everyone else noticed what she was doing.

Luo Qingwu regained her senses and said slightly hesitantly, "Earlier on, when I instructed the Foundational disciples, Han Yang feels special to me. How can I describe it? I feel a sense of familiarity with him."

The few of them looked at each other. Zhu Yi fell silent and said after a while, "Do you mean that you believe that he has potential

to become a sword cultivator?"

Luo Qingwu nodded her head and said, "Senior Zhu is right, I feel that he will do well as a sword cultivator."

"Junior Luo is too cunning," said Shi Tianhao with a smile. "You are hinting that you want him as your disciple."

Luo Qingwu smiled and said, "There's no need for hints, I genuinely believe that I am fated to be his master. Furthermore, now that I have no disciple, my first disciple should someone special, right? Hence, thank you seniors for letting me have my way here!"

Xiao Yan smiled and said, "It's up to the disciples to choose us first, and only then can we assess them. If he doesn't choose you, then there's nothing you can do too."

Luo Qingwu stuck out her tongue and made a face at Xiao Yan. "Senior Xiao Yan, please don't bully me. I know that when you guys give lectures, you are subtly trying to get the disciples you want to feel a sense of closeness to you so that they may eventually ask you to be their master."

The few of them began to laugh.

Yang Qing looked at the light projection, which showed the group of disciples on Yun Peak. "This batch of disciples are all not bad, other than Tang Jun and Han Yang who are the best, the rest are of decent calibre too."

Wang Lin, who was by his side, nodded his head and pointed to a few of them "That girl, that brother and sister pair and the youth are all good too."

Li Yuanfang said, "Meng Honglou, Ye Xinhui, Ye Xinxuan, Tan Yunqing."

Luo Qingwu smiled and said, "Zhou Yuncong, Xu Yunsheng, now there's a Tan Yunqing. Haha, I wonder why do so many disciples have the name 'Yun' in their name."

Yue Hongyan smiled slightly and said, "Yunsheng learns from his mistake, Yuncong is exceptional, if Tan Yunqing proves to be exceptional in the future, then our Celestial Sect of Wonders would have 'Three Yuns'. That'll be interesting."

Xiao Yan said, "After this spiritual conference, disciples who performed well can take in their own disciples too. At that time, there can be two benchmarks when we assess the successive disciples in the future. Those who pass the higher benchmark can become second-generation disciples while those who pass the lower benchmark can become third-generation disciples."

Zhu Yi said too, "Other than Sixth Junior and Junior Luo, everyone can name the disciples who they think is capable of taking in disciples of their own. For my Heavenly Temple, I name Ying Luozha."

Xiao Yan said, "I name Liu Xiafeng."

"Tian Quan."

"Zhao Huan."

"Zhuge Wanqiu."

There was only Yang Qing left. He shook his head and said, "If Yuncong wants to take in disciples, he must at least form his aurous core and pass the Tribulation of the Yin Fire."

Xiao Yan and the rest nodded their heads in agreement.

In the Grand Heavens Pavilion, Lin Feng smiled as he listened to their discussions. "They are getting a good eye for talent."

Unlike Xiao Yan and the rest, Lin Feng could see the values of their four traits.

The main harvest of this sect-opening ceremony was Tang Jun and Han Yang, whose total values were 30 and higher, reaching prodigious levels!

The others, such as Tan Yunqing, Meng Honglou and the Ye

siblings were exceptional talents too. The harvest of third sect-opening ceremony was superior to the ones before them.

"Zhou Yuncong, Tang Jun, Han Yang, Huang Zhenting and Yang Tie," thought Lin Feng, "The second generation of disciples had enough talents. The next group of talents should be reserved for the third generation."

As he thought about that, he summoned Xiao Yan and the rest to see him in the Grand Heavens Pavilion.

"So, what plans do you have" Lin Feng asked upon seeing them. Xiao Yan and the rest looked at each other. Xiao Yan replied first, "Other than instructing them, nothing much."

"I plan to bring Yunsheng to the Great Zhou Empire to retrieve his sister," answered Zhu Yi.

Wang Lin fell silent for a while and said, "I want to go into the Void Battleground and find out more about the Hall of the Dead." The Advanced Nascent Soul stage cultivator who butchered his family members remained at large.

Yue Hongyan answered, "I am going to do closed-door training and further study the mantra and cultivate my mana in preparation for soul formation."

Yang Qing thought for a while and said, "Other than continuing to instruct Yuncong, there's nothing much I have in mind."

Li Yuanfang replied, "I have nothing in mind too, I plan to either instruct the Foundational disciples or do my own training."

There was no trace of a smile on Shi Tianhao's face as he said, "I plan to enter the Void Battleground with Third Senior. There has been no news of my parents and my grandfather hasn't returned from the Void Battleground for three years already."

Luo Qingwu replied, "Nothing much for me too. Through this spiritual conference, I was able to use the Ten Terrestrial Yin-Terminating Sword in person. From that, I have some new

revelations that I need to consolidate."

Lin Feng nodded his head and said, "I've mentioned to you earlier that the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea are about to appear. While we have the rough timing, we aren't sure exactly when would they appear. Hence, to prevent ourselves from missing out on this occasion, those with nothing to do can follow me to the Ying Sea and familiarize yourselves with the environment there."

"Wang Lin and Tianhao, go to the Void Battleground and do what you must. It's alright if you miss out on the voyage to the Ying Sea. In any case, you won't be short-changed," said Lin Feng. Wang Lin and Shi Tianhao smiled.

"Hongyan, focus on your closed-door training and Qingwu, while you consolidate your knowledge about your new move, the teaching of the Foundational disciples will be temporarily placed under your charge for now. It is a form of training for you too."

Hearing that, Luo Qingwu said, "Yes, master."

Lin Feng nodded his head and pointed at Xiao Yan, Yang Qing and Li Yuanfang. "The three of you, get your stuff and prepare to go to the Ying Sea."

Then he looked at Zhu Yi and said, "We'll go with you as we will pass by the Great Zhou. First, we will resolve Yunsheng's problem, then we'll head out to the sea."

Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi, Yang Qing and Li Yuanfang nodded their heads and said, "Yes, master."

## Chapter 712: Go Up Righteously and Ask

---

After Lin Feng had made the necessary arrangements for his disciples, he smiled and said, "Speaking about it, we have someone here who knows the eastern sea rather well."

He telepathically sent a message and in the next instant, the Kui Cow King morphed into a hunk and arrived before everyone else.

Xiao Yan and the rest were shocked upon seeing him. The group of Kui Cows that lived in the Wasteland Valley of Mount Yujing were subdued by Lin Feng some time ago in the Kunlun Mountains. However, they did not use to live in the Kunlun Mountains, but instead in Mount Liubo 7000 li away from the eastern sea.

The Kui Cow King was their leader when they were living on Mount Liubo, they were instructed by an Immortal Soul stage cultivator known as the Flowing Waves Holy Man. At the same time, they cultivated their own skills. Since they were in his debt, the Kui Cows viewed him as their master.

After the Flowing Waves moved to the Kunlun Mountains, the Kui Cows followed him to the western interior, leaving the sea in the east.

However, they lost contact with the Flowing Waves Holy Man. The group of Kui Cows guarded the sapling of the Saros Steel Tree he had planted and that was when they met Lin Feng.

After the Kui Cow King arrived, he bowed to Lin Feng and then to Xiao Yan and the rest. After he listened to Lin Feng's orders, he smiled happily and said, "My lord cares so much for me, I am truly grateful to you."

Xiao Yan smiled and said, "As the adage goes, the old horse knows the way (Translator's Note: This comes from a well-known Chinese proverb). For us, it appears that the old cow knows the way."

Everyone began to laugh. The Kui Cow King looked at Lin Feng and said implored sincerely, "My lord, I am old and have experienced many things in my life. While I had left the eastern sea for a long time, I can still live with this separation. However, many younger members of my tribe miss their home, I wonder if it's possible to bring them along?"

"Once they reach the eastern sea, we can let them be. I won't allow them to venture into the Ying Sea, for fear of affecting your work."

Lin Feng smiled and said, "There's no need to be so anxious. There's still some time from now till the appearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea. Unless they appear ahead of time, we will probably be early when we reach."

The Kui Cow King said happily, "Thank you master for your understanding."

Lin Feng's telepathically projected a message out once again and soon, Jieyu and Baiguang appeared before him.

Upon seeing Lin Feng, Baiguang was slightly embarrassed while Jieyu looked on awkwardly. Jieyu appeared to be unsure where should he place his hands.

"Earlier, I mentioned that once you overcome your bottleneck and achieve the Advanced Demonic Lord stage, I have something for the two of you to do." Lin Feng did not make any reference to what had transpired earlier as if he knew nothing about it. Then, he said, "Now, the time is ripe. Come with me."

Jieyu and Baiguang looked at each other. Jieyu bowed and said, "Yes, my lord."

Baiguang looked slightly hesitant as she asked softly, "Can I come along too?"

She did not mean to defy his orders. In her time on the mountain, she was well taken care of by the Celestial Sect of



Mountains. Her husband, Jieyu, was almost single-handedly by Lin Feng, and he managed to advance from the Intermediate Demonic Lord stage to the Advanced Demonic Lord stage in such a short time.

In Baiguang's heart she was extremely thankful to Lin Feng. However, it was because of that, she was slightly anxious too.

After all, strictly speaking, while Jieyu completely freed himself from the Great Void Sect to join the Celestial Sect of Wonders, she herself originated from the Great Void Sect Dragon Pond. Hence, for anything that concerned the inner secrets of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, it was best for her to avoid.

Lin Feng smiled and said, "It's alright. For this task, it is an excellent opportunity for the two of you."

"Naturally, for the Celestial Sect of Wonders, it brings about many benefits too."

As Lin Feng himself said it, Baiguang clasped her fists together and said, "Yes, my lord. I will listen to your order."

Lin Feng nodded and said, "The Three Mountains of the Ying Sea are about to appear. I will bring my disciples to the East Sea to familiarize them with the environment. The two of you, come along."

Jieyu and Baiguang appeared pensive upon hearing the news, but they bowed and agreed.

Lin Feng then turned his head to look at Xiao Yan. He said with a smile, "Zhen'er has never left the Mountain. If she wishes, she can come along."

Hearing that, Xiao Yan smiled and said, "Thank you master!"

"If that's the case, make the necessary arrangements and we will soon be off." As Lin Feng said that, a split appeared in the void before them and Miao Shihao walked out, smiling. He said, "Hey, my lord, I know it! For such a big event like the appearance of the

Three Mountains of the Ying Sea, how can you miss it?"

He turned his head to look at Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi, Jieyu and the rest and sighed, "Even if others are coming along, it's alright. That will not stop my lord and I from having fun in the East Sea."

Xiao Yan and the rest shivered slightly and cast their gazes elsewhere. It was almost as if they feared that Miao Shihao's unhealthy obsession with Lin Feng may next be projected onto them.

Lin Feng's expression did not change. "Shihao, you just formed your cosmic form and you should stay on Mount Yujing to continue cultivating your mana. If you need anything from the Ying Sea, tell me and I'll bring it back for you."

Miao Shihao smiled coyly and shook his head, "How can I do that? For such an interesting event, how can I miss it? Even if I can't find what I need, the entire trip will be worth it if I could tour the East Sea with you, my lord."

He inhaled, closed his eyes and said drunkenly, "My lord, think about it. Blue waves underneath a bright moon with a clear and refreshing sea breeze....oh! Thinking about it makes me joyful beyond measure."

Many in the group twitched their lips and smiled drily while nodding their heads, "Hur hur, yes, yes..."

Lin Feng's expression was calm as he said, "Do you really want to go?"

Miao Shihao nodded and said, "Of course."

"You are fickle-minded. Normally, you will say something and completely forget about it after a while, doing something entirely different," said Lin Feng neutrally.

Miao Shihao thumped his chest and said, "That's for other things. In this voyage to the East Sea, your brother Shihao has decided! I will not waver in my decision! As a sect guardian, how can I do

nothing every day?"

For such an important even like the appearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea, which can completely change the geopolitical outlook of the human cultivation realm, our sect cannot sit by and do nothing. I intend on doing something for our sect. My lord, please don't worry, if I say I want to go, I will naturally go."

Listening to Miao Shihao's boasts, Xiao Yan and the rest of them looked on disdainfully. "Hmph!"

"Oh, so that's the case," Lin Feng said, nodding his head. "Shihao, if that's what you truly think, then I'm naturally elated."

"You have much experience and having you along will be greatly helpful. I can take solace in that fact."

Miao Shihao covered his lips and whimpered happily, "Aiyah, my lord, you finally come around..."As he said that, he suddenly paused in shock.

He noticed that next to Lin Feng, the void split open. A tall, bronzed-skin, young man clad in purple stepped out and stood next to Lin Feng.

This bronzed-skin young man in purple looked completely different from Lin Feng. Even the aura he emitted was different. However, the mana from his body was almost identical to Lin Feng's, even though his had other elements in it

It belonged to the eternal and indestructible power of the Saros Steel Tree.

It was Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar. After many years of cultivation in the Heavenly Cosmic Ray World, the Steel Tree Avatar was in its Advanced Nascent Soul stage. It was only a single step away from the Immortal Soul stage.

An ominous feeling arose in Miao Shihao's heart. Then, he heard Lin Feng say calmly, "For this voyage to the East Sea, I will not go

ahead personally first as I have many things to attend to on Mount Yujing. If there's no need, I will not go."

"Hence, for this trip to the East Sea to excavate the mysteries of the Ying Sea, my Steel Tree Avatar will go with you."

With that, Lin Feng nodded to the group of them and he disappeared. Xuan Li, expressionless as always and still carrying a huge scabbard, disappeared too.

The Steel Tree Avatar said, as if nothing had happened, "Everyone make your own preparations. We'll leave after a day."

Miao Shihao stood there, dumbfounded. His eyeballs rolled slightly and he stared at the Steel Tree Avatar for a long while. Finally, he forced a smile and said, "Master, can you not leave the avatar on the mountain while you yourself come along?"

Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar smiled and said, "What's wrong? We are telepathically linked."

Miao Shihao appeared lost as he said, "Nothing is wrong, nothing is wrong."

He then looked at the Steel Tree Avatar and mumbled quietly, "Everything is wrong. This is terrible. This doesn't fit my taste at all, despite the two of them being telepathically linked."

"Master, I suddenly feel that my mana is acting up, I want to continue cultivating on the mountain..." Miao Shihao tried to ask. Then, he saw Lin Feng staring back at him calmly while Xiao Yan and the rest tried to hide their laughter.

Miao Shihao looked as if the energy had been sucked out of him. He stared into the sky and said, "It's fine, it's fine, I'll see how it goes."

As he looked at Miao Shihao's disappointed silhouette leaving, Xiao Yan and the rest wanted to laugh but they dared not to. They all too much pain to hide their smiles. Shi Tianhao asked curiously, "Master, how do you that Mr Miao... do not like your

Steel Tree Avatar?"

"Doesn't Mr Miao like those masculine and manly types? By right, your Steel Tree Avatar fits his taste exactly."

After interacting with Miao Shihao for long, everyone knew about his tastes and preferences.

Lin Feng smiled and pointed to Li Yuanfang and said, "In all the time Shihao had spent cultivating over these few years, he would occasionally wander about the sect in his breaks. When he met Yuanfang, he said that Yuanfang is not his type."

Li Yuanfang's normally serious, dark face looked awkward as he laughed bitterly and said, "I am lucky in this regard."

Lin Feng smiled and said, "Do you see any similarity between my Steel Tree Avatar and Yuanfang?"

Shi Tianhao came to a sudden realization, "Skin color! Both have dark skin color that looked like bronze. So that's why! Mr Miao liked people with pale skin!"

The group of them laughed and shook their heads. Xiao Yan stroked his chin and said, "Master, why not change your own skin color?"

Lin Feng flicked his head and said, "That's useless, with his skills, he would know that I have changed it."

After they had their fun, everyone went to do their preparations. After everything was settled, they headed towards the East Sea under the leadership of Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar.

The first stop of this voyage was the capital of the Great Zhou Empire, Tianjing City.

Xu Yunsheng followed by Zhu Yi's side as he thought, "I wonder what grandmaster and master have in mind."

He looked at Zhu Yi and said, "Master, I'm scared that I will arouse the suspicion of the Great Zhou and hence, I did not dare to

do my own investigations. I have absolutely no clue as to where my sister is and I don't know where to start."

Zhu Yi placed his hands behind his back as he said calmly, "There's no need to search secretly. All we need to do is to righteously go up and ask. After all, we are not in the wrong."

# Chapter 713: We Are Here for Her

---

"We can directly go and ask for her," Zhu Yi said calmly. He said it simply in a straightforward tone.

Xu Yunsheng fell silent. After a long while, he shook his head and laughed. He was normally serious and thorough, but because of his upbringing he was forced to be slightly cunning. While he has many thoughts in his mind, he was not open about them.

Hence, according to his own mentality, he only thought of secretly saving her. However, he had forgotten that his own master and grandmaster were both very decisive.

Lin Feng liked to plan before he act and take every factor into consideration. However, once he had decided something, he would do it without any hesitation.

Zhu Yi was gentlemanly and chivalrous. He knew about the many devious ways to do something but he was uninterested in using them. If he were to do something, he would do so openly and righteously. If justice was on his side, it was even better.

For Xu Yunsheng, if he were to do it, it would be extremely difficult. As a spy of the Great Zhou Empire, he could not wriggle free from the control of the Great Zhou and save his sister even if he had an unlimited amount of items the Great Zhou Empire coveted. Hence, without any room for movement, he could only allow himself to be manipulated by others.

However, Lin Feng and Zhu Yi were different. To them, a family member of a second-generation disciple had been kidnapped. They could just ask for her directly.

Zhu Yi did as he said. When he reached Tianjing City, he went to his residence in its outskirts and settled there. Then, he sent the household manager of his residence to Liang Yuan, the Crown Prince of the Great Zhou Empire, to invite him over.

He signed off his invitation as the Xuan Yi Master, Zhu Yi, of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. The meaning was clear; he did not come in the capacity of a subject inviting the Crown Prince over, but instead in his capacity as a cultivator seeking to meet with a fellow Daoist.

When Liang Yuan received the invitation, he was unsure why was he invited. After he knew that Zhu Yi brought his disciple, Xu Yunsheng, to the Great Zhou Empire, his heart sank and he knew that even though it would not be a pleasant encounter, he still had to make the trip down.

When the two of them met, Zhu Yi said without directly, "My disciple, Xu Yunsheng, said that his sister, Xu Miaoying, is under the care of the Great Zhou Empire for many years. Today, I'm here to retrieve her to allow the two of them to reunite."

"For such a happy occasion, I am sure that you will not refuse."

Liang Yuan raised his head to look at Xu Yunsheng and said nothing. The Great Zhou Empire cultivators whom he brought along looked on darkly.

Xu Yunsheng said uneasily, "For such a small personal affair, isn't it too troublesome to get so many people? After all, the person in charge of this matter on the Great Zhou Empire's side is the Crown Prince Liang Yuan."

Even though he would have to undergo the ten years of hard labor, Xu Yunsheng was filled with love for his own sect till the point he felt uneasy and regretful that the Celestial Sect of Wonders would come into conflict with the Great Zhou Empire over his sister. This was not in his sect's favor.

Liang Yuan looked at Zhu Yi with a heavy expression and said, "Could there be a misunderstanding here? To what I know, the disciple of the Xuan Yi Master comes from the Great Qin Empire, which has never gotten along well with us, the Great Zhou Empire. It may sound slightly ludicrous but now, even when both the Great



Zhou and the Great Qin are in the same camp, there is still tension between the two of us."

What he meant was that he did not believe that Xu Yunsheng's sister was under their control. Instead, it was a trap by the Great Qin Empire to stir conflict between the Great Zhou and the Celestial Sect.

Liang Yuan looked at Zhu Yi with an odd gaze. He did not expect that after Xu Yunsheng's identity was exposed, Zhu Yi and the Celestial Sect of Wonders did not eliminate him but instead, brought Xu Yunsheng along to the Great Zhou Empire.

On the other hand, Liang Yuan's heart was filled with regret. Looking at the situation now, Xu Yunsheng was utterly useless to him.

Hearing that, Zhu Yi's expression did not change. He raised his right hand and gently tapped on his forehead and asked, "Do you not know of what we speak?"

A beam of light shot from his forehead and clouds enveloped half the room. The clouds rolled and from within, one could hear conversations.

"How confident are you of becoming the First Disciple?"

"Your performance daily plays an important part. Other than that, the internal competition in the sect is important too. Other than sparring with members of the same sect, you must also prove yourself against members of other sects."

"Master and the rest will be watching the fight intensely and consider its outcome thoroughly to see who performs the best."

"Do your own preparations and prove yourself when the time comes, you do not need to worry about anything else."

"We will take care of the sparring between the various powers and we will try our best to help you become the First Disciple. However, you yourself must play a part too."

One of the speaker was Xu Yunsheng. It was very clear who the other speaker was.

Liang Yuan arched his eyebrows. He overheard the entire conversation as he was right next to it when it happened. He was very clear on its content.

Looking at it now, Xu Yunsheng was exposed way earlier than he had thought. The Mana Trace Zhu Yi had placed on him did not reveal itself normally but once Xu Yunsheng used Voice-Projecting Crystals or any other magic items to communicate, Zhu Yi's Mana Trace would react and record the conversation.

Zhu Yi's gaze calmly swept through the group of cultivators behind Liang Yuan. Finally, his gaze fell upon the cultivator surnamed Shao.

"The mana from the conversation appears similar to our friend here."

The Nascent Soul stage cultivator surnamed Shao said nothing. If he were to really show off his mana to verify, it would match.

Zhu Yi smiled and said, "Can it really be that you know nothing it, Daoist Liang? Then, it's an action that you had taken on your own accord. Even so, it's fine. It doesn't matter if you want to report it or not, but now that I'm here, shouldn't you explain everything to Daoist Liang here?"

"If you don't report it now, then you are deliberately setting a trap for your master, which is a capital offence."

Zhu Yi's tone was calm but every single of his words were as sharp as knives.

Xu Yunsheng looked to the side and realized suddenly, "Unless master kills Liang Yuan, this will not result in an all-out conflict between our sect and the Great Zhou Empire."

"Neither Grandmaster nor the Zhou Emperor Liang Pan, or even the Marquis of Xuanji, would intervene in this."

Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar and the rest were resting in the other rooms of Zhu Yi's residence. Hence, it appeared that Lin Feng had no intention of interfering.

Because it was not at his level.

In the Celestial Sect of Wonders, while Xu Yunsheng was an exceptional successive disciple, he was still young. On the Great Zhou Empire's side, he was nothing more than an exposed spy. Great Zhou would not risk its relations with the Celestial Sect over this.

In the same vein, if Liang Yuan was really did not know about it, Zhu Yi would not act on him personally as long as he was not too stubborn.

However, if he were to kill a Nascent Soul stage cultivator under him, it would be more than enough to piss Liang Yuan off. A useless, exposed spy against a Nascent Soul stage cultivator. Liang Yuan naturally knew which was more important.

There was no honor nor face in espionage.

Hence, Lin Feng would not personally intervene in this matter. He himself knew how to handle this and hence, he left it all to Zhu Yi. All he needed was final report from Zhu Yi when it was over.

In the same light, Crown Prince Liang Yuan would not elevate this matter to his father, the Emperor Liang Pan, unless he wanted to show himself as incompetent. Since the matter won't blow up, Liang Pan himself would not intervene too.

As Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi matured, Lin Feng would hand more matters over to them for them to take care of.

If they did well, then they could build on this experience for successive tasks. If they messed up, then they must learn to resolve it themselves.

It was just like when the Path of the Heaven-Born of the Samsara Sect came into conflict with Zhu Yi, Xu Yunsheng and Ying Luozha

in the Kunlun Mountains. Even if Lin Feng knew about it, he would not care about it. To take care of such an insignificant matter was not showing love to his disciples but rather, showing how bored he was.

In reality, if not for Shen Qifeng's curious attitude, Lin Feng may even hand Shen Qifeng over to Zhu Yi to take care of. He himself would not personally come in

To Lin Feng right now, only people of Liang Pan's and Zhu Hongwu's level could arouse his interest.

Liang Pan too shared the same attitude. Both considered the overall benefits and interests of the Great Zhou Empire and the Celestial Sect of Wonders. For matters concerning their subordinates, they would allow their subordinates to settle amongst themselves.

Regardless whether it's the Celestial Sect of Wonders or the Great Zhou Empire, they were both superpowers in the Divine Lands. If the two of them were to come into a direct conflict, then it would surely be a large-scaled and prolonged war that would be enough to change the entire political landscape of the Divine Lands.

For such a conflict, it would not be just between the Celestial Sect of Wonders and the Great Zhou Empire. It would involve the Great Void Sect, the Mount Shu Sword Sect, the Great Qin Empire, the Samsara Sect, the Purple Clouds Sect, the Heavenly Master Sword Sect, the Royal House of the Northern Tribes and many other powers. All of them would make their own plans in response to such an event.

Even the demons of the Barren Expanse would pay attention too.

After he had understood all these, Xu Yunsheng felt relieved and he even smiled slightly, thinking, "I'm too insignificant. Such a small matter like mine will not raise a huge fuss."

At that moment, Zhu Yi's voice sounded in his heart, "Your care

for our sect is admirable. You don't have to worry. Ever since Grandmaster opened the sect, he always believe in one principle: whoever joins our sect shall get the justice he/she deserves."

"If Liang Yuan does not give in and worsen the conflict between our two sides till it's uncontrollable, our sect still will not back down. We'll go to war if necessary."

Xu Yunsheng nodded his head, "I understand."

On the other side, the cultivator surnamed Shao's face turned red and then white. After a long while, he sighed and said, "Your Highness, this is all my doing. I have lost face for the Great Zhou Empire, please punish me as you see fit."

Liang Yuan said nothing. Zhu Yi said calmly, "We can discuss this afterwards. Please send my disciple's sister over as soon as possible. Separation between kin is a painful affair and I'm sure no one here wants to suffer that."

The lips of the cultivator surnamed Shao trembled as he said, "The girl is no longer in Tianjing City..."

Zhu Yi looked at him and then said, "Daoist Liang and I can share a hearty meal together while you fetch her."

The cultivator surnamed Shao felt his breathing growing heavier.

He understood Zhu Yi perfectly.

Since I'm here to claim a person, you better produce her. I don't care where you get her as long as she comes to me unharmed. If you do so, we will leave in peace. If not, don't even think of leaving.

## Chapter 714: Heart Clear As Mirror, Sensitive To All Changes

---

The Nascent Soul stage cultivator surnamed Shao looked calm but many thoughts rose in his mind.

The illegitimate son of the Marquis of Xuanji, who previously had no power or influence, could today order him about as he wished, and there was nothing he could do about it. This feeling made him extremely uneasy.

Even though he knew that Zhu Yi could not compare to his previous self anymore, as he was no longer than confused and trouble youth, his mental preparations were not enough to dispel his sense of uneasiness.

Zhu Hongwu's attitude towards Zhu Yi did not change as he could easily overpower Zhu Yi with his current mastery. Psychologically, he possessed an advantage over Zhu Yi.

The cultivator surnamed Shao did not have this advantage. As a trusted confidante of Liang Yuan, he knew clearly that Zhu Yi had killed a powerful Advanced Nascent Soul stage cultivator when he was only in his Advanced Aurous Core stage. Zhu Yi today, who was in his Intermediate Nascent Soul stage, was much more powerful.

However, it was exactly because of that that resulted in the cultivator surnamed Shao feeling not only displeased, but threatened.

"I should have gotten rid of him earlier!" A few years ago, it would have been impossible for him to feel regret over this matter. However, today, the regret was like a seed that had germinated and grown into a giant tree.

While he managed to calm himself, his mana was once again thrown into disarray when this thought surfaced in his mind.

"Eh?" Zhu Yi sensed this feeling. He shot a look at the cultivator and immediately saw through him.

The opponent was ultimately still a Nascent Soul stage cultivator and he was unable to read his mind clearly. However, the enmity was palpable.

In the enmity, there was a desire to kill.

Under Lin Feng, Wang Lin's soul was cleansed by the River Styx Primordial Water and Zhu Yi's Air of Literature ignited the Fire of Intelligence, fundamentally changing his soul. The two of them possessed the strongest soul under Lin Feng, but their powers were different. Wang Lin's soul was powerful in the sense that it was extremely resilient. Zhu Yi's soul was powerful in the sense it was extremely sensitive and active. It was like a mirror that could not be dirtied. If the enemy made a move, he would be able to sense it.

Liang Yuan could feel it too. His expression changed slightly but before he could do anything, Zhu Yi acted first.

Zhu Yi did not do much. All he did was to take a light breath. However, as he exhaled, he spewed out streams of white spiritual energy that messed the room up.

The white spiritual energy took shape as they turned into scale-shaped clouds. They were at least a few meters wide and everyone in the hall could feel that the space in the hall had been messed up. The clouds that floated in the hall occupied half the space.

On top of these scale-shaped clouds, a giant beast that was as big as several elephants combined appeared.

Its entire body was jet-black. It had the head of a dragon, the body of a deer, the tail of an ox and cloven hooves.

This was the holy beast Qilin. The moment it appeared, a wave of righteousness and awe began to spread. Everyone on-scene grimaced.

For Liang Yuan's group, other than Liang Yuan himself, everyone

else could feel their mana's flow becoming inconsistent.

Under the gaze of the Qilin, everyone felt exposed, as if their deepest and darkest thoughts were revealed, including their best and worst intentions.

For Nascent Soul stage cultivators, it was a major humiliation. What made them more infuriated was the fact that the Qilin Zhu Yi formed with his mana not only brimmed with severity, a humongous amount of mana could be sensed from it. No one dared to act rashly.

The Qilin was a virtuous beast. While it did not kill, it used its power to suppress the evil and the wicked.

Everyone else could still bear it, as the true target of the Qilin was the cultivator surnamed Shao. Immediately, he could feel his soul being suppressed and paralyzed.

He coughed and a light shone from his head. His Nascent Soul revealed itself and turned into a child of about 7 to 8 years old. In mid-air, it cried out, "Open!" As it bellowed, the void began to tremble and turn into a small world. It was not used to retaliate against Zhu Yi but rather, to envelop himself in.

The powerful mana turned into a thick, emerald-green gas, which then turned into an emerald-green world. It wrapped the cultivator surnamed Shao in it and sent him directly into the void.

Zhu Yi's expression did not change but his gaze flashed slightly, "Oh? This is quite a special vanishing spell. In the world, it can be said to be one of the best. Too bad you aren't very good at it. In other words, your technique is complete."

"However, even if you master the perfect vanishing spell, you may not be able to escape from me."

"With that, Zhu Yi's mana caused the Qilin to lift its claw. It pierced through space and directly grabbed the emerald-green small world.



Under its powerful pressure, the emerald-green world was like an egg. It began to crack and looked as if it was going to split open.

Liang Yuan sighed and stood up from his seat. A powerful energy began to spread and the shadow of a giant appeared behind him.

Zhu Yi's expression did not change. He smiled and nodded his head, "The Spell of the Emperor, it truly lives up to its name." While he said that, he did not relax his grip. The tiny green world in the grip of the Qilin split open completely as it turned into waves of green light floating in the air.

Liang Yuan did not actually attack. He did not even look at Zhu Yi but instead, he said directly to the cultivator under the Qilin's grip, "Retrieve the person, it's a joyous occasion for relatives to be reunited."

The cultivator surnamed Shao smiled bitterly and nodded his head. Mentally, Zhu Yi ordered the Qilin to send his Nascent Soul back into his body.

"It is good that Daoist Liang can think in this way," Zhu Yi sat on the chair without moving. His mana, the Qilin and the fish-scaled clouds disappeared. The mana flow in the room returned to normal.

His gaze fell upon the cultivator surnamed Shao and he said, "You want to kill me but you dare not say it. I have detected such a thought for quite a while now. I also detected a trace of underestimation. For such a change to happen, you probably knew of me before I joined my master and when I still lived in the Marquis of Xuanji's household."

"Who are you?"

The cultivator surnamed Shao fell silent for a while before straightening his back and replying slowly, "I am Shao Peng of the East Heaven's Gate."

Zhu Yi nodded his head and said, "Your surname is Shao. So

that's why, Lady Shao's birth is ordinary but she was still descended from a cultivation family. Hence, she isn't just any ordinary person. She must have some secrets with her."

He suddenly smiled and said, "But it doesn't matter. When I return to the Marquis of Xuanji's household, it will all be the same."

Shao Peng's face was expressionless. He did not say much as he bowed to the Crown Prince, Liang Pan, and stepped into the void.

Zhu Yi did not stop him, because it was clear that Shao Peng intended to bring Xu Miaoying back.

Earlier on, through Zhu Yi's words and actions, it was clearly understood that unless Shao Peng brought Xu Miaoying back, he would not live arrive.

If he were to run away now, then he would place the Crown Prince in an awkward position. He himself would be accused of disloyalty and he could forget about ever returning to the Great Zhou Empire.

How could he do that for a mere Xu Miaoying?

Looking at this scene, Xu Yunsheng felt a hundred emotions in his heart. He felt that what he did was extremely hilarious. After interacting with his master for so long, he should have known his personality.

He did not need to wait or plan a secret rescue mission. He did not probe carefully. All he needed to do was to go up and ask the person directly.

The only reason he was being so polite was out of respect for Xu Yunsheng. If not, he would have used a much more violent method.

Don't tell me that this thing did not exist, don't tell me that person is absent and don't use anyone to threaten me.

If I'm right, then I would not hesitate to claim what was mine. I would not run about in circles but instead, stand my ground and insist on my principles. It was that simple.

Liang Yuan and Shao Peng had no choice but to go along with it.

This was not the first time the Great Zhou Empire had used spies. While they were useful, they had been exposed many times too. After a spy had been exposed, he may have to feel the wrath of the other party. Even if he was not executed due to pressure from the Great Zhou Empire, his cultivation would be voided.

However, no one had seen a sect as unconventional as the Celestial Sect of Wonders. After they discovered a spy, they conversely tried to help the spy reclaim his family members.

They no longer cared about whether he was a spy or not and sought to view him as their own. Now, to them, a family member of a member of the Celestial Sect of Wonders was being held hostage and they could now honorably demand for his family member's return.

With reason on your side and backed by power, one could get what one wants easily.

At this time, Xu Yunsheng felt from the bottom of his heart what a fortunate thing it was for him to have such a powerful sect behind him. For matters he could not settle himself, the sect would render its assistance.

This disciples of the Celestial Sect of Wonders felt this feeling increasingly over time, which increased their sense of belonging to the sect.

Because of personal reasons, Xu Yunsheng felt this especially deeply. The normally calm Xu Yunsheng began to feel tears welling up.

Liang Yuan was extremely calm at the moment. To him, it was

not a particularly bad incident. It was only a case where a spy double-crossed him. However, he felt that all the effort he placed on Xu Yunsheng was wasted.

If Shao Peng controlled his emotions upon seeing Zhu Yi just now, all of that would not have happened.

There was no point in keeping a useless hostage. Hence, handing her over was of no loss to him. He lost this round, but all he could do now was to re-plan his strategy. There was no need to mourn his loss.

After experiencing the uncertainty of his position as Crown Prince earlier, Liang Yuan's mentality had undergone a major change.

"Today's incident is no big deal. There's no need to fight over. The appearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea is much more important. My father and the Grand Advisor had already made sufficient preparations. If the Celestial Sect of Wonders were to interfere now, then they would suffer major losses. Then, I can take my revenge"

After the Spiritual Conference of the Kunlun Mountains was over, he went back to visit Liang Pan. Then, he discovered many things that he did not know about earlier. This gave him a new sense of confidence.

Zhu Yi sat in the hall as he talked normally with Liang Yuan. It was as if nothing had happened.

As he talked to Liang Yuan, Zhu Yi thought, "East Heaven's Gate? I have never heard of this sect. Based on its name, could it be related to the Heaven's Gate that was destroyed in the Antiquity Age? East Heaven's Gate, it appears to be located in the far east. Has the Heaven's Gate been revived?"

"The far east, that refers to the East Sea. Looking at it now, we may meet them on our voyage to the East Sea."

Zhu Yi smiled slightly and said, "That's good too. Before I head back to the Marquis' household, I shall eliminate some of his lieutenants."

# Chapter 715: Our Founder Was Great Too

---

After he handed over the matter to Zhu Yi to settle, Lin Feng no longer cared about it. Instead, he calmly rested in a quiet room in the residence.

Far away in Mount Yujing in the Kunlun Mountains, he sat, cross-legged at the top of the Black Heavenly Treasure Tree. Clear light shone from his head and a hole opened in the void. The elements swirled in the void. They were unusually calm.

He looked in the void above his head and the Taijitu appeared on his forehead. It then began to swirl slowly.

As the Taijitu swirled, the teachings of the Dao pulsed through his mind. Finally, a conclusion was derived and Lin Feng's understanding of the Dao increased.

"The Heavenly Classic of the Way's Virtues' 'Two Elements Chapter' is not yet confirmed. This new move appears to be between the 'Two Elements Chapter' and the 'Four Appearances Articles'. It won't be derived so easily." Lin Feng was in no rush. "However, by studying this move, if I can fully understand this spell, then I will be able to form a bridge between the 'Two Elements Chapter' and the 'Four Appearances Article'. This will better help me master the 'Two Elements Chapter' and progress into the Immortal Soul Second Level. "

Lin Feng calmed himself as he slowly studied. Bright runes began to surface from the Taijitu and appeared in mid-air. Then, they were absorbed by the elements above his head in the void. There, one could feel a powerful presence that seemed to be slowly coming into existence.

In the residence of Zhu Yi, Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar could slowly feel his real body studying and mastering the Dao. He benefitted much from Lin Feng's efforts too as he approached the peak of his current stage.

When Lin Feng himself was in the Aurous Core stage, the Avatar of Ares reached the peak of the Advanced Aurous Core stage. When Lin Feng first formed his soul, the Avatar of Ares was already in the peak of the Advanced Nascent Soul stage.

While the Avatar of Ares was mainly a Martial Way cultivator, it could still use the Heavenly Classic of the Way's Virtues. However, it was not as powerful as Lin Feng using it himself. Even so, when Lin Feng was below the Immortal Soul stage, the Avatar of Ares was normally stronger than he himself.

After Lin Feng entered the Immortal Soul stage, his Avatar of Ares reached the Immortal Soul First Level. However, it became much weaker than Lin Feng's actual body.

However, the Steel Tree Avatar was different. Its cultivation was independent of Lin Feng's. Hence, it was unable to easily reach the Immortal Soul stage like the Avatar of Ares. However, if the Steel Tree Avatar entered the Immortal Soul stage, then it would be stronger than the Avatar of Ares.

In the residence, Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar exhaled and opened his eyes. "Is it Zhu Yi? Come in."

Zhu Yi opened the door and entered. Seeing Lin Feng, he bowed and said, "Master, I've taken care of the matter. Yunsheng's sister, Xu Miaoying, is back. I've checked and noticed that she was clean. Yunsheng is accompanying her as we speak."

Lin Feng smiled and asked, "Xu Miaoying should be a spy that the Great Zhou Empire is cultivating too right. So, why did the Great Zhou not use her as a check against her brother?"

Normally, if Xu Yunsheng and Xu Miaoying were so dependent upon each other, they would have adopted by the intelligence agency of the Great Zhou Empire and after they matured, they would be deployed to do different tasks. That would maximize their utility.

Zhu Yi smiled and said, "Originally, Yunsheng was supposed to go to the Great Qin and Miaoying was planned for something else. However, after Yunsheng joined our sect, Liang Yuan placed special emphasis on this matter and hence, tightened his control over Yunsheng. Miaoying was used to control Yunsheng and hence, she was not deployed. Normally, she would be well-treated."

"Was she brainwashed or indoctrinated?" Lin Feng asked.

Earlier, when both of them were young, the Great Zhou Empire treated Xu Miaoying rather well. If they had given her a good environment to grow up in, or tried to seduce her with a guy, then she would become fiercely loyal to the Great Zhou Empire and may even spy on her own brother for them. That was not something impossible.

It was one of the many methods used by intelligence agencies.

Zhu Yi smiled and shook his head, "Xu Miaoying and Xu Yunsheng are extremely close."

Hearing that, Lin Feng smiled and shook his head and said, "It's alright, let the two of them be re-united. With regards to Miaoying's life subsequently, they can make their own choice. If she passes our examination, she can join our sect. If she doesn't, she can go live in the Cloud Mirror City."

"You take charge of the specifics."

Zhu Yi nodded his head and said, "Yes, master."

At this moment, Xiao Yan and the rest came into Lin Feng's room. Upon seeing Zhu Yi, Xiao Yan smiled and said, "Second Junior, while the cultivator surnamed Shao is ordinary in all other aspects, his vanishing spell is exceptional."

"Correct, but it's a pity that it's imperfect. If not, it would have been as good as the Great Void Sect's Elite Vanishing Heaven-Ascending Spell and Flow of Light and Space," replied Zhu Yi affirmatively. "He claimed to be part on the East Heaven's Gate. I



wonder if it's related to the Heaven's Gate?"

Lin Feng smiled and said, "While the Heaven's Gate was destroyed in the late Antiquity Age, the East Heaven's Gate inherited some of the teachings of the Heaven's Gate to form their own sect."

"The spell he just used is known as the Celestial Spell of Elusiveness. It was the top Vanishing Spell of the Heaven's Gate many years ago. Zhu Yi, you are right. In the Antiquity Age, the Celestial Spell of Elusiveness was no weaker than the Great Void Sect's Heaven-Ascending Spell, Flow of Light and Space and the Mount Shu Sword Sect's Shaoze Sword."

While Lin Feng sat in the quiet room and handed everything over to Zhu Yi to take care of, he too paid attention to what was going on in the residence. Shao Peng's Vanishing Spell naturally caught his attention.

Lin Feng had never seen the real Celestial Spell of Elusiveness, which was a spell taught by the Heaven's Gate. However, as this spell as too famous and too distinct in its form, where a small world made out of emerald light would break through the void, Lin Feng was able to recognize it instantly.

This Vanishing Spell was as fast as the Great Void Sect's Heaven-Ascending Spell and the Flow of Light and Space. However, it was much more explosive and aggressive compared to the Heaven-Ascending Spell and the Flow of Light and Space. Even if the opponent sought to resist, the caster would still be able to force his way through.

However, Zhu Yi was much more powerful than Shao Peng. Coupled with the fact that the Celestial Spell of Elusiveness he cultivated was imperfect, this allow Zhu Yi to catch Shao Peng like an eagle catching a baby chick.

"If this person did not receive the true teaching of the Heaven's Gate, then it would mean that the East Heaven's Gate teachings

themselves were incomplete," said Zhu Yi. "Speaking about it, I want to see how an actual spell from the Heaven's Gate will look like."

Lin Feng said, "While the Vanishing Spell may be incomplete, it does not mean that all of its spells are as such. I don't think our voyage to the East Sea will disappoint you, Zhu Yi."

"Let's not talk about your father, the Marquis of Xuanji, who managed to obtain the teachings of the Heaven's Gate and Emperor Tai. If I am correct in my guess, you will have a chance to meet Lady Shao, who caused the death of your mother, in the East Sea. The East Heaven's Gate is there too."

"To be precise, it should be Lady Shao herself."

Zhu Yi furrowed his eyebrows as he said, "Lady Shao? Master, do you mean..."

Lin Feng waved his hand to tell Zhu Yi and Xiao Yan to sit down. Then, he continued saying, "To what I know, the Heaven's Gate supreme mantra, the Great Heavenly Mantra, has a particularly powerful move within it, known as the Mystical Way of the Heavenly Being."

"This mantra can only be cultivated by Immortal Soul stage cultivators. First, one must obtain a high-grade Magic Treasure Embryo with a lot of potential. With it, one can form the avatar of an ordinary mortal."

"The magic treasure represents heaven and the avatar represents Man. Using the body of an ordinary mortal, one can form an Immortal Soul stage magic treasure, incorporating the principle of fusing Heaven and Man. Once the spell had been fully mastered, one can infuse the ordinary mortal avatar and the magic treasure back into one's body, and obtain an extremely powerful mana that has the ability to surpass one's current boundaries."

"Not only would one be able to surpass one's mastery, one would

be able to become more powerful than other cultivators in the same stage."

As Lin Feng explained this to them, Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi, Yang Qing and Li Yuanfang looked at each other. "Master, isn't this too fantastical? While a Nascent Soul stage cultivator cannot even cultivate a magic treasure, an ordinary mortal can...."

"Ultimately, the one who cultivates the magic treasure is still the Immortal Soul stage elder. The ordinary mortal avatar is only a tool for one to perfect this move and cultivate the magic treasure," said Lin Feng with a smile. "This is the special thing about the Heaven's Gate. At its peak, this sect easily rivals the Great Void Sect, so how can it be ordinary? This Mystical Way of the Heavenly Being is only one of the many powerful spells of the Great Heavenly Mantra."

Zhu Yi casted his gaze downwards as he said quietly, "Speaking about it, the Lady Shao in the Marquis of Xuanji's household is just an ordinary mortal avatar?"

Lin Feng said, "This is my guess, but I doubt I'll be wrong."

Yang Qing said in a low voice, "I wonder how much of the Heaven's Gate powers did the East Heaven's Sect manage to inherit? Master, at the its peak, what was the Heaven's Gate level?"

Lin Feng smiled and said, "It is much more powerful than us right now. It was able to suppress the Great Thunderclap Temple and the Mount Shu Sword Sect and it was the only one that was able to rival the Great Void Sect. It was a major headache for the last Emperor of Man, the Emperor of Violence. Under the leadership of Heaven's Gate and the Great Void Sect, it overthrew and killed the Emperor of Violence too."

"However, that battle greatly weakened the Heaven's Gate, causing it to be utterly destroyed in the War of the Two Worlds that broke out after."

Lin Feng's voice became extremely soft as he said, "Any sect, no matter how big, will have its ups and downs, its peaks and rock-bottoms. The same sect's power and influence will vary in different eras. It can never remain dominant for too long over its fellow sects in a particular time period."

"Other than the rule of the Emperors of the Man, if we are rank each sect based on its power at its prime, then the Heaven's Gate can be ranked as third in the Divine Lands, right behind the Great Thunderclap Temple and the Great Void Sect. It is much more powerful compared to the Ancient Satanic Sect and the Mount Shu Sword Sect."

Xiao Yan appeared shocked, "The Great Thunderclap Temple?"

Lin Feng chuckled, "Don't be surprised, the founder of the Great Thunderclap Temple is truly exceptional. The peak of this temple was when Buddha started his teachings and his ten disciples began to spread his words."

Hearing that, Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi, Yang Qing and Li Yuanfang felt their hearts beating faster.

Xiao Yan swallowed and said in a wavering voice, "Isn't that disrespectful to the Virtuous Zen Master? However, according to what you said, the Great Thunderclap Temple had been on a downhill spiral since its very first day. It was strongest when it first established itself and then, everything started going downhill for it."

Lin Feng pretended as if nothing had happened as he nodded his head and said with a smile, "That's right."

Xiao Yan and the rest fell silent. They knew that their master was not saying this for nothing. Instead, he was giving them advice.

# Chapter 716: A Stunning Move!

---

As Xiao Yan and the rest contemplated silently, Lin Feng's voice rang once again in the room, "The Great Void Sect's situation is rather different because they have the Supreme Heavenly Mirror. Hence, even when they were at their peak, the Great Thunderclap Temple, the Heaven's Gate, the Ancient Satanic Sect and the Mount Shu Sword Sect did not dare to offend them."

"However, looking at the history of the Great Void Sect itself, their peak should be during the Antiquity Age when the Great Void Holy Man first established the sect together and when he had the Supreme Heavenly Mirror. That was the time when the Great Void Sect was filled with powerful cultivators."

Lin Feng smiled and continued, "Ever since the Great Void Holy Man and the Buddha went to the Death Sea, they disappeared without a trace. While the Great Void Sect was still powerful, they could never replicate the power they had under the Great Void Holy Man. 4000 years ago, the Great Void Sect began to reclaim its former glory, but unfortunately they met with the Hades Emperor, one of the most powerful Holy Demonic Emperors. The resulting war destroyed the Hades Emperor but also greatly weakened the Great Void Sect."

Looking at Xiao Yan and the rest of them, Lin Feng nodded his head and said, "Correct, while the Great Void Sect is still able to exert a powerful presence over the Divine Lands, it is a shadow of its former self."

"The Great Thunderclap Temple followed the same trend. Ever since the Buddha left and the fall of its ten major disciples, it never regained its former glory. 4000 years ago, the Hades Emperor destroyed their most powerful Destiny level magic treasure, Mount Meru. Since then, their luck had run dry."

Lin Feng continued, "During the Primordial Age and the

Antiquity Age, the Emperors of Man reigned. While the Great Void Holy Man could start his own dynasty, he did not do so. Instead, he placed the focus of the Great Void Sect on the Barren Expanses."

"For the Buddha, he was actually the second Emperor of Man after the fall of Emperor Tai, Emperor Ru. Emperor Ru reigned for 10 000 years before abdicating and passing the throne to someone else. He himself went and established the Great Thunderclap Temple."

"However, you all know what happened afterwards."

Xiao Yan and the rest slowly digested what Lin Feng had told them about the secrets of the Primordial Age. After a while, Xiao Yan smiled proudly and said, "After we return, I will tell my disciples about what I have just heard."

Zhu Yi, Yang Qing and Li Yuanfang all smiled.

Looking at the scene, Lin Feng smiled too as he looked directly at Xiao Yan. "Good, Zhu Yi had settled his matter. How about yours?"

Everyone in the residence fell silent. While Zhu Yi hosted a banquet for the Crown Prince Liang Yuan and his entourage after settling Xu Yunsheng's affair, everyone else rested in their respective rooms. Only Xiao Yan went out once and he just returned.

Xiao Yan said, "I went to Jingzhou, which is in the West of the Great Zhou Empire. I did not manage to obtain more secretive news but I did get something."

"The crux of the issue is related to the fathers of Tang Jun and Lei Jie."

The Lei Family of the Great Qin Empire, which had been one of the Four Big Families of the Great Qin, chose to betray the Great Qin Empire and join the Great Zhou Empire after the Battle at Xiling City.

The Great Zhou Empire, which had been removing the power of

the sects within its territories as well as the power of hereditary families, welcomed the Lei Family with open arms. Today, the Lei Family had settled down in the Jingzhou and once began to exert their influence.

The news Xiao Yan went to investigate was related to Tang Jun, who had just joined the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

Tang Jun and the Lei Jie, an upcoming member of the Lei Family, shared physical facial resemblances. Looking at them, people suspected if they were related.

Coupled with the fact that the head of the Lei Family had gone up to Lin Feng to request a favor, Lin Feng, Xiao Yan and the rest easily deduced the origins of Tang Jun.

The Heart-Revealing Steps could only reveal the inner demons of a person but it would not extract and reveal his memories. Hence, Tang Jun had no ulterior purpose in mind when he request to join Lin Feng's sect. Concealing his identity may be because of privacy concerns.

Hence, before Xiao Yan left Mount Yujing, he had a talk with Tang Jun over this problem. Tang Jun did not hide anything from him as he told his origin story to Xiao Yan clearly and truthfully. However, what he knew was still limited.

Hence, Tang Jun's name should have been Lei Jun by right. He could claim descent from the head of the Lei Family, Lei Lie. However, in terms of blood, his surname was Tang. His father, Tang Wenhua, married into the Lei Family and joined the Lei Family. That was why he changed his name to Lei Wenhua.

Tang Wenhua and Tang Jun's mother had one child shortly after marriage. The child was raised from young under the tutelage of the Lei Family. After birth, he displayed extraordinary amount of talent He was able to cultivate the Nine Qi True Thunder Form and the thunder-type mantra of the Lei Family. It was as if the Heavens had given a prodigy to the Lei Family

That was Tan Jun's biological brother, Lei Jie.

However, while Lei Jie and Tang Jun were biological brothers, the fortunes of life did not shine fairly down on everyone. Lei Jie displayed an extraordinary and stunning amount of talent since young. If not for Shi Tianyi above him, he would have been the most eye-catching upcoming prodigy of the Great Qin Empire.

However, Tan Jun was much more ordinary. Since young, he showed no special power and unfortunately, something awkward happened right after birth. His father, Tang Wenhua, who changed his surname after joining the Lei Family, disappeared after stealing a treasure of the Lei Family.

This infuriated everyone in the Lei Family, including the head of the Lei Family, Lei Lie.

Lei Jie's extraordinary talents since young caused him to be well-treated in the family. Even though his father committed such a heinous act, it did not affect him that much

In other words, right after Tang Jun was borne, every single hatred and resentment was direct to him. Alone, he suffered a tempest that should have been shared between two people.

Hence, to Tang Jun, there was no sense of kinship between Lei Jie and him.

Since young, Lei Jie had viewed Tang Jun as a stain on his records. Lei Jie's greatest shame was this biological brother of his who came from the same father

Tang Jun understood Lei Jie's mentality perfectly. His own existence continually reminded the prodigy of the Lei Family that your real surname was not Lei, but Tang instead. Furthermore, you had a thief of a father.

Lei Jie treated Tang Jun badly and Tang Jun reciprocated in kind. Half of his sufferings all these were related to Lei Jie.

For many people who wanted to get close to Lei Jie, the easiest



way to do so was to bully Tang Jun.

Tang Jun was hard-headed but he was not rash. After he bided his time in the Lei Family for a long while, he left the Lei Family and decided to make a name for himself outside

The Lei Family did not care much about him. As long as Tang Jun did not flaunt his descent and smudge the name of the Lei Family, they were happy to leave him be

However, when Tang Jun was on his own outside, his body suddenly underwent a complete transformation. His normal body suddenly turned into one of Natural Fire-Type Entity and he also possessed the Fire Lord Body. In other words, his body was one of the most suitable bodies for the cultivation of Fire-type spells.

Careful calculations would show that it was even stronger than Lei Jie's Nine Qi True Thunder Form.

Tang Jun himself was surprised at this result but delighted too. However, he was not interested in returning to the Lei Family. Instead, he felt a sense of goodwill towards the Celestial Sect of Wonders. Hence, when the Celestial Sect of Wonders had another sect-opening ceremony, he came forth to join.

Tang Jun's transformation caught the attention of the Lei Family too. They too wished that they would be able to reclaim him, but their attitudes to him were strange.

They treated him like an escaped fugitive rather than a talent to be wooed.

While this attitude aroused Tang Jun's suspicion, it made the Lei Family repulsive to him

"According to what Tang Jun had said, the sudden transformation of his body was because of the former residence of his father, Tang Wenhua," said Xiao Yan. "In that house, there was a spell formation. When others stepped on it, it did not react. It only reacted when Tang Jun stepped on it. Then, his body

changed."

"However, after that time, the spell formation appeared to lost all its powers. When Tang Jun stepped on it again, nothing happened."

Li Yuanfang nodded his head and said, "This spell formation was only a catalyst. Tang Jun himself had something special inside him but it was dormant."

Yang Qing said in a low voice, "This special ability was able to deceive even the Nascent Soul stage and Immortal Soul stage elders of the Lei Family. It is truly special."

Xiao Yan opened his mouth and said, "Correct, I believe that the crux of the issue is with the father of Lei Jie and Tang Jun, Tang Wenhua. However, he had disappeared without a trace."

"My trip to Jingzhou brought me in contact with members of the Lei Family. I can confirm that the Lei Family too was searching on a huge scale for Tang Wenhua. Their desire to catch Tang Jun, in my opinion, stems from a desire to catch Tang Wenhua himself. They also believe that they could trace Tang Wenhua's whereabouts from Tang Jun's body." Zhu Yi thought about for a while and then, he looked at Lin Feng and said, "Master, I have a guess."

Lin Feng smiled and asked, "Do you suspect that Tang Jun's Fire Lord Body and Lei Jie's Nine Qi True Thunder Form are related to Tang Wenhua."

Zhu Yi nodded and replied, "Master is wise indeed. I believe that's the case. While the Nine Qi True Thunder Form is rare, it existed before. Hence, its appearance cannot said to be super rare. However, for a Fire Lord Body and a Nine Qi True Thunder Form to appear in a pair of siblings, it is way too coincidental."

Lin Feng smiled and said nothing.

He could not blame the Lei Family for being so anxious. He knew

from the system that Tang Jun's Innate Ability was solid 9. The Fire Lord Body ranked in the same tier as Yang Qing's Balanced Yin Yang Form, Zhou Yuncong's Yang-Incinerating Entity and Luo Qingwu's Pure Yin Entity.

Lei Jie's Nine Qi True Thunder Form was in the same category. If something like this could be created artificially, the Great Void Sect would go crazy.

Improving one's calibre through training and herbs was one thing, but the ability to forge a powerful entity, like the Fire Lord Body or the Nine Qi True Thunder Form, was truly a stunning move!

"I believe that there are some difficult restrictions. If not, Tang Wenhua would have been able to rule the Grand Celestial World. Regardless, he is still someone with good ideas."

Lin Feng tapped on his armrest and looked at Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and the rest. Suddenly, he smiled and said, "Relax, if I am right, the crux doesn't lie with Tang Wenhua."

Xiao Yan and the rest were shocked. Then, they fell silent and after a long while an expression of realization dawned on their faces. They nodded their heads and said, "Master is right. We thought incorrectly."

Lin Feng smiled and said, "Hence, for this matter, we shall observe its developments quietly. After all, the initiative is with us."

He stood up and placed his hands behind his back. As he walked out of the room, he said, "Go and pack your stuff. Yunsheng's matter had been settled. We will head next to the East Sea and prepare ourselves for the appearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea."

As he exited the room, he looked into the night sky and said worriedly, "The Great Zhou Empire appeared too sure of itself. I

wonder what preparations had they made to inspire such a level of confidence."

# Chapter 717: An Illegal Occupier

---

Emerald waves rolled in the East Sea as a bright, golden light dazzled the never-ending sea. Watching the morning sun rise from the horizon, Lin Feng and company had arrived on the mountain.

The group of them sat on Jieyu and the Kui Cow King and flew in the skies above the sea. Looking at the ripples on the sea, he smiled and said, "Earlier, I had only seen the icy North Polar Sea. Looking at this now is an entirely different experience."

Lin Feng said, "Heavens make many different sceneries, each with their own unique aspect."

Li Yuanfang lowered his head to look at the Kui Cow King and said, "Senior Kui Cow King, on the East Sea, are there any major powers or powerful cultivators that we should be aware of?"

"Because of geographical reasons, they are all limited by the Great Zhou Empire. There are very few cultivators and sects in the East Sea, but because of its size the Great Zhou Empire does not exert such a tight control over this place."

"One of the sects that you must pay attention is the Luofu Mystical Island. It is the strongest sect in the East Sea," the Kui Cow King paused for a while before continuing, "As for the East Heaven's Gate, I don't know much about it. To what I know, the Luofu Mystical Island is the strongest power on the East Sea."

"The Luofu Holy Man is a powerful independent cultivator. Many years ago, he reached the Immortal Soul Third Level and is one of the rare top cultivation figures like Zhuge Wanqiu's father, Zhuge Zhan. He occupied the Luofu Mystical Island but he has not created a sect. Instead, he allowed other cultivators and even ordinary mortals to inhabit the island."

The Kui Cow King added, "Legend has it that the Luofu Holy Man and Yan Nanlai, the current sect leader of the Great Void Sect,

have deep ties"

"The Luofu Holy Man is just and fair. Every time the cultivators of the East Sea have a dispute, they would ask him to be the arbitrator. The Great Zhou Empire too treats him with respect."

As he listened, Lin Feng looked at the sea and asked, "Where is the Luofu Mystical Island?"

The Kui Cow King replied, "To the north of the East Sea. It's located near the Inter-World Passage between the Divine Lands and the Barren Expanses. It is also very close to the entrance to the Ying Sea. It can be said to be a major intersection and also a conflict-ridden area. If not for the power of the Luofu Holy Man, it may be hard to him to dominate the area and protect those under him."

Xiao Yan laughed softly and said, "It appears that even though the Luofu Holy Man has not submitted to the Great Zhou Empire, his relationship with the Great Zhou isn't too bad. It is similar to how the Huo Family helps the Great Qin Empire look after its southern territories."

The Kui Cow King said, "Yes, it's similar to that. When the cultivators of the Great Zhou Empire come into conflict with the cultivators of the East Sea, the Luofu Holy Man may intervene and dispense justice. His verdict is respected by all and if the matter isn't too serious, the Great Zhou Empire will let it be."

When others heard it, they nodded their heads. That's the spirit shown by the Luofu Holy Man, an Immortal Soul Third Level cultivator.

It was rare for an independent cultivator to achieve such a high level. For them to reach such a high level of mastery, it was difficult and every single powerful independent cultivator had his own signature moves.

This was because many independent cultivators kept a low

profile. They did not fight and squabble like the major sects and hence, while it was rare for them to produce a powerful cultivator from their midst, they had longer lifespan.

Many extraordinary independent cultivators who chose to create their own sects often did well too. However, because of personal reasons, many chose not to.

After all, many founders of the current sects in the Divine Lands could be labelled as independent cultivators before they formed their own sects too.

However, it was difficult for lower-tiered independent cultivators to prove themselves, much more difficult than disciples of a particular sect. However, every single independent cultivator who had created a name for himself by reaching either Aurous Core, Nascent Soul or the Immortal Soul stage were special in their own rights.

The Kui Cow King continued, "Other than the Luofu Holy Man, the many other cultivators of the East Sea are mainly independent cultivators. They each occupy an island brimming with spiritual energy or an underwater cave and they do not talk to each other much."

"As for the Great Zhou Empire, many independent cultivators submit to them to a certain degree. They have to listen to some of the orders passed by the Great Zhou Empire but still, they maintain a high degree of autonomy. Some prouder ones who did not care so much about the Great Zhou Empire met unpleasant fates."

Zhu Yi asked, "What about the Vast Sea Sword Sect?"

The Kui Cow King answered, "The Vast Sea Sword Sect resided to the south of the East Sea. However, the Vast Sea Sword Sect and the Great Zhou Empire have similar strategies. Recently, they spent the bulk of their energy focusing on the mainland while maintaining just enough energy on the East Sea to ensure that

their interests there are not compromised. Hence, many cultivators of the East Sea don't care much about them."

As Lin Feng listened, he said with a smile, "They did not care so much about it before. Now, their attention is likely to return to it."

The Kui Cow King said, "My lord is right."

Jieyu and Kui Cow King carried the group on their backs as they flew. As the Kui Cow King navigated, he chuckled and said, "My lord, my old house, Mount Liubo, is to the east of here."

Lin Feng smiled and asked, "Oh? I wonder if there are still members of your tribe there."

The Kui Cow King replied, "When our owner left Mount Liubo, my entire tribe went with him to the mainland. However, master has a medicine patch on the island. As it's hard to transplant these herbs, he left some people in charge there."

"Other than that, other than us the Kui Cows, there are another group of demons there who lived with our master and learned from him. They are the Spiritual Sea Horses. While our tribe left with our master, they stayed behind to help him take care of the island."

Lin Feng said nonchalantly, "If that's the case, let's go there for a visit. At least we will have a base for our expedition to the Ying Sea."

The Kui Cow King led the way as everyone headed east. Soon, a small island entered everyone's sight.

Lin Feng arched his eyebrows and asked the Kui Cow King, "Does the Flowing Waves Holy Man cultivate the Gui Water Yin Thunder Spell? It appears different from your mantra."

The Kui Cow King paused too in shock. He noticed something strange as he walked forward. As he sensed the flow of spiritual energy, he finally understood what Lin Feng meant. His cow eyes widened in rage.



"Someone occupied master's Mount Liubo and laid a spell formation over it. They changed the flow of spiritual energy on the island."

The Kui Cow King breathed heavily, "What is the old sea horse smoking? How can he allow someone to occupy master's Mount Liubo?"

Angrily, he rushed towards Mount Liubo. As he approached, he came close to the spell formation near the island. The red in his eyes dimmed slightly as he said, "This spell formation... is cast by an Immortal Soul stage cultivator? If that's the case, I can't blame the old sea horse."

Lin Feng looked calmly at the island and shook his head, "This illegal occupier appears to have left for now. He is not there."

He extended his palm and made a slicing action, splitting apart the formation out of the island. However, he did not leave any trace of himself. While the caster of the spell formation was mentally linked to his spell formation, with Lin Feng's Fences of Heaven, he had no inkling of what had just happened.

"Go, enter," said Lin Feng as if nothing had happened. "Clear the island and we will wait for the person to return."

"Do what you must and don't fear provoking him. Scare him till he does not dare to return anymore. He will know nothing. After the island is cleared, wait patiently for his return."

Lin Feng and the rest got off the backs of the Kui Cow King and Jieyu. The Kui Cow King rushed towards the island and Jieyu, who wanted to perform well in front of Lin Feng, went ahead. Baiguang did not do anything. Instead, she moved behind her husband and prepared herself.

Soon, curses could be heard from the island, "Who dares to trespass the mountain of the Freshwater Holy Man?"

From the pulsation of his spiritual energy, it appeared that the

opponent was a Intermediate Nascent Soul stage cultivator. He flew from the island and was clad in black robes. He stared at the Kui Cow King angrily.

The Kui Cow King's voice was like a powerful thunder that resounded through the nine heavens, "The Freshwater Holy Man? Hmph!"

"Earlier, he listened to the lectures by my master and received instructions from my master. Only then did he reach the Immortal Soul stage. Now, he dares to occupy my master's Mount Liubo! Shameless!"

The Kui Cow King bellowed and thunder crackled in the skies above. Lightning turned in a circle as it charged towards his opponent.

The person was shocked upon seeing the Kui Cow King. He was not scared of the return of the Flowing Waves Holy Man but instead, it was because he thought that the Kui Cow King had joined the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

Thinking about it, he did not dare hesitate. He performed a gesture with his hands and bellowed, "Rise!"

Dozens of streams of Demonic Energy rose and were all concentrated on his body.

The Kui Cow King observed carefully and was even more enraged. The source of the Demonic Energy came from the his former comrades, the Spiritual Sea Horses.

These Spiritual Sea Horses did not bend the knee to their enemy but instead, they were controlled by some secret spell by someone. They were forced to become his pawns and right now, their Demonic Energy were channelled to someone else.

After obtaining the Demonic Energy of the Spiritual Sea Horses, the Nascent Soul stage cultivator's mana increased exponentially. He was almost able to challenge an Advanced Nascent Soul stage

cultivator.

However, he did not increase his own power to battle the Kui Cow King as he shouted, "We can discuss it slowly! These Spiritual Sea Horses had restrictions placed upon them by my master. If these restrictions are triggered, they may die."

The Kui Cow King almost laughed in anger, "Well done, you are taking hostages now."

The disciple of the Freshwater Holy Man smiled and said, "Please don't get angry, Kui Cow King. Now, you have joined the Celestial Sect of Wonders. I don't want to battle with you but I want to leave a path for myself."

He looked at Jieyu and Baiguang and said, "Allow me to leave the island, that is my only request."

Baiguang said coldly, "If you have fled immediately, we may not have pursued you since there's no enmity between us. However, since you have used such a despicable move, could it be that you did something unforgivable?"

The Intermediate Nascent Soul stage cultivator was shocked. Before he could reply, a Demonic Commander stage Spiritual Sea Horse under his control shouted, "Kui Cow King, don't listen to his lies! He massacred many members of my tribe and his hands are stained with blood. Even the kids master left behind to look after the medicine patch were killed by him!"

"Stop talking so much!" The Intermediate Nascent Soul stage cultivator said coldly. Instantly, the Demonic Commander stage Spiritual Sea Horse whimpered.

The cultivator no longer cared about him. Instead, he looked at the Kui Cow King and said in a low voice, "Kui Cow King, now you have seen that the 64 Spiritual Sea Horses are under my control. I can promise you their lives, but you must let me leave and not pursue me."

# Chapter 718: Biting the Hand that Once Fed You

---

The Kui Cow King opened his eyes and leered at his opponent. Thunder roared in the skies above his head and it was clear that he was at the peak of his rage. "Liang Hong, you once studied with your master under my master. Today, not only have you occupied his Mount Liubo, you killed the child he left behind! Earlier, how can I have not seen through you, you heartless ingrate!"

The Intermediate Nascent Soul stage cultivator called Liang Hong had a deeply unpleasant expression on his face. He said coldly, "The Flowing Waves Holy Man had long left this island. How can we leave such a prime real estate empty? By occupying it, it's better than letting it go to waste."

"The death of the child under the Flowing Waves Holy Man is not my fault too. He was rude and insulted my master, hence I punished him."

Inside his heart, he feared what was to come. The Freshwater Holy Man occupied the Flowing Wave Holy Man's abode because the former had reached the Immortal Soul stage. Furthermore, there was no news about the Flowing Wave Holy Man. No one knew where he had gone. Only then did he dare to occupy the abode.

However, the Freshwater Holy Man and his disciple were cruel indeed. Had they just chased the child and the Spiritual Sea Horses away, it would have still been fine. However, they enslaved a group of Spiritual Sea Horses and imprisoned them with their own spells and turned them into weapons.

The Spiritual Sea Horse King, out of consideration for the members of his tribe, submitted in humiliation. However, the child whom the Flowing Waves Holy Man had kept around earlier had a stronger personality and a sharp tongue. He infuriated Liang

Hong, who then killed him.

After he heard that the Kui Cow King and his tribe had joined the Celestial Sect of Wonders, the Freshwater Holy Man and Liang Hong felt uneasy. However, they thought about it for a while, they were still unwilling to leave Mount Liubo. Instead, they tried their best to seal themselves off.

They lived in relative stability for a few years. Hence, the two of them began to lower their guard. In the end, the Freshwater Holy Man decided to leave the abode and leave Liang Hong in charge. He did not expect the Kui Cow King to return then.

What was worse was the fact that Liang Hong heard no news about it at all. The spell formation of the island did not reach too. When he realized, the Kui Cow King was already before him. He could neither flee nor pretend he was not involved.

What was even worse was that Liang Hong could not contact his master, the Freshwater Holy Man. The entire Mount Liubo appeared to have been cut off from the outside world, sending chills down his spine.

The Freshwater Holy Man was never good at Vanishing Spells. Liang Hong feared that if he were to escape. The Kui Cow King would pursue him after he heard about what had happened from the Spiritual Sea Horses. If he met with a fast cultivator, his escape would have been even more difficult. Only then did he grit his teeth and hold the Spiritual Sea Horses hostages.

He stared at the Kui Cow King and said, "I can't do anything since you have joined the Celestial Sect of Wonders. However, let me escape. If not, we will all die."

"The Kui Cows and the Spiritual Sea Horses are good friends for many generations. You and the Spiritual Sea Horse King are close friends too. If I remember correctly, you watched the 64 Spiritual Sea Horses currently under my control grow up."

Jieyu, on the other side, revealed his true form as a humongous black dragon. His voice brimmed with a thick dragon aura, which was more awe-inspiring than the Kui Cow King, and he said, "Heh, do you really have no shame?"

Liang Hong continued without any sign of relenting, "Do you belong to the Celestial Sect of Wonders too? I pray for your understanding. As long as you let go, I won't injure a single Spiritual Sea Horse."

"At any time, you can't even injure a single hair on their back." Then, a quiet calm voice rang. A purple-robed scholarly young man appeared behind Jieyu. It was Zhu Yi.

Liang Hong widened his eyes in shock. His eyes betrayed a look of helplessness.

While the many independent cultivators of the East Sea were isolated from each other, they still paid a great deal of attention to the major events of the Divine Lands. They too knew about up and coming figures, for fear that their disciples may accidentally come into conflict with any one of them.

Jade Letters that could record a person's physical appearance were hard to forge and very rare. Ordinary independent cultivators may not be able to obtain them but for powerful Nascent Soul stage cultivators like Liang Hong, they had their ways. The Celestial Sect of Wonders was one of the more eye-catching rising powers these few years and Liang Hong had seen the pictures of all of its core members.

Including the second immediate disciple, Zhu Yi.

To be precise, as the East Sea bordered the Great Zhou Empire, the most noticeable figure of the Celestial Sect of Wonders in the East Sea, other than Lin Feng himself, was Zhu Yi, who was famous throughout the Great Zhou Empire.

Before Liang Hong could speak, Zhu Yi shook his head and said,

"If you did not repay your gratitude in full, that was still fine. However, you bit the very hand that fed you. For scum like you, there's no point in keeping you alive."

With that, he extended his right hand and opened his palms. Streams of black and white lines flew out and turned into a huge world.

The world took the shape of a spiritual altar that looked like a mandala.

Bright, eye-piercing light intersected with pitch-black dark lines and formed something that resembled the starry night sky. Together, they formed an independent small world.

It was Zhu Yi's Great Boundaries of the Celestial Light and Darkness Mandala which immediately enveloped Liang Hong.

Liang Hong tried to use his special spells but discovered, to his shock, that he was completely cut off from the Spiritual Sea Horses outside.

The Spiritual Sea Horses on Mount Liubo were shocked too. Many of them had strong personalities and this time, they did not mind sacrificing themselves to ensure a victory for the Kui Cow King. No one would have thought that Liang Hong would have been so easily captured by Zhu Yi.

He could not even kill these Spiritual Sea Horses any more, let alone retaliate.

The first Spiritual Sea Horse to speak was the Demonic Commander from earlier on. He stared blankly at Zhu Yi and then at the Kui Cow King and asked, "Cow King, who... who is this senior?"

Kui Cow King replied, "This is the second disciple of the Master of the Celestial Sect, Zhu Yi."

The group of Spiritual Sea Horses appeared to have just woken up from a bad dream. They rushed up to Zhu Yi and Jieyu and paid

their respect

Till now, they were still feeling unreal. Just a moment ago, they were enslaved by someone else and their lives were no longer in their control. In the next instant, they regained their freedom. This made them think as if they were in a dream.

Under the control of the Freshwater Holy Man and Liang Hong, these Spiritual Sea Horses were cut off from the world. They did not know about many things and the Kui Cow King had to explain everything to them.

After he finished his explanation, he asked, "Where is the old sea horse?"

The Demonic Commander stage Spiritual Sea Horse said in sorrow and rage, "For us, our father became the steed of the of the Freshwater Holy Man."

The Kui Cow King brimmed with rage. Together with the Spiritual Sea Horse King, they studied under the Flowing Waves Holy Man and also venerated him as their master. Their relationship was very good and while he knew that this old friend had a fair temperament, he was very resolute on the inside. For him to be held hostage like this, the Kui Cow King could imagine in his old friend's heart.

"No rush, we will wait for him here," Zhu Yi slowly tried triggered the collapse of his Great Boundaries of the Celestial Light and Darkness Mandala, which resembled doomsday to Liang Hong inside it. He no longer dared to resist as he truthfully told them what had happened.

According to him, the Freshwater Holy Man would return soon.

With the help of Lin Feng's Fences of Heaven, everything that had happened on Mount Liubo was cut off from the outside world. Even if the Freshwater Holy Man left some sort of powerful spells on the island, he would not discover anything amiss.



Lin Feng and Xiao Yan landed on the island. Using his heel, Lin Feng poked the ground underneath and said with a smile, "Cultivating the Gui Water Yin Thunder Spell, interesting indeed. I wonder if it's possible to call up the Black Gui Thunder Water. If that's possible, I would like to see it."

On the other side, Jieyu and Baiguang took on their human forms as they talked by the side.

"Dear, I remember that the Inter-world Passage in the East Sea will lead to the Barren Expanses. It appears to be near the territory of the Purple Sea Dragon King?" Jieyu asked his wife, Baiguang, who nodded and replied, "Yes, indeed."

The Purple Sea Dragon King was a powerful demon famous in the Barren Expanses. The more active Demonic Saints of the demons were collectively known as the Ten Demonic Saints and the Purple Sea Dragon King was one of them. Together with the Heavenly Charms Grand Sage and the Golden Roc Grand Sage, he was one of the top three most powerful demons.

However, the Purple Sea Dragon King was rather calm and he preferred to do things in a more subtle fashion. Hence, compared to the other Demonic Saints, he was not as well-known.

However, even the Heavenly Charms Grand Sage did not dare to underestimate him, not only because he himself was extremely powerful, but also because the Purple Sea Dragon King was one of the leaders of the dragons. He represented the interests of the Immemorial Celestial Dragon, who resided deep in the Black Sea, in the Barren Expanses.

The Immemorial Celestial Dragon was like the Phoenix; they did not show themselves very often and hence, rarely participated in the wars between Man and Demons. However, neither human cultivators nor demons dared to underestimate their influence.

Baiguang said softly, "Many demons who headed over to the Divine Lands through the Inter-World Passage of the East Sea are

under the command of the Purple Sea Dragon King. Many of them are dragons."

"Perhaps other demons borrowed the territory of the Purple Sea Dragon King. I heard that the ties between the Golden Roc Grand Sage and the Purple Sea Dragon King are quite good. The demons under their command are often in contact with one another."

Jieyu said, "My lord asked you to come along with me to the East Sea. He said that it would be something fateful too, could it be..."

Baiguang fell silent for a while and then said, "Both of us belong to Great Void Sect Dragon Pond, if we meet the dragons of the Barren Expanses it may be slightly awkward. Perhaps we should listen to Master Lin's instructions."

As she said that, Lin Feng said, "I'm here."

From afar, the space split open a young man clad in black appeared. His face was dark and his lips thin. He had a high nose ridge and arcane spell runes were imprinted on his nose.

His expression was normal until he saw Lin Feng and the rest on the island. Immediately, an ugly expression crossed his face. That was because the restrictions he placed on the island were still intact till now, as if no one had touched them.

This was the Freshwater Holy Man, who occupied the former abode of the Flowing Waves Holy Man. He swept the group with his gaze and when he saw the Kui Cow King, Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi, Yang Qing and Li Yuanfang, his expression got even uglier.

# Chapter 719: Utter Humiliation

---

Liang Hong recognized Zhu Yi with a single glance and the Freshwater Holy Man was no different. When he saw the Kui Cow King with Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and the rest, he became crystal clear about the situation at hand.

However, when he swept his gaze over them, he did not see Lin Feng. He sighed in relief

While Xiao Yan and the rest were famous at that moment, the Freshwater Holy Man was ultimately still an Immortal Soul stage cultivator. Facing them, he was confident.

In any other point of time, he would not dare to provoke the Celestial Sect of Wonders. He could have left at any moment.

However, now, he could not bear to leave. A magic treasure that he was almost done cultivating was still on Mount Liubo. That was many years of hard work which he could not bear to abandon.

For cultivators, particularly high-level ones, they all had their own niche areas. However, faced with powerful sects, other than manpower, their other major disadvantage was that it was too difficult for them to forge their own magic treasures.

The Freshwater Holy Man occupied the Flowing River Holy Man's territory partially because of his desire to tap on the spiritual energy here to cultivate his magic treasure. Now he was a step away from having his own magic treasure and he was extremely reluctant to give it up now.

"With that talisman, I will leave after taking the magic treasure. Before the Master of the Celestial Sect arrives, I would have hidden myself in the Ying Sea. All he can do then is to watch and sigh." The Freshwater Holy Man appeared to have made up his mind.

He did not say anything. Looking at Zhu Yi, Xiao Yan and the rest, he did not even ask where did his disciple, Liang Hong, go. He

pointed with his finger and thousands of black balls of thunder flew towards Mount Liubo.

Every single ball of thunder carried with itself a crazy amount of mana. However, unlike thunderstorm in the heavens, it brimmed with a dark, terrifying Yin power rather than a resilient, Yang power.

Looking at this scene, Xiao Yan's gaze turned icy-cold. From his back, two fiery, pure gold wings extended and embers danced on them like golden radiances.

His entire body lifted off the ground and turned into a pure gold, Blood Red Sparrow as he flew in the sky

With a single punch, he destroyed many Gui Water Yin Thunder. When the Yin Thunder was destroyed, it did not make a single sound. However, a violent and explosive power comparable to the thunderstorms in the heaven rushed towards Xiao Yan.

Treasure light suddenly shone from the top of Xiao Yan's head as a black tomb-shaped plaque appeared. It began to give off bright light and completely stopped the terrifying power of the Yin Thunder.

At the same time, Xiao Yan's body exploded with energy. The Grand Sun Primordial Flame danced about in his body and permeated through every orifice, turning his entire body golden.

In the next instant, Xiao Yan's wings flapped like a bird and instantly, they disappeared off his back and charged through the terrifying formations of ten thousand thunder balls and appeared right before the Freshwater Holy Man!

Even though he was facing an Immortal Soul stage cultivator, Xiao Yan showed no fear. He continued to attack bravely.

The Freshwater Holy Man laughed coldly as a countless number of black thunder balls surrounded his body and protected him.

Looking at that, Xiao Yan too laughed and with his two arms, he

punched out many times. His punches were like rainwater in a thunderstorm as they bombarded the thunder balls. With a single punch, he broke through the Yin Thunder and reduced the protective shield of Gui Water and Yin Thunder the Freshwater Holy Man used by half.

Golden fire continued to explode in the sky, turning half the sky and the vast sea golden.

The smile on the face of the Freshwater Holy Man disappeared as his face turned dark. Expressionless, he looked at Xiao Yan.

"I heard that this person killed many Nascent Soul stage cultivators as an Advanced Aurous Core stage cultivator, including Advanced Nascent Soul stage cultivators. He is truly exceptional."

Right before Xiao Yan destroyed his Yin Thunder, he used his mind to reconfigure everything. Now, they lined up together and resembled a black ocean.

When Xiao Yan saw this black ocean, alarm bells went off in his head.

As the black ocean came into contact with the Divine Token of the Five Thrones on his head, explosions that were as rapid as firecrackers could be heard.

Xiao Yan swept through everything with his supernatural awareness and noticed that while the so-called 'ocean' before him was as vast as the actual ocean, the 'water' in it did not roar but instead, crackle like electricity!

This black ocean was entirely made out of fierce and explosive electricity!

Thunder was the most explosive force that existed in the world. Now, it had been turned into water, the gentlest and softest power in the world!

On Mount Liubo, Lin Feng looked at the scene interestedly and nodded his head, "He did master the Black Gui Thunder Water.

Interesting."

Xiao Yan, who was surrounded by the black ocean, did not panic. Roaring, an Jade Green Dragon billowing black smoke came out of his body as it wrapped itself around him.

The black fog Jade Green Dragon was like an illusion in the fog. It twisted and turned and with the Divine Token of the Five Thrones, it resisted the Black Gui Thunder Water. The black fog Jade Green Dragon rushed out and swallowed the opponent's thunder water.

As the Jade Green Dragon swallowed more and more thunder water, its own powers increased too.

The eyelids of the Freshwater Holy Man fluttered as he analyzed the black fog surrounding the Jade Green Dragon. Then, he realized that it was actually a strange fire.

"The Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze?!" While the Freshwater Holy Man lived in the East Sea, he had been around for a few thousand years. He knew about the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze, one of the Seven Legendary Primordial Fires. However, he did not expect Xiao Yan to master that too.

"Wait a moment, I heard that this person have the Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire, the Grand Sun Primordial Flame, the Pure Yang Primordial Fire and the Nanming Primordial Fire. However, now he has the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze too? How many primordial fires does he actually have? Could it be that all Seven Legendary Primordial Fires are in the control of the Celestial Sect of Wonders?" The Freshwater Holy Man felt as if what he had known for the past thousand years was being turned upside-down. "Let's not talk about seven, it shouldn't even be possible for him to have five! How did he not get incinerated by all these primordial fires?"

While he was shocked, he did not slacken in his attack. While he had never seen the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze, he had some

understanding of it too. As he watched his Black Gui Thunder Water being reduced into fuel for the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze, which burned even brighter, he did not retreat but instead, increased his offence.

The black ocean made out of thunder enveloped the heavens and the sea below like a tsunami.

If it were an inexperienced cultivator, he would have feared the special abilities of the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze and dared not do anything else. However, the Freshwater Holy Man's analysis of the situation was accurate. No matter what, he was still an Immortal Soul stage cultivator whose powers exceeded Xiao Yan's.

While the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze was powerful, Xiao Yan's Intermediate Nascent Soul stage mastery of the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze was still limited. It was impossible for him to swallow all of the Freshwater Holy Man's thunder water.

The Freshwater Holy Man tried to overpower him and borrowed upon the vast amount of thunder water to exceed the amount that Xiao Yan's Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze could take in. Doing so, he sought to break through the defence of the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze and directly threatened his Divine Token of the Five Thrones, and then Xiao Yan himself. The extra thunder water that was ingested could be seen as funerary offerings for Xiao Yan!

However, while he was decisive, Xiao Yan was no laggard too. The Divine Token of the Five Thrones protected him and the Jade Green Dragon that was formed from the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze rushed forward while the Grand Sun Primordial Flame, which had turned into a Blood Red Sparrow, merged with Xiao Yan himself and turned in a streak of red light. Together, Xiao Yan managed to escape from the area covered by the black thunder ocean.

In the sky, Xiao Yan's laughter rang, "Excellent! Other than my fellow disciples, I can rarely find such a fun opponent to battle

against in my Nascent Soul stage!"

Xiao Yan stopped laughing and he stood firmly in the void. The milk-white Pure Yang Primordial Fire on his forehead began to spread. While it was not as wide as the Freshwater Holy Man, it was just as powerful.

In the sea of white fire, other than the Blood Red Sparrow and the Jade Green Dragon, there were also the forms of White Tiger and Xuanwu. It was truly a startling sight that made the Freshwater Holy Man, an Immortal Soul stage cultivator, look on solemnly.

Xiao Yan retracted his smile and his gaze turned icy-cold. He looked straight at the Freshwater Holy Man and said, "However, while you may be an Immortal Soul stage cultivator, you are a heartless ingrate and a scum. Keeping you alive in this world is an utter humiliation."

The Freshwater Holy Man's expression was nonchalant as he turned to look at Zhu Yi, who had been quietly watching the fight without interfering.

He did not care about the Kui Cow King and Baiguang. Yang Qing and Li Yuanfang may be Lin Feng's immediate disciples but they were still in their Aurous Core stage. He did not care much about them too.

Miao Shihao and Jieyu were in their Advanced Nascent Soul stage and Advanced Demonic Lord stage and they had exceptional battling abilities. He was slightly wary of them. If not for Xiao Yan before him, he would not have cared at all.

However, Zhu Yi was different. Rumour had it that Zhu Yi was just as powerful as Xiao Yan. If he were to join in the attack, then the Freshwater Holy Man had to act carefully.

Oh, there was still a bronze-skinned young man. He appeared to be in his Advanced Nascent Soul stage, but his actual powers



appeared unknown.

Looking at the bronze-skinned young man, an uneasy feeling rose in the Freshwater Holy Man's heart.

As he thought about it, he did not hesitate any more as he performed a spell gesture with his hands.

A hundred, giant spell formations in the seas surrounding Mount Liubo lit up and seawater within the spell formation shot straight into the sky and turned into water dragons that charged straight into the clouds.

The power and mana that came forth made Zhu Yi and Xiao Yan furrow their brows.

For giant spell formations that borrowed upon the powers of its surroundings and tapped on the powers of heavens and earth, it meant the caster had spent a lot of energy preparing it. Its power could not be underestimated.

Furthermore, the Freshwater Holy Man was in his Immortal Soul stage. For him to activate such a spell, one could only stand in awe of its power.

"Eh?" As his opponent had bluffed his spell formation, the Freshwater Holy Man suspected something was amiss. At that moment, he noticed that the bronze-skinned purple-robed young man smiled and used his hands to cast a weird spell gesture

In the next instant, purple clouds appeared at the centers of the hundreds of spell formation in the sea, enveloping them immediately.

The Freshwater Holy Man immediately felt his spell formations turning awkward and clumsy. It no longer followed his will and a dark look crossed his face. "Not only did it deceive me, but did something happen to my spell formations?"

He sought to regain control of his spell formation but then, the bronze-skinned youth's right arm chopped down in mid-air like a

knife.

In the next moment, hundreds of spell formations which did not have the time to turn into a giant spell formation disappeared died down quietly as their lights dimmed.

The Freshwater Holy Man felt a tremor in his mind as he felt his connection with the spell formations being severed.

In shock, he looked at the bronze-skinned young man. "Does the Master of the Celestial Sect have another powerful disciple?"

That was Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar. He smiled and looked at the Freshwater Holy Man as his gaze danced.

"Strange, there's something special about this person. What is it?"

# Chapter 720: Easily Suppressing An Immortal Soul Stage Cultivator

---

Everyone knew how Lin Feng himself looked like. Not only in the Divine Lands, even the cultivators of the East Sea had seen his image before. As his Avatar of Ares looked exactly like him, there was no difficulty in recognition.

However, the Steel Tree Avatar was different. Not only was its appearance different from Lin Feng's, it rarely ventured out as well.

In the Divine Lands, the Great Void Sect, the Great Zhou Empire, the Great Qin Empire and the Mount Shu Sword Sect were powerful forces with many sources of information. They were able to obtain images of the Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar. However, for an independent cultivator like the Freshwater Holy Man who resided in the East Sea, it was extremely difficult for him to do the same.

The Freshwater Holy Man looked straight at Lin Feng and his shape in the sky began to change. He no longer took up a human form but instead, turned into a giant black thunder ball.

The black thunder ball floated in the skies above Mount Liubo like a black sun as it looked down on the island and the sea underneath it.

This was the Freshwater Holy Man's Immortal Soul Avatar. The black thunder ball that he transformed into had large amount lightning darting about it like snakes. However, it made no sound.

Looking at it carefully, it appeared that the snake-like jolts of electricity were completely made up of Black Gui Thunder Water.

"He is nothing more than a Nascent Soul stage cultivator of the Celestial Sect of Wonders!"

The thunder ball vibrated furiously in the sky and instantly, tens

of thousands of Black Gui Thunder Water poured downwards. They criss-crossed in mid-air and turned into a huge black web made out of thunder water as they enveloped Lin Feng and company.

Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi furrowed their eyebrows but Lin Feng waved his hands at them and said, "There's some secret on him. Let me handle him, if not he may run away."

As he said that, Lin Feng suddenly blazed with clear light that shot straight into the clouds.

In the clear light, a giant light shadow appeared. It appeared to possess four legs and eight hands and resembled a headless giant. At the same time, it looked like a tree as its bottom was firmly planted in the soil. Eight giant tree branches stretched out into the heavens.

When the light became clearer, it was a giant tree that stretched out into the heavens.

The four thick roots at its bottom embedded themselves into the void, stabilizing the elements of Earth, Water, Fire and Wind.

The eight tree branches that extended into the sky turned respectively into the eight elements of creation, Heaven, Earth, Wind, Thunder, Water, Fire, Mountain and Pond.

Black and white light flashed non-stop on the body of the tree as the leaves on its branches remained unmoving, as if they were made out of steel plates. A powerful aura, brimming with resilience and indestructibility, began to spread out.

This was the cosmic form that Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar had formed after entering the Advanced Nascent Soul stage!

The cosmic form that reached out straight into the sky was able to catch the falling thunder web. However, the dark yet explosive Black Gui Thunder Water surrounded the giant tree branch and exploded non-stop. Yet, it did not even scratch a single leaf of the

tree, much less hurt it.

Instead, the eight tree branches of the tree began to activate and turn. Then, it tore the thunder water web apart.

The Freshwater Holy Man, who was in the shape of the giant black ball in the sky, trembled.

"What a powerful cosmic form! This... this does not appear to be the power of a Nascent Soul stage cultivator. Even if it is the avatar of an Immortal Soul stage cultivator, few are this powerful!"

While he did not know the origins of his opponent, this did not stop the Freshwater Holy Man from making an accurate prediction. Based on the way Lin Feng stopped his attack, he posed a much bigger threat than either Xiao Yan or Zhu Yi.

Lin Feng did not move directly and hence, he could not see the depths of Lin Feng's power. However, when Lin Feng actually attacked, a sense of foreboding rose in the heart of the Freshwater Holy Man.

While his opponent was only in the Advanced Nascent Soul stage, the Freshwater Holy Man's heart chilled as he looked at Lin Feng. He felt an extreme sense of danger.

Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi were exceptional but the Freshwater Holy Man was still confident about taking them on. However, faced with this bronze-skinned purple robed young man, the Freshwater Holy Man could clearly feel that his opponent was more than capable of threatening his life.

This may be ridiculous as an Advanced Nascent Soul stage cultivator, who did not reveal himself to be in possession of a powerful magic treasure, was able to make an Immortal Soul stage cultivator fear the spectre of death. In the eyes of many in the Grand Celestial World, this was something that completely changed many of their preconceived notions.

However, the Freshwater Holy Man did indeed feel a strong sense

of danger. The bronze-skinned purple robed youth made him feel endangered.

This was not because the Freshwater Holy Man had no faith in himself but instead, its exact opposite. After cultivating alone for so many years and finally reaching the Immortal Soul stage, his soul and determination were both strong and sensitive, particularly to extreme threats.

Furthermore, even if the bronze-skinned purple robed young man was not as strong, when Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi joined in, the Freshwater Holy Man may truly be in danger, especially since his spell formations could not work anymore.

Thinking about it here, the Freshwater Holy Man made up his mind and planned to retreat.

The giant black ball that his Immortal Soul turned into became a ray of black light as he sought to escape through the void.

He could forgo the magic treasure. Nothing was more important than his own life. As long as he was not dead, he could always try again.

However, he heard Lin Feng laughing softly and the leaves on his cosmic form began to shake for the first time since it appeared.

The Image of the Eight Trigrams were destroyed and all that was left was a giant whirlpool. Earth, Water, Fire and Wind underneath the tree began to merge and change. A powerful primal aura was being fed into the whirlpool through the body of the tree.

The whirlpool became more and more powerful and it was able to stabilize the void. The Freshwater Holy Man, who had already transformed into a ray of black light and was about to leave, turned back into a black thunder ball.

The giant black thunder ball was trapped by the Eight Trigrams Whirlpool. Struggling, it was still unable to break free.

Not only was it unable to break free, it was slowly being sucked into the center of the whirlpool.

The Freshwater Holy Man could feel waves of panic rising in his heart. He tried to use his mana but all he could see was his progressive slide into a dark canyon.

The sense of danger in his heart earlier was confirmed. All the Freshwater Holy Man could feel right now was an ice-cold sensation in his heart.

The difference between an Immortal Soul stage cultivator and a non-Immortal Soul stage cultivator was extremely wide. They were two entirely different concepts.

In the entire history of the Grand Celestial World, there were only a few examples of a cultivator below the Immortal Soul stage defeating a cultivator in the Immortal Soul stage.

These examples were extremely and could be counted with a single hand. They all appeared to be stuff of legends and every single of them would involve a particular, special circumstance. The conditions under which these examples happened were unique and could not be replicated. They were akin to miracles that could not be duplicated.

In other words, even if the people involved in these tales tried to recreate their miracle, they may still fail.

However, as the Freshwater Holy Man expended all of his powers and was still unable to break free from the suppression by Lin Feng's cosmic form, he could be certain that no matter how many times the two of them fought, he would still lose.

Perhaps if he had not attacked and tried to escape before Lin Feng could reveal his cosmic form, he may have succeeded.

However, thinking about that now made him feel extremely shameful.

On Mount Liubo, while Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi looked on as if it was

no big deal, the group of Spiritual Sea Horses looked on in shock.

Before them, a giant tree was able to not only stabilize the void, but it was also able to produce a giant whirlpool that managed to firmly trap the giant black thunder ball.

At the moment, less than half of the black thunder ball was already deep within the whirlpool. The remaining two-third of it struggled furiously outside as it sought to escape

Countless amount of dragon-like Black Gui Thunder Water twisted and turned. Any one of them would be able to kill an ordinary Nascent Soul stage cultivator. However, right now, they appeared to be struggling helplessly and uselessly, as if awaiting their impending death.

An Immortal Soul stage cultivator who had revealed his Immortal Soul Avatar was unable to beat the cosmic form of an Advanced Nascent Soul stage cultivator?

Lin Feng did not use any spell formation or magic treasure. He did not seek help from any object but instead, he used his own cosmic form to battle against the Immortal Soul Avatar of the Freshwater Holy Man, and was successful in suppressing him!

Xiao Zhener, Jieyu, Baiguang and the Kui Cow King too looked, shaken. "It's only an avatar, but it's so powerful?"

Xiao Yan and rest of them exchanged a gaze as smiles appeared on their faces. "Master is master."

"Why are you in such a rush to run away?" Xiao Yan sniggered as he looked at the black thunder ball in the sky. "There are only Nascent Soul stage cultivators here. Regardless, you are an Immortal Soul stage cultivator. Isn't it shameful that you are trying to run away from Nascent Soul stage cultivators?"

At that moment, the Freshwater Holy Man really felt like cursing.

Motherf\*cker!



This was a Nascent Soul stage cultivator?

This was a cosmic form?

The Freshwater Holy Man was extremely unhappy, just like Lin Feng. He looked at the black thunder ball that was being sucked by the whirlpool and slowly shook his head, saying, "The Steel Tree Avatar is good with defence but its offence is lacking. It is way weaker in that aspect than my actual body."

"If it is my actual body, my cosmic form would have been able to break this Immortal Soul Avatar."

Half of the black thunder ball was already swallowed by the whirlpool. From the thunder ball, one could hear the angry bellow of the Freshwater Holy Man. In the next instant, the thunder ball trembled violently.

"Gui Water Heavenly Thunder!"

The thunder ball compressed and then expanded rapidly in all four directions. The Freshwater Holy Man was about to attack with all his might

However, Lin Feng was not fearful at all. The whirlpool swirled non-stop and eroded the mana of the Freshwater Holy Man. Waves after waves of Image of the Eight Trigrams congregated together, causing the whirlpool to change. It produced an extraordinary power as it appeared to be forming into a perfect, small world.

The Freshwater Holy Man noticed that he could not escape and hence, he bit down and ray of white light shot out from his black thunder ball.

In the white light, there was a talisman. It burned rapidly and caused the white light to break through the void that was stabilized by Lin Feng's cosmic form. It then turned into a giant path leading straight into the heavens and then, pierced through the many layers of space. It resembled a special path.

Looking at the white light pathway, Lin Feng's eyes shone.

# Chapter 721: Where Does the Path Go?

---

Lin Feng looked at the white light pathway and felt his eyes shine. "It is quite strange."

The white light pathway cut straight through the dimensions and the Freshwater Holy Man planned on escaping through that. Lin Feng looked at the white light and noticed that the other side was a sparkling clear sea. However, white clouds surrounded the sea, causing it to appear illusory.

While he had visited the Ying Sea personally before, Lin Feng quickly recognized that the other side of the white light pathway was the middle of the Ying Sea.

No wonder the Freshwater Holy Man appeared fearless. The Ying Sea was similar to the Void Battleground. In it, the situation was complex and even an Immortal Soul stage cultivator would find it hard to navigate inside.

Even if Lin Feng himself entered, he could at most ensure that he would not get lost. However, if he planned on finding someone or something, then it would be extremely difficult.

"However, where did his talisman come from? It could directly lead him into the Ying Sea from the void, rather than through the Inter-World Passage between the Ying Sea and the Divine Lands," thought Lin Feng to himself.

As he pondered, an uneasy feeling arose in Lin Feng's heart. "It... may not be so simple."

As he thought about it, Lin Feng reacted extremely quickly. As the Freshwater Holy Man was about to make his escape, Lin Feng waved his hand and produced a black and white jade.

The jade gave off an astounding brightness in mid-air. Black and white light shone and a vast amount of clouds appeared. It appeared as if a sun made up of Yin and Yang was slowly rising!

Countless amount of arcane and mystical runes began to envelop the void, shaking the heavens and earth.

In the next instant, the endless amount of brightness turned into an astounding rainbow. It seemingly carved the sky into two separate halves.

In the half-white, half-black brightness, one could hear an alluring singing, as if it came from the gods themselves. Then, the gods began to take actual forms as they stood on the brightness. It was if the gods had decided to stand on a heaven-spanning bridge.

Once the bridge appeared, it trapped the white light pathway from the Freshwater Holy Man's talisman. It did not disappear, but it was unable to go anywhere too.

The Freshwater Holy Man looked at the scene in shock. Despite his many years of cultivation, he had lost. It was hard for him to believe.

In his shock, the power of his Immortal Soul Avatar weakened and it was utterly suppressed by Lin Feng's cosmic form.

Xiao Zhener looked at the terrifying black and white light from Lin Feng and turned her head to look at Xiao Yan. "Brother Xiao Yan, is that..."

Xiao Yan nodded his head and said, "That's the crystallization of master's own Holy Light of Creation."

The Holy Light of Creation was unique and only Lin Feng himself could use it. Neither one of his avatars possessed such an ability.

However, to crystallize one's Holy Light of Creation, it was much more difficult. Lin Feng could only crystallize his Holy Light of Creation thrice. He didn't even have spares to give to his disciples.

While he wasted one crystallization of his Holy Light of Creation, Lin Feng did not feel that it was wasted. To him, the talisman that produced the white light pathway was much more valuable.

After he cut off the Freshwater Holy Man's escape, Lin Feng started to finish him off. The Freshwater Holy Man, who had lost his only escape, fought like a trapped beast. Lin Feng looked at him, chuckled, and flipped his palms. An ethereal, icy-cold fog began to spread from the center of his palm.

In the fog, one could faintly see a chilling, bright sword radiance.

That was the second-most powerful magic treasure of the Heaven Lake Sect, which ranked right after the Dual Polarity Peak. It was called the Ice and Soul Clouds and it was a type of spell sword. Its original form could exist as either ice or clouds, and hence it was extremely mystical.

After Cao Wei and the Two Elders of Ice and Fire were suppressed by Lin Feng, the magic treasure chose to submit to Lin Feng after falling in his control.

With the white light, Lin Feng no longer wasted breath and time with the Freshwater Holy Man. Instead, he attacked him directly with the Ice and Soul Clouds.

Resisting, suppressing, overpowering, killing and catching all required different levels of difficulty. The Freshwater Holy Man's Immortal Soul Avatar could not beat Lin Feng's cosmic form, but he was still in his Immortal Soul stage. If he were to fight for his life, it would be ugly.

Lin Feng possessed the upper hand over the Freshwater Holy Man. If he wished to defeat him, chase him away or injure him, that was still okay. However, if the Freshwater Holy Man did not run and choose to fight to the death, then it was another matter entirely.

However, with the Ice and Soul Clouds in his possession, the situation was completely different. While the Advanced Nascent Soul stage Steel Tree Avatar could not maximize the use of this Metaplasia level magic treasure, it was more than enough.

The Freshwater Holy Man saw his Black Gui Thunder Water slowly freezing over. His heart froze over too.

"Too bad Wang Lin is not here. If not, his Heaven Gods-Sealing Banner could have been of use here," Lin Feng smiled and shook his head. He attacked even more vigorously. Together with his cosmic form, the Ice and Soul Clouds destroyed the Freshwater Holy Man's Immortal Soul Avatar.

Pity the Freshwater Holy Man! Thousands of years of cultivation were lost in a single day!

At the Nascent Soul stage, he still received instruction from the Flowing Waves of Holy Man and only reached the Immortal Soul stage under his guidance. Afterwards, he took advantage of his former mentor's absence to commit murder and steal his abode. Today, he was killed by Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar.

However, after his Immortal Soul Avatar was destroyed, Lin Feng allowed him to keep a bit of his remnant soul for the purpose of interrogation.

The Freshwater Holy Man was utterly depressed. Then, he remembered how Lin Feng referred to himself in front of Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi before he attacked.

Your master.

Only one person was able to speak to Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi in this way, and that person was no other than the Master of the Celestial Sect himself, Lin Feng.

At that moment, he realized that the bronze-skinned purple-robed youth he fought was Lin Feng's avatar.

After he took in the news, the Freshwater Holy Man felt slightly vindicated in defeat. Then, he thought about how Lin Feng's avatar was only in its Advanced Nascent Soul stage and felt that the whole affair was ridiculous.

However, now that he was in Lin Feng's control, his Fate was no

longer up to him to control. He replied honestly to everything Lin Feng asked.

"From where did you get the talisman?" Lin Feng had retracted his cosmic form. He smiled at the white light pathway that was trapped by the black and white light in the sky as he interrogated the Freshwater Holy Man.

As the Freshwater Holy Man was completely under his control, he could only reply honestly and truthfully, "Earlier, I secretly pledged allegiance to the Great Zhou Empire. I obtained the talisman from the Great Zhou Empire."

When he heard that the Kui Cows had joined the Celestial Sect of Wonders, he still refused to budge from Mount Liubo. Other than sealing himself away from the outside world, he also became the Great Zhou's Immortal Soul Envoy. Due to a myriad of reasons, no one in the outside world knew.

Other than the talisman, he obtained other goodies from the Great Zhou Empire. The talisman was an item the Great Zhou Empire bestowed upon him to protect his own life. Earlier, as the Freshwater Holy Man noticed that Lin Feng himself had not come, he did not try to escape immediately. Instead, he thought of retrieving the magic treasure on the mountain that he was almost done cultivating.

Because of his greed, he lost his life

Hearing that, Lin Feng's expression did not change. A notion tugged at his heart.

"Other than you, are there other cultivators in the East Sea who possess such a talisman? How many of them work for the Great Zhou Empire?" Lin Feng probed.

"In the past few years, quite a lot of independent cultivators joined the Great Zhou Empire. However, I don't know the exact number," said the Freshwater Holy Man as he listed a few names.

Most of them were Nascent Soul stage cultivators. Then, he added, "To what I know, only I possess the talisman. I believe only Immortal Soul stage cultivators are allowed to have it."

Lin Feng nodded his head and said nothing as he thought.

The Demonic Commander stage Spiritual Sea Horse looked at Lin Feng in reverence. He wanted to say something but he dared not. He quietly whispered to the Kui Cow King, "Cow King, could you help me ask the Master of the Celestial Sect where is my father?"

The Spiritual Sea Horse King, fearing for the safety of his tribesmen, chose to submit to the Freshwater Holy Man and become his steed. However, while he followed the Freshwater Holy Man on his expedition this time, he did not return with him.

The Kui Cow King was jolted. He rushed to Lin Feng's side but he did not dare to interrupt Lin Feng's train of thoughts. Hence, he waited quietly by the side.

Lin Feng heard the words of the Spiritual Sea Horse. He turned to look at the Kui Cow King and smiled. Then, he looked at the remnant soul of the Freshwater Holy Man and asked, "Did you hear that? Explain yourself."

The Freshwater Holy Man said in a low voice, "He was still alive when I left him but I have handed him over to the people of Luofu Mystical Island. From them, I obtained a treasure I needed to cultivate my magic treasure. I don't know if he is dead or alive right now."

Yang Qing said quietly, "The Luofu Holy Man has a good reputation in the East Sea. Those under him can't be too bad too, right?"

"If the Spiritual Sea Horse King told them about the incidents of Mount Liubo, aren't you afraid of being exposed?"

The Freshwater Holy Man replied, "I've controlled his soul and placed restrictions, causing him to fall into a deep sleep. The

people of Luofu Mystical Island want a Demonic Lord stage Spiritual Sea Horse so they could use his bones as medicines. However, before they cultivate their medicines, he must be alive."

"To avoid trouble, they will not lift my restrictions and hence, they will not know of the origins of this Spiritual Sea Horse. They also won't know about what had happened on Mount Liubo. Even if they do, all I need to do is to bide my time and finish cultivating my magic treasure. Then, I will hide myself in the Ying Sea."

The group of Spiritual Sea Horses were enraged and the Kui Cow King heaved in anger as he fixed the Freshwater Holy Man with a deadly gaze.

Lin Feng handed the remnant soul of the Freshwater Holy Man to Xiao Yan and said to his disciples, "I shall take his magic treasure and settle it in the future. For now, I will hand the matter of the Spiritual Sea Horse King to you lot. Take note of your method and language. Since we are here, we should not risk offending the biggest boss of the area."

Hearing that, the Kui Cow King and the Spiritual Sea Horses thanked Lin Feng profusely.

Xiao Yan and the rest nodded their heads and then asked, "What about you, master?"

Lin Feng flicked his finger and the black and white light disappeared. The white light shone once more, breaking through the void and leading straight into the Ying Sea.

"I will go and see where this road leads to and discover its secrets," said Lin Feng. He looked at the white light pathway and realized it could only take one person.

He stepped on the white light pathway and was immediately bundled into the void.



# Chapter 722: A Mortal Cannot Comprehend the Wonders of Fangzhang

---

Lin Feng expended one of the crystallization of his Holy Light of Creation to trap the Freshwater Holy Man's white light. It was not just to prevent his escape but also to preserve the white light. After he lifted the black and white light, the white light produced by the talisman began to work once again.

Lin Feng himself stepped onto the white light and was immediately transported to the Ying Sea, one of the Grand Celestial Seven Seas.

"The secret of the white light appears to be some sort of unique transportation power. While it can only be used once and in only one direction, its ability to cut through the dimensions is astounding," thought Lin Feng, "I only hope that my previous guess is wrong."

As he thought about it, Lin Feng followed the white light into an alternate dimension enveloped with thick fog and clouds.

The white light gradually dissipated and just as it was about to vanish completely, Lin Feng performed a gesture and said quietly, "Stabilize!"

Purple clouds began to appear as they stabilized the faint white light. The white twisted and turned in the purple clouds and finally, it started to turn purple. Then, it turned into a tiny sliver of purple light that was as thin as a needle.

The thin purple light was like a fish as it moved about in the purple clouds.

Lin Feng's gesture changed once again as he said, "Go!"

The thin purple light shot out like an arrow into the thick white fog and clouds.

Lin Feng followed closely behind as he flew above the cloud-covered sea.

At that time, Lin Feng finally had the energy to take note of his surroundings. The water underneath him appeared similar to the East Sea. However, the spiritual energy here was much thicker and much more chaotic.

The white clouds above the sea stretched as far as one's eyes could see. He believed that the entire sea was covered with this cloud.

In this humongous alternate dimension, the sea and the clouds were split into two.

The Ying Sea and the Void Sea, otherwise known as the Void Battleground, were both dangerous spots in the Grand Celestial World. However, unlike the chaotic dimensional streams on the Void Battleground, the Ying Sea appeared much more calm.

However, that was only a superficial analysis. Lin Feng could be certain that regardless whether it was the white clouds or the calm sea underneath him, both were riddled with great dangers.

Lin Feng's supernatural awareness could only do a light reconnaissance for him. He did not dare to venture further as he feared that reality would become indistinguishable from illusion.

The Two Elements of Creation, coupled with the Ancient Mirage Leather and the Heaven-Reflecting Stone, allowed Lin Feng to increase his understanding of reality and illusion way beyond the level of ordinary cultivators.

However, even he would lose himself in the Ying Sea if he were not careful.

The Ying Sea was also known as the Sea of Mirages. Today, Lin Feng realized that it deserved this name. No wonder many powerful Immortal Soul stage cultivators were defeated here

The mirage here alternated between reality and illusion quickly

and easily. While it could be a mirage at first, it may turn into reality when one entered it. Reality could change into mirage and mirage could change into reality in a heartbeat. These were all normal here.

Hence, danger and death in a mirage could become something very real.

While the Void Battleground was dangerous, chaotic and unpredictable, at least its dangers were obvious and clear. The dangers of the Ying Sea were much more insidious and hence, more threatening.

However, such a huge danger was coupled with a chance to obtain huge amount of treasures.

Like the Void Battleground, there were many rare objects here that could hardly be found in the Grand Celestial World outside. Thus, many cultivators were attracted by the prospect of treasure to the Ying Sea, much more than the Void Battleground.

Of course, there were also many cultivators who died in the Ying Sea.

However, there were still many who ventured there. In the Grand Celestial Seven Seas, other than the mysterious Death Sea, all of them were known as the treasure troves of the Grand Celestial World.

It was exactly because of this reason that many cultivators paid special attention to the appearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea. If they could control all three mountains, then they need not fear the dangers of the Ying Sea. The chance of obtaining every single treasure in the Ying Sea was a huge temptation to many.

Lin Feng was similar. He already saw many good things in his short time there.

In the white clouds, radiant light would fly through randomly. When he looked carefully, he realized that they were pure-white

crystals.

However, it stood out from other crystals in the sense that they had tiny wings made up of light on them. They vibrated gently. It was as if they were alive.

The Flying Feather Crystal was a special produce of the Ying Sea. Its movement was mystical and it was an excellent material for the cultivation of magic items.

In the process of cultivating a magic item, when a cultivator adds a Flying Feather Crystal, not only could he make the magic item more potent, it could deepen the bond between master and object.

The magic item would be better able to sense its master's thoughts and hence, perform better.

Never underestimate this point, for in a battle between two cultivators of similar mastery levels, such a tiny difference could mean a world of difference.

A tiny misstep could have great repercussions on the battle results.

However, it was not easy to obtain a Flying Feather Crystal. Let's not even mention the Ying Sea, sometimes illusory images of these items could be created and used to trick people. Then, not only would one be unable to obtain a treasure, he himself would fall into a trap too.

While it was easy to see a Flying Feather Crystal, only a Nascent Soul stage cultivator could catch one.

When cultivators beneath that level approach one, its wings would flutter and it would then disappear. You would not even have time to react.

For these treasures, they were more than mere objects. Instead, they behaved like animals. However, even though they were not sentient, they behaved as if they had merged together with the Ying Sea.

If a cultivator pursued a Flying Feather Crystal, he may be lead into an illusion by it.

Other than the Flying Feather Crystal, Lin Feng too saw blue light flashing in the sea underneath him.

Lin Feng dived underwater as he investigated carefully. He saw a bunch of blue crystals on the seabed, giving off an extreme coldness. The water near it too had been frozen over into glaciers.

The Mystical Ice Crystals, like the Matte Glowless Metal and the Evil-Warding Purple Gold were all considered the Six Mystical Metals of the world.

It was one of the best materials to use for the cultivation of ice-type and water-type magic items and magic treasures. All one need to do was to add a little of bit of it and the resultant magic item/treasure would see a huge increase in its quality.

While below was not a mine of Mystical Ice Crystals, it was still heartening to see such a huge amount of it.

However, when one saw the many illusions in the waters around it, one could begin to fathom how many people died for these Mystical Ice Crystals.

Lin Feng carefully avoid these illusions and finally arrived at the treasure trove.

Despite the fact that he was only passing by, Lin Feng would not return empty-handed. Other than the Flying Feather Crystals he caught, he bagged the bunch of Mystical Ice Crystals too.

Other than the Flying Feather Crystal and the Mystical Ice Crystals, the many islands on the Ying Sea each contained numerous treasures.

Some of them were illusions, but some of these islands actually existed. In reality, there were illusions on the islands too.

As Lin Feng had business to settle, he did not land on these

islands. However, with his supernatural awareness, he realized that while these islands appeared empty, many of them contained in abundance treasures that were considered rare in the Grand Celestial World.

These, however, were just the tip of the iceberg.

As Lin Feng collected treasures, he continued to follow the purple light. However, after a long journey, the purple light stopped suddenly.

It did not stop because it ran out of steam but instead, it stopped because suddenly. It flashed non-stop and appeared as if it was unable to discern the way anymore.

Lin Feng arched his eyebrows as he stopped too and waited. However, disappointingly, waiting yielded no result. The purple light vibrated in mid-air for a while and suddenly, exploded. Little rays of light gradually disappeared in space.

"That's no good...", sighed Lin Feng as his sense of danger accentuated.

In the next instant, the void before him trembled violently as the white clouds turned golden.

In the gurgling, golden clouds, large amount of bright light shone and the space twisted and turned ceaselessly.

Lin Feng's pupils dilated. He saw a giant island with a mountain on it appear amidst the golden light.

It was a square island with sides 5000 li long. On the island, there was a celestial mountain covered with a halo of light. Looking at it carefully, the halo of light was made up of giant dragons congregating together.

Underneath the mountain, there was a dazzling golden palace. Near the palace, there was a piece of land upon which countless of spiritual herbs grew. It was vast and like a far. However, instead of crops, spiritual herbs grew.

Spiritual herbs that were extremely rare in the Grand Celestial World could be found in abundance here like maize. A stream lined with jade trickled with water, irrigating the farm.

Looking at the Celestial Mountain on the island, Lin Feng exhaled in awe after a long while.

"A mortal cannot comprehend the wonders of Fangzhang, one of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea. Its fame is well-deserved!"

However, something made him unhappy and his heart sank. After thinking and guessing about it, his worst fears had turned real.

The key to controlling the entire Ying Sea was the Three Mountains, Penglai, Yingzhou and Fangzhang. It appeared that Fangzhang was in the hands of the Great Zhou Empire!

Before the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea even appeared, cultivators began to congregate in the East Sea. However, not a single of them knew that Fangzhang, one of the Three Mountains, had already fallen into the hands of the Great Zhou Empire.

"Liang Pan, Zhu Hongwu, the two of you can really keep secrets. None of us knows anything!" Lin Feng stared at Fangzhang, which was as large as a continent and laughed, shaking his head, "No wonder the two of you are so confident. It's not just because you possess a geographical advantage but because you have already conquered one mountain!"

# Chapter 723: No Road Above, No Road Below

---

When he saw the celestial mountain, Fangzhang, Lin Feng knew that the Great Zhou Empire's advantage this time was not simply its geographical position. Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu could have been said to be almost halfway there already.

Penglai, Yingzhou and Fangzhang were independent from one another but yet, they were strangely connected too. By obtaining Fangzhang, it would be much easier to obtain Penglai and Yingzhou when they appeared.

In terms of searching, even if Lin Feng was allied with the Great Qin Empire and other powers, it would be almost impossible for them to face the Great Zhou Empire. It was akin to them swimming in their own little patch in the ocean while facing a giant battleship.

Earlier, the Great Zhou Empire's advantage was that it was geographically near the Ying Sea and hence, more familiar with it. Now, they possessed a home ground advantage.

Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu had made every possible preparation in anticipation of the appearances of Penglai and Yingzhou.

Stepping back, even if they could not obtain Penglai and Yingzhou, they would be invincible as long as they controlled Fangzhang. The other major powers could not truly the Ying Sea while the Great Zhou Empire had many more chances.

Lin Feng shook his head and sighed, "This is beyond my expectation."

"You are too kind, Master of the Celestial Sect. I am surprised that you managed to find me here." On top of the vast celestial mountain, Liang Pan's voice sounded from the dazzling golden palace.

In its main pavilion sat a middle-aged man who resembled Liang



Pan, the Emperor of Great Zhou, exactly. However, his aura was different. He wore the robes of a Daoist and no longer had the regal air of an emperor.

This was not his actual body but rather, an avatar that he had left on Fangzhang.

However, Lin Feng did not dare to underestimate him. Even if Lin Feng was here in person, the fact that Liang Pan to control Fangzhang deserved his utmost attention. Lin Feng himself remembered how he was able to move Mount Yujing before he even reached the Immortal Soul stage.

While he did not know if Fangzhang was stronger or weaker than Mount Yujing, Lin Feng had no intention of sacrificing his Steel Tree Avatar.

Lin Feng placed his hands behind his back and took note of Fangzhang. After a long while, he smiled and said, "It appears that the celestial mountain is exceptional. While you appear to have owned it for quite some time now, you don't have complete control over it, do you?"

Liang Pan looked at Lin Feng and smiled calmly. He did not deny it as he said, "Controlling the celestial mountain was not hard, but to obtain its secrets I still need more time."

"The matters of the mortal realm continue to bug me and hence, I can only leave an avatar on the mountain. The pace of my investigation is rather slow and hence, I hope you won't mind."

Lin Feng lifted his head to look at the golden light that enveloped half the sky and said quietly, "Daoist Liang, do you intend to leave my avatar here too?"

When Fangzhang appeared, Lin Feng realized that something was amiss.

He noticed that the spiritual energy of Fangzhang had been suppressed. The golden light completely cut the mountain off from

the outside world. Not only can he not project his voice to the outside world telepathically, the connection between the Steel Tree Avatar and his actual body was cut off too.

While the Steel Tree Avatar could still move independently, it was no longer in-sync with Lin Feng's actual body on Mount Yujing.

His actual body could only feel the connection severed but he would not know what had actually transpired.

Lin Feng, however, did not panic. Liang Pan, being the owner of Fangzhang, was surely capable of something like this. Lin Feng had the same ability with Mount Yujing.

However, this meant that if the Steel Tree Avatar fell in battle there or if it got captured, no one would know that the Great Zhou Empire was in control of Fangzhang.

Liang Pan smiled and said, "The Great Zhou Empire and I had planned for many years. We have no choice to but act carefully. I'm afraid Master Lin has to remain on the mountain for this period."

Lin Feng smiled and said, "Since you have already obtained Fangzhang, you are already way ahead of the others and me. Why are you still worried?"

Liang Pan shook his head and said with a smile, "The closer you are to success, the more careful you must be."

He stood up and walked slowly in the palace. "The celestial mountain Fangzhang is unlike Master Lin's Mount Yujing, which could move about freely in the void. While it could float about in the Ying Sea, its movement was restricted to the Ying Sea."

"However, there are many special aspects to it. I implore Master Lin to stay behind and carefully discover its secrets with me."

As he said that, Liang Pan said nothing else. With a thought, the entire Fangzhang moved and came towards Lin Feng.

The humongous mountain, which was akin to a continent, moved extremely quickly. In the blink of an eye, it appeared above Lin Feng's forehead.

Golden light flashed as clouds encircled it. Countless amount of bright, golden runes shined in space.

Looking at it, Lin Feng could not help but to laugh, "Fate is truly tricky. Earlier, I used Mount Yujing to smash others. Today, someone else is using a celestial mountain to smash me."

While he was separated by numerous spell restrictions, Liang Pan did not need to hide as Lin Feng could clearly see that the avatar that was in control of Fangzhang was in the Immortal Soul First Level.

However, Liang Pan did not plan on fighting Lin Feng, even though Lin Feng only had his Advanced Nascent Soul stage Steel Tree Avatar.

It was not because he was scared of battle, but instead it was because he wanted to settle Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar as soon as possible before hiding Fangzhang somewhere else. He did not want to waste a single moment.

While he had separated the connection between Lin Feng's actual body and the avatar, preventing Lin Feng's actual body on Mount Yujing from finding out what had happened on Fangzhang, he was sure that Lin Feng could clearly sense that the connection between his Steel Tree Avatar and his actual body had been severed.

If Lin Feng himself came to the Ying Sea to investigate, Liang Pan was not scared of a fight. But he did not want to create unnecessary trouble.

Furthermore, there were other cultivators active in the Ying Sea. At this moment, while there was no one near Liang Pang, the longer he dragged the more likely he would attract attention. Then, the secrets of Fangzhang would have been exposed.

Lin Feng expected Liang Pan's action. If it were him, he would do the same.

However, he could not just sit there awaiting his death.

A clear light shone from the top of the Steel Tree Avatar and a cosmic form of about 1500 feet appeared. While it was shaped like a giant tree that stretched into the heavens, it was miniscule compared to Fangzhang.

However, the eight tree branches of the cosmic form, each of which represented an Image of the Eight Trigrams, began to swirl like a whirlpool. Then, the whirlpool became engulfed by light, covering both the cosmic form and Lin Feng himself. An eternal, indestructible energy began to spread.

On top of the light, another mystical light began to shine. This was the Eternal Glow Spell that Lin Feng had learned from the Immortal Dragon City, which he incorporated into his own Steel Tree Avatar.

With the help of the Image of the Eight Trigrams, the Saros Steel Tree's longevity was coupled together with the Eternal Glow. Doing so pushed the defensive powers of Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar to its extreme.

However, underneath the terrifying Fangzhang, he was still like an egg under the mountain.

Even though it was just a touch, the light that enveloped Lin Feng's cosmic form began to tremble. Spidery cracks and tears could be seen.

It was if the power of an entire world had crashed down. Even the spiritual energy around him was on the verge of being destroyed.

Faced with the pressure of the Celestial Mountain, Lin Feng became serious as he nodded his head and said, "It is as strong as the smashing power of Mount Yujing which I used in my

Intermediate Nascent Soul stage."

Liang Pan, who controlled the celestial mountain Fangzhang right now, was in the Immortal Soul stage. The powers of Fangzhang was still inferior to that of Mount Yujing.

However, with the combined powers of Penglai, Yingzhou and Fangzhang, the entire Ying Sea would be thrown into turmoil. The powers of Fangzhang were nothing compared to all three mountains combined.

Emperor Tai was one of the few powerful Emperors of Man. Faced with the chaos of the Ying Sea, he too had to be careful and was forced to leave it after he heard that the demons had started the War of the Two Worlds. In his rush, he was severely injured.

After he tested the powers of Fangzhang, Lin Feng did not dare to confront it head-front again. Instead, he used the second crystallization of his Holy Light of Creation.

The black and white light shone once again and shook the surroundings. Even the humongous Fangzhang above him trembled.

The Holy Light of Creation that Lin Feng released appeared to have connected the heavens and earth and built a divine bridge between himself and Fangzhang, stopping Fangzhang from crashing down once again.

Lin Feng's cosmic form then used his Heaven and Earth Destroyer, destroying the golden light that dazzled the void and turned it into a chaotic stream of the four elements of Earth, Water, Fire and Wind.

This destroyed the seal Fangzhang placed on the void. Lin Feng hastily prepared to leave.

At this moment, Liang Pan's voice sounded from Fangzhang, "Heaven Heart Draconic World Forming Divine Spell!"

The dragons on Fangzhang began to criss-cross and intersect. In

unison, they roared, causing everything to tremble. At that moment, Fangzhang appeared even more terrifying.

The dragons that were once congregated together began to separate and fly. Together, they circled endlessly and formed numerous light circles, trapping the void firmly.

The void above Fangzhang turned into bright halos of light that turned non-stop, preventing Lin Feng from escaping.

Lin Feng's eyebrows arched as he noticed that Fangzhang continued to crash down upon him. His black and white light was growing weaker.

This was not the Holy Light of Creation he himself released but instead, it was summoned from the crystallization of the Holy Light of Creation and released by his avatar. Hence, it was naturally much weaker.

Once the Holy Light of Creation disappeared, Fangzhang would continue crashing down.

Lin Feng still had one last crystallization of the Holy Light of Creation. At this point, he heard a voice ringing out from the mountain, "Master of the Celestial Sect, please stay and be my guest, even though you would be here for quite long."

Zhu Hongwu, who wore a purple-gold crown and clad in extravagant robes, broke through the void and appeared at the bottom of Fangzhang. He appeared underneath Lin Feng and lifted his head to look at him. However, it was clear that he was actually looking down on him.

Not a single aura came from Zhu Hongwu's body but he brimmed with a terrifying power. He said quietly, "While you may only be an avatar, it is still a pleasure for someone to witness obtain all Three Mountains of the Ying Sea."

# Chapter 724: Leaving Easily Like This

---

With Fangzhang above him and Zhu Hongwu blocking his path underneath him, Lin Feng felt stuck in between. He felt as if there was no way he could turn to.

However, Lin Feng did not panic. Instead, he lowered his head to look at Zhu Hongwu and he smiled slightly and said, "While Fangzhang may be in your hands, giving you an advantage here in the Ying Sea, it is still too early to say that the Great Zhou Empire is going win this round."

Zhu Hongwu said quietly, "The flow of history is not something an individual can stop. The glory that belongs to the Great Zhou Empire shall not be shared with anyone else."

Lin Feng smiled and said, "What a pity that this glory does not belong with the Great Zhou Empire. The Great Zhou Empire can only bask in its own sun. The light of others shall blind the Great Zhou Empire."

Zhu Hongwu's expression did not change as he walked over through the void to Lin Feng and said, "There's no use talking about it, we shall just wait and see."

With each step, the aura on his body grew. It was if a demon had descended and the void above his head began to twist and turn.

Zhu Hongwu's powers increased exponentially but unlike an ordinary cultivator, who would brim with glow with such a power, his body remained like that of an ordinary mortal. However, his desire to fight began to turn into an illusion above his head.

Countless worlds appeared in the void above his head and each and every one of them, a plethora of gods chanted in unison.

The countless amount of worlds began to congregate together in the shape of a tyre and turned slowly above Zhu Hongwu's head. It appeared as if a terrifying power was in it.

Lin Feng looked at him and shook his head with a calm expression, saying, "I will revisit this mountain in the days to come, but I'm afraid you won't be welcome then."

"For today, I must take my leave." As Lin Feng said that, he took out a jade stone. It was his final crystallization of his Holy Light of Creation.

The jade appeared bald and looked like an ordinary piece of jade that was as big as a goose egg. However, it sat quietly in Lin Feng's palm.

When Zhu Hongwu and Liang Pan, who was on top of Fangzhang, saw the jade, their hearts jumped.

They were unsure what it was, but they could not afford to let Lin Feng use it.

Zhu Hongwu's body moved as he stepped forth. Faster than light, he appeared before Lin Feng. The powers of a Martial Way cultivator had been pushed to its maximum by him. He was even faster than Fangzhang.

He punched out. It was if the entire universe was crashing down onto Lin Feng.

Fangzhang came crashing down on Lin Feng's head too. This time, not only did the dragons attack, even Liang Pan's avatar glowed with a bright light.

The light of the pavilion shone in all directions and covered the square Fangzhang. The golden light that surrounded Fangzhang then dimmed and turned into a dark gold.

Heart of the Sky Fangzhang Celestial Light!

When the dark gold light appeared, Fangzhang appeared even more terrifying. Its celestial awe like the sea and no one could really tell how powerful it was.

Wherever the light shone, regardless whether it was the



shapeless void or an actual object, it reduced them all to ashes, striking fear in the hearts of viewers.

Zhu Hongwu and Liang Pan moved quickly enough, especially the former. Light a bolt of lightning, he appeared before Lin Feng. His speed was faster than Shaoze Sword cultivators of the Mount Shu Sword Sect of a similar mastery.

This speed was above the reaction time of Lin Feng's Advanced Nascent Soul stage Steel Tree Avatar.

However, Lin Feng had no need to react. When he took out the bald-looking jade stone, everything had ended.

A formless and shapeless mana began to spread. It was without light, without sound and without any form, as if it had never even existed in the first place.

However, the patch of void where Lin Feng was at began to open.

The celestial mountain Fangzhang's Heart of the Sky Fangzhang Celestial Light appeared to be useless.

Zhu Hongwu's punch, that contained enough power to turn the Heavens and Earth, was useless too.

Without a sound and trace, Lin Feng caused an entire locale to disappear. Only a huge hole was left.

As he felt the vibrations in the dimensions, Zhu Hongwu's normally calm and commanding face betrayed an expression of shock.

In the palace on top of Fangzhang, Liang Pan appeared shocked too. A heavy expression crossed his face as he said, "He opened an Inter-World Passage? This is the Ying Sea and not the chaotic Void Battleground. His avatar only possesses an Advanced Nascent Soul stage mastery, how does he do it?"

In a world, or somewhere like the Ying Sea, it was one thing to open the passageway into the void. However, to open the

passageway between two worlds through the void, that was an entirely separate matter. Other than the Void Battleground, which was complex and chaotic, doing it anywhere else would be extremely difficult.

Furthermore, Lin Feng was able to break out despite the encirclement by Zhu Hongwu and Fangzhang. Regardless whether it was Zhu Hongwu or Fangzhang, both were able to utterly lock down the dimension.

Even an Immortal Soul Third Level cultivator may not be able to leave as easily as this.

Zhu Hongwu retracted his fist and he repeatedly opened and closed his palm. "It is not just the mere opening of a passageway, he was able to reach its other end almost immediately. While I could pursue and kill his avatar, I won't be able to stop him from sending information."

With Zhu Hongwu's speed, which was as fast as a bolt of lightning, he could cross through the Inter-World Passage and reach its other end, catching up to Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar.

However, in the span of that time, it was enough for Lin Feng's avatar to communicate to his actual self what had just happened.

Pursuing would only appease his anger; it was utterly meaningless in all other aspect. The secret that the Great Zhou Empire had obtained Fangzhang was about to be leaked.

Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu looked at the Inter-World Passage closing and fell into a sombre silence.

While it was only an avatar of Liang Pan on the mountain, it was still in the Immortal Soul First Level. Furthermore, Zhu Hongwu himself was present. Combined with the power of Fangzhang, they were still unable to harm a single hair on Lin Feng's Advanced Nascent Soul stage avatar. To them, it was a complete humiliation.

If the Great Qin Empire's Emperor Shi Yu, Shi Zongyue and the

Vivant Joy Holy Man were to know about this, they would laugh their teeth off.

Despite the strong will of both Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu, both of them would feel extremely bad right now.

Other than feeling bad and emotionally repressed, a trace of suspicion plagued their hearts as they thought, "What was the jade stone that the Master of the Celestial Sect used just now? Not only can it break through the restrictions we'd placed on the dimensions, what else can it do? Is there any restriction to its use?"

"Hongwu, the situation is already as such. There's no need to pursue and kill him. With this in mind, let us plan our next step," said Liang Pan as he calmed himself and said to Zhu Hongwu who was at the bottom of Fangzhang.

For powerful cultivators like them, they would be affected too much. However, once a feeling of unhappiness arose, it was impossible for them to be rid of it. After a long while, it may turn into a demon in their heart.

However, both Liang Pan's and Zhu Hongwu's face had returned to normal. It was not that they did not care but rather, they knew that once this seed of doubt had been planted it would germinate and grow. However, it was still within their control. After they avenged themselves afterwards by finding Lin Feng, they would be able to rid themselves of this mental barrier of theirs, improving their resilience.

Zhu Hongwu said courteously, "It was fortunate that Your Majesty had seen this coming prepared for it already. While the secret of Fangzhang may be exposed, creating difficulties for the Great Zhou, we have their contingency plan. Let me go and prepare it."

Liang Pan nodded and looked to the void and said, "The Master of the Celestial Sect is truly full of secrets!"

With a tremendous sound, the humongous Fangzhang, dazzling with golden light, disappeared into the clouds on top of the Ying Sea without a trace.

On the other hand, Lin Feng left the Ying Sea directly and returned to the East Sea.

Travelling through the Inter-World Passage allowed him to leave the Ying Sea and return to Divine Lands.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at the disappearing Inter-World Passage. He shook his head and laughed, "It is unstable indeed."

He fondled the jade stone in his hand as he said, "An item from the system could either be very good or really bad."

The jade stone was known as the Barrier-Breaking Stone. After Lin Feng completed the system main quest for prestige, the system reward him with it.

Earlier, Lin Feng had only used it once. Now, he brought it with him to the East Sea.

It was indeed useful, particularly when escaping.

He was rather pleased with it. If not for this object, his actual body on Mount Yujing may have to stop his cultivation and rush over.

"Eh, Liang Pan, Zhu Hongwu, why don't you chase me and settle your debts with me right now? I too want to settle my overall debt with you too," said Lin Feng with a laugh. "Don't lose yourselves over what happened today, I will clear our debts very soon."

"Furthermore..." Lin Feng smiled and opened his hand. In his palm, a dark gold light flashed as it was trapped by a cage of purple gas. It was the celestial mountain Fangzhang's Heart of the Sky Fangzhang Celestial Light.

As he felt the power within it, his mouth twitched and he said,

"That's just the beginning."

His opponent did not continue with their pursuits so Lin Feng did not care about them. Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu viewed the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea with such importance, so how could Lin Feng not?

"Speaking about it, the items I brought are quite useful." As he thought, he kept his Barrier-Breaking Stone and took something else out. It was a semi-transparent pearl. In it, golden fog surged.

In the golden fog, a purple light flashed brightly.

This was the Heavenly Oyster Golden Pearl. In the Ying Sea, it acted strangely twice. The purple light in the golden pearl shone very brightly, turning the entire pearl purple.

It happened once when Fangzhang appeared!

# Chapter 725: You Lay the Rules of the Game, I'll Defeat It

---

During this appearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea, everyone was plotting on obtaining them to control the Ying Sea. Ultimately, it was a huge treasure trove that inspired envy.

However, many people, including Lin Feng, were rudely made known to the fact that one of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea, Fangzhang, was already controlled by the Great Zhou Empire.

To the Great Zhou Empire, obtaining Fangzhang was just the first step of their plan. Next, they must obtain Penglai and Yingzhou, the other two mountains of the Ying Sea. As everyone fought for control, the Great Zhou Empire already occupied an advantageous position.

Looking at the entire Ying Sea, the Great Zhou Empire was way ahead of its competitors.

Ever since Lin Feng knew that the talisman that opened the white light pathway was given to the Freshwater Holy Man by the Great Zhou Empire, an uneasy feeling rose in his heart.

While the Ying Sea was not as unpredictable and chaotic as the Void Battleground, it still required a cultivator with a high level of mastery and a deep understanding of the Ying Sea to directly send someone from the Divine Lands to the interior of the Ying Sea through a talisman. Furthermore, one must have a certain degree of control over the Ying Sea too.

The Great Zhou Empire possessed a geographical and benefitted from the foundation established by Emperor Tai many years ago. Hence, their understanding of the East Sea and the Ying Sea was deeper than others. However, even so, it was unlikely that they would be able to form the talisman.

Furthermore, while the talisman was only given to Immortal

Soul stage cultivators who submitted to the Great Zhou Empire, it also meant that the talisman could be produced in bulk.

Hence, when Lin Feng entered the Ying Sea through the white light, it was also to ascertain his fears even though he hoped from the bottom of his heart that he was wrong.

However, what he feared came true; the Great Zhou Empire did manage to obtain one of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea.

No wonder the Great Zhou Empire had so much confident over the appearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea.

To Lin Feng, while his opponents may lay the rules of the game, he would surely find a way to beat it. He cannot let the Ying Sea fall in his enemy's hands.

Obtaining Fangzhang placed the Great Zhou Empire in an advantageous position. However, as others don't know about it, when Penglai and Yingzhou appeared the Great Zhou Empire would endeavor to conquer both in one fell swoop, maximizing their advantage.

However, now that news had spread, their possession of Fangzhang was now a double-edged sword. While the Great Zhou possessed a first-mover advantage, they became everyone's target at the same time.

Lin Feng naturally would not be nice to Liang Pang and Zhu Hongwu. When he left the Ying Sea, the first thing he did was to spread the news to as many people as possible.

He knew that the Great Zhou Empire would surely react to this leak. They would not stand by and do nothing. However, regardless what they would do, it was much worse for the Great Zhou Empire when the news leaked.

Furthermore, Fangzhang could be said to be the trump card of the Great Zhou Empire during the next appearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea. By leaking this information

beforehand, even if Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu could calm themselves by then, they would still be plagued with this headache right now.

After spreading the news, Lin Feng began to investigate the Heart of the Sky Fangzhang Celestial Light.

He obtained a tiny bit of it before he left with the Barrier-Breaking Stone using his Fences of Heaven and his Celestial Small Worlds spells.

While it was not a lot, its powers were exceptional. Even when he used his Advanced Nascent Soul stage Steel Tree Avatar to suppress it, he could feel the pressure.

However, this made Lin Feng satisfied. He looked at the dark golden glow and thoughts fluttered through his mind. Slowly, an idea took shape in his mind.

Other than the problems of the Great Zhou Empire and Fangzhang, other stuff caught his attention too.

The Heavenly Oyster Golden Pearl that he brought along with him suddenly reacted. This caught Lin Feng by surprise.

The purple light of the Heavenly Oyster Golden Pearl was not from the Pearl itself. Earlier in the Cloud Forest World, when the group of them battled for the Hades' Dark Mantra, it was split into three. The Heavenly Charms Grand Sage, the Golden Roc Grand Sage and the Great Zhou Empire each obtained one.

Then, no one observed that other than the three of them, Lin Feng's Heavenly Oyster Golden Pearl flashed with a faint purple light.

Afterwards, Lin Feng carefully investigated the tiny sliver of purple light in the Heavenly Oyster Golden Pearl but to no avail.

He did not expect it to occur once again in the Ying Sea, much less twice. The second time it flashed was when Fangzhang appeared.



As for the first time, it flashed seemingly for no reason. Lin Feng did not notice anything strange about his surroundings.

Then, all Lin Feng thought of doing was to follow the white light pathway to Fangzhang and hence, he did not stop.

However, he knew that things were not as simple as it seemed. The first time the purple light shone, it could mean that he was near another celestial mountain.

It could be either Penglai or Yingzhou.

However, it was not yet time for the celestial mountains to appear. Regardless whether it was Penglai or Yingzhou, they were all lost in the many illusions of the Ying Sea. Even if Lin Feng himself had come, he may not be able to find it.

What caught Lin Feng's attention was that the first time the Heavenly Oyster Golden Pearl shone, it was much brighter than the second time at Fangzhang.

This meant that the Heavenly Oyster Golden Pearl could sense the presence of the other celestial mountain, and its reaction to it was much stronger than its reaction to Fangzhang.

Lin Feng thought, "Could this treasure be from the Ying Sea and hence, linked to either Yingzhou or Penglai?"

Its reaction to Fangzhang could mean that the celestial mountain was not directly related to the Heavenly Oyster Golden Pearl. Instead, it came from the relative independence and interconnectedness between the three mountains.

At this moment, the Heavenly Oyster Golden Pearl began to change. Purple light flashed once more. While it was not very eye-catching, it was surely triggered by something. Lin Feng looked at it oddly and said, "Right now, I'm on the East Sea. Why would there be any movement?"

As he puzzled over this, Lin Feng did not waste any time. Immediately, he tried to cultivate the Heavenly Oyster Golden

Pearl. As he performed a gesture, billows of purple clouds lifted the Pearl.

The Pearl vibrated in mid-air as faint light pointed towards somewhere faraway.

Even after he had left the illusory Ying Sea, the Heavenly Oyster Golden Pearl could still point the way for Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked into the distance and kept his Heavenly Oyster Golden Pearl. Then, he flew towards there.

As he flew, Lin Feng began to track his location and he thought, "This appears to be the northern part of the East Sea. It's not far from the Luofu Mystical Island and it's rather near the Inter-World Passage between the Divine Lands and the Ying Sea. The Inter-World Passage between the Barren Expanses and the Divine Lands is close as well..."

As he thought about that, Lin Feng could feel a powerful mana trembling in the West.

As he sensed them, he realized that the mana came from both human cultivators and demons. The two sides appeared to be in a covet stand-off.

As he was still rather far away, Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar, which was not in the Immortal Soul stage, could not tell the depth of his opponent's powers but only ascertain its presence.

He paid attention to it, and then sensed the mana being directed towards him.

Lin Feng arched his eyebrows and retrieved his supernatural awareness as he thought, "It appears two independent and separate worlds were in a face-off. Both are as vast as the Heavens. This kind of level could only be from an Immortal Soul stage cultivator or an Undying Demon Soul Third Level."

The human cultivator had mastered the Way of the Virtual Entity while the demonic saint had formed his original true spirit.

Both were still quite some distance from forming their own heaven and earth.

The vast power and deep mastery that they had just displayed clearly indicated that they were in their Way of Virtual Entity or Syncretic Star Soul levels.

As they felt Lin Feng retracting his supernatural awareness, they refocused their attention on each other.

"One of them could be the Luofu Holy Man. It appears that he managed to get an Undying Demon Soul Third Level Demonic Saint stuck in the Inter-World Passage." Lin Feng shook his head and ignored them as he flew towards his destination.

Soon, he reached. It was a small, uninhabited island.

Lin Feng swept the island with his gaze and a green-robed young man appeared in his field of vision. He was sitting cross-legged in a forest and meditating.

The young man was no older than 15, 16. However, he was very tall. Lin Feng believed that he was almost 1.9 meters in height. However, his body was well-proportioned. He was not too skinny nor too buff.

Coupled with his handsome, clear face, he did not look very awkward.

However, he appeared to only be the Qi Cultivation stage. He did not appear to have been cultivating for long. He was not exceptionally talented and could only be said to be of above-average potential.

However, when Lin Feng's supernatural awareness swept over him, he realized that he brimmed with the power of many medicines and herbs.

The medicines were all very strange. While they had been absorbed him, they were not completely ingested. Instead, they appeared constrained by some spell of his.

The caster of the spell was at least in his Aurous Core stage. Evidently, it was not the youth himself.

Lin Feng guessed that the youth had mistakenly ingested the medicines and then, someone used a special spell to stop them from activating. However, there was no way of extracting these medicines from his body without injuring him and hence, they could only do that.

From this, one could see that the caster was either benevolent or had good ties with the youth. Hence, he did not want to harm him.

At the same time, the medicines were expensive and rare. The caster did not want the youth to ingest them.

However, what Lin Feng paid attention was the fact that the source of the Heavenly Oyster Golden Pearl's reaction was the green-robed Qi Cultivation stage young man before him.

"Interesting, the Hades Emperor had fallen more than 4000 years ago and the Heavenly Oyster Golden Pearl had existed for more than ten thousand years. Yet, it was interested in this guy, who looked no older than 16."

Lin Feng sighed in awe, "What's the tie between the two of them?"

He landed on the island and came before the green-robed young man. He took note of him and because of the disparity in their cultivation level, his counterpart would not even notice Lin Feng as long as Lin Feng wished to remain undetected.

After a while, Lin Feng took out his Heavenly Oyster Golden Pearl and realized that it was shining with an unprecedented brightness.

It was reminiscent of the first time the Hades' Dark Mantra appeared.

## Chapter 726: More Discoveries

---

Lin Feng curiously observed the tall green-robed youth in front of him, but could not detect anything out of the norm.

His age matched his physical appearance. He was between fifteen and sixteen years old, and the years that he had spent cultivating was around seven, give or take. He was at Level 10 of the Qi cultivation stage, and was just about to break through to Level 11.

The mantras that he practiced were standard and unimpressive. His mantras did not even seem to follow a particular type or system – therefore it was probably from an extremely typical and normal source.

Only a few tricks for Qi Cultivation were more practical and useful. However, those extra techniques were not of the same type and track as his mantras. Somebody else probably gave him a few pointers, and he figured out the rest by himself.

The resources that he could access over his journey of cultivation should also be minimal. Overall, he was an independent cultivator of the lowest level that could not be any more normal and typical. His Talent value was slightly above average, and he had yet to come across a life-changing event in his life. If nothing extremely fortunate were to happen to him and a great opportunity did not cross his path, it was unlikely that he would be able to form the aurous core.

Everything was ordinary and nothing seemed unusual. However, it was because of this very fact, juxtaposed against the changes inside the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl, that made the whole thing extremely strange. The longer Lin Feng observed this young man, the more suspicions and doubts arose in Lin Feng's mind.

"There seems to be... Something feels very uncoordinated?" Lin Feng's brows were slightly knitted together as he scrutinized the young man in front of him, but to no avail.

At this point, the green-robed young man had also completed his own meditation. He opened his eyes and received a rude shock when he saw Lin Feng quietly watching him right in front of his face.

The young man could not gauge Lin Feng's level of mastery, and after calming himself down, he stood up to greet Lin Feng before asking, "This... Senior, what do you need?"

Lin Feng looked him up and down again before answering casually, "It's my first time in the East Sea so I'm not very familiar with this place. I happened to see you here and was about to ask you for directions. However, from the looks of it, your circumstance isn't so good?"

The green-robed young man had returned to his original composure by now. Lin Feng did not give him any pressure, and he could still think rationally and logically. He replied with a stable voice at once, "Sir, this is the Northern ocean border of the East Sea. If you head South, you will reach the border crossing over into the Ying Sea territory."

"If you head East, then you will find yourself at the border between the East Sea and the demon tribes' Barren Expanses."

"If you head North, you will find yourself at the Luofu Mystical Island," he paused momentarily before he continued. "However, due to the large numbers of demons entering the Divine Lands, the territorial waters around here have been extremely chaotic as demons roam the lands. The path towards the Luofu Mystical Islands to the North have also been cut off by demons."

Lin Feng listened with interest. "What about the Luofu Holy Man?"

The green-robed youth answered at once, "The Luofu Holy Man is currently situated at the border crossing over into the Barren Expanses, and is engaged in battle with one of the Grand Sages. The other seniors and cultivators under his wing are also locked in

bloody combat with the invading demons. The whole situation is a complete mess right now, but from the looks of it, the demons are fighting a losing battle and the humans will triumph in time."

He recovered a little as he saw Lin Feng staring quietly at him and greeted him again. "My name is Luo Yao. I got lost after getting separated from my partner."

Lin Feng said plainly, "It seems like you ingested a particular pill earlier on, but the effects of the pill have been sealed off by someone."

Luo Yao's expression changed a little. He contemplated momentarily before answering, "Since you have already seen through it, I will not attempt to cover up anymore. However, you must forgive me for not divulging other sensitive information. Senior Mu has been very kind to me and I owe it to him to keep my mouth shut. Do forgive me for not discussing matters regarding Senior Mu."

Even though he was not clear what level of mastery this bronze-skinned young man clad in a purple robe possessed, Luo Yao did not attempt to deceive this person. His level of mastery was low, but he knew that if he tried to lie or craft artificial stories, his emotions would flutter and ripple and Lin Feng would be able to tell if Lin Feng was a powerful cultivator.

If that happened, he would have offended Lin Feng. He would rather just speak the truth and voice his own difficulties in the hopes that Lin Feng would be able to understand and empathize with him.

Of course, if Lin Feng was cruel and tyrannical that perceived others' lives as nothing more than grass, Lin Feng would have no problem extracting the truth from his mouth. There was even the Soul-Searching technique on the table.

All that was no longer within Luo Yao's control and he could only count himself unlucky.

Lin Feng did not really care that he was unwilling to divulge what he knew. He began to speak with a steady pace, "I will not force you if you're not willing to talk. However, you need to take me to see the man that forged the Nine Spirals Golden Pill. From what you said previously, his surname is Mu, am I right?"

Luo Yao was taken aback momentarily before taking a deep breath and replied, "So you already know."

Lin Feng said casually, "It's just the Nine Spirals Golden Pill. Of course, I am aware."

He had never seen the recipe for this particular pill and neither had he ever seen it before. However, he knew the name and effect of this pill, he managed to find out what pill it was when he was searching Luo Yao's body for the suppressed effects with his consciousness.

The Nine Spirals Golden Pill, coupled with the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke, could allow the user to form something known as the Nine Spirals Golden Eyes for a short period of time. The user would be able to tell the truth from the false, and he or she would be able to see through the myriad of illusions in the world.

It was clear that the person that forged this pill had intentions for journeying into the Ying Sea.

Part of Lin Feng's interrogation came from his curiosity regarding the connection between Luo Yao and the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl. The other part was because, though he was unfamiliar with the Nine Spirals Golden Pearl, he knew that forging the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke required the remains of a Spiritual Sea Horse.

The higher the level of mastery of this particular Spiritual Sea Horse, the stronger the effects of the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke. Even though he was still unsure, Lin Feng thought that the Spiritual Sea Horse given away by the Freshwater Holy Man had something to do with this pill.



Luo Yao was a little troubled at this moment. It was not because he was worried that Lin Feng would extract his blood and essence to obtain the powers of the Nine Spirals Golden Pill. He could tell from Lin Feng's attitude and tone and Lin Feng was completely uninterested in the Nine Spirals Golden Pill.

However, he had no clue what Lin Feng wanted with Mu Yu, the person that forged the pill. He was not sure whether Lin Feng harbored evil intentions towards Mu Yu. He owed Mu Yu a favor so he did not wish to harm his benefactor.

Lin Feng explained no more and smiled as he watched Luo Yao and awaited his decision. Even though he did not know what exactly was going through Luo Yao's head, he could infer from the ups and downs in Luo Yao's emotions that he revered Mu Yu.

Mu Yu was also kind to Luo Yao. All he did was temporarily suppress the effects of the pill in preparation for extracting the pill's effects in the near future with a non-invasive method, rather than directly extracting Luo Yao's blood and essence.

Perhaps Mu Yu was the person that was giving Luo Yao pointers in his path of cultivation?

Luo Yao did not think for too long before he gave Lin Feng his answer. "I do not know where Senior Mu is at this very moment. We can go back to the original destination and hope that Senior Mu is still there – perhaps then I can meet up with him."

"However, I cannot help you if you wish to tag along."

Lin Feng's expression was undisturbed. He began to laugh as he watched Luo Yao, who seemed like he was waiting for some judgment.

"What an interesting young man." Lin Feng shook his head as he chuckled.

This tall young man in green was calm and composed with clear and rational thought processes. He was very astute with his

analysis of the situation.

If Lin Feng did not pursue the matter and let him go with just a laugh, then everything would be fine. If Lin Feng was infuriated by his annoyingly persistent attitude and wanted to press him for information, there was nothing Luo Yao could do. Lin Feng could even employ the Soul-Searching technique, and even if Luo Yao refused to talk, Lin Feng would have no trouble extracting information from him.

Even though he knew this fact, he still chose to adhere to his own principles. He was determined to keep his mouth shut and avoid leaking any information to Lin Feng, who was still clueless at this point – even though this kind of determination could possibly be meaningless and could even cost him his life without stopping Lin Feng from discovering his secrets.

However, he would never betray Mu Yu by bringing uncertain risks and danger to him.

This was not due to ignorance and stupidity. On the contrary, he was intelligent and calculative. It would have been stupid if he divulged everything he knew to Lin Feng to protect himself and mulled over his plans afterwards. Even though he did not know Lin Feng's level of mastery, he could already tell from the obvious gap between the two of them that he was unable to stir up anything with Lin Feng. Every small action of his was laughable. A small action such as the aforementioned might even infuriate Lin Feng.

Therefore, Luo Yao chose to keep calm and treat Lin Feng with respect. He knew better than to lie and deceive, and refrained from doing anything to make Lin Feng angry – besides keeping his mouth shut about his secrets.

He minded his own business and did not ask Lin Feng about his purpose for seeking out Mu Yu, neither did he propose any form of deal. The gap between the two of them was simply too great –

doing anything of that sort was completely out of the question.

In the end, even though Luo Yao refused to cooperate for the second time in a row, Lin Feng held him in higher regard than before.

He was rational and intelligent and adhered to his own principles. He knew which lines he could not cross, was determined and was big on honor and dignity.

This piqued Lin Feng's interest even more. He laughed and said, "I won't bother you if you wish to keep your secrets to yourself. Still, you need to know that the things I wish to find out is not something you can hold back from me."

As he spoke, Lin Feng extended a finger and a stream of purple energy shot into the middle of Luo Yao's eyebrows.

Luo Yao was shocked initially but quickly realized that Lin Feng was not casting a spell to make him lose his rationality or his ability to think.

The stream of purple energy that shot into his body arrived at the part where the effects of the Nine Spirals Golden Pill were suppressed. The powers of suppression were nothing compared to the purple energy and Lin Feng released a little bit of the medicinal effects.

Luo Yao's eyes widened. He realized that even though Lin Feng released a tiny trace of the pill's effects, he did not completely lift Mu Yu's suppression spell. A large portion of the medicinal effects was still safely suppressed and was completely unaffected.

This feeling was almost like perceiving a man who could walk through walls. This man was able to enter a completely sealed secret room with no doors or windows, and subsequently retrieved something from inside the room before exiting without disturbing anything else inside.

After Lin Feng extracted a little bit of the medicinal powers, he

began to cast a spell with his right hand and exclaimed, "Draw!"

Under the effects of Lin Feng's Retrospective Reconstruction Spell, the tiny trace of the pill's medicinal effects transformed into something like an arrow that shot towards the far end of the horizon.

Lin Feng waved his sleeve and swept up a shell-shocked Luo Yao and flew in the direction of the magic 'arrow'. He laughed and said, "If this pill was forged by this Mu Yu, then this arrow will lead us right to him. It's fine if it wasn't – the person I wish to find is the person that forged this pill."

Luo Yao only recovered after a long while. He forced out a laugh and said, "Your methods are really eye-opening for me."

Lin Feng glanced at him from the corner of his eye and thought to himself, "You are the one that has taken me by surprise."

When he was extracting the medicinal powers of the pill, Lin Feng was not just directing his consciousness. He channeled his mana into Luo Yao's body and instantly made more discoveries.

# Chapter 727: Unsuitable To Be Judged With The Standard System Of Judgment

---

After injecting a stream of his mana into Luo Yao's body to extract a little bit of the medicinal powers, Lin Feng instantly realized that simply relying on his consciousness was insufficient.

Luo Yao's soul and essence was not completely balanced.

It was as if something that was not supposed to be there had been inserted into a vessel.

This trace of discoordination was so thin and weak that it could almost be completely disregarded.

The truth was that no matter how closely Luo Yao's soul and essence were pieced together with almost no leaks, it was ultimately not a complete single entity. This was different from the souls and physical bodies of normal people.

Not many people could detect this tiny difference. The reason was because there were no observable problems from Luo Yao's physical appearance. Even immortal soul stage cultivators would be unable to detect without careful observation.

The problem was that there would never be an immortal soul stage cultivator with nothing to do but observe a youth that seemed as normal as normal could be. Even if this immortal soul stage cultivator wanted to take him in as a disciple, all he would do would be to sweep Luo Yao's Innate Ability and Talent values with his consciousness; tiny unusual details such as this was still likely to be missed out.

Even Lin Feng himself very nearly overlooked this. If not for the reaction of the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl, he would not have been so persistent about scrutinizing this young man.

The reason was because Luo Yao's soul and essence was fused together too well, almost to the point where there were no

loopholes at all. The circumstance was extremely similar to other normal people.

"This man's soul is simple and clear, and he does not seem like the kind with complicated memories and experiences. I don't think he's aware of his own anomaly."

"Interesting, very interesting," Lin Feng clucked his tongue in amazement. "What is his connection to the three mountains in the Ying Sea, to the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl, or the Hades' Dark Mantra?"

Lin Feng looked up Luo Yao in the system. The system's explanation was intriguing and this piqued Lin Feng's interest even more. "This person cannot be judged with the standard system of judgment. This person has already recognized another as master, and only once this master-disciple relationship has been dissolved can he become a disciple of the Host, and only then can his Potential Value be displayed after switching up the system of judgment."

The 'standard system of judgement' simply referred to the standards for gauging and allocating the four Talent and Potential Values of humans.

Lin Feng had come across a situation like Luo Yao's before. When he was assessing Tun Tun and Lin Tong, the system would switch up the system typically used for humans and replace it with a system that was typically used to assess demons or other non-human entities.

The corner of Lin Feng's mouth curled into a smile. "Could this man's identity be part-demon or part-monster?"

After flying for a while, the purple light that was directing Lin Feng stopped before a small island before dissipating in the sky as tiny dots of light.

Lin Feng brought Luo Yao down into the island and immediately

swept the area with his consciousness. He instantly felt the presence of two nascent soul beginner stage cultivators, along with a few aurous core stage cultivators and a couple of foundation establishment stage cultivators.

They proceeded deeper and deeper into the island and arrived inside a thick patch of forest and vegetation. When they were getting relatively near, Lin Feng released his aura and announced his arrival.

"Who goes there?" The other person appeared relatively tired and exhausted, but was clearly vigilant and aware. Once Lin Feng released his aura, his 'scent' was immediately picked up. However this person seemed furious and upset. After all, Lin Feng was only detected when he was already so near to him and his company of people. If Lin Feng harbored any intentions to harm the, the entire company would be endangered.

A male nascent soul stage cultivator was taking point as he walked up to Lin Feng carefully and warily. He watched Lin Feng with vigilant eyes as the other aurous core stage and foundation establishment cultivators followed closely behind him. Everybody was on guard.

Including the nascent soul stage cultivator, everybody had injuries of some sort. Some were heavier and some were lighter, and it was clear that they were part of the continuous bloody conflict with the demon races.

At least they could tell that Lin Feng's aura was human. If it were the rippling of demonic mana, the other party would not even bother with greetings – it was fight or flight. Either they tucked tail and ran, or they launched their assaults without any further hesitation.

However, they were still on their toes. They were still unsure whether Lin Feng was friend or foe. The other nascent soul stage cultivator had yet to show his face – in fact, he was doing all he

could to mask his own aura to remain hidden just in case.

The male nascent soul stage cultivator in front of Lin Feng now was heavily injured. The female nascent soul stage cultivator that was trying to keep herself hidden sustained far lighter injuries. It was clear that the strategy they were trying to employ was to keep the stronger cultivator hidden in the case of unforeseen circumstances, while the weaker one kept the potential adversary busy.

However, no matter how hard she tried to hide herself, it was nothing compared to the penetrating power of Lin Feng's consciousness.

Still, Lin Feng did not care too much. He shook his sleeves a little and released Luo Yao. Luo Yao's face immediately lit up when he saw the company of people in front of him. "Thank God you're all okay!"

The male nascent soul stage cultivator in front of everyone also appeared relieved when he saw Luo Yao.

However, the aurous core stage and foundation establishment stage cultivators' expressions changed immediately after as their eyes bounced between Lin Feng and Luo Yao.

There was a female cultivator amongst them with light golden locks and was clad in a green robe. Her hair was only tied up with a single silver-colored ring, and her soft hair swayed in the wind.

She shot Luo Yao a look as she began to speak. Her voice was pleasant and sounded sweet, like the chirping of an oriole. However, her tone was overbearing and was the complete opposite of how her voice sounded like. "Who's this guy, Big Luo? Did you bring him here?"

Luo Yao shook his head. "He found this place all by himself."

A young man beside the pretty female cultivator furrowed his brows. "This senior has yet to form the immortal soul. How can he



find his way here just like that?"

Luo Yao laughed sheepishly but said nothing to explain himself. Even now, he was still amazed by Lin Feng's abilities. He did not want to be misunderstood and distrusted by his old mates, but this wrongful accusation was simply too difficult to be explained.

Lin Feng took everything in at the side. He was musing to himself. "Heh! Big Luo..."

Even though he knew that the way this young lady addressed Luo Yao was most likely due to his height, Lin Feng still found it quite comical.

The original meaning of the two words referred to something that was eternal and omnipresent across all time and space.

This nickname was not something that could be used casually. Still, nobody would call a Qi cultivation stage cultivator out on something like this.

"Jinxi, Zhendong, enough nonsense."

The male nascent soul stage cultivator turned to frown at the young lady and the young man beside her. The two of them were his disciples – the young lady was called Yun Jinxi, and the young man's name was Cao Zhendong.

After telling off his disciples, he clasped his hands together and greeted Lin Feng. "I am the disciple of Master Huang, who is the second disciple of the Luofu Holy Man. My name is Mu Yu. How may I address you, and what is your purpose here?"

"If you have also been besieged by demons, you can join our company so we can watch each other's backs and journey towards the Luofu Mystical Island together."

Even though Mu Yu sustained severe injuries and looked a little unkempt, his disposition was free and easy. He gave people a kind of warmth, and spoke with generosity and dignity.

He glanced at Luo Yao as he continued, "Luo Yao is my junior. He's always been rather blunt and staid, so I shall apologize on his behalf if he has unintentionally offended you. Please don't blame him."

Lin Feng had a minor revelation. Even though he was not too clear about the details, he had previously received an introduction about the situation on the Luofu Mystical Island from the Kui Cow King.

The cultivators anchoring down the Luofu Mystical Island, besides the Luofu Holy Man whose level of mastery was way off the charts, there were his four main disciples.

The Luofu Holy Man had been alive for a long time, and even though he never established his own sect, the disciples that he took in over his lifetime was surely more than four. Perhaps they perished in battle, or perhaps they simply lived to the end of their lives before they formed the immortal soul. At the moment, there were only four of them.

The eldest disciple was in the immortal soul stage. When the Luofu Holy Man was not present, this individual directed the happenings on the Luofu Mystical Island. He roamed the East Sea as the Luofu Holy Man's representative and settled things on his behalf.

The second-eldest disciple was Mu Yu's master. He was in the nascent soul advanced stage and was named Huang Ming. He was extremely adept in the forging of medicinal items such as magical pills, and was touted as the best in his craft amongst the people under the immortal soul stage within the East Sea. Even some people in the immortal soul stage had pill-forging skills inferior to his.

Even though Mu Yu was only in the nascent soul beginner stage, he was a disciple of Huang Ming after all. There was no wonder that he could forge the Nine Spirals Golden Pill.

Lin Feng did not restrict Luo Yao's autonomy and let him return to Mu Yu's side.

Yun Jinxi looked at Luo Yao and asked, "Are you okay?" and Luo Yao answered, "I'm fine. This senior did not do anything to me."

Cao Zhendong grunted at Luo Yao's reply as he muttered under his breath, "Of course he won't do anything to you." He was ultimately wary of Lin Feng and Mu Yu's presence so he kept his voice down. The meaning of his statement was clear that Lin Feng intended for Luo Yao to be his guide.

Yun Jinxi said, "Senior Zhendong, this senior is a powerful nascent soul stage cultivator. Even though we can't tell his exact capability, it's definitely beyond Big Luo to do anything about it. Stop picking on him."

Even though she was trying to defend Luo Yao, it was rather conspicuous that she agreed with Cao Zhendong's judgment.

The other aurous core stage cultivators all nodded their heads upon hearing their exchange.

Luo Yao's lips trembled a little but said nothing more.

Lin Feng was unfazed by the conniving discussion the youths were having. He turned towards Mu Yu and asked, "I am here to inquire about one thing. Besides the Nine Spirals Golden Pill, have you also forged the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke?"

Mu Yu looked down and contemplated his response. The reason why Lin Feng brought Luo Yao back to them was surely because he detected the medicinal effects inside Luo Yao's body and discovered the identity to be that of the Nine Spirals Golden Pill. That was nothing too out of the ordinary. If he knew about the Nine Spirals Golden Pill, then he definitely also knew that the Nine Spirals Golden Pill was used together with the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke.

However, Lin Feng's intentions for asking him about the

Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke was worth mulling over.

Mu Yu was Huang Ming's disciple and knew that his master coveted the opportunity to break through to the immortal soul stage but never had the chance. Huang Ming banked his hopes on the birth of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea. He knew better than to take control of the three mountains, but he did wish to obtain some exotic resources and medicinal materials from the mountains. He also wanted to retrieve some exotic magic treasures from the Ying Sea so that he could ascend to the next level.

As Mu Yu was thinking to himself, somebody passed a message via voice-projection into his head. "Don't tell him. This is connected to the grand plan of your master and the marquis. Don't leak the secret to unrelated people."

The person speaking was Lu Ning, the female nascent soul stage cultivator who was hiding in shadows.

Her voice sounded out from within the deep vegetation. "If I may ask, what is your name?"

On one hand, she distracted Lin Feng with her question as she passed another voice-projected message to Mu Yu and the others. "We don't even know if this man is a human or a demon. I can feel the aura of the Saros Steel Tree from his body."

As soon as this was said, everybody's expression changed. The entire company turned to look at Lin Feng and they became even warier of this mysterious person in front of them.

They had just emerged from a furious battle with demons, and the Luofu Mystical Island was within the proximity of the connector from the East Sea to the Barren Expanses. They were perennially in conflict with demons even during their day-to-day lives and their blood feuds ran deep. The grudges between the humans of this area and the demons were far sharper than that in other areas.

Mu Yu returned a question. "Lu Ning, are you certain?"

Lu Ning replied with a voice-projected message. "More than a hundred years ago, I have been to the Great Thunderclap Temple and personally witnessed the Saros Steel Tree inside the temple."

# Chapter 728: Capturing The Demon And Obtain The Pill

---

Lin Feng did not intercept their voice-projection messages to each other. Even though he was unaware of what Mu Yu, Lu Ning and the others were communicating to each other, he could undoubtedly feel their rise in wariness.

Lin Feng raised his head and surveyed the dense vegetation around him with amusement. He realized that the space all around him was twisted until the original splendor was completely lost. It was as if everything was covered by some kind of magic formation with a permeating murderous aura. There was a feeling that a ravaging battle had just transpired.

This was probably what Lu Ning was leaning on. Even though she could tell that Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar was only in the nascent soul stage, she could not tell his true ability. Thus, she developed intentions to eliminate him.

Lin Feng shook his head lightly and extended his right hand. He surged across the space between them in an instant and made a grab at Lu Ning.

Lu Ning was stunned momentarily. She set up the Heme Blood Formation of Death with her own esoteric methods so that she could hide herself within. Normal people would have a hard time breaking through her formation, let alone seeing through her concealment. However, Lin Feng completely disregarded her magic formation and came directly for her.

The multiple layers of change within the magic formation were wiped away by Lin Feng in the blink of an eye, and Lu Ning was subsequently captured with not much trouble at all.

Terror seized Mu Yu and company. In that minute period of time, Lin Feng placed his abilities on spectacular display. The dominance

that he exhibited made the entire company feel like they were facing an immortal soul stage powerhouse. Mu Yu was positive that even his master, Huang Ming, did not possess mantras and abhijnas as powerful as Lin Feng's.

The changes in situation that just eventuated left everybody at a loss. Their emotions were also in a mess and everyone was left dripping with anxiety.

Cao Zhendong shot a glare at Luo Yao angrily. "This is your fault!"

Luo Yao glanced at Lin Feng but said nothing, as if he was thinking.

Mu Yu pressed down his voice and said, "Senior, please have mercy on her. Even though she has betrayed her intentions to kill, that's only because she suspects that you are connected to the demons. We have been fighting demons for a long time coming, and this kind of suspicion – and with good reason – will raise alarm bells. If you have been offended, please forgive us."

Lin Feng's display of skills was purely human powers of cultivation. While it cleared the air of doubt in Mu Yu and company's hearts, it put them in a bad spot. Even though they were now confident that Lin Feng was not a demon, they ended up pissing him off.

Lin Feng said nothing in response. He turned towards the far end of the horizon and said, "So that's why. Are the materials used to craft the Nine Spirals Golden Pill connected to the dragon race? The demon races are targeting you – these are not random battles, are they?"

Mu Yu and the others were taken aback. They followed Lin Feng's gaze to the other side of the equator. In the next moment, a gash appeared at the edge of the world and several shadows giant dragons emerged from within. They howled as the shadowy figures lunged towards the group of people on the island.

There were two demonic lord stage dragons, and they were accompanied by a mystical beast with two wings and a cape like a porcupine. This beast looked like a bull but also resembled a tiger – it was a Qiong Qi, also at the demonic lord stage.

The three demon lords pounced towards everybody on the island. The jade-green dragon in front glared at Lin Feng with sky-blue eyes. He howled to his partners, "There are other people. He's also a nascent soul stage cultivator."

The Qiong Qi demon lord answered with adamant fervor. "If he's human then we can kill him along with the rest."

Hopelessness flashed across the faces of Cao Zhendong, Yun Jinxi and the others. If Lin Feng was absent, the whole company was also spent and exhausted. Faced with the besiegement of three demon lords and other demonic commanders, they were as good as dead.

The most powerful cultivator amongst them, Lu Ning, had been captured by the mysterious Lin Feng. They were not yet sure whether Lin Feng was friend or foe, and both these facts put them in the direst circumstance possible.

At least Mu Yu was still relatively calm and rational. He whipped out a Great Teleportation Talisman and swept up Cao Zhendong, Luo Yao, along with the other juniors and ordered them to leave. "I will try to hold them off as long as I can. Run away quickly, and seek help from your Senior Uncle Yuan and ask him to bring all of you to the Grand Elder. The Nine Spirals Golden Pill must be passed into his hands." (Translator's Note: Grand Elder is to remain faithful to the Chinese language. It refers to somebody two generations above, i.e., the Luofu Holy Man is the Grand Elder of Cao Zhendong and Luo Yao.)

The Great Teleportation Talisman's powers had not even begun to take effect before it was intercepted by Lin Feng, leaving Mu Yu and company petrified.



Lin Feng laughed as he shook his head and turned around towards the three demonic lords crashing down upon them. He raised one hand and began to cast a spell.

The Heaven-Bearing Seal could crush all beings, and brought the forces that held up Heaven and Earth to bear upon the three demon lords. In the next moment, the three demon lords in midair became like iron mounds and plummeted into the beach at the island's shoreline.

Two dragons and a Qiong Qi struggled as much as they could on the beach were unable to get up. They felt like something of infinite weight was weighing down on them that immobilized them. They wanted to take off into the void but there was no way out.

Mu Yu and company stood rooted to the ground, speechless.

Lin Feng glanced at the demonic lords that he had just dominated before turning to look at Mu Yu. He said calmly, "I am only concerned about the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke. Now, can you answer my question?"

Mu Yu felt his tongue twisting into a knot. After a long while, he forced out a laugh and replied, "I am only responsible for forging the Nine Spirals Golden Pill. The Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke is not my responsibility, so I don't know much about it either."

Lin Feng flicked his finger and the Great Teleportation Talisman he had just taken down drifted up into the air. "This talisman seems to be able to provide me with a lead."

Mu Yu said nothing as the jade-green dragon that was locked down by Lin Feng began to howl once again. "Be it the Nine Spirals Golden Pill or the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke, both items are forged with materials obtained directly from the bodies of demons. They murdered the son of the Dragon King to forge the Nine Spirals Golden Pill – hence the reason why we have been pursuing them. We want vengeance!"

"From what you've been saying, it seems as if somebody you know have been captured by people from the Luofu Mystical Island to forge their precious pills. We are on the same team – are you looking for the Spiritual Sea Horse, or the Nine-Winged Flying Fish?"

Lin Feng guffawed at the outrageous statement. "Who's on your team?"

He turned towards Mu Yu and said, "However, what this jade-green dragon just said is the truth. I did hear that forging the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke requires the remains of the Spiritual Sea Horse King – that's why I searched for you."

What the jade dragon could see, Mu Yu could as well. The only problem was that the connection between the Nine Spirals Golden Pill and the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke was of insurmountable importance to his master, Huang Ming. If something happened to the pills, it would ruin his master's plans.

However, the moment he heard Lin Feng bring up the Spiritual Sea Horse King, a spark lit up violently in Mu Yu's mind.

The demon races launched a large-scale invasion of the East Sea and forced Huang Ming and his fellow juniors and seniors as well as his master to anchor things down and engage the demons in battle. The forging of the pills were therefore passed to his two disciples – Mu Yu and Yuan Xiu. Mu Yu was tasked with forging the Nine Spirals Golden Pill and Yuan Xiu was responsible for the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke.

The forging of the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke required a great number of materials. One of them included the remains of a Spiritual Sea Horse and the wings of the Nine-Winged Flying Fish.

Mu Yu had no clue where Yuan Xiu obtained the remains of the Spiritual Sea Horse, but he suddenly had a revelation.

The Spiritual Sea Horses were gentle by nature, and were very

different from the usual violent and belligerent types in the Barren Expanses. They were also helpful towards water-type cultivation, and there were many independent cultivators rearing Spiritual Sea Horses of their own on the East Sea. At the same time, they allowed many wild Spiritual Sea Horses to live in the East Sea as well. However, Spiritual Sea Horses of the demonic lord stage were few and far between, and one of the relatively well-known one inhabited Mount Liubo.

Even though the location of the Flowing Waves Holy Man was unknown, the Kui Cow race that followed him previously were now following the Celestial Sect of Wonders on Mount Yujing. If the Spiritual Sea Horse that Yuan Xiu used to forge the pill was really the one that resided in Mount Liubo...

As these thoughts flowed through his head, Mu Yu began to feel goosebumps on his skin. He turned towards Lin Feng and asked, "Are you from the Celestial Sect of Wonders?"

Luo Yao, Cao Zhendong, Yun Jinxi and the others all turned to look at Lin Feng with astonishment.

Even the three demonic lords that were locked down by Lin Feng paused their struggles momentarily and stared at Lin Feng with uneasy eyes.

Before Lin Feng could respond, Mu Yu continued to explain. "The Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke is the responsibility of my junior, Yuan Xiu. My voice-projection crystal that allows me to communicate with him has been misplaced, and I am not unable to communicate with him, neither am I able to triangulate his position."

"Junior Yuan forged the pill on a group of islands about three thousand miles North of the Luofu Mystical Island. If he hasn't moved due to the recent activity of the demon races, then he should still be there."

Even though he knew that Huang Ming heavily favored the

Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke, Mu Yu still explained everything he knew to Lin Feng without hesitation.

All Lin Feng wanted was the Spiritual Sea Horse King from Mount Liubo. He was not going after the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke, and seemed like he was not hostile towards the inhabitants of Luofo Mystical Island. Without that Spiritual Sea Horse, all they had to do was spend time to find another Spiritual Sea Horse and delay the formation of the pill. It was not worth it at all to antagonize the Celestial Sect of Wonders over something like this.

Mu Yu waved his hand in the air and his mana transformed into a light shadow as he placed the map of the East Sea on full display and pointed out the island that Yuan Xiu was on.

Lin Feng took a look and smiled faintly, "Very well," and with that, he extended a finger and a stream of mana flowed into Luo Yao's body.

Luo Yao's body shook as purple light began to flicker with purple light. A single small golden pill floated out from the purple light and was sparkling with brilliance.

Mu Yu and others recognized it to be the Nine Spirals Golden Pill that had entered Luo Yao's body by accident when the furnace exploded during the demonic invasion. Mu Yu could only suppress the medicinal effects temporarily and eventually take Luo Yao to Huang Ming with the hope that Huang Ming could extract the medicinal effects of the pill without harming Luo Yao.

However, Mu Yu was not a hundred percent confident that Huang Ming could extract the medicinal effects of the pill without harming Luo Yao at all.

Lin Feng extracted the effects of the pill and even re-forged it into another pill.

Lin Feng released Lu Ning as well. Lu Ning did not even dare to

move another finger as her face flashed green and white. Lin Feng paid no more attention to her and grabbed the three demonic lords that were still immobilized on the ground and departed into the void.

As Lin Feng left with the three demonic lords in his grasp, the other small demons that tagged along also scattered. A surreal feeling came over Lin Feng and company.

Yun Jinxi recovered after a long while and said, "This... This senior is really powerful and mysterious."

Cao Zhendong forced an awkward laugh and nodded his head in agreement. "Yes... Yes..."

Luo Yao was even more shell-shocked. When the three demonic lords came for them, the pressure he felt was so great that his body very nearly exploded into a blood pool. However, the pressure vanished immediately after when Lin Feng suppressed the three demonic lords with a flip of his palm.

Then, Lin Feng resolved the problem with the Nine Spirals Golden Pill that was stuck within his body. It felt as if Lin Feng had just lifted a heavy burden on his chest. He also knew that even Huang Ming might not have been able to extract the medicinal effects of the pill without harming him. Mu Yu cared for Luo Yao, but he was not entirely confident that Huang Ming would not favor the golden pill over his life.

Lin Feng undoubtedly did him a substantial favor.

However, up till this point, Luo Yao and company still had no clue who this enigmatic person was. This left everyone with complicated emotions and a million questions unanswered.

Lu Ning's face was as pale as ever. "Let's go. No matter what, Master Huang and others are still waiting for us."

The whole troupe began their journey back to rendezvous with their friends. What they did not know was that Lin Feng was still

hidden up inside the void and watching them quietly.

To be more specific, he was just watching Luo Yao. He was observing the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl that he had just hidden within his body, and a smile appeared on his face as the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl sparkled with traces of purple light.

# Chapter 729: With Great Waves, The Mystical Mountains Revealed Themselves Before Their Time!

---

An idea came to Lin Feng's head as he inserted the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl into Luo Yao's body.

Thereafter, he turned towards the three demonic lords that he had just captured. He tapped the two dragons on the head and said, "You are here for revenge so I will not do anything more to you guys. I will let you go – but do not even consider seeking those people out anymore."

With that, he sent the two dragons spiraling into the void and they instantly lost consciousness. When they came to, they were already thousands of miles away. They wanted to go back to where they were, but they could not muster any courage when they thought of Lin Feng's warning.

"Let's report this back to the Dragon King. With this person protecting them, we can't do anything to those thieving bastards even if we go back there." The two dragons flew away into the far end of the sky as there was nothing else they could do.

The Qiong Qi's was not so lucky. He was still completely immobilized by Lin Feng's mana.

"Everybody in the Celestial Sect of Wonders should be killed. My leader has already reached the third level of the Undying Demonic Soul – the Syncretic Star Soul Stage. Besides the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders himself, nobody else can protect you!" The Qiong Qi was hysterical. "I do wish to see if the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders can protect you for your entire lifetime!"

Lin Feng paid no attention to his maniacal ramblings and sent him tumbling with a wave of his hand. "So the demon that's standing off with the Luofu Holy Man is that old hag. No wonder

the demonic aura is so familiar."

Back in the Cloud Forest World, the Golden Roc Grand Sage gifted the Celestial Spirit Snow Dew he had obtained from the Parasol Fairy to the Qiong Qi Grand Sage. The Qiong Qi Grand Sage was originally at the peak of the second level Undying Demonic Soul Stage, and after cultivating with the Celestial Spirit Snow Dew, the Qiong Qi Grand Sage managed to rise into the third level Undying Demonic Soul Stage. That was nothing too out of the ordinary.

Lin Feng laughed faintly after the small scuffle and said, "Now, Tianhao will have access to the blood and essence of the last of the Four Immemorial Evil Beasts for his cultivation with the four Great Chaos Furnaces."

Shi Tianhao and company had captured a few Qiong Qis previously, but they were all small demons in the demonic commander and demonic general stages, and not a single one was in the demonic lord stage. Now that Lin Feng managed to capture this Qiong Qi demonic lord, he had unintentionally plugged a nagging gap for his disciple – truly a pleasant surprise.

After settling the three demonic lords, he unlocked a voice-projecting crystal and passed a message to Xiao Yan. "Xiao Yan, do proceed to the group of islands three thousand miles north from the Luofu Mystical Island. One of the disciples of the Luofu Holy Man is forging a Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke over there, and the Spiritual Sea Horse King is probably also there. If you hurry, you might be able to arrive just in time."

On the other side, Xiao Yan replied, "I will make my way over with Zhener, Fifth Junior and the Kui Cow King. Second Junior and Sixth junior went searching in another area – I will notify them at once."

Lin Feng nodded in acknowledgement and said, "There is something else I have to do. Do take care of yourselves – the East



Sea is riled up in conflict and hordes of demons have invaded the territory."

Xiao Yan laughed and said, "Don't worry, master. I have just dispatched a few blind mice."

Lin Feng channeled his mana and passed the map that he had just seen to Xiao Yan via the voice-projecting crystal.

After ending the communication line, Lin Feng's attention returned to Luo Yao and company. His lips curved into a faint smile as he waited patiently.

He was not that worried about Xiao Yan and the Spiritual Sea Horse King. Xiao Yan and company were more than capable of taking care of themselves and completing their tasks.

Xiao Yan and the others were already inside the Luofu Mystical Island. Even though they were not received by the Luofu Holy Man because the latter was locked in battle with the Qiong Qi Grand Sage, they still managed to meet up with the Luofu Holy Man's disciples that were anchoring things down in the island.

They had explained the situation, and the other party was also reasonable and cooperative. They were willing to return the Spiritual Sea Horse King, but their hands were tied up with the invasion of the demon races and the whole situation had descended into chaos. They were also unable to contact Huang Ming and Yuan Xiu, and were also unsure of the exact location where Yuan Xiu was forging the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke.

Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi were familiar with the several locations that Huang Ming, Yuan Xiu and Mu Yu frequented on the island. They had split up and were searching for their target in their respective areas.

Now that Lin Feng had managed to triangulate Yuan Xiu's position, the group immediately departed to seek him out. There was not too much trouble and conflict after their awkward

meeting as well. The eldest disciple of the Luofu Holy Man was unable to detach himself from his tasks at hand, but he sent someone to accompany them.

After Yuan Xiu found out about the connection the Celestial Sect of Wonders had with the Spiritual Sea Horse King, even though he knew that this would delay the formation of the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke and would probably incur the wrath of Huang Ming, he still handed over the Spiritual Sea Horse King without further ado.

The person that was sent forth to accompany Xiao Yan and the others was also relieved that there was not much conflict between the two parties. He heaved a relieved sigh after completing his task and asked Yuan Xiu after the departure of Xiao Yan and company, "Senior Uncle Yuan, Master wants to ask you a question: He's wondering, how did you manage to discover the recipe for the pill all of a sudden?"

The 'Master' was the eldest disciple of the Luofu Holy Man and was already in the immortal soul stage. Yuan Xiu knew that he could not avoid the messenger's question and neither could he deceive him or provide false information. This was connected to the Celestial Sect of Wonders, and perhaps even his Grand Elder, the Luofu Holy Man, would interfere.

Even Huang Ming would not be able to dispute his explanation.

Yuan Xiu answered immediately, "The prescription was provided by the Marquis of Jinghuan of the Great Zhou Empire. He provided the recipes for both the Nine Spirals Golden Pill as well as the Mystical Pill of clouds and Smoke. We are responsible for forging the pills and collecting the necessary materials, but my master has to share with the Marquis of Jinghuan after completion."

The messenger was the personal assistant of the Luofu Holy Man's eldest disciple. He understood a great many things about the East Sea and the Great Zhou Empire, thus he knew of the Marquis

of Jinghuan's reputation. "So it was him. He's going to be full of treasures now."

Yuan Xiu shook his head with a light sigh. "Go back and report to your master. I have to seek out another Spiritual Sea Horse. It's not easy to find one in the demonic lord stage, and I might have to make do with a demonic commander advanced stage one instead. I can't spoil my master's grand plans."

Yuan Xiu was having a headache, but Xiao Yan and the others were having a good time on the other side. The Kui Cow King was reunited with the Spiritual Sea Horse King, and the latter was also reunited with his son. It was nothing out of the ordinary that they were in a celebratory mood. If not for the fact that the Spiritual Sea Horse King just barely escaped a certain death, the whole group would have been happier.

When the Spiritual Sea Horses displayed their original demon bodies, they looked just like seahorses, but a lot bigger than normal. They had four hooves and could tread on waves to roam the seas and dive under to venture into the depths of the ocean.

Even though they were gentle by nature and were not naturally proficient in battle, they were relatively adept at traversing the skies and journeying under the water. At the same time, their bodies exuded an exotic fragrance that had a rejuvenating effect on herbs and medicinal pills – this was the reason why he volunteered to stay behind on Mount Liubo to look after the Flowing Waves Holy Man's medicine store.

However, nobody predicted the catastrophe that was to come. Everybody else was enslaved by the Freshwater Holy Man, and the Spiritual Sea Horse King very nearly lost his life as well.

After reuniting with the Kui Cow King and expressing his gratitude towards Xiao Yan and company, the Kui Cow King recounted the recent happenings. The Spiritual Sea Horse King was full of awe and amazement.

"The leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders is indeed legendary."

"My master is still missing, however. That's rather worrying."

It was inevitable that the reunification of the two demonic lords would bring up the Flowing Waves Holy Man, who had gone missing.

The Kui Cow King hardened his resolve and said, "The leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders is all-powerful. Now that he has a lead on our master, as long as his life is not in danger, the day of his return will come in time. The leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders has his own plans – we can stop worrying for now."

The Spiritual Sea Horse King nodded his head in acknowledgement. "This is sound logic. I understand."

The Kui Cow King asked, "What are your plans now?"

The Spiritual Sea Horse King answered, "With the help of the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, I have managed to escape from my dire predicament. My debt has also been claimed."

"Even though we can't do much to help, we still know how to repay favors bestowed upon us. If the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders is willing, my entire tribe is willing to enter ourselves under his wing just like you and your tribesmen, and do everything we can to help him in his endeavors."

"If this is too inconvenient for him, then we will not ask for more. We will remember this favor in our hearts, and if the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders has a task for us in the future we will do his bidding to the best of our abilities. We can remain on Mount Liubo to look after our original master's property and await his return."

"Our master's medicine store had been destroyed at the hands of the Freshwater Holy Man, so perhaps there is nothing much left to look after. Still, it's a thought."

The Kui Cow King said, "If this is your wish, then I will put in a

good word with the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. However, whether or not this request will come through is entirely up to his judgment. I can't guarantee its success."

The Spiritual Sea Horse King and his son replied at the same time, "We understand. Everything is up to the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders."

Xiao Yan laughed as he overheard the discussion. "Look at you two. I can tell that the glory of the Flowing Waves Holy Man in the olden days must be spectacular and extraordinary."

The Kui Cow King and the Spiritual Sea Horse King answered in unison, "Thank you, master Xiao."

"Xiao Yan is the eldest disciple under the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. Master Yang is his fifth disciple. You can ask them to help you put in a good word with Lin Feng as well to increase our chances of success." The Kui Cow King took the opportunity to speak his piece.

Yang Qing laughed and shook his head upon hearing his remarks. "The Spiritual Sea Horse King is pure at heart, and we have all been impressed by that. We will report truthfully, but the whatever the outcome is will be entirely up to our master. We don't really have the courage to beg him to change his mind."

Xiao Yan chuckled as well and said, "We won't need the voice-projecting crystal for this. You can follow us and meet up with our master yourself."

The company was sharing a laugh when they felt a violent tremble in the area towards the South. It sounded like the onset of an earthquake and a tsunami and their eyes fell upon roaring tides and giant waves towards the South.

The violent waves crashed towards Xiao Yan and company. Besides the whistling of the tides, there were vast and chaotic spiritual energies charged within.

Even with Xiao Yan's current level of mastery, he had to take this onslaught seriously, and the others struggled to maintain their stability.

"Eh?" Xiao Yan raised his head towards the source in the South and muttered under his breath, "This is not from the Luofu Mystical Island. It's from somewhere further away, nearer to the heart of the East Sea... It's from the tunnel connecting the Divine Lands and Ying Sea!"

A haze of fear came over the Kui Cow King and the Spiritual Sea Horse King. They glanced at each other and exclaimed in unison, "The Three Mountains of the Ying Sea have shown themselves once again!"

Xiao Yan's brows knitted together once he heard their exclamation. "Nobody knows the exact time the three mountains will reveal themselves again. Still, everyone has a rough estimation. Their return to the world is still a little earlier than expected."

Xiao Yan turned towards the Kui Cow King and the Spiritual Sea Horse King. "Are you certain?"

The two demons nodded their heads in agreement. "This phenomenon is consistent with the last time the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea surfaced upon the earth. Our master was still around back then, and he was able to enter the Ying Sea during that period of time. Even though he was unable to control the mystical mountains, he still managed to reap some rewards."

Xiao Yan wasted no more words and extended his Pure-Gold Flaming Wings, eclipsing the Sun. He resembled the rebirth of the Phoenix. He swept up everybody present, cut open the void and flew towards the South as he passed the message on to Lin Feng, Zhu Yi and the others.

# Chapter 730: Preparations Are Important

---

The rebirth of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea usually followed a certain pattern. After a typically fixed period of time, they would show themselves to the world again. Even though the exact timing was unknown, a rough estimation could be made within a range.

Typically, the estimated timing of the reappearance of the mountains would be within the next year or two. Their reappearance at this point was undoubtedly earlier than expected – possibly on the very border of the estimated time range.

In the East Sea, the powers and cultivators that had their own ideas about the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea were only beginning to make their preparations. The sudden showing of the three mountains took everyone by surprise, but did not affect the speed of their reactions too much.

In a moment's notice, many powerful cultivators in the Divine Lands and even some in the Barren Expanses began to make their way towards the tunnel connecting the Ying Sea and the center of the East Sea.

Rather than the sudden reappearance of the Three Mountains, what pressured the others more was the information that originated from the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

One of the mountains, the Abbot Celestial Mountain, was already in the hands of the Great Zhou Empire. Everybody knew what this meant.

The Great Zhou Empire's power was far superior to most people, but there were many who were unwilling to let go of the Ying Sea just like that. Just because of that, the Great Zhou Empire became something of a public enemy and attracted antagonizing attention from a great many people.

The Great Zhou Empire was prepared for such a ‘worst-case scenario’, however. They began to manipulate the people around them and form coalitions and alliances to correct their dire position.

The reappearance of the Three Mountains simply meant searching for them was now possible. They were still hidden within the boundless vastness of the Ying Sea, and triangulating their exact location was still a challenge for most. Therefore, when the Ying Sea first began to tremble with monstrous waves and tides, the general public stayed their hands for the moment. The main directors of the rhythm and the flow of events was the Great Zhou Empire and several other great powers; they were conducting their own trials and errors and confronting each other as well.

There were some relatively weaker parties that did not harbor any hopes to take control of a Celestial Mountain for themselves. All they wanted to do was take the chance and rummage for some rare and exotic items from the Ying Sea. The time when the greater powers were challenging each other presented the perfect opportunity to snake their way into the Ying Sea and retrieve a few rare items for themselves.

Lin Feng felt the surge of spiritual energy coming from the tunnel at the Ying Sea as well, and it was not difficult to infer that it was due to the precocious reappearance of the Three Mountains.

After he received Xiao Yan’s voice-projected message and confirmed his suspicions, Lin Feng was not so hasty to make his way there.

His attention was still focused on Luo Yao. It was not because he disregarded the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea – he was simply more concerned about the unnatural changes of the Heavenly Oyster’s Golden Pearl.

After all, Lin Feng’s journey to the East Sea was not for vacation



or for some sightseeing at the Ying Sea. He was here for the Penglai, Yingzhou and the Fangzhang Celestial Mountains.

His target was not just to find the Celestial Mountains or to retrieve magic treasures from the Ying Sea. His aim was the same as Liang Pan, Zhu Hongwu and the other powers – he wanted to take control of the Three Celestial Mountains.

This was not something that could be done simply by getting there first. Controlling the Celestial Mountains required careful planning, intricate methodology and even a little bit of luck.

Therefore, Lin Feng's attention was still trained on Luo Yao. Based on the unusual circumstances that he had just witnessed, Lin Feng's intuition told him that this tall youth that seemed as average as every could get was one of the keys to coming out on top in this chaotic scene.

Naturally, he would not waste too much time on this. He ran the risk of letting someone else take control of the Celestial Mountains before he could even react, and nothing more could be said or done then. Furthermore, the various powers had limited time to act. If they could not gain control before a certain date, the Celestial Mountains would return to obscurity into the Ying Sea – and everybody would have to wait for the next time they showed themselves again.

However, the Celestial Mountains had just appeared and Lin Feng still had enough time – preparations were important, after all.

"After I complete the task at hand, I will make my way over there. You guys can proceed into the Ying Sea without me, but do watch out for each other," Lin Feng passed a voice-projected message to Xiao Yan. "Once you're inside, it will be difficult for you communicate with anybody in the Divine Lands via voice-projection crystals. I won't be able to triangulate your position that quickly as well, so please take care of yourselves."

Lin Feng's original body was training on Mount Kunlun and this endeavor required the entirety of his mana and abhijnas. Therefore, he was unable to imprint his physical spell bodies upon his avatars or on any of his disciples.

The confrontation at the Ying Sea would have far-reaching consequences. Many powerful individuals would be involved, and it was quite clear that there were some people that even Xiao Yan and company would not be able to handle.

Still, Lin Feng's incessant nagging was a result of his habitual concern for his disciples as their master.

Lin Feng was not actually that worried about their safety. For hot-headed and daring people like Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi, Lin Feng could already count himself lucky if they did not take the heads off other people instead.

The true colors would only be revealed in the crucial moments. The more complicated the situation or the greater the conflict, the happier these guys would be. They had big hearts and great ambitions and were all destined to be major players in the world.

After listening to Lin Feng's orders, Xiao Yan laughed in response. "Don't worry master, I understand. I will take care of myself and the others."

He cut off his connection with Lin Feng and passed another message to Zhu Yi. "Second Junior, we will proceed into the Ying Sea first without you. The fun is about to start – don't be late for it."

Zhu Yi smiled and answered, "Please go ahead. We will be there shortly." The Celestial Sect of Wonders had a secret marker for communicating with and sharing leads with each other, especially in a place that was difficult to communicate normally such as the Ying Sea.

At this moment, Xiao Yan and his company – including the Kui

Cow King and the Spiritual Horse King – entered the tunnel and into the Ying Sea.

Immediately after entering the Ying Sea, Xiao Yan produced a tiny crystal the size of his fingernail in front of his eye. He fixed it in place with his mana and attached the thin crystal onto his eyeball.

Under the control of his abhijna and mana, he managed to connect his own vision to the mystical powers of the crystal. He was now able to see the myriad of illusions within the Ying Sea and could tell the correct path from the wrong.

This was a remnant piece from the Heaven-Reflecting Stone that was left behind when Lin Feng re-forged it. The several bits and pieces that remained were processed to become tiny mirror-like crystals. Even though they were only remnants pieces of the original Heaven-Reflecting Stone, they still possessed the mystical abilities of the stone to break deceptions and see through illusions.

Everybody else, including Yang Qing, Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang had a piece as well.

It was the first time they were inside such a vast and open foreign space like the Ying Sea by themselves. Lin Feng warned them about the Ying Sea, which was full of dangers and deceptive chicanery, but made preparations for them as well.

The more powerful and dangerous illusions were the most difficult to break. Some could not even be countered by the original Heaven-Reflecting Stone itself, let alone the remnant pieces of it. Still, these dangerous illusions were ultimately rare occurrences. Xiao Yan and the others took special care in their venture, and they were able to dodge a great majority of the various illusions.

The company proceeded forward across the white mist-covered Ying Sea. Their speed and efficiency were far greater than most common cultivators.

The only problem was that they still had no headway in their search for the Three Celestial Mountains.

"We might as well seek out the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain first, which is currently under the control of the Great Zhou Empire, and wait for an opportunity to present itself. At least our target is clearer." Xiao Yan remarked with a tinge of hostility in his voice. The Kui Cow King and the Spiritual Sea Horse King were both shell-shocked at his comment, however. "I don't think we can do anything to the Great Zhou Empire."

Xiao Zhener giggled and said, "That's why he said we have to wait for an opportunity to present itself. The Great Qin Empire will have their eyes set on the Great Zhou Empire without question. They won't just sit by and do nothing even if just one of the Celestial Mountains is being controlled by the Great Zhou Empire."

Xiao Yan chuckled and chimed in. "That is correct."

His expression changed a little as he spoke and he glanced downwards at the mist-covered surface of the Ying Sea.

Xiao Zhener and the others followed his eyes and looked downwards as well. Yang Qing began to get a little excited but said nothing.

It was Xiao Yan that spoke first. "What a rare sight. The bottom of the ocean has a spring with a vein of the Shaoyang Mystical Water."

He turned towards Yang Qing and continued, "This will be greatly beneficial to your line of cultivation, Fifth Junior."

Yang Qing nodded his head in agreement. "However, collecting the Shaoyang Mystical Water will take a lot of time. The Three Mountains of the Ying Sea are what's important. If we can take control of the Ying Sea, then searching for and retrieving the Shaoyang Mystical Water will be easy."

Xiao Yan shook his head but the smile on his face was still as

warm as ever. His voice became a little more serious, however. "What if someone else retrieves it when we leave? If that person departs immediately after, then we won't be able to retrieve it even if we end up controlling the three mountains."

"Look further and don't lose sight of the big picture over small details. If we take too long to retrieve the Shaoyang Mystical Water, I won't agree to it either, but since you have the Grand Moon Primordial Water in your possession, retrieving the Mystical Water now will be a piece of cake. How can we turn away from something served on a silver platter?"

"We have to control the present to even think about controlling the future. If our slight delay causes us to miss our chances with the Celestial Mountains, then that will be due to our weakness, and also because we are not fated with them."

"We need to know how to compromise and give and take if we wish to survive in the world. However, we need to learn how to grasp opportunities presented to us. Who knows if this stroke of luck will lead us to even greater fortune? Our master is not even making his way here yet due to his tasks at hand. The completion of his task is probably going to be greatly beneficial to our endeavors."

After listening to his speech, Yang Qing pondered momentarily before answering, "You are right, Eldest Senior. Then may I request everyone to wait for me for a little while – I'll be right back."

He hesitated no longer and dived deep into the ocean. He could see a stream of light-green spring water flowing out from the seabed. The spring water and the ocean water did not mix together, and the spring water exuded a certain degree of warmth and flickered with golden light in the dark depths of the ocean's abyss.

Yang Qing pointed a finger and a stream of jade-green water

flowed towards the spring of Shaoyang Mystical Water. The Water to rule all waters, the Grand Moon Primordial Water, swept up the Shaoyang Mystical Water spring and caused the seabed to shake and tremble.

Flashes of jade-green light surged around within the Shaoyang Mystical Water stream, and the entire vein began to fall into Yang Qing's grasp. The only problem was that the vein was a little too vast, and Yang Qing needed a little more time to be able to completely control it as he channeled more and more of the Grand Moon Primordial Water within.

However, at this very moment, a frightening force of demonic power barreled forth and pummeled Yang Qing's Grand Moon Primordial Water and detached him from the vein of Shaoyang Mystical Water.

Yang Qing was slightly taken aback as he felt a grand draconic aura envelop his body in the next moment, and he began to feel the movement of mana around his body slow down.

He had not felt such a powerful draconic aura before – not even from Jieyu, who was in the demonic lord advanced stage. He recovered quickly and thought to himself, "A dragon king with the Undying Demonic Soul?"

A giant black shadow emerged in the dark waters. Its entire body was deep blue and it was over a thousand feet long, and had a grand and intimidating appearance. Limitless demonic forces exuded from its body and seemed to stir up the entire ocean – it was a Sea Dragon King.

Xiao Yan detected the arrival of the Sea Dragon King even before Yang Qing's encounter. He frowned a little and was about to dive down into the ocean as well when his heart skipped a beat – he could feel that there was someone around him observing him from the shadows.

# Chapter 731: The Marquis of Jinghuan's List

---

The Sea Dragon King began to show its hostility when it got close. Xiao Yan had already detected it earlier on and wanted to step in when the Sea Dragon King was directing its demonic powers to interfere with Yang Qing's extraction of the vein of Shaoyang Mystical Water. However, he felt a sudden discomfort in his chest.

That feeling was something that one only felt when there was someone, or something, watching and observing one from the shadows.

This type of spying was extremely obscure and mysterious, and was undetectable for most nascent soul stage cultivators. Yet, at the same time, it was ruthless and was fearless personified as Xiao Yan could feel this thing going through both his body and mana – even his soul.

Xiao Yan's brows knitted into a frown and he immediately unleashed a pale white sea of Pure Yang Primordial Fire above his head. The Four Appearances flashed around inside the white patch of fire and mana began to work through his entire body.

The radiant flames lit up the void in the immediate vicinity. Every ghost and shadow became nothing, and a plain ray of light appeared out of nowhere in an instant. It was shot across from a source far away and was trained upon Xiao Yan's body, and resembled the light from a mirror's reflection. This was the entity that was trying to spy on Xiao Yan in secret.

Upon realizing that he had been discovered, the other party decided to stop hiding himself and a figure appeared gradually from within the thick white mist.

The arriving party was a young man with a posh golden robe, a golden crown upon his head and a yellow belt around his waist.

His features and body ratio were well-balanced and had inch-long hair upon his head. He was handsome and good-looking and two pale-golden spheres that resembled actual Suns encircled his temples.

It was Liang An, the Marquis of Jinghuan of the Great Zhou Empire. There was a giant black flag erected behind him and it was on full display, swaying in the wind. Black light spiraled around the flag, and it felt as if there was a great army protecting the royal emperor.

The concept of power coming from this ‘ghost army’ was the willpower to protect their lord regardless of the strength of their adversaries, and regardless of any cataclysmic disasters that were to befall them.

The emperor under their protection was equally glorious. The majesty and dignity only an emperor could possess was unwavering and eternal, and it resembled the willpower of an emperor that would rule for millennia.

There were several other people standing underneath the Marquis of Jinghuan’s Metaplasia-level Immortal Royal Flag. The two people taking point were nascent soul advanced stage cultivators – one was a strongman clad in armor, and the other was a middle-aged man in a flowing white robe. They both exuded a formidable aura and possessed extraordinary abilities.

The rest of the company were also in the nascent soul stage. They stood upright behind the Marquis of Jinghuan in silence. Even though it was only a handful of people, the feeling that they gave onlookers was one of a great sprawling army’s undying passion to protect their lord, similar to that of the Immortal Royal Flag. The target of their protection was, naturally, the Marquis of Jinghuan.

There was an ember-colored light circle above Liang An’s head. It was like a circular mirror, and released a pale-golden light that was shining on Xiao Yan.



Liang An's reaction was undetectable, if there was any at all, after being discovered by Xiao Yan. He chuckled and the light from the mirror vanished into thin air.

However, his withdrawal of the mirror's light did not mean he intended to retreat. It was quite the opposite as his whole body began to exude an aura that resembled a nocked arrow that was about to be released from its bow. He seemed like an all-consuming evil wolf-beast that was ready to pounce on its target at any moment.

"Your master did not imprint his physical spell body on you this time. Perhaps he felt that with your current nascent soul intermediate stage level of mastery, you won't need his protection anymore?" The Marquis of Jinghuan shook his head and laughed, "That's too careless. Maybe it's because the path of the Celestial Sect of Wonders has been so smooth to the point that he has forgotten that nascent soul intermediate stage mastery is really nothing much to be proud of."

He turned to look at Xiao Yan. "Of course, I do admit that you and your juniors have a superior battle prowess at the nascent soul intermediate stage compared to others of the same level of mastery. However, you guys are still far from being able to push over the world."

"After all, the reason why nobody really dares to touch your company is because you have the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders watching over you. If not for this fact, then you guys will have met your respective demises many times over."

Xiao Yan shot back a cold look. "Mount Kunlun was obediently quiet for a few days, but now you're back barking around. Your memory is really quite poor – since that's the case, I shall completely demolish you today."

The Marquis of Jinghuan scoffed at Xiao Yan's remark. "You seem to have your facts wrong. When the Celestial Sect of

Wonders visited Mount Kunlun to observe the ceremony, I was playing the role of host and you were my guests. I wanted to give face to the Celestial Sect of Wonders – so, the person that escaped a certain disastrous fate was you."

He turned around and gripped the stand of the Immortal Royal Flag behind him and said calmly, "Xiao Yan, you are the most senior disciple of the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. People treat you with more respect than you deserve all because of him."

"Before the battle of Xiling City, you burned down the entire residence of the Yu Family inside Xiling City and devastated the Yu Family ancestral ground immediately after. That's quite spectacular, but in my opinion, the four great families of the Great Qin Empire are all groups of useless people – with the exception of Yu Xintao – and have no substance to back up their grandeur."

"What a pity that you've lost sight of what's real after a few compliments from the outside world. From my perspective, besides your connection to the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, you're nothing at all." The Marquis of Jinghuan shook the Immortal Royal Flag lightly and black light expanded outwards, eclipsing the Sun. "You managed to escape inside the Void Battleground by virtue of your master, and I gave you another chance on Mount Kunlun for the same reason and let you live until now."

The Marquis of Jinghuan chuckled. "It's a pity that you can't escape your fate any longer. From my knowledge, Lin Feng only sent a nascent soul stage avatar to the East Sea, and is now tied up there and has yet to enter the Ying Sea."

"He has also been careless enough not to imprint any physical spell bodies on you or your mates. You tell me, what reason do I have to let you escape with your life this time?"

The smile on Xiao Yan's face was equally hearty and warm.

However, in the eyes of onlookers, it was especially cold. "Liang An, I'm not sure if anyone has told you this before, but when you're so full of yourself you also tend to speak a lot of nonsense?"

"But I don't mind letting to drone on today," Xiao Yan's smile became ever colder. "It doesn't matter anymore. After today, you won't have a chance to speak anymore."

The Marquis of Jinghuan laughed at Xiao Yan's remarks, as if he was digesting what he just said. "Oh? If I were you, I'd worry about my partners first."

The Sea Dragon King at the Undying Demonic Soul stage in the deep sea was not in a hurry to leave after thieving the vein of Shaoyang Mystical Water from Yang Qing. He changed into his human form and floated onto the surface of the Sea and was quietly watching Xiao Yan and the Marquis of Jinghuan.

His human form was a middle-aged man in a long sky-blue robe. His eyes darted back and forth between Xiao Yan and the Marquis of Jinghuan with mild amusement – it was clear that he was going to sit this one out and watch the showdown from the sidelines.

However, it was quite clear that the pressure that came from this middle-aged man was slightly different. He had just conflicted with someone from Xiao Yan's company, and the enemy of my enemy is my friend, therefore if it came down to taking sides the Sea Dragon King was bound to lean towards Liang An's camp.

The young girl in a green shirt that had been standing quietly behind Xiao Yan this whole time began to giggle. "Xiao Yan, honey, you can let go and take this fight. I will anchor things down."

As she spoke, a faint ray of light lit up on her forehead and a single jade earring shimmered into existence from within. Frightening thunder strikes flashed and crackled on top of the jade earring and shook the entire world all around. The pale-white thunder strikes were so powerful that even the black light from the Immortal Royal Flag was unable to suppress them.

Xiao Zhener raised her hand gracefully in the void and a long blade appeared in her hands. It exuded a primal aura of supreme kingly dominance.

The Sea Dragon King's expression changed a little. He did not expect a nascent soul stage cultivator like Xiao Zhener to possess two different kinds of magic treasures.

Besides the Ancient Royal Sword that was gifted to her by Lin Feng, she also possessed the Ancient Jade Earring that had been bestowed upon her by her family as a talisman of protection.

Both magic treasures were only in the Gestation stage, and their maximum powers could not be unleashed in Zhener's hands. But with two magic treasures in hand, Xiao Zhener became a force to be reckoned with.

It was her solemn look, however, that was a lot more intimidating. Even when faced with the Sea Dragon King, who was already at the Undying Demonic Soul stage, her willpower was unwavering. Her strength in determination fueled her self-confidence.

The Sea Dragon King was just slightly shocked but recovered immediately after. He watched Xiao Zhener with mild interest and muttered under his breath, "Little girl, you can't possibly think that you can match me just because you have two magic treasures in your possession?"

Xiao Zhener was as calm as ever. "Even though you may be in the Undying Demonic Soul stage, who will be victorious in the end depends entirely on the course of battle. I don't have to beat you – all I need to do is to hold you back long enough. Xiao Yan probably won't need that much time on his side to defeat his adversary."

Xiao Yan's expression was equally calm. "Zhener, you're jinxing me."

Zhener's smile was enchanting. It was like the blooming of a

lotus flower in the silent night, with a beauty that rendered all other things colorless.

She was already on edge after the Marquis of Jinghuan's continuous jibing and insults at Xiao Yan. In truth, with her temper, she wanted to face off the Marquis of Jinghuan herself. The only two things holding her back were the facts that she understood Xiao Yan's personality deeply, and she was aware of his current level of mastery.

Xiao Yan understood what Zhener was thinking as well. He was full of gratitude and love, and was bursting with pride as he turned to shoot a cold look at the Marquis of Jinghuan. "I won't need too much time indeed."

The Marquis of Jinghuan looked Zhener up and down with invasive eyes before he swiped the void with one hand and unleashed a vast patch of blood-red light.

There was a list of names on the patch of red light. The Marquis of Jinghuan smiled casually and said, "Every beauty that has yet to land in my hands will be entered into this List of Lost Love."

"I will temporarily ignore the ladies in the Golden List of the immortal soul stage cultivators. I will make my own plans after I enter the immortal soul stage myself." The Marquis of Jinghuan's voice was unnaturally calm. However, the feeling that he gave others was one of true fearlessness and one without a care for the world.

"You were originally number three in the red list. You were behind Hu Yanyan of the Mount Qingqiu and the black phoenix Mo Yu of the Phoenix race. However, I will push your name up to number one right now."

The Marquis of Jinghuan chuckled as he continued, "Don't misunderstand me. Your closeness with Xiao Yan is just one of the many reasons. The greatest reason is still because your gracefulness and elegance is becoming much more charming than

before."

"Oh, yes. Yue Hongyan of the Celestial Sect of Wonders has yet to form the nascent soul, but she's ranked number four in my list now. She's ranked one spot higher than Shi Xingyun of the Great Qin Empire – I'm still thinking about her, even now. It's a pity that she's not participating in your venture into the East Sea?"

He glanced at the group of nascent soul stage cultivators following behind him out of the corner of his eye and said, "I will hand over the Immortal Royal Flag to you. Your task is to capture the little beauty and retrieve the two magic treasures on her hands."

At the same time, the terrifying God-Slayer Puppet appeared beside the Marquis of Jinghuan. It exuded vast auras of blood-energy that burned like the scorching sun.

After handing over the Immortal Royal Flag to the white-cloaked middle-aged man behind him, he placed his palms together before extending his arms out towards the side. Icy light that sent chills down everyone's spines could be seen at the center of his palms. Every spot that the light touched, including the void all around, turned into ice. Even the thick white mist on the Ying Sea began to dissipate.

It was another magic treasure!

After losing the Ancient Royal Sword, he managed to find himself another magic item out of nowhere.

The Marquis of Jinghuan looked at Xiao Yan and company and laughed heartily. "I am a soldier at heart. When I cross blades with my enemy, only the outcome matters. In battle, my subordinates will definitely not sit by and watch."

As he spoke, he pointed towards Xiao Yan and Xiao Zhener before turning to the Sea Dragon King. "I only want the two of them. You can do whatever you want to the rest."

# Chapter 732: A Sudden Change Of Events

---

Even the Sea Dragon King was slightly unhappy with the outrageousness of the Marquis of Jinghuan.

However, the battle prowess that he displayed was truly petrifying. If Xiao Zhener with two magic treasures in hand was enough for the Sea Dragon King to take her seriously, then the rich background of the Marquis of Jinghuan was even more of a problem for the Sea Dragon King even though he was already in the Undying Demonic Soul Stage.

The overall power of the God-Slayer Puppet was not yet at the Immortal Soul Stage, but based on pure physical strength alone the God-Slayer Puppet rivaled immortal soul stage cultivators.

A Metaplasia-level magic treasure – the Immortal Royal Flag.

A Gestation-level magic treasure – the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler.

In addition to the fact that the Marquis of Jinghuan himself was already at the pinnacle of the nascent soul advanced stage, was adept in the Martial Way and had experienced countless battles in his lifetime, his real battle prowess was not something typical nascent soul advanced stage cultivators could match. Even though he could not channel the maximum powers of the Immortal Royal Flag and the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler, the power he wielded was spectacular and impressive enough.

With such a rich and privileged background, even if he was faced with immortal soul stage cultivators, the situation would be something like a tiger hunting down a porcupine – there was just no way they could assault him.

It was still quite a challenge for the Marquis of Jinghuan to defeat and kill an immortal soul stage cultivator. However, most first-level immortal soul stage cultivators could not do anything to him either.

This was the result of his misplacement of the Ancient Royal Sword inside the Void Battleground. If not, with yet another Gestation-Level magic treasure in his possession, Xiao Zhener and the others would truly be speechless about his unbelievably good fortune.

The Marquis of Jinghuan glanced at the Ancient Royal Sword in Xiao Zhener's hands and grunted. "To the Ancient Royal Sword: You ended up in the hands of the Celestial Sect of Wonders not too long ago, and I will not fault you for submitting to them. However, you will return to me soon enough."

The Ancient Royal Sword trembled a little and a thick middle-aged male voice came out from within. "Both are nascent soul stage cultivators, but I would rather have Xiao Zhener as my master."

The Marquis of Jinghuan brushed aside the Sword's statement with a laugh. "You will still have a chance to change your mind before I ascend to the immortal soul stage. It doesn't matter if you regret after I reach the immortal soul stage as you will cease to be of importance to me then."

He turned towards Xiao Zhener. "In truth, you being in the hands of the little beauty is nothing much. She has ties to the Emperor of the Ancients. Back then, I wanted to take her in as a mistress, and if she accepted my request I would have given you to her as dowry anyway."

"As fate would have it, you ended up in her hands anyway. However, I am still without a wife and if she is willing to marry me, I have a host of other magic treasures beyond just the Ancient Royal Sword."

The Marquis of Jinghuan laughed as he continued, "I do not allow the other normal girls that I accept under my wing to see outsiders, but Xiao Zhener will be different. If I am married to such a talented prodigy, you will be my confidante and we shall explore and develop the future side by side."



Xiao Zhener did not pay any attention to Liang An's words. She looked down at the Ancient Royal Sword and whispered, "Sorry for all the trouble that you had to go through. You must be rather glad that the Celestial Sect of Wonders managed to help you out of your predicament."

The Ancient Royal Sword buzzed in response but said nothing else. The emotions that it just put on display was enough to answer Xiao Zhener.

Xiao Yan guffawed at Liang An's outrageousness. He shot a mocking look at the Marquis of Jinghuan and said, "Liang An, you may have a lot of treasures, but you don't have to keep thinking about the things that you can't get. Today, you get to choose – which treasures are you prepared to leave behind? Do put some thought into it."

Fire seemed to flicker in the deepest recesses of his pupils. It was quite unlike the fiery look that Xiao Yan typically possessed. Within every pupil, five sparks of flame seemed to be purposefully placed according to the positions of the compass and were jumping around.

"Ignorant little child." The Marquis of Jinghuan chuckled. Frighteningly explosive auras began to exude from his body as clear light rippled over his head. A beam of air shot up into the sky like the beacons used in ancient armies.

An image resembling a vast army with a force so formidable that the Earth shook seemed to appear from within the beam of air. It was as if the willpowers of millions of soldiers were injected into the beacon.

The group of cultivators behind him all had furious looks in their eyes as they channeled the power of the Immortal Royal Flag and black light began to surround Xiao Yan and company.

The Sea Dragon King was also preparing to engage in battle. The Ancient Lightning Jade Earring flickered over her head as she

gripped the Ancient Royal Sword tightly in her hands. She stood calmly beside Xiao Yan as Yang Qing, the Kui Cow King and the Spiritual Horse King prepared to fight.

At face value, it was not an optimistic setup for the Celestial Sect of Wonders. Xiao Yan was paired with the Marquis of Jinghuan and Xiao Zhener was to battle the Sea Dragon King. Battles could not be resolved within a short period of time, and even if the outcomes of these battles were temporarily ignored, Yang Qing and the others would have a hard time dealing with the Immortal Royal Flag.

Even if there was nobody channeling the power of this particular magic treasure, a small part of its power was already extremely formidable.

Xiao Yan appeared to be arguing with the Marquis of Jinghuan on the surface, but he was analyzing the critical points of the situation at the same time. He quickly thought of the counter-play, "If both Zhener and I can dispatch our adversaries quickly enough, we can face the Immortal Royal Flag together."

"We are on top of the ocean. Even though the Ying Sea is sinister and unpredictable, the Sea Dragon King still holds some form of geographical advantage. It's quite difficult for Zhener to emerge victorious against him – that means the crux of the situation will be my battle. Even if I can't defeat him quickly enough, it may force Liang An to use the Immortal Royal Flag to protect himself."

In truth, what made Xiao Yan more anxious was the golden light from the mirror that Liang An shone on him previously. It was not an abhijna – rather, it came from some exotic treasure that the Marquis of Jinghuan chose to remain hidden even now.

As he was contemplating his options, a crisp female voice rang out from beyond the horizon. "Falling Waves Sea Dragon, you are now a Sea Dragon King with an undying demonic soul. Battling a human cultivator that has yet to attain the immortal soul stage

may be a little unsuitable for your status and even mildly embarrassing."

The thick white mist trembled a little but did not dissipate. Everybody present could feel that there was a powerful consciousness watching them from within.

As they heard this voice, be it Xiao Yan's camp or the Marquis of Jinghuan's, everybody was stunned.

"Yan Mingyue of the Great Void Sect?"

There was nothing too different about the cloudy mist. It formed the face of an individual – and it looked just like Yan Mingyue.

She had directly locked in on the Sea Dragon King with her mana from the very beginning. The Sea Dragon King, who was originally committed to watching the battle from the sidelines, grunted once as his expression changed a little and was just about to dive back into the sea when Yan Mingyue interrupted with a faint smile. "Don't be so hasty. The ensuring battle is between two of the most powerful individuals of the younger generation, and it shall be spectacular. You and I can bear witness."

The Falling Waves Dragon King stopped abruptly in his tracks and the look on his face was ugly. Yan Mingyue's tone was casual, and she was hidden within the cloudy mists yet seemed omnipresent. Her consciousness was dead-trained upon him and her hostility was conspicuous. If the Falling Waves Dragon King wanted to tuck tail and run, Yan Mingyue's subsequent assault would come crashing down on him with a force so great that he would not be able to handle her and may even result in his own death.

The Falling Waves Dragon King was already in the Undying Demonic Soul stage and his spiritual powers were developed. He could faintly feel that the sea beneath him – originally his paradise – was suddenly a lot more dangerous and insidious.

He was extremely suspicious that Yan Mingyue's original body was waiting for him below the ocean's surface.

His speed under the water was unrivaled and he was confident that he could shake off Yan Mingyue. However, if Yan Mingyue was waiting for him right under the surface, she would be able to launch her assault the moment he entered the water before he could even attempt to swim away.

The Falling Waves Dragon grunted coldly again and said, "Then I shall see how powerful the 'talented' youngsters of the generation actually are."

Yan Mingyue's laughter resonated through the clouds. "Just wait and see."

The sudden change in events stunned both Xiao Yan and the Marquis of Jinghuan momentarily. Yan Mingyue's actions were clearly to the benefit of the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

The smile on the Marquis of Jinghuan's face disappeared and an ice-cold look shot out of his eyes. "Quite a pity – I have always been thinking of speaking to you after I ascend to the immortal soul stage."

Yan Mingyue smiled faintly and said, "You and I can't really hit it off anyway. What's the point?"

"You are so conservative. The last time I spoke with Long Ye, her answer seemed to suggest that she will never let me have a chance to ascend to the immortal soul stage in my entire lifetime," the Marquis of Jinghuan was not too troubled but looked up at the sky as he laughed. "It's a pity that she was unable to do so by herself."

"I unintentionally entered a tiny world elsewhere because I had to engage in battle with her. It was an unexpected opportunity which gave me the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler."

The Marquis of Jinghuan shook his head as he laughed even louder. "I am perfectly fine with it if you wish to sit back and watch

the fight."

He turned to look at Xiao Yan and smiled, "Alright. Even though the circumstances have changed a lot, the outcome will still be the same."

He tapped the God-Slayer Puppet and the giant body of flesh let out a blood-curdling howl and shot up into the void. It transformed into a straight black line as it lunged towards Xiao Yan. The black line left traces in the sky, as if the sky scarred in its wake.

Xiao Yan glanced at Yan Mingyue's face in the clouds but said nothing more. The Grand Sun Primordial Fire transformed into the form of the Blood Red Sparrow behind him and it extended its wings as he dodged the lunging attack from the God-Slayer Puppet.

At the same time, Xiao Zhener, Yang Qing and the others locked into battle with the company of the Marquis of Jinghuan, and a chaotic battle ensued.

The Immortal Royal Flag swayed in the wind as black light permeated the skies and eclipsed the sun. The great army within the black light howled hysterically as a concept of bloody power expanded outwards.

However, with Yan Mingyue holding back the Falling Waves Dragon King, Xiao Zhener was free to help out the rest of her company. The Ancient Lightning Jade Earring exploded with sharp silver lightning and clashed directly with the array set up by the black light from the Immortal Royal Flag.

The Ancient Royal Sword flickered with golden radiance and slashed open the various layers of black light.

The two different magic treasures were both of a surprisingly aggressive and offensive quality. One was silver and the other was golden as both gestation-level magic treasures faced off the metaplasia-level magic treasure – the Immortal Royal Flag – with

confidence and fearlessness.

On the other side, Xiao Yan began to display the true power of the form of the Blood Red Sparrow. His entire body transformed into a stream of flowing fire and surged around the layers of the void. The God-Slayer Puppet was ultimately just a blunt instrument comparatively slower to react. Even though its piercing speed was incredibly fast, it was unable to catch up.

The Marquis of Jinghuan was not too worried by what he saw. He started to channel the power of the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler and a ray of icy light shot up into the sky. It exuded a chilly and insidious quality that could be felt even from across the layers of cloudy mist. The sphere of icy light resembled the Moon in the sky as the world fell into silence and winter came over the earth in respect of this divine phenomenon.

Under the reflection of the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler, Xiao Yan began to feel the form of the Blood Red Sparrow that was transformed into by the Grand Sun Primordial Fire start to slow along with the flow of mana within his body. It was as if his entire body was being frozen in place.

The Marquis of Jinghuan chuckled and said, "That's why I said, fate is on my side. You have offended me, so fate placed this Great Ice Moonlight Ruler in my hands to counter your primordial fires to facilitate your defeat in my hands."

"Others treat you like the great disciple of the Celestial Sect of Wonders and an up-and-coming prodigy of the younger generation, so you begin to think the same about yourself. But do you know what you are to me? You're just a fat pig waiting to be slaughtered. I haven't murdered you before only because I wanted to feed you till you're even fatter than you are now before I take you to the slaughterhouse. All your treasures, your women and your primordial fires will belong to me!"

## Chapter 733: A “Fed” Pig!

---

The Marquis of Jinghuan laughed at Xiao Yan and said, "I was born a soldier and I have always known the importance of intelligence reports and information. You managed to assimilate so many kinds of primordial fires during your training under the Celestial Sect of Wonders. How can I not be wary of such power?"

"The Seven Legendary Primordial Fires are all extraordinarily powerful. However, my Great Ice Moonlight Ruler is a magic treasure after all. If you were in the immortal soul stage, then perhaps my magic treasure won't be able to freeze a single kind of your primordial fires. You're only in the nascent soul intermediate stage, so even your technique of primordial fire fusion has been weakened by the powers of the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler."

As he laughed out loud, he lunged forward himself and followed behind the God-Slayer Puppet towards the slower Xiao Yan. "The only spell that I have to take seriously is the power of your fire lotuses after fusing your primordial fires together. Without that, you are just a tiger without its teeth."

His calculations were clear. The Great Ice Moonlight Ruler would not be able to completely disable the powers of Xiao Yan's primordial fire, but it would definitely cause great hindrance to his channeling and whatnot. Even if Xiao Yan channeled the power of the Heavenly Fire Lotus right now, its power would be much weaker than normal and Liang An would be able to counter them with his own abilities and with the help of the God-Slayer Puppet.

Xiao Yan's eyes were trained on the Marquis of Jinghuan as a ferocious look came across his face.

"Liang An, you talk too much. I'm not in the mood to argue with you."

He clenched his fists and extended them in front of his body. "If there's nobody else here to save you, then do speak your last

words!"

Xiao Yan enveloped his body with the Grand Sun Primordial Fire as he exclaimed. The wings behind him flapped and trembled as he surged forward towards the Marquis of Jinghuan.

The Divine Token of the Five Thrones emerged amidst flickering clear light on top of his head. Layers of five-colored treasure light stood in his path and blocked the incoming God-Slayer Puppet.

The God-Slayer Puppets fists hammered upon the mirror-like barrier of five-colored treasure light but the latter remained unmoved and unfettered.

"Even though you also have a magic treasure, you don't have the ability to fully channel its power. You are only able to hold back the God-Slayer Puppet, and you no longer have power to defend against my attack." Liang An extended five fingers on one hand as he spoke and slammed down on Xiao Yan's head with bedazzling speed.

With an explosive crackle, the space and void all around Xiao Yan seemed to be sucked inwards by some kind of gravitational force and collapsed inwards towards the center – Xiao Yan was stuck in the middle and he was about to be crushed into a pile of blood.

The Spell of the Emperor, the Order of the Dictator. It was like a royal decree that, once passed down, had to be obeyed by the masses no matter what.

The form of the Blood Red Sparrow erupted outwards out came a purple tiger from within. It released a ear-splitting roar and gave people a feeling that the apocalypse and a great calamity had befallen the earth.

The dark and fiery Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire condensed into the form of the Great White Tiger. The Great White Tiger clashed head-on with the Marquis of Jinghuan's Order of the Dictator as the explosive aftershock from the violence swept away



all the cloudy white mist around and above the Ying Sea.

The Falling Waves Dragon King's eyelids were twitching a bit too much as he watched on. "Without even discussing his stamina in battle, resilience and speed of recovery, their explosiveness and destructive powers in one move is very near that of my own original form."

The Marquis of Jinghuan was forced back but pounced back into the fray in the next moment. He began to channel the power of the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler and icy light poured over everything underneath the sky and everything turned into frost. The Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire was more violent than the Grand Sun Primordial Fire but was still slightly affected.

Out of the blue, a ferocious ring erupted from within the monstrous flaming tiger.

The Marquis of Jinghuan could tell that it was the ringing sound of a lunging sword!

Xiao Yan raised a sword so wide and dense that it resembled a miniature door from inside the boundless volumes of bluish-purple flames. The sword had no sharp edges, and Xiao Yan shot a cold look at the Marquis of Jinghuan before bringing the sword down upon him with a heavy strike!

The explosive flames left purple scars all around the void as it blazed a trail across the space between them and lashed out at the Marquis of Jinghuan with immense force.

"This is not a magic item, but how can it be so ferocious? It seems to be of the same origin as the Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire as well..." The Marquis of Jinghuan furrowed his brows and channeled the power of the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler to block Xiao Yan's sword attack. At the same time, he launched another attack at Xiao Yan.

However, something changed all of a sudden.

A terrifyingly deep and bloody gash opened up on the surface of the wide Nefarious Almighty Sword in Xiao Yan's hands.

The blood-red scar resembled a tyrannical monster finally opening its eyes after an eternity of hibernation.

One could see the end of the world through the bloody scar in the sword. Even for someone like the Marquis of Jinghuan, who had been through countless bloody battles, felt a little intimidated by the sight.

The blood inside the insidious and murky Unholy Blood River seemed to boil as innumerable bubbles of blood exploded all around inside it.

The dark and dreadfully tranquil River of Styx flowed soundlessly but sent chills down people's spines. There was a feeling that it could cleanse everything and wash life away into nothingness.

The Avici Infernal Gale was like the love-child of mist and wind as it flickered with vast patches of red light. Ghastly souls and ghosts seemed to inhabit within them with sharp talons and claws and bristling banshee-like wails could be heard.

The gusts of the pitch-black Nine Nether Draught surged across the sky like black lines of light and roamed the void as they froze everything they came into contact with.

The bluish-purple Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire had gone hysterical. It terrorized the earth and destroyed everything in its path.

The black-colored Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze continuously consumed everything around it to boost its own strength as flames enveloped the skies above.

"...Netherworld Sea?" The Marquis of Jinghuan was aghast. Even the onlookers – including Yan Mingyue and the Falling Waves Dragon King – were momentarily speechless.

The Marquis of Jinghuan struggled to channel the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler to counter the effects of Xiao Yan's Nefarious Almighty Sword but fell into Xiao Yan's trap. The white-colored ruler was sucked in by the bloody gash in the sword and was immediately immobilized.

This was not a direct battle between the Marquis of Jinghuan and Xiao Yan, but neither was it entirely a battle between the Nefarious Almighty Sword, that was not yet a magic treasure, and the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler. It was really a battle between the crack of the Netherworld Sea and the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler.

Even though the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler was a magic treasure, its effects were now negated by the barrier powers of the Netherworld Sea. It could only protect itself from being sucked in by the gravitational forces of the crack.

The Marquis of Jinghuan was rooted to the spot. He never expected that the magic item he had acquired to specifically counter Xiao Yan's abilities was so easily immobilized and negated by something that was not even a magic item.

"I have never seen somebody as stupid as you. The soul of this magic treasure is even worse to recognize an owner like you. That is just pure stupidity and dumb courage." Xiao Yan chuckled and continued, "I need to thank you, though. If you hadn't channeled the full power of the magic item, it probably wouldn't have been stuck inside."

"You..." The Marquis of Jinghuan's eyes were widened with a fiery glare and was this close to vomiting blood.

The Great Ice Moonlight Ruler was like a lamb to the slaughter as it fed itself to the tip of the other party's weapon.

Who would have thought that the strange weapon could open the Crack of the Netherworld Sea?

"You think you've won?" The Marquis of Jinghuan was spitting

fire from his eyes. His stance changed all of a sudden and the patches of skin not covered by his clothing turned pale white.

His hands were especially pale and was perfect and unblemished; they were pure and translucent and his veins and bones were clearly visible.

A Great Void Sect's divine martial way of the muscular body – the All-Enveloping Hand of Heaven!

If there was a hole in the skies, then I could only use my hands to repair the crack in the heavens.

Liang An's hands radiated with pale brilliance and the light enveloped the entire area around him. It was seamless and impeccable as it slammed towards the Nefarious Almighty Sword that still had the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler immobilized.

"It's not whether I think I've won, but rather I will win for sure." Xiao Yan extended his left palm like a claw and rose up to meet Liang An's palm. Fearsome and ominous black flames skipped around within his fingers.

The Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze morphed into the form of the Jade Green Dragon and clashed with the Liang An's All-Enveloping Hand of Heaven.

Even though the All-Enveloping Hand of Heaven was the epitome of wholeness and perfection, the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze completely disregarded anything of the sort – it was just out to consume mana and life's essence.

If you were fragmented, then I would divide and conquer. If you were complete and without weakness, then I would just swallow you whole.

As he watched the powers of his All-Enveloping Hand of Heaven become negated by Xiao Yan, the redness in Liang An's eyes disappeared and clarity returned to his pupils.

He began to realize that without the slowing effects of the Great

Ice Moonlight Ruler, the primordial fires that Xiao Yan controlled were back to their peak condition and was as ferocious as they could get.

If he kept trying to retrieve the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler, he would end up playing into Xiao Yan's hands and thus he would be continuously disadvantaged as Xiao Yan had his hands on his soft spot.

Since that was the case, Liang An resolved to leave the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler alone so that he could be the one with the initiative once again.

After thinking through his logic, the Marquis of Jinghuan changed his stance once again. He retracted his hands made a wheel-like stance in front of his chest as he rotated his arms round and round.

Life was short, and the Buddha once said that life was ever-changing.

The great fears of life and death was so that humans could seek respite and refuge from the uncertainty of life – therefore, the eternal Vajra came into existence.

Existence was brief and nothing was constant over the course of one's journey; only the Vajra was always unmoving and unwavering.

The Ratnasambhava Mantra of the Five Tathagata Dharmas of the Compass – the Ratnasambhava Vajra Wheel Print!

Yan Mingyue nodded in approval as she witnessed this powerful abhijna. "Even though this person may have so many problems with his personality, his abilities are indeed impressive. He's a master of the royal mantras, mantras of the Great Thunderclap Temples and even those from the Great Void Sect. The mantras that he practices are also at the highest standards that a nascent soul stage cultivator can attain."

Face with the calmer version of the Marquis of Jinghuan, Xiao Yan's mouth curled a little. "You have improved a lot since the battle inside the Void Battleground."

Even so, Xiao Yan stood upright within the void and had no intention to retreat. His left hand formed a claw and the erupting flames materialized as the Jade Green Dragon form as his fight hand began to cast a strange spell.

Subsequently, a golden sphere of flame that was distinct from the Grand Sun Primordial Fire exploded into existence. It flickered with red and blue light as the golden flames morphed into a tortoise and a serpent behind Xiao Yan's body.

The tortoise and snake were complete opposites; one was active and the other inactive, one was Yang by nature and the other Yin. They were opposites yet they complemented each other as Yin and Yang came together to form another being altogether.

The Form of the Genbu!

It possessed immense force that was both dense and heavy yet agile and nimble at the same time. Every characteristic was on display in Xiao Yan's right hand. Once again, he rose up to meet the Marquis of Jinghuan's Ratnasambhava Vajra Wheel Print!

Both forces were dense and voluminous and were charged with immovable and unstoppable qualities. Miles and miles all around instantly flashed a brilliant gold color as they clashed.

Violent aftershocks shook the audiences as even people like Xiao Zhener struggled to find her footing. If not for the protection of the Ancient Lightning Jade Earring, the Ancient Royal Sword and the Immortal Royal Flag, everybody would have been swept off their feet.

This clash made Liang An furious as he was forced backwards once again.

He switched three different Martial Ways that were by and large

superior to all others of the same type. Anybody could roam the world with just one of the three, yet he was able to master all three and fully channel their immense physical strength.

He showed no mercy as he launched his onslaught. Xiao Yan was the same – he met a change in technique with a similar change in his own and responded with three great Martial Ways as well. Everything was non-repetitive as a nascent soul intermediate stage managed to repel a nascent soul advanced stage cultivator. He even had the upper hand.

This engagement was almost as if Xiao Yan was mocking him.

Xiao Yan stepped inside the ocean of fire and the raging flames and treaded across the skies. He was like the tyrannical ruler that controlled all the flames in the world. He watched the Marquis of Jinghuan and laughed coldly, "So, who's the 'fed' pig now?"

## Chapter 734: Naked Pig

---

The God-Slayer Puppet was lunging left and right in the void but was repetitively blockaded by the five-colored treasure light barrier set down by the Divine Token of the Five Thrones. There was no way it could get close to Xiao Yan.

The Great Ice Moonlight Ruler was also immobilized by the sudden appearance of the crack of the Netherworld Sea and was forced into self-preservation in order to prevent itself from being sucked into the Netherworld Sea for eternity.

"Do you know a fourth Martial Way?" Xiao Yan sauntered across the ocean of flames as his entire body riled the roaring flames all around. He transformed into something of a fiery shooting star and launched himself mercilessly towards the Marquis of Jinghuan. Liang An did not even have time to try and reverse the situation.

The Marquis of Jinghuan took a deep breath as the physical quality of his body began to change once again.

It was no longer a world-dominating aura of a divine emperor and neither was it the unmoving and unwavering form of the Vajra.

It was something more representative of the self, that he was the most supreme and tyrannical being to roam the world and without boundaries of any sort.

The essence of his blood and his mana began to condense as the veins and tendons popped out all over his body like restless serpents. The void shook with this explosive power.

"Xiao Yan, take this strike from me with your weak physical body." The Marquis of Jinghuan made a stance with his fists as his whole being entered pinnacle spiritual condition and launched another attack at Xiao Yan.



The speed of his punch was unrivaled – it was superior to even Xiao Yan's Form of the Blood Red Sparrow, and seemed to arrive faster even though it was executed later.

However, from what people could see, this punch felt extremely slow, as if he was gradually pushing his fists outwards.

The only thing was that this 'slow punch' blew up the sounds of hurricanes. There seemed to be a divine being awakening upon every pressure point in his body and were roaring and howling as they advanced. Every ounce of strength and power was combined together into a punch so fearsome that an illusion was created.

Within the illusion, Xiao Yan felt as if the universe was crumbling to pieces.

The great heavens and the vast world appeared to be eroding from the very center as everything was laid to ruin. The destructive decay spread to the circumference with increasing speed and was seemingly unstoppable.

The strength of this punch was increasing as well. At the start, it was just an ordinary move with a power and speed that seemed even inferior to the standards he displayed previously.

However, with every second that passed by, the power of the strike increased exponentially. The concept of power that represented the lack of boundaries of the self enabled the strength of the strike to skyrocket boundlessly.

Yan Mingyue seemed slightly taken aback by what was happening. Ever since she showed herself, she only had the same reaction after witnessing the opening of the crack of the Netherworld Sea. The others could not recognize what they saw, but she knew. "This is... The strongest Martial Way technique of the Emperor of Violence – Boundless Fist?"

The Emperor of Violence was the very last emperor of the world. He was originally known as the Yue Emperor, but he turned to

violence and brutality and his soul decayed and was since known as the Emperor of Violence before he was overthrown and his throne was usurped.

Even though the Emperor of Violence was ultimately overthrown by a coalition of allies, his extraordinary abilities and his true power were still widely recognized.

The Boundless Fist was the Emperor of Violence's signature ability, and drew upon the true meaning of boundless strength and power without limits.

Once the strike was unleashed, the power would rise continuously to carve out a new dynasty for the practitioner – unprecedented, all obstacles would be overcome and nothing could hold it back.

Xiao Yan's eyes sparkled as he witnessed this spectacle. "So this is the technique that brought you to where you are today. The fundamental abhijna you picked up when you started on the journey in the Martial Ways."

"This move is interesting. It's far stronger than the other Martial Way moves you picked up along the way."

The Marquis of Jinghuan was calm as he replied, "Xiao Yan, I have to admit that you are a worthy opponent. Your prowess has shocked me, and you have forced me to use my signature move to take you down. Only opponents like you can truly benefit my personal development – but everything ends here."

"As much as I hate to say it, I can't let you live any longer. If not, the fat pig is going to fly into the sky."

The Marquis of Jinghuan held nothing back as he unleashed the Boundless Fist with unstoppable explosiveness. The power of his attack was far superior to the normal standards of normal nascent soul cultivators, and even the Falling Waves Dragon King frowned a little as he watched on. He realized that he would have to revert

to his original form to stop this punch – if not, he might be in danger himself.

What was more frightening was the fact that the power of the Boundless Fist strike was ever-rising as if there really was no limit and no end.

Flames poured – quite literally – out of Xiao Yan's eyes as he trained his eyes on Liang An's fists. He had no intention to dodge the attack or retreat. Instead, he concentrated as he took a step forward and struck out with his fist, much like a giant hammer, towards the Marquis of Jinghuan!

"Master, your newly invented Martial Way shall draw first blood with this little bastard!"

Xiao Yan's body twisted a little as his fist crashed forward towards Liang An. In the sea of fire above him, the four primordial fires transformed into the Jade Green Dragon Form, the Xuanwu Form, the Great White Tiger Form and the Blood Red Sparrow Form and the powers of every single one combined into a single stream and charged up Xiao Yan's fists. (Translator's Note: Please refer to Genbu as Xuanwu from now on, as Genbu is a Japanese name for Xuanwu. Xuanwu would thus be more appropriate in the context of this novel.)

The Jade Green Dragon represented water, the Great White Tiger became wind as the Xuanwu became earth and the Blood Red Sparrow became fire. The void split open as the four empirical elements surged about chaotically. Unlimited power was continually created and destroyed.

This was the fundamental strength of the Four Appearances. This move drew upon the form of the Heavenly Hammer of the Eight Trigrams and boundless power was continually created and destroyed at the same time. Violent strength compounded upon each other exponentially and reacted like nuclear fission.

This frightening concept of power drew upon even the ever-

increasing physical strength of Liang An's strike. His power was continually destroyed and converted to fuel the power of Xiao Yan's retaliation strike.

The Four Appearances Heaven Cleaving Script coupled with the Heavenly Hammer of the Eight Trigrams – the Four Appearances World-Destroying Hammer!

Thousands of miles around the Ying Sea trembled with the force of this strike as if this particular area had a mind of its own and rejected the nature of this world-destroying force.

"This Martial Way technique is truly terrifying. It rivals even the Vairocana Zen Palm Fist Print." The Marquis of Jinghuan was shaking inside. He could only watch as the power charged into his fists to create the illusion in the void was completely sucked away and collapsed. It was not because of his own incapability, but his powers were destroyed by outside forces.

"What a pity! Pity! It's a pity that my Boundless Fist has a weakness. If not, how can you suppress it?"

The move that Xiao Yan learned from Lin Feng, the Four Appearances World-Destroying Hammer possessed that petrifying quality of bringing cataclysmic disasters to the world. It completely vanquished the powers of the Boundless Fist!

The Boundless Fist was still rising in power and was not yet at its maximum strength. Its course of progress was immediately blockaded by the Four Appearances World-Destroying Hammer, and the scene resembled something like a great fire that was just about to spread but was suddenly extinguished with a bucket of cold water.

This suffocating feeling almost made the Marquis of Jinghuan vomit blood.

However, at this very moment, a red-colored light circle appeared in the middle of his chest. It was round and was shaped

like a circular mirror and radiated with pale golden light. It was the same mirror that he used previously to spy on Xiao Yan. Right now, it acted like a talisman of personal protection and stood fast in front of his chest.

In the next moment, a violent and brutal aura erupted from within. The concept of power was all-conquering and all-destroying, as if it could dictate all the happenings in the world.

With the red-colored mirror at the center, streaks of golden light shot outwards in all directions and enveloped Liang An's body. It transformed into a layer of body armor and sealed his entire being inside.

This golden body armor simply clashed with Xiao Yan's ferocious and unrivaled Four Appearances World-Destroying Hammer!

Flames surged into the sky and explosions crackled all around as the two forces clashed. A golden figure was struck backwards and was knocked back quite a distance before it repositioned itself in the void.

Flames were still jumping around upon the layer of golden armor. However, it was quite clear that the armor ate the full force of Xiao Yan's strike and protected the Marquis of Jinghuan.

Xiao Yan heaved a light sigh and said, "Indeed, the Divine Body Armor of the Emperor of Violence."

It was originally called the Body Armor of the Yue Emperor, and was originally the most supreme magic treasure that he carried around with him. It was forged by the Emperor of Violence with intense effort and over an extremely long period of time. It had the potential of becoming a Destiny-level magic treasure, but the Emperor of Violence was overthrown before that dream was realized. The Divine Body Armor was also heavily damaged and had since gone missing.

Yan Mingyue could tell that even though the Divine Body Armor

of the Emperor of Violence was repaired and refurbished by the Marquis of Jinghuan many times, it was still not at its peak condition from all those years ago.

Its fate was worse than the Immortal Dragon City – magic treasures that had the potential to reach the level of Destiny, but were severely damaged before that could happen. At least, the Immortal Dragon City was damaged before it was even complete.

Even so, the powers of the Divine Body Armor were still extremely overbearing. It connected with the Marquis of Jinghuan on a spiritual level, and was worthy as his very last trump card.

With the Divine Body Armor of the Emperor of Violence on his body, the strength of the Marquis of Jinghuan could no longer be gauged by nascent soul cultivator standards. This body armor pretty much integrated with Liang An as one, and it brought up his abilities to the level of the Immortal Soul Stage.

"What a surprise! Xiao Yan, you are actually this powerful! It's funny that I saw you like a pig and wanted to feed you till you're fat before I resolved to end your life! Without the Divine Body Armor of the Yue Emperor, I would have been punched to the high heavens if I took your strike. I may even have died."

His entire body was enveloped by the Divine Body Armor, and his whole being began to exude tyrannical auras that made him look like a golden giant.

"The Divine Body Armor of the Yue Emperor had the potential of becoming a Destiny-level magic treasure. However, it sustained heavy injuries towards the end of the Antiquity Age and its foundations were also very nearly destroyed. Even though its powerful, I have been reluctant to use it for this very reason – I wanted to nurture it slowly so that I don't lose sight of the big picture over smaller things." The Marquis of Jinghuan howled as he continued, "But today, in order to kill you, I have to make an exception."

Xiao Yan laughed coldly and replied, "This turtle shell is your final trump card?"

"Turtle shell?" The Marquis of Jinghuan chuckled with an equally cold tone. "You still don't understand."

With an explosion, the Marquis of Jinghuan transformed into a golden streak of lightning and launched himself towards Xiao Yan at a speed that far exceeded what came before!

As he arrived in front of Xiao Yan, he punched out with the same move – the Boundless Fist. However, the Boundless Fist strike that was using was supported by the powers of the Divine Body Armor, thus it was far more terrifying than before.

He faced off Xiao Yan's Four Appearances World-Destroying Hammer and was not at a disadvantage at all.

With the support of the Divine Body Armor, the Marquis of Jinghuan's physical strength ascended to another level. He was now able to sustain an even more exponential increase in the explosive power of the Boundless fist. He no longer needed to rely on his own blood and flesh to sustain the strike and risk his move falling apart due to that very fact.

Three clashes were exchanged above the Ying Sea. It was apparent that both parties were of nearly equal strength; the Marquis of Jinghuan no longer had to concern himself about personal protection with the help of the Divine Body Armor and neither did he have to worry about tiring himself out. He unleashed the maximum power of his own Martial Ways and was at the very edge of infinity. It was truly a frightening sight.

"Tsk, tsk. The powers of my Four Appearances World-Destroying Hammer are not too bad already, but I have yet to fully understand my master's concept of power regarding the four empirical elements of the earth in its path of creation and destruction of the earth. Ultimately, I am unable to unleash its maximum power like he can."

Faced with a new and improved Liang An, Xiao Yan began to laugh to himself. "I was waiting for your final trump card."

From the very beginning, Xiao Yan's instincts told him that Liang An's most threatening powers had something to do with the mysterious mirror light. He was right after all.

Xiao Yan opened both his palms as raging flames flickered within. A petrifying aura permeated all around.

Even though the Marquis of Jinghuan was under the protection of the Divine Body Armor, he started to feel his skin crawl.

"Have you heard of a saying, 'Naked Pig'?" Xiao Yan chuckled but his smile turned murderous in the next moment. "I will strip you naked today! Even though you have a host of magic treasures, I want to see exactly what you have underneath all that!"



# Chapter 735: Yin Yang Burning Heavens, Four-Colored Fire Lotus!

---

"Your Ancient Royal Sword was lost inside the Void Battleground."

"Your God-Slayer Puppet shall be locked down by the Divine Token of the Five Thrones after I take care of you."

"That irritating ruler of yours will never return to you even if it's not sucked away into the Netherworld Sea."

"Your Immortal Royal Flag is being held back by Zhener's Ancient Lightning Jade Earring and her Ancient Royal Sword. Your worthless subordinates are no match for Zhener's abilities."

"And now, I will strip you of the only thing you have left. Without this magic treasure, you cannot even compare to the egg-eyed bastard Shi Tianyi – I want to see, exactly how many strikes of mine can you eat?"

The two raging fires that Xiao Yan laid out beside his body started fusing together and the mana around his body began to grow.

In the center of his left palm, the Grand Sun Primordial Fire flickered with blinding brilliance as the milky-white Pure Yang Primordial Fire as well as the reddish-blue Nanming Primordial Fire flashed gold. All three primordial fires began to fuse together with an aura so violent that everybody could feel their skin crawl.

It was almost with immediate effect that the jumping fires vanished completely; a golden-yellow lotus throne with a dash of white remained, and the red and blue petals on the lotus flower swayed in the wind.

Within his right palm, the ferocious Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire fused together with the Nanming Primordial Fire as well as the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze. The flames were even

more fearsome than before as the void all around began to collapse inwards. Another lotus throne formed, albeit with a slightly slower speed than before. This time, the lotus flower was a mix of gold, blueish-purple and pitch blackness as two red and blue spheres of light orbited the flower.

The Falling Waves Dragon King wore a solemn look on his face. He knew he could no longer underestimate Xiao Yan – he knew that he had to perceive Xiao Yan as an opponent of the same level that he was. If he fought with Xiao Yan, it was nothing like a great demon bullying a nascent soul intermediate stage human cultivator; it would be an epic battle to the very death.

Even Yan Mingyue appeared a lot more serious. "After one year, who would have expected this young man to develop with such extraordinary speed. He's only in the nascent soul intermediate stage – I really wonder how the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders managed to nurture an individual such as him."

The cultivators under the command of the Marquis of Jinghuan rolled up the Immortal Royal Flag at this point and retreated to a spot quite a distance away. They were willing to be disadvantaged in their battle against Xiao Zhener and company than risk getting caught in the fray between Xiao Yan and Liang An.

The Marquis of Jinghuan took a deep breath and said, "I heard that back when you destroyed the Yu Family ancestral home, you almost fainted after channeling the power of fusing three primordial fires together."

"Yet, from what I can see, you are able to fuse three primordial fires at whim and with extreme ease despite being only in the nascent soul stage."

The Marquis of Jinghuan was transformed into a golden giant under the protection of the Divine Body Armor of the Emperor of Violence. He started to integrate his own spiritual energy and blood essence with the spirit of the magic item and morphed into a

streak of golden lightning as he lunged towards Xiao Yan. He wanted to interrupt Xiao Yan's fusion of the primordial fires.

Xiao Yan extended his palms and pushed outwards and the two Heaven Fire Lotuses barreled towards the Marquis of Jinghuan!

When he was in the aurous core advanced stage, he eliminated three nascent soul advanced stage grandmasters with just one Tri Fire Lotus. He was currently in the nascent soul intermediate stage, and his primordial fires were a lot stronger than before – naturally, the Heaven Fire Lotus that was fused would be a lot more violent and fearsome!

Even Immortal Soul Stage cultivators would have to take special care.

The Marquis of Jinghuan did not even try to dodge the attack. Instead, he cried out loud and pounced directly towards Xiao Yan!

"Kill!"

The Marquis of Jinghuan was very clear about the current situation. Xiao Yan's Divine Token of the Five Thrones was hindering the advance of the God-Slayer Puppet, very nearly immobilizing it. However, because of this very fact, it was also held up by the God-Slayer Puppet and thus it was unable to protect Xiao Yan.

Even though the offensive power of the Heaven Fire Lotuses was terrifying, his defensive abilities were comparative much weaker.

The Marquis of Jinghuan was gambling with his life. He wanted to use the Divine Body Armor to clash with the Heaven Fire Lotuses head-on and use his own Martial Ways to defeat Xiao Yan once and for all!

The frightening power of the Boundless Fist was unleashed once again. Explosive strength shattered the void all around as every inch of space thousands of miles around the Ying Sea was completely devastated by this epic battle between Xiao Yan and

Liang An.

With the support of the Divine Body Armor, the power of the Boundless Fist was amplified and could rival even the explosive powers of the Tri Fire Lotuses!

The defensive capability of the Divine Body Armor was even more incredible. The first Tri Fire Lotus that Xiao Yan fused together – the Grand Sun Primordial Fire, the Pure Yang Primordial Fire and the Nanming Primordial Fire – boomed and crackled as it hammered down on the Marquis of Jinghuan's body. Blinding flames jumped all around as Liang An's body trembled under the sheer force of Xiao Yan's onslaught.

However, the golden armor seemed completely unaffected. There was not a single mark or crack even after eating the entirety of Xiao Yan's strike.

The second Tri Fire Lotus – fused from the Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire, the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze and the Nanming Primordial Fire – was even stronger than the previous one. The subsequent clash with the Divine Body Armor caused the golden radiance of the magic item to shimmer and dim, but the result was the same; the body armor remained intact and the defense prevails.

This was all in spite of the fact that it was a magic item that had yet to reach its maturity. Despite sustaining heavy damage all those years ago, and despite the fact that it was a nascent soul stage cultivator that was controlling it.

The magic item that was so highly regarded by the Emperor of Violence in the olden days, the magic item with the potential to become a Destiny-level magic treasure, was ultimately not something that could be matched by nascent soul stage cultivators – even if the nascent soul stage cultivator was somebody with extraordinary power like Xiao Yan.

Even Yan Mingyue and the Falling Waves Dragon King were not

completely positive that they could break through the Divine Body Armor's defensive powers.

He no longer had to concern himself with personal defense as the Marquis of Jinghuan channeled his offensive powers to the maximum possible level. The Boundless Fist became ever stronger and violent as it crashed down towards Xiao Yan with a force that nearly eclipsed the world.

He was willing to risk clashing with Xiao Yan's assault because he knew that as long as he struck Xiao Yan just once, Xiao Yan was very, very dead.

Xiao Yan unleashed the power of the Blood Red Sparrow once again as the fiery golden wings extended behind him and he began to retreat. Liang An felt as if he had rediscovered hope and he was on the right path once again. He trembled with newfound determination and spirit as he continued on with all his might.

Over the entire process, the Marquis of Jinghuan made an unintentional discovery. He realized that the Divine Body Armor and the Boundless Fist had their weaknesses and loopholes, and were on full display at this very moment, but they were starting to repair and remedy themselves.

This was a pleasant surprise for Liang An.

This assault felt smooth and rejuvenating. The clearer his head was and the more rational his thought, the closer he connected with the spirit of the Divine Body Armor. All the mysteries and factors that perplexed him all those years before this were clearing up and he entered a healthy cycle of discovery and deeper understanding towards his mantras and abhijnas.

The most direct result was that the strength of the Boundless Fist became more powerful than ever and his ferocity felt equally limitless.

He even developed a feeling that even if he took off the Divine

Body Armor at this moment and clashed with Xiao Yan's Four Appearances World-Destroying Hammer again, he would be able to hold his ground.

The tables seemed to be turning on Xiao Yan. Yan Mingyue was a little confused at the sight and thought to herself, "Why is he not using the frightening Martial Way that he just used? Why is he casting the Tri Fire Lotuses instead? At this level, this is still an extremely exhausting and draining spell for him."

"Furthermore, if three primordial fires are to be fused together, the optimal choices are the Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire with the Grand Sun Primordial Fire and the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze. The resulting combination of power would have been the greatest compared to the ones that he chose."

"Wait, could it be..."

At this moment, Liang An exclaimed with fervor and elation. "Xiao Yan, you have really brought me so much good fortune. I could have ascended to the immortal soul stage a long time, but I wanted my abhijnas and mantras to be the strongest they could be before I moved on to the Immortal Soul Stage."

"This battle with you helped me clear my doubts and bottlenecks with my mantras and abhijnas, and now everything is so smooth and clear. After eliminating you, my spiritual energy would be overflowing and if I would be able to cultivate the perfect Immortal Soul Avatar then."

The Marquis of Jinghuan was integrated with the Divine Body Armor at this point and was transformed into a flash of golden light. He trail-blazed around the void as thousands and thousands of his illusions popped up all around – he seemed omnipresent.

It was not just the Boundless Fist in play anymore. He started to channel the power of the Vairocana Vajra Wheel Print as well as the All-Enveloping hand of Heaven and the Order of the Dictator.

While he was unleashing his various attacks, the Marquis of Jinghuan started to fuse everything together with the Boundless Fist as the head of the dragon. Limitless powers of the divine Martial Ways were exhibited as the Marquis of Jinghuan unleashed a great Divine Martial Way that was unique only to himself.

"Xiao Yan, you are indeed a great stepping stone!"

Between his exclamations, the Marquis of Jinghuan hammered another fist down upon Xiao Yan. However, at this very moment, the Divine body Armor he was wearing began to tremble violently and he felt an acutely ominous feeling from his connection with the Divine Body Armor. It was as if something calamitous was coming for him.

"Eh?" The Marquis of Jinghuan stopped in his tracks abruptly and was about to retreat without a single hint of hesitation.

It was too late.

The entire patch of void above them was suddenly covered in flames of all types and colors. The remnant flames from the Heaven Fire Lotuses that exploded on his Divine Body Armor previously did not dissipate, but they were condensed and drifting around the air above them instead.

The drifting flames began to jump and surge as they started to connect with each other and eventually grew into a sprawling sea of fire.

The Fire Lotuses that had just exploded before began to come together again sinisterly. Various Tri Fire Lotuses began to form with the Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire on one side along with the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze and the Nanming Primordial, and the Grand Sun Primordial Fire was on the other side with the Pure Yang Primordial Fire as well as the Nanming Primordial Fire.

Two types of fire lotuses came together to form an array of Yin and Yang with the Marquis of Jinghuan at the very center of it all.

In the next moment, Yin and Yang spiraled around as tremendous forces that resembled pulverizing anchors started pressing down on the Marquis of Jinghuan.

The void all around the Marquis of Jinghuan had been shattered into nothingness and pure chaos. Liang An could barely hold on with the power of the Divine Body armor protecting him. Even so, he was trapped and immobilized, and could only hold on to dear life by eating the full force of the great formation of Yin and Yang formed by the multiple Tri Fire Lotuses.

Xiao Yan was erect in the void and flashed a cold smile at Liang An. "I may not be as talented with magic formations as my second junior or my sixth junior, but do not forget who my master is. I will let you have a taste of my Yin Yang Burning Heavens Formation! Let me remind you that this is the mountain defense formation of my Inferno Precipice!"

Violent and pulverizing forces crushed Liang An, who was stuck in the middle of it all. The Divine Body Armor he was wearing was being channeled to its maximum power as golden rays of light desperately resisted the explosive flames of the magic formation.

The Marquis of Jinghuan grunted and replied, "I suppose I miscalculated. I didn't expect you to change your direct and straightforward style of battle so I ended up falling into your trap. However, I have the Divine Body Armor to protect myself, and for all eternity as well. Not even your great formation can break through!"

"Such a powerful magic formation will drain much of your strength and mana. I want to see for how long you can sustain this magic formation!"

Xiao Yan guffawed at his remark. "For all eternity? Seriously? Nobody has the patience to fight a war of attrition with you."

As he spoke, he pushed his hands out in front of him as the Pure Yang Primordial Fire, the Grand Sun Primordial Fire, the



Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire and the Nanming Primordial Fire appeared at the same time and insidiously condensed towards the tips of Xiao Yan's fingers!

The speed of fusion was a lot slower than the Heaven Fire Lotus formed from three types of primordial fires that Xiao Yan channeled previously. Xiao Yan also seemed a lot more meticulous and careful than before.

However, the frightening power of uncontrollable brutality and the similar apocalyptic strength was far superior to that of the Tri Fire Lotuses as well!

Innumerable glyphs and runes were cast into the flames and only after a long while did the raging flames start to mellow down.

A single lotus throne appeared between Xiao Yan's hands. The bottom layer was milky-white, the middle layer was pure gold and the top-most layer was a blueish-purple color. The heart of the lotus flower flickered with golden radiance as a red petal and a blue petal once again swayed in the wind.

As he witnessed what just transpired, Liang An's face underneath the Divine Body Armor finally began to betray a tinge of true fear.

# Chapter 736: Burning Heavens and Blazing Oceans, Nothing Remains!

---

The Quad Fire Lotus formed from the Pure Yang Primordial Fire, the Grand Sun Primordial Fire, the Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire and the Nanming Primordial Fire seemed normal enough as it did not exude a single ripple of mana and was just drifting ever so lightly towards the Marquis of Jinghuan, who was still stuck in the center of the Yin Yang Burning Heavens Formation.

Yet, the terrifying quality of it all that was obscure from sight was suffocating.

Even the Falling Waves Dragon King, who was already in the Undying Demonic Soul Stage, felt a chill run down his spine as he realized his mistake. He grit his teeth and pointed a finger into the ocean as he released the Shaoyang Mystical Water back into the sea – he actually released the very thing that he had just prized away from Yang Qing.

Once the Shaoyang Mystical Water was handed over, the Falling Waves Dragon King could not be bothered about Yan Mingyue any longer as he tucked tail and fled. He was unwilling to stay to stay even a second longer.

Yan Mingyue could not be bothered with him either as he took the initiative to escape. This was also partially because most of her attention was focused on Xiao Yan and the Marquis of Jinghuan. "He's able to fuse four primordial fires even though he's only in the nascent soul stage... Our original estimations were that he would only be able to achieve this after attaining his cosmic form during the nascent soul advanced stage..."

Liang An could also feel the petrifying pressure coming from the Quad Fire Lotus. The lotus had yet to explode, yet the preliminary aura was already enough to send waves of fear through his body.

The golden light coming from the Divine Body Armor of the Emperor of Violence flickered continuously as rows after rows of overbearing glyphs surged outwards. It was starting to retaliate instead of fully committing itself to defense. The idea was that if it could break free from the immobilizing pressure of the Yin Yang Burning Heavens Formation, it could potentially avoid clashing head-on with the Quad Fire Lotus.

Even though Liang An knew that he was giving up complete protection and he would be at risk of sustaining heavy injuries from the Yin Yang Burning Heavens Formation, he knew he had not much of a choice.

The combined burden of the Quad Fire Lotus and the Yin Yang Burning Heavens Formation weighed down upon his body. All of a sudden, a blood-red line appeared on the protective mirror in the middle of Liang An's chest.

It was single vertical streak that flashed with red light as it extended all the way from his ribs to his hips, much like a sharp and gashing wound.

Uncountable numbers of glyphs and runes flickered within this red gash as the Divine Body Armor desperately tried to repair itself. However, under Xiao Yan's unstoppable onslaught, the frantic efforts ultimately futile as the gash appeared again and again.

Liang An's face turned black as he saw the gash appear over the armor.

This was the very same scar that was given to the Divine Body Armor by the Destiny-level magic item, the Great Heavenly Wheels, during the final years of the Antiquity Age.

It was the very same battle that caused the Emperor of Violence to come crashing down from cloud nine. He was very nearly sliced into half by the Great Heavenly Wheels and sustained injuries so heavy that he was destined never to return to his former glory.

Ever since the Marquis of Jinghuan became the owner of the Divine Body Armor, he had put in maximum effort in its repair and recovery. He succeeded in patching up this glaring scar, but he knew that remnants of this great wound were still there. This was the reason why he did not use this magic item unless it was absolutely necessary.

As a result, the Divine Body Armor's old scar resurfaced with dramatic effect as it faced off against the daunting forces of the four-colored Heaven Fire Lotus and the Yin Yang Burning Heavens Formation.

"Return!" The Marquis of Jinghuan could feel goosebumps all over his body as he began to sweat furiously. He could feel that he was arriving at the doorsteps of Hell.

With a single command, the Immortal Royal Flag and the God-Slayer Puppet gave up their efforts against their current opponents and flew back to protect the Marquis of Jinghuan. Even the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler, which was originally immobilized by the crack of the Netherworld Sea, began to tremble with unprecedented force and determination as it tried its very best to break free.

The fusion of four primordial fires pretty much drained the entirety of Xiao Yan's mana. Still, he appeared calm and composed as he said, "It's useless. I've said before – I will strip you naked today!"

The Divine Token of the Five Thrones, which was originally in a defensive stance, began to change. The five carvings that followed the directions of the compass – "Shi", "Tai", "Chong", "Xia" and "Gu" – exploded with a blinding glow as the token took on an offensive stance and five streaks of divine light immediately fixed the God-Slayer Puppet in place!

The God-Slayer Puppet struggled hysterically to break free. Even though it was not very agile, the level of its pure strength was at

the immortal soul stage. It should have no trouble facing off a Gestation-level magic item that was not being controlled by an immortal stage cultivator.

However, the powers of the Divine Token of the Five Thrones were far superior to most other Gestation-level magic treasures. It was channeling the entirety of its power to retaliate against the God-Slayer Puppet and managed to suppress the latter in one go.

The explosive retaliation from the Divine Token could only hinder the God-Slayer Puppet for so long. However, Liang An's situation was an emergency, this this momentary impediment was enough to prevent the God-Slayer Puppet from arriving in time to protect the Marquis of Jinghuan.

On the other side, Xiao Zhener began to channel the Ancient Lightning Jade Earring to the best of her ability and unleashed the powers of the Grand Yin Barren Lightning. The pale and thunderous white flashes of lightning was truly terrifying.

Xiao Zhener discharged her own store of Nanming Primordial Fire and fused it with the Ancient Royal Sword. The latter transformed into a streak of golden and fiery light as it combined with the power of the Grand Yin Barren Lightning and hammered down upon the Immortal Royal Flag. The chaotic mixture of fire and lightning pulverized the Immortal Royal Flag to the point where it was unable to free itself to protect the Marquis of Jinghuan.

The predicament of the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler was not much better. Even though it was trembling furiously in a desperate attempt to free itself and exploded with immense power, it was still fixed in place by the crack of the Netherworld Sea. It was undoubtedly unable to free itself in such a short period of time to go to Liang An's aid.

"Xiao Yan!" The Marquis of Jinghuan could feel his heart sinking to the darkest abyss. He could only watch as the Four-colored Fire

Lotus detonated against his body.

In the next moment, Heaven and Earth returned to its original tranquility, everything was calm and all was quiet. Every single trace of sound was eradicated. Everybody else felt blinded momentarily, as if the day transformed into night in the very blink of an eye.

Sound, light and spiritual energy all around vanished into thin air.

After that brief second of complete serenity, roaring fires surged back into the sky as thousands of miles all around in the void became a scorching furnace of flames.

A huge patch of the ocean right below the battleground evaporated. Time seemed to freeze, and the ocean became like solid ground for a moment as a gigantic crater was blown out of it.

The ocean water recovered in an instant as they rushed back to fill up the crater.

The peaceful ocean became a howling maelstrom as tides raged and strong winds blew up hurricanes. Tall and frightening waves clashed against each other incessantly.

The multiple illusions within the Ying Sea started to tremble shimmer into vision as a result of the disastrous calamity.

The Marquis of Jinghuan was located at the very center of the explosion. He took a direct hit from the Quad Fire Lotus, and released a ear-splitting and agonizing howl.

The powerful Divine Body Armor enveloping his body no longer had the golden glow that it previously possessed. The magic protective mirror on his chest had also been completely shattered.

The gash in the middle of his chest could no longer be repaired and sustained, and the crack became wider and wider.

It was not just the chest area of the armor that lost its protective

qualities – the entire magic item's concept of power was very nearly eradicated completely as the pieces of golden armor collapsed into pieces.

It was like a balloon. A single opening in the balloon was enough to release every bit of air that was inside; the only thing left behind was a useless layer of skin.

What petrified Liang An even more was that all this was only the beginning!

The explosion of the Quad Fire Lotus did not just stop there – it triggered the explosion of the entire Yin Yang Burning Heavens Formation!

"Boom boom boom boom boom!" The sounds of the explosions came one after another as the twisted but immense power of Yin and Yang combined together every inch of the formation's power was brought to bear upon the already imploding Divine Body Armor of the Emperor of Violence.

Xiao Yan's was like how one dealt with a nut with a tough shell – one would use a repeatedly hammer upon it to open a single crack. Once the crack appeared in the armor, it could never return to its original level of defense.

Then, he used a continuous force like a mill disc to grind the shell-less nut into powder!

He showed no mercy to the Marquis of Jinghuan.

The entire Yin Yang Burning Heavens Formation exploded as the tremendous forces of fission finally tore the Divine Body Armor – following the old scar in the middle of his chest – directly into half!

The onlookers stared on with apprehension at the spectacle. Everybody could feel their hairs stand on ends, and even Xiao Zhener and Yang Qing were rooted to the spot, speechless.

The Divine Body Armor was an incomplete product all those years ago. It sustained heavy damage and resulted in a great

reduction in its power. All those years of repair and recuperation by the Marquis of Jinghuan following the crack in the chest area of the armor.

All this could not hide the fact that a magic treasure with the potential of reaching the level of Destiny was forcefully broken apart as of today.

The person that laid the Divine Body Armor of the Emperor of Violence to ruin was surprisingly just a nascent soul intermediate stage cultivator.

Even though the detonations of the Yin Yang Burning Heavens Formation were not as ferocious or as violent as the Quad Fire Lotus, they lasted for a far longer period of time.

The raging tides that were crashing against each other continuously were now vaporized by the blazing flames above them. The remaining ocean water were bursting with air bubbles as steam from the boiling water thickened the layer of cloudy white mist above the Ying Sea and caused everything to turn into a patch of blinding whiteness.

Xiao Yan's two strikes, one after another, managed to achieve the state of 'Burning Heavens and Blazing Oceans'.

Yet, at this very moment, Buddhist chants rang out from beyond the void and a Buddha statue on a lotus pedestal revealed itself.

There was a lunar wheel in front of the lotus pedestal that was spurred by eight horses, and the right hand of the buddha had Cintamani Beads while its left hand held onto a bell. It took the form of the Ratnasambhava.

As this form of the buddha showed itself, Yan Mingyue giggled as she said, "I guess your patience ran out and you're finally here. What a pity – this is but an avatar, and you can't save this man."

She flashed out the Heavenly Imperial Jade and morphed into rolls of white clouds and a sprawling divine palace shimmered into



vision out of nowhere and blockaded the magical body of the Ratnasambhava.

A young monk stood beneath the body of the Ratnasambhava. He wore a warm smile on his face as he shook his head at Yan Mingyue. "The Heavenly Imperial Jade... Heh, the Great Void Sect and the Heaven's Gate Sect withheld their feuding conflicts for the sake of the Nine Heavens in the olden days. Today, the Heavenly Imperial Jade is actually willing to be used by the Great Void Sect – the fate of the world and the fortunes of the earth are truly magical and unpredictable."

His voice grew ever so deep and soft as his body disappeared from sight. The sound of his voice followed immediately after, and the body of the Ratnasambhava retreated back into the void and vanished.

A haze of terror surrounded the Marquis of Jinghuan, who was still buried deep within the sea of flames, when he witnessed the departure of the young monk.

This source of fear did not come from the fact that the young monk was willing to let him die. This fear was mixed with revelations of some sort, as if he suddenly understood something important.

The only problem was that he no longer had much time to contemplate. The boundless volumes of fire had already completely consumed the Divine Body Armor at this point.

His physical body that had been hardened over time and was unmoving like that of the Vajra was also gradually melting within the furnace of primordial fires.

His agonizing cries resonated across the skies. "Xiao Yan..."

In the next moment, a stream of spiritual energy that was charged with the stench of blood shot up into the air. It was ultimately laid to ruin as it turned into streams of greenish smoke

and dissipated into the air.

The figure of the Marquis of Jinghuan stood upright within the ocean of flames like a ghoulish statue. His body became like a porcelain vase being smashed to pieces.

Across the Divine Lands outside the Ying Sea, in a place far away from the East Sea, there was a camp that was lying between the borders of the Great Qin Empire and the Great Zhou Empire. An aurous core stage youth with clad in tight white clothing started bleeding from every hole in his body and collapsed backwards.

The guards surrounding him were all paralyzed with fear and confusion. Nobody knew why their great general's avatar would suddenly collapse just like that.

At the same time, another one of Liang An's avatars was sitting inside a pavilion in the middle of a mountain range. This avatar was wearing a long flowing white robe, and let loose another harrowing cry as its eyes grew hollow and its entire body froze like a wooden statue.

A gust of wind blew past it, and the white-robed scholar-like avatar collapsed onto the ground, as if it had been defeated by the wind.

The original body of the Marquis of Jinghuan that had yet to reach the immortal soul stage was completely devastated, and his avatars were destroyed along with him.

Xiao Yan's battle truly devastated the Marquis of Jinghuan to the point that nothing remained!

# Chapter 737: Spoils Of War

---

Without the command of the Marquis of Jinghuan, the Immortal Royal Flag, the God-Slayer Puppet and the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler paused momentarily before spreading out in all directions like prey running from their predators.

Xiao Zhener and the others were already a step ahead and tried their best to suppress and retrieve these magic items.

The cultivators under the command of the Marquis of Jinghuan scattered like rats, and nobody really paid attention to them anymore.

Yan Mingyue grinned as several streams of black and white Yin-Yang mana shot out to aid the others in capturing the Immortal Royal Flag and the other magic treasures.

Xiao Yan withdrew the Nefarious Almighty Sword as the Divine Token of the Five Thrones returned to the top of his head and enveloped in its signature five-colored treasure light. Xiao Yan was drained after the battle to the point where his legs became weak, but the Divine Token of the Five Thrones supported him and prevented him from falling to his unfortunate death into his own sea of flames – that would have been a real tragedy.

This battle could be said to have stripped the Marquis of Jinghuan till nothing was left. Besides the Immortal Royal Flag, the God-Slayer Puppet and the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler, even the Divine Body Armor of the Emperor of Violence was forcefully ripped from his body.

However, Xiao Yan refused to let his guard down. He took a moment to stabilize himself before he turned towards Yan Mingyue. "What do you have in mind?"

Yan Mingyue's Heavenly Imperial Jade transformed into patches of white energy and encircled the God-Slayer Puppet. She held a

white and translucent crystal-like ruler that was flickering with icy light in her hand as well.

On the other side, Xiao Zhener was channeling the power of the Ancient Royal Sword and the Ancient Lightning Jade Earring to suppress the Immortal Royal Flag as she returned to Xiao Yan's side. Yang Qing, the Kui Cow King and the Spiritual Sea Horse King started leaning in towards Xiao Yan as everyone shifted their eyes towards Yan Mingyue.

Yan Mingyue flashed a warm smile and said, "I don't mean you harm. I am just helping to hold down the God-Slayer Puppet and the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler for the time being. These items belong to you and I have no intention to claim them for myself."

Xiao Yan glanced at her and nodded his head. "If that's the case, then you have my thanks."

With that, he released his inventory bag and a giant piece of tree log shimmered into vision. Its trunk was incredibly large and was flowing with thick spiritual energy.

Xiao Yan took a deep breath and absorbed the vast volumes of spiritual energy into his body, and his fatigue and dizziness were quickly remedied.

It took only a moment for Xiao Yan, who was previously about to collapse from fatigue, to return to his peak condition.

The epic battle with the Marquis of Jinghuan gave Xiao Yan a much-needed consolidation for his abhijnas and his control of mana. The eventual victory gave him an epiphany-like feeling that advanced his powers as he continued to absorb the spiritual energy from the colossal Cloud Forest Tree Trunk.

The large mass of the tree trunk started to shrink with a speed that was visible to the naked eye.

A spark of clear light lit up above his head and a figure appeared – it was Xiao Yan when he was barely the age of ten.

In this moment, Xiao Yan was consolidating and concentrating his entire life's worth of mantras and special abilities. He channeled the Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire, the Pure Yang Primordial Fire, the Grand Sun Primordial Fire, the Nanming Primordial Fire and the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze and used them as raw materials to materialize another human figure above his head.

The images of the eight trigrams appeared as well and morphed into the eight limbs of the giant figure. The pure-white Pure Yang Primordial transformed into the giant's torso.

The other four primordial fires each morphed into a head.

The head formed from the Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire was bluish-purple and had an air of dominance as it released an ear-splitting roar.

The Grand Sun Primordial Fire transformed into a pure-golden head that was so blinding, much like staring at the sun with naked eyes, that the others had to shift their gazes away.

The golden head formed from the Nanming Primordial Fire had a pair of eyes that were radiating red and blue colors.

The Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze morphed into a head that was emanating with black energy that was so dark and murky that its facial features were obscured and blurry.

All the heads on the giant started to howl as its eight arms flailed about. The clouds in the sky started flitting around and the domineering giant possessed a deeply petrifying aura as it stood there in the void.

It was apparent that Xiao Yan had managed to ascend the nascent soul advanced stage after his battle with the Marquis of Jinghuan and unleashed his cosmic form!

Below the cosmic form, Xiao Yan's nascent soul also grew to his appearance when he was eleven or twelve. This was also a sign that

he had ascended into the nascent soul advanced stage.

His nascent soul gradually descended into his head. Yan Mingyue smiled faintly as she watched everything and released the God-Slayer Puppet and the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler at the same time.

The two rogue items wanted to escape again, but Xiao Yan was prepared as he raised his eyes. He no longer needed the Divine Token of the Five Thrones to suppress the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler, and the eight arms of his cosmic form extended outwards and grabbed the God-Slayer Puppet at the same time.

The God-Slayer Puppet struggled meekly as the eight arms of Xiao Yan's cosmic form roared again and rained streams of flames upon the God-Slayer Puppet and heavily damaged its soul.

Yan Mingyue smiled again and said, "Fearsome. Even though the God-Slayer Puppet cannot be truly considered to be an immortal soul stage cultivator, it's not too far from one. Yet, Xiao Yan is still able to suppress it with his cosmic form."

Xiao Zhener, Yang Qing and the others did not look too surprised. They had just witnessed one of Lin Feng's avatars unleash the cosmic form and the immortal soul avatar not too long ago.

Without the guidance of the Marquis of Jinghuan, the God-Slayer Puppet could only rely on its natural instincts to move about. It even started to fear Xiao Yan's immense power as its struggling became weaker and weaker till the end when it was in complete submission.

Xiao Yan turned towards the unstable Immortal Royal Flag. A pale-golden human illusion appeared from within the black light of the Immortal Royal Flag – it was a figure formed from pure light and was clad in golden armor with a golden helmet. There was a royal aura about him, as if the emperor of an empire had arrived on scene.

It was the original soul of the Immortal Royal Flag. It was a metaplasia-level magic treasure, and was already capable of materializing its original soul.

The only problem was that, before a magic treasure reached the Mahayana level, the power that a magic treasure could channel on its own was highly limited without an owner. At this moment, the Ancient Lightning Jade Earring and the Ancient Royal Sword were also watching him with hostile eyes.

The original soul of the Immortal Royal Flag watched Xiao Yan for a while before it heaved a defeated sigh. "I wish to meet the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. Before that, I don't wish to be enemies with you, and I am willing to travel with the lot of you as well."

The black light dissipated as the Immortal Royal Flag reverted to its original form of a giant black banner and drifted down in front of Xiao Yan.

Xiao Yan waved his hands as the sea of flames all around receded in an instant and returned into the center of his palms. There were even charcoal-colored remnants of armor that returned with the ocean of fire – they were the pieces of the Divine Body Armor that Xiao Yan had so mercilessly torn apart with the Quad Fire Lotus and the Yin Yang Burning Heavens Formation.

Xiao Yan used his mana to sweep one of the broken pieces and sensed the concepts of power contained within before he kept them.

After using the Divine Token of the Five Thrones to retrieve the Great Ice Moonlight Ruler, he turned back towards Yan Mingyue. "Yan Mingyue, whatever your intentions are, I have to thank you for your help."

"It is your right to share in the spoils of war as well. You can pick one."

The spoils of war from this battle was truly plentiful – there was a metaplasia-level magic treasure, a gestation-level magic treasure, an immortal soul stage Puppet, and a Divine Body Armor that had been destroyed but still contained much knowledge to be excavated.

The spaces in the middle of the Immortal Royal Flag contained the various treasures that the Marquis of Jinghuan had cached over the years, and were just lying there in wait for Xiao Yan to sort them out.

Yan Mingyue trained her eyes upon this handsome youth in front of her. She thought back to the courageous and brave teenager she had met all those years ago, and realized that he had indeed matured a lot since then.

Xiao Zhener and Yang Qing remained expressionless, but the Kui Cow King and the Spiritual Horse King were slightly taken aback as they started to deliberate.

It was clear that Xiao Yan meant something else with those words.

Yang Qing glanced at them and passed a voice-projected message. "Yan Mingyue's intentions in helping us out was not just to aid the Celestial Sect of Wonders – she wanted to help the Great Zhou Empire as well."

"Even though the Marquis of Jinghuan was born of the Great Zhou Empire, this person had a very complicated identity and background. The form of the Buddha that you saw just now proves this point."

"Besides the lineage of the Emperor of Violence and the mantras that he had obtained from the Great Zhou Empire, he embodies shadows of the Great Void Sect's Radical Faction and that mysterious monk as well. He is a liability in this expedition into the Ying Sea and the reappearance of the Three Mountains."



"Whether Yan Mingyue was acting as a direct disciple of the Great Void Sect or as a collaborator with the Great Zhou Empire, there was enough reason for her to remove this liability," Yang Qing paused momentarily and raised his eyes towards the void above. "If I'm not wrong, Yan Mingyue's true target is the mysterious monk behind the Marquis of Jinghuan. Even master is extremely curious about the identity of that monk."

"The only problem is that that monk is too intelligent. He saw through Yan Mingyue's intentions instantaneously and withdrew right away. Perhaps that's because there are other people in the immediate vicinity besides Yan Mingyue, and if the monk refused to take off then an ambush would have been triggered."

The Kui Cow King and the Spiritual Sea Horse King chewed on his words but immediately turned solemn. "Will this ambush be used against us?"

Yang Qing said nothing more as he casted his gaze towards Yan Mingyue.

Yan Mingyue chuckled and said, "I said before that I mean no harm to the lot of you. These spoils of war are the direct result of your efforts, and I don't want anything."

She smiled warmly at Xiao Yan and continued, "You are worthy as Lin Feng's eldest disciple. You harness the power of five different primordial fires, and you have even been able to integrate the changes of the Yin and Yang into them."

The most powerful combination of Xiao Yan's Tri Fire Lotus was the one formed from the Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire, the Grand Sun Primordial Fire and the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze, yet Xiao Yan avoided that.

Instead, he used the Nefarious Spectral Primordial Fire, the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze and the Nanming Primordial Fire to form a Yin Fire Lotus while he used the Pure Yang Primordial Fire, the Grand Sun Primordial Fire and the Nanming Primordial Fire to

form a Yang Fire Lotus. The Nanming Primordial Fire was the balance between Yin and Yang, and also acted as a conduit for the changes of the Yin Yang Burning Heavens Formation.

The multiple transformations of the magic formation were unnaturally complicated and profound. What was more important was the fact that the Primordial Fires were naturally violent and explosive, and the Heavenly Fire Lotus was dangerous and volatile as well. Channeling such volatile and explosive power to set up a magic formation was risky as if he mishandled just one step in the process, the magic formation would have erupted before anything else could happen.

Over the past three years, Xiao Yan mastered this powerful magic formation with his own studies and masteries, along with Lin Feng's guidance.

Without this magic formation, even though Xiao Yan still had the world-ending power of the Quad Fire Lotus, he would not have achieved the same effect. He would still have been able to defeat the Marquis of Jinghuan, perhaps, and eventually send him running for his life, but he would not have been able to cut off his escape route and end his life right there and now.

The appearance of the Quad Fire Lotus was still a shocker for Yan Mingyue and the Marquis of Jinghuan as Xiao Yan was only supposed to be able to start practicing that after he ascended to the nascent soul advanced stage.

However, Lin Feng made special preparations for him when he first formed the nascent soul. Lin Feng used the powers of five different primordial fires to aid Xiao Yan in the process, and integrated the various abhijnas and mana into his nascent soul as a foundation for his eventual mastery. These foundations led to Xiao Yan's eventual success and his ability to fuse the four different primordial fires together to form the Heavenly Fire Lotus that shell-shocked even immortal soul stage cultivators.

Xiao Yan smiled at Yan Mingyue and said, "You flatter me."

His eyes swept across the void and asked slowly, "What plans do you have after this?"

He had also considered the same problem that Yang Qing thought about previously.

# Chapter 738: The Most Substantial Factor

---

If the Great Void Sect participated in this epic battle of the Ying Sea, then Yan Mingyue's position would still be unclear. However, if she chose not to interfere, then it would be clear that Yan Mingyue was siding with the Great Zhou Empire.

There was not much rapport between the Great Zhou Empire and the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

Yan Mingyue herself was on friendly terms with everybody inside the Celestial Sect of wonders. She was there with Lin Daohan at the Spiritual Conference of Mount Kunlun as well. From the outsider's perspective, Yan Mingyue, an outstanding disciple of the Great Void Sect, favored the Celestial Sect of Wonders a lot.

However, both Lin Feng and Yan Mingyue knew that the people supporting her were trying a new path that differed from the current tracks of the Conservative and Radical Factions. The third path was to lean towards the Great Zhou Empire, and Yan Mingyue was not about to change her stance and side with the Celestial Sect of Wonders over the Great Zhou Empire.

Over three years ago, after the battle of Xiling City, Lin Feng and Yan Mingyue had a brief light-hearted discussion about this issue of switching sides. Still, they were both crystal clear that all this was just banter, and would not become reality.

It was not because of the amount of blood and sweat she had injected into the Great Zhou Empire. If Yan Mingyue felt that the Great Zhou Empire was no longer aligned with her own path, she was decisive enough to give up all the effort she had put in over the years and start again.

Yet, even if she were to start again, she would not choose the Celestial Sect of Wonders either as they were not aligned with her interests.

The reason was not because Lin Feng and the Celestial Sect of Wonders were too weak. On the contrary, it was because Yan Mingyue could see the frightening potential of the disciples of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. This was the true reason why both parties could never truly cooperate.

Even so, this did not affect the way she treated Lin Feng and the Celestial Sect of Wonders. They could meet again in conflict, but before that they would be able to associate with each other happily and peacefully with a limited degree of cooperation while building on private friendships and relationships.

Public matters were not the same as private ones. Lin Feng, Yan Mingyue, and even Lin Daohan and Liang Pan were very clear about the meaning of this.

Many people who had insider information were perplexed and confused. The Great Zhou Empire and the Great Qin Empire were frequently at odds with one another, but the Zhou Emperor Liang Pan and the Qin Emperor Shi Yu were actually more than just acquainted. They admired each other, and even exchanged messages with one another at times. It was naturally a private discussion about mantras and whatnot rather than about official matters of sovereignty.

Yan Mingyue twirled the hair beside her ears as she watched Xiao Yan and company and said, "There are a lot of other exotic and rare treasures inside the Ying Sea other than the three mystical mountains. Since I'm already here, I'll try my best not to return empty-handed."

"My next move is to venture deeper into the Ying Sea. I am happy to do it with all of you if you guys are willing to travel together. If that's not to be, then we shall say our farewells till we meet again. The reappearance of the three mystical mountains means that there will surely be a chance for us to cross paths once more."

"However, when we meet again at the three mystical mountains,

the main players will be Lin Feng and the other giants of the era. The few of us will only have to sit back and relax."

Xiao Yan laughed heartily at her remarks. "You're too kind. If that's the case, then we shall go our separate ways till we meet again."

Yan Mingyue was clear about the message she was trying to convey. She was here for the young monk and not for Xiao Yan and the others. There was no need for her to deceive or mask her true intentions. She helped Yang Qing extract the remainder of the Shaoyang Mystical Water and swept everybody up with her mana and everybody vanished into the cloudy mist above the Ying Sea.

Yan Mingyue watched Xiao Yan as he departed with his company and shook her head. "It's not just Lin Feng who is mysterious and unpredictable. His disciples have already far exceeded our original estimations and expectations. Xiao Yan is as such, so this can only mean that the other disciples of the Celestial Sect of Wonders cannot be gauged by our original estimations anymore."

The green-robed lady placed her hands behind her back as she cast her vision over the sprawling Ying Sea. She sighed and muttered under her breath, "The Celestial Sect of Wonders is really full of surprises."

"Where is Lin Feng now, I wonder? He's still the most substantial factor in the reappearance of the three mountains."

She was determined to reach the end of her own path. However, she could faintly feel that the greatest source of hindrance towards her success would not be from her own sect or from some other random influential power.

What could stop her in her tracks could very well be the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

With another faint sigh, Yan Mingyue disappeared into the void as well.

A handsome and good-looking young monk was sauntering along the Ying Sea, at a place far away from the previous battlefield. He was unkempt and dressed in a tattered grey monk robe as his naked feet rippled the surface of the ocean beneath him.

Every step he took was stable. It was as if he was not moving along rolling ocean water but was strolling over solid ground instead.

Walking over water was nothing much, but to saunter along the illusory and sinister Ying Sea as if it were solid ground was something else altogether. The fact that he was able to walk through the various frightening illusions and traps as if they were nothing was extraordinary.

The powerful illusions inside the Ying Sea drew upon the fates and destinies of the world, and even third-level Immortal Soul Stage would have to take special care when handling them. If not, they ran the risk of getting trapped forever.

However, this young grey-cloaked monk was like taking a walk in the park and treated the myriad of dangers in the Ying Sea as if they were nothing.

The young monk suddenly stopped in his tracks and tilted his head towards the side. Buddhist light flickered within the void and the monk with the form of the Ratnasambhava came out from within with a bright smile on his face as he gave his greetings.

The grey-clothed monk returned the greeting and asked, "Ratnasambhava, did something happen to the person under your guidance?"

The Ratnasambhava monk chuckled and answered, "Life is empty, death is empty – the cycle of life and death goes round and round. The last of our strings have been tied. Even though it's a little early, but still not a bad thing nonetheless."

"I'll leave it to you then." The grey-clothed monk smiled faintly

again. "Just don't bring back a tail like this."

Before his voice dropped, the thick cloudy mist on the other side of the sky separated with streaks of flickering light.

The Ratnasambhava Monk laughed and remarked, "Sorry, I couldn't do anything about it. I'm only in the second level of the Golden Form. The fact that I managed to escape before they encircled me is already a blessing from the Buddha."

The grey-clothed monk smiled. "Then shouldn't you be on your way?"

The Ratnasambhava monk chuckled as his body transformed into a light shadow and integrated himself into the body of the grey-clothed monk, before the young monk simply resumed his original activity and kept strolling along.

However, he vanished after the very first step.

"金蝉大师, we have known each other for such a long time. Why are you in such a hurry to leave?" A thick voice resounded across the skies.

Only the laughter of the young monk was left as his body was nowhere to be seen. "Fate will bring us together eventually. Why do you have to be so stubborn? The Three Mystical Mountains have reappeared once again, so everybody should focus their attentions on them."

The thick voice rang out once again. "Since you are here for the Three Mystical Mountains as well, then it won't be long till the day we meet again."

The arrival party's attitude was not particularly aggressive or hostile. If the 金蝉大师 refused to leave, then perhaps they would have a little scuffle, but if all the 金蝉大师 wanted to do was to get out of here then he was not about to chase after him.

The Three Mountains of the Ying Sea were back, and every powerful and influential party wanted a piece of it. Everybody else



would gain, for free, from a bloody battle between two such parties at this point in time.

The 金蟬大師 was gone, and the dense lights in the sky gradually dissipated as well.

"I wonder what the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders is doing right now? His original body isn't here, and he left his avatar in the East Sea and has yet to proceed into the Ying Sea."

Lin Feng, the man that everybody was thinking about, was still inside the East Sea on the Divine Lands.

He was following behind Luo Yao and Mu Yu in secret the whole time and watched them return to the Luofo Mystical Island.

As the person with his eyes on the ground, Mu Yu was clear that the thunderous and violent tsunamis from the entrance to the Ying Sea was due to the return of the Three Mystical Mountains.

Their reappearance was earlier than expected, and coupled with the demons that were seeking them out for revenge, he was unable to deliver the Nine Spirals Golden Pill to his master even though it had already been forged.

This made him uncomfortable and anxious. He was aware that his junior's situation was a lot worse. Xiao Yan brought away the Spiritual Sea Horse King, and the reappearance of the three mountains meant that he no longer had any time to find another replacement Spiritual Sea Horse. The forging of the Mystical Pill of Clouds and Smoke had not even begun.

He was anxious and jumpy but he still felt a wave of warmth when he looked at Luo Yao. Lin Feng helped him retrieve the Nine Spirals Golden Pill that entered Luo Yao's body by accident, so he no longer had to concern himself with what his master could do to Luo Yao to achieve the same end.

He watched Luo Yao grow up ever since Luo Yao was a kid. Even though his talents and everything were mostly average, Mu Yu

admired his determination and his personality. He had already decided to take him in as his direct disciple.

Cao Zhendong and Yun Jinxi had to pull some strings to become his disciple. However, Mu Yu handpicked Luo Yao. He kept pushing Luo Yao into the outside world in order to grind and train him.

Mu Yu had always been following Luo Yao's progress in cultivation, and he had been guiding every step that he took in secret.

Luo Yao did not have much resources for cultivation. Therefore, his speed of progress paled in comparison to Cao Zhendong, Yun Jinxi and the others. However, every milestone that he reached was built upon solid foundations. Mu Yu had a plan for him, to nurture him to the point where his potential would be completely maximized. From his point of view, Luo Yao was eventually bound to rise in level a lot faster than Cao Zhendong and the rest.

There were two other things that bugged him still. One was the fact that the number of demons in the East Sea were receding as most of them were moving towards the Ying Sea, but there were still quite a few left in the East Sea.

One such race was the Dragon Race, and the dragons were here for revenge and vengeance.

Even though Lin Feng had already chased away two demonic lord stage dragons, there were still others that were hot on their tails.

The second thing was Lu Ning. He caught a glimpse of the cold-looking lady. She was a messenger sent forth by the Marquis of Jinghuan. During the furor inside the Ying Sea, she took a Nine Spirals Golden Pill from Mu Yu and seemed like she wanted to split paths and go back to the Ying Sea to meet the Marquis of Jinghuan.

However, she remained in the end and was still travelling

together with Mu Yu and company.

Mu Yu's guess was that she was under a separate set of orders from the Marquis of Jinghuan, but he was not quite sure what happened exactly.

The fact that she was still with the company meant that their battle prowess was a lot stronger than otherwise. He felt a lot safer from the demons in hot pursuit, but made him feel a little hollow somewhat.

There was nothing much he could say or do besides hurry along their current trajectory and return to the Luofu Mystical Island before anything else.

Lin Feng was watching them from the void as he thought to himself, "I wonder if my guesses are correct?"

# Chapter 739: The Thunderstorm Is Coming

---

The group of youngsters were in a comparably more jovial mood. Cao Zhendong and Yun Jinxi were even joking around with each other,

Luo Yao was a lot calmer than before as well. Once the Nine Spirals Golden Pill was retrieved from his body, his life was no longer in danger as long as he followed the pack. If they ran into something that not even Mu Yu or Lu Ning could handle, then there was nothing much he could do either.

Luo Yao felt a little different from before. His instincts told him that there was something different about him, but it was inexplicable and he could not quite put his finger on it.

He shook his head and laughed a little at himself. The things that he just encountered in the past few days were so daunting, dramatic and life-changing – they were more exciting and substantial than what he had experienced throughout his entire life.

He recovered his footing and looked up to see Lu Ning watching him quietly.

Lu Ning did not even try to mask her line of sight. She glanced at Luo Yao again before turning away.

Luo Yao could not help but feel a little uncomfortable. Lu Ning was a nascent soul stage cultivator and was actually more powerful than even Mu Yu. And him – he was only a Qi cultivation stage small fry, and if he came up against her it was like an ant versus an elephant. There was just nothing he could do if Lu Ning wanted something from him.

Mu Yu forged two Nine Spirals Golden Pills, and during the demonic invasion that caused the pill furnace to explode, one of the pills accidentally entered his body.

This pill was forged under Huang Ming's orders, and since Huang Ming was working together with the Marquis of Jinghuan, it was natural that they were to split one pill each.

Lu Ning wanted to sacrifice Luo Yao on the spot to retrieve the pill but Mu Yu stopped her. The solution was that Mu Yu was willing to give the other available pill to Lu Ning in exchange for Luo Yao's life.

Now that both pills were safe and sound, there was no reason why a great nascent soul stage cultivator like Lu Ning would care anything at all about a puny Qi cultivation stage independent cultivator like him. However, he kept getting goosebumps and kept feeling chills run down his spine.

Luo Yao was anxiously thinking to himself, but what he did not know was that Lu Ning was frustrated as well.

She had communicated with the Marquis of Jinghuan previously to report everything that had just transpired. She was meticulous and did not leave out a single detail – from Lin Feng's appearance to the end of the drama.

She thought that her task was just to retrieve the Nine Spirals Golden Pill and deliver it to the Marquis of Jinghuan once it was done. However, after some contemplation, the Marquis of Jinghuan ordered her to stay behind and travel with the rest of the company.

More accurately put, the Marquis of Jinghuan wanted her to travel with Luo Yao.

"Since you detected that there was a trace of the Steel Tree Avatar, then this nascent soul stage cultivator could very well be an avatar of the Celestial Sect of Wonders."

There were not many people who had seen Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar before. Thus, it was highly unlikely that independent cultivators inside the East Sea were able to recognize him.

However, the Marquis of Jinghuan knew better and was thinking to himself, "His original body is not here in the East Sea and it's just an avatar. He's not travelling with his disciples either – looks like he's planning something else on his own."

"Luo Yao has interacted with him privately before, and is also Lin Feng's beneficiary for the favor of retrieving the powers of the pill. They might interact with each other again in the future, so you should just be patient and observe for a while longer."

"If nothing's happening after a long period of time, you have my permission to take him down and use the Soul-Searching Technique to see if there's anything out of the ordinary."

She was a little confused when she first heard these instructions and glanced at Luo Yao once more. She had already used her consciousness to sweep Luo Yao's body but to no avail.

"Forget it. I'm just going to wait a little longer, and if I still turn up with nothing then I'm just going to use the Soul-Searching Technique."

Everybody had their own thoughts and worries. They travelled together and headed back in the direction of the Luofu Mystical Islands. Mu Yu and Lu Ning were both injured and their nascent souls were weak, thus they were not able to open the void and travel through it. All they could do was sweep up the others and travel in the sky.

There were a couple of demons along the way that tried to mess with them. Thankfully, there was not a single demonic lord stage demon so their journey was pretty much peaceful and safe.

The number of demons declined a lot more as they got closer and closer to the Luofu Mystical Islands. Cao Zhendong, Yun Jinxi and the others became even more relaxed. However, neither Lu Ning nor Mu Yu had any intentions of lowering their guard – on the contrary, they became even more wary.

Luo Yao had been uncomfortable throughout the entire journey. Even though his expression was calm, it was a little gloomy.

Yun Jinxi laughed at his look and said, "What's up, Big Luo?"

Luo Yao glanced at Mu Yu and Lu Ning before he lowered his voice and whispered, "I can feel a great calamity coming."

Yun Jinxi was stunned momentarily as Cao Zhendong turned to look at him as well.

Luo Yao pondered for a moment. "When we actually return to the Luofu Mystical Island then we will be safe. Demons won't dare to invade the island itself, and since that's the case, then they will probably be launching their very last assault at a place not too far from the island."

"The danger of this final invasion will be a lot greater than before. After all, it's their last chance at revenge."

Yun Jinxi asked, "Then why did they not concentrate their forces before to attack us? The areas near the Luofu Mystical Islands are ultimately still dangerous for them. We don't even have to talk about the Luofu Holy Man, the other cultivators on the island will come to our aid for sure."

Luo Yao continued to explain. "Areas too far away from the Luofu Mystical Island could have been too open and it would have been difficult to trap us in a choke. We could have escaped towards any direction. In this scenario, then they would have to stretch their resources and powers across a large surface area and this would weaken them."

"This is like the miscellaneous demons that we encountered along the way. We would have just rolled over them," it was obvious that Luo Yao was a little worried. "We have to return to the Luofu Mystical Islands in the end. This destination will not change, so it will be easier for them to ambush us at a place not far from our final destination."

"At the same time, as we get closer and closer to the island, then our guards will drop as we become more and more relaxed..." Luo Yao looked up and saw Yun Jinxi glaring at him as Cao Zhendong and the other cultivators blushed a little. He turned away awkwardly and hurriedly continued, "...so they could be waiting for that to happen and use some geographical advantage somewhere to ambush us."

"Of course, such a plan is risky business for them. Just like you said, if somebody from the Luofu Mystical Island has detected anything wrong, they will come to our aid as fast as they can. However, it can be because of this very fact that our adversaries' strength will be stronger and more ferocious. They will be aiming to eliminate us as quickly as they can."

After hearing his words, the rest of the company started to contemplate amongst themselves. They wanted to rebut his argument, but Luo Yao's prediction had a real possibility of happening. Furthermore, Mu Yu and Lu Ning did not say anything in response and it was quite clear that they were in agreement with Luo Yao's judgment.

The troupe's jovial mood died down in an instant. Yun Jinxi forced out a smile and said, "There's logic behind Big Luo's words. We have been a little blinded by our emotions. Keeping our guards up is always the right thing to do – we should only start to relax once we enter Luofu Mystical Island."

Everybody nodded their heads in agreement. Yun Jinxi surveyed the ocean areas surrounding them and tried to make a rough gauge of the distance they still needed to cover. All of a sudden, she laughed heartily and exclaimed, "Senior Cao, we are reaching our families' very own tiny little island."

Cao Zhendong glanced around and started laughing as well. "Heh, you're right."

Luo Yao remained silent. The tiny island in which both Yun Jinxi



and Cao Zhendong were born was the same island that he grew up in.

He shared a childhood with Cao Zhendong and Yun Jinxi. He was the same age as Yun Jinxi, and Cao Zhendong was slightly older. The Cao and Yun Families could be considered small cultivation-based families and were relatively more influential.

When both Cao Zhendong and Yun Jinxi displayed outstanding talents for cultivation, they were both sent by their respective families to seek mentorship inside the Luofu Mystical Island.

He, on the other hand, was an orphan. He was raised by an old priest on the tiny island. The old man treated him like a son and he treated him like a father. At the same time, they were like mentor and disciple as well, and all the ordinary mantras that he now possessed were passed down by this man.

The old priest was only in the foundation establishment advanced stage and was unable to form the aurous core. Ultimately, he brought this regret to the grave and only after Luo Yao held his wake and funeral did he leave the tiny island to explore the world. He was invited by Yun Jinxi to travel together and ended up in the place where Mu Yu forged his pills.

Mu Yu had known him since a long time ago. Mu Yu had already developed intentions to nurture this orphan kid from the very start, so he closed one eye and let Luo Yao stick around. This eventually led to the accidental explosion of the pill furnace and the Luo Yao's unintentional consumption of the magic pill.

As they came closer to the tiny island of their childhood, Luo Yao could feel his emotions stirring in his body. He tried his best to control it, however. Cao Zhendong and the others tried their best to suppress their own emotions as this was not the right time to visit their families and return home.

As they passed by the tiny island, both Mu Yu and Lu Ning's faces changed.

Cao Zhendong and company stared for a moment longer before their expressions turned gray as well. The tiny island was in a state of devastation so great that it was visible to the naked eye. There was no need to probe it with one's consciousness as it was crystal clear.

A deathly aura could be felt coming from the tiny island.

"Master..." Yun Jinxi looked up at Mu Yu with tears in her eyes. Mu Yu heaved a heavy sigh and took everyone down onto the tiny island. Lu Ning remained in the sky where she was, even though she did not object and neither did she take her leave.

It was a tragedy. The people inhabiting the island had been slaughtered, and every single building was laid to ruin. Every single structure became a pile of rubble as broken beams and pillars littered the grounds.

Besides the Cao and Yun Family, there were a few other tiny cultivator families living on the island as well. However, the individual with the highest level of cultivation was only at the foundation establishment stage. It was clear that there was no way they could repel any incoming assaults, and the ultimate consequence was complete annihilation.

Cao Zhendong stared ahead at the old Cao residence that was now a pile of dust. He was rooted to the ground and his mouth was half-open but no sound came out at all.

On the other side, Yun Jinxi was having an even harder. She could clearly see the dreadful remains of her dead family members lying all around the crumbled Yun residence. Her dignified and magnanimous father, her lovely and caring mother...

Luo Yao did not really know what to say to Yun Jinxi as the young girl started to wail and bawl. He wanted to comfort her, but he knew that simple words were meaningless and would ring hollow. He wanted to offer to exact revenge together, but he was only at the Qi cultivation stage, so that would have been a

laughable offer. Yun Jinxi herself was a lot stronger than he was.

He had always been inclined towards this lively and vivacious girl. As he watched her cry her eyes out, Luo Yao felt some pressure bearing down on him as well.

Lin Feng witnessed the very same scene from the void and sighed to himself. He had discovered the tragedy that had befallen this tiny island way before their company did. The only regret was that it had already happened.

The demons were not powerful enough to find out Luo Yao and Yun Jinxi's backgrounds on their own. Even if they wanted to seek vengeance, they would be seeking out Huang Ming and Mu Yu instead. The fate of this tiny island was a purely unfortunate coincidence – the demons wanted to do something to vent their anger, and this tiny island just happened to be there, ripe for the taking.

"This is not the time to be grieving," Lin Feng shook his head a little as he turned towards the skies on the far end of the horizon. "The calm before the storm has passed – the real thunderstorm is coming."

After a while, Lu Ning felt a chill run down her spine as she turned to look in the same direction. A hole opened in the sky as countless demons spilled out from within and lunged towards the tiny island!

# Chapter 740: Rebirth!

---

After the reappearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea, many demons started to make their way into the Ying Sea as well. Everybody wanted to take a little something back from their adventures and perhaps return home with some exotic and rare treasures inside the Ying Sea.

The demons still remaining in the East Sea were greatly reduced at this point in time. However, the demons that appeared in front of Mu Yu and company had three demonic lord stage dragons amongst their ranks, along with several other dragons of lower levels of cultivation.

The three demonic lord stage dragons did not even include the two that Lin Feng had chased away previously.

As they observed the invader's line-up, both Mu Yu and Lu Ning felt their hearts sink. Lu Ning was even considering the possibility of taking Luo Yao away and run away – in the end, the demons were here for Mu Yu.

The demons had something else in mind, however. They circled the company as barriers were set up all around the void; they were determined not to let a single person escape. Lu Ning dispelled all other thoughts as she knew she had no choice but to face the enemy together with Mu Yu and the others.

In the last chaotic battle, Mu Yu misplaced the voice-projection crystal that allowed him to contact his seniors and juniors. There was no way of contacting the Luofu Mystical Island or Huang Ming to call for aid. Their only hope was that this place was not too far away from the Luofu Mystical Island.

If anybody from the Luofu Mystical Island detected anything wrong, a patrol party would be sent forth to investigate. However, till then, it was up to Mu Yu and the rest to support themselves and stay alive.

The only problem was that the difference in battle prowess between the two parties were just too great. The battle had barely just begun when the humans started to feel the intense pressure.

Mu Yu and Lu Ning were barely able to take care of themselves. Luo Yao, Yun Jinxi and the others could only rely upon themselves and team up with the other aurous core and foundation establishment stage cultivators to face off the lower-level demons that came upon them.

Yun Jinxi and Cao Zhendong glared at the demons before them as flames poured out of their eyes. Furious thoughts of revenge and vengeance masked over the confusion and fear of the ambush as they started channeling their own abhijnas and magic items to battle the demonic commander stage dragons with fearless determination.

The Luofu Mystical Island had always been in constant conflict against the demons at the border of the two worlds. There were times when demons sent a force to invade the East Sea, and the Luofu Mystical Island frequently sent forth cultivators into the Barren Expanses to attack the demons. Thus, even though Yun Jinxi and the others were still young and their levels of cultivation were not too high, their experiences with real-life combat and battles were not lacking.

The only problem was that fiery wrath was not enough to plug the gap in numbers and battle prowess. Furthermore, the dragons were here for revenge and vengeance as well and their level of determination rivaled that of Yun Jinxi and Cao Zhendong.

Not before long, Yun Jinxi and the others were already at a heavy disadvantage. Luo Yao, who was only in the Qi cultivation stage, was even worse.

Mu Yu was able to tear himself away and support Luo Yao initially, but was very quickly forced to concentrate on defending himself. It came to a point where he had to choose but to distance

himself from Luo Yao as much as possible – otherwise, the ripple effects of an epic battle between a nascent soul stage cultivator and a demonic lord stage dragon could sweep him away and could even result in his demise.

Luo Yao was being chased by a raging jade dragon. Luo Yao tried his best to dodge left and right, but it seemed like he was about to be ripped open.

He could see, out of the corner of his eye, that Cao Zhendong had already lost one entire arm. Half of his body was drenched in blood, his hair was in a mess and he just looked so dreadful and pathetic. He did not even have time to treat his wounds as he had to focus on dodging the attacks of another dragon. After every attack that he managed to dodge, he had to focus all his attention on dodging the next one. Not before long, his defensive magic item was completely destroyed.

The golden hair on Yun Jinxi's head that used to be radiant like the sun was not riddled with bloodstains and dirt, and the original splendor had completely disappeared. Her rosy lips lost their flavorful colors as well as she stretched her very limits to repel the demonic general stage dragons, but a greater danger was about to befall the young lady.

It was dangerous to the point where she felt all hope was lost. A demonic commander stage dragon that had already formed the aurous core was lunging towards her with blazing blue flames pouring out of its gaping jaws. Her defensive magic items and the protective mana surrounding her were torched away in an instant as the dragon came for her right away and was just about to gobble her up.

This was all distant to Luo Yao at this point, as his physical body was being ravaged by another jade dragon!

Clouds of blood blew up around the tall young man but he could no longer feel any pain.

"I...I should be dead..." Luo Yao discovered, to his great surprise, that he could still think and his brain was still working. This gave him an extremely strange feeling as he was practically watching his own body crumble into a puddle of flesh and blood.

"What's... What's going on?" Luo Yan was terrified, but eventually realized that he was inside a circular pearl-like object as golden mist rolled around in front of him. Purple light flickered all around, but what was strange was the fact that he felt like he knew what this was.

Luo Yao recovered after a while. His physical body had been completely destroyed, and the 'him' that was inside this strange golden pearl was just his soul.

The purple light surged into his soul as he began to feel murky and an uncanny feeling came over him. Uncountable and continuous pictures flashed through his mind, things that he could not connect together and did not know the meaning of.

He stumbled along and started to realize that his soul was starting to exude the same purple radiance.

Multiple thoughts and worries clouded his consciousness. Some of the principles that he held on so dearly were kept, and actually became stronger and more amplified. In the end, there was only one thought, one voice, that was left inside his mind. A voice that shouted again and again:

"I can't die! I need to save them! Senior Mu and Jinxi cannot die!"

Radiant purple light exploded and rushed out of the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl and lit up the sky all around.

Innumerable glyphs and runes danced around in the flames and lit up the void as they imprinted themselves upon every inch of space.

Even Mu Yu, Lu Ning and the other powerful demonic lord stage dragons that were entangled in close quarter combat could not

help but turn around towards the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl.

Mu Yu and the other humans were only slightly shocked, but the powerful demonic lord stage dragons began to feel a calamitous dread that seemed to come from the bottom of their souls. It was as if an unknown terror came into existence, something like a tyrannical leader that was destined to rule over them from its birth.

The dragons were stunned and perplexed at the same time. As dragons, arrogance and dignity were part of their nature. Most other demon races would revere them and accord them the respect they deserved. For the dragons themselves to feel this same reverence and fear of something higher than them was pretty much non-existent.

"Unless..." The three jade dragons' eyes widened as they turned to stare at the golden pearl that was still radiating with purple light.

The dragon that tore apart Luo Yao's body was shivering from top to bottom. He was so shell-shocked that he felt paralyzed; he wanted to run, but his body was weak from fear and he could not even move a talon.

The purple lights continued to flicker as a thick golden mist began to flow out of the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl and materialized in the air. The thick mist transformed into a figure that was pure-gold with dashes of purple light encircling it.

The figure had a shape and build that was very similar to humans, but ultimately it was only humanoid.

Purple marks riddled its body as if they were carved upon it. The hair on its head was silver-white and stretched out behind its back all the way to his hips. Upon closer inspection, one could tell that it was not just purely hair from the head as long silver-white hair extended all the way down its spine up till its tailbone.



The hair did not grow beyond its shoulder blades, and its skin was very similar to the quality of humans and purple patterns could be seen all over.

The hair that extended beyond its tailbone became a long tail made of hair, and was swaying casually in the wind.

This figure seemed half-demon and half human. Its physical characteristics and features were exactly the same as Luo Yao's, except for the fact that his face was covered with purple-colored patterns. Three horns with dense volumes of glyphs and runes extended out of its head as frightening demonic power rippled forth.

The light from Luo Yao's eyes were a pure purple color, and everything that his gaze came into contact with began to crumble into dust.

"Roar!!!"

The reborn young man let loose a great howl as he flashed four sharp teeth that resembled a mix between dragons' teeth and that of canines.

This majestic roar stunned everybody at the scene. They almost felt as if the sound was shaking apart their very souls.

The lower-level dragons were the first to drop. The sparkle in their eyes completely disappeared in an instant as they plummeted into the oceans below like rocks; these dragons' demonic souls had been directly shattered by Luo Yao's roar.

The three demonic lord stage dragons felt their limbs go numb. They lowered their heads as their scales shimmered in a display of submission – they did not even think about running away, let alone trying to resist.

Mu Yu and the others watched on speechlessly as they watched the humanoid Luo Yao radiate with purple brilliance.

The only person that could remain calm and still think rationally

was Lin Feng, who was still watching on from the void. He watched at the reborn Luo Yao and raised an eyebrow, "Eh, turns out it's not a incarnation of the Royal Hades Region. Hmmm, interesting. It's getting really interesting."

Even though the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl formed Luo Yao's new physical body, Lin Feng could feel that his connection to the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl had not been cut off. He watched Luo Yao's transformation from the beginning to the end.

"It's not a beast, but a demon. His soul is simple and transparent, and it's not an incarnation of a previous great demon. But..." the corner of Lin Feng's mouth curled up into a faint smile. "But, there are other secrets buried within that soul. There are other things that have yet to be discovered. Ha, interesting. This is truly a pleasant surprise."

After the majestic roar, Luo Yao's body once again flickered with purple radiance but the purple light from his eyes began to recede. His eyes became clear once again, but his pupils were no longer black – they were a dark purple.

Luo Yao's rationality had returned to him and the aura surrounding him was no longer so violent. His eyes even looked a little lost as he tilted his head down and scrutinized his new body and raised his hands to touch the three horns on his head.

"I..." Luo Yao opened his mouth and wanted to say something but not a single sound came out. He was pretty much frozen to the spot.

The group of dragons did not even dare to move. They just remained there in submission as they waited patiently for their orders.

The legends were far too ancient, and such beings had not been seen in the world for thousands of years. Mu Yu and the others were simply surprised at Luo Yao's transformation, but were unaware of the deeper levels of meaning.

Only the three demonic lord stage dragons could recognize Luo Yao's new form.

He was from one of the only races that dominated the Barren Expanses and ruled over all others – the Hades Tribe!

The purple radiance that felt like it could sweep over the Heavens and intimidate the universe originated from the Hades' Dark Mantra of the ancient Royal Hades' Region.

However, not every Beast of Hades had the power and level of the Heavenly Sea Hades, and the tribe itself had its own age of maturation and puberty. There were stronger beasts and weaker ones as well. However, the new physical body that Luo Yao formed from the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl was at the demonic lord advanced stage and had no problem demolishing all the dragons in front of him.

The dragons were inferior in ability, and they were also naturally inclined to give way to the Hades Race. This was the reason why the dragons before him did not think about trying to resist.

# Chapter 741: The Key That Can Solve A Lot Of Our Problems

---

Due to the fact that he was in a new body, the demonic aura emanating from Luo Yao's body was pretty much expanding through the air without control and shaking up the entire void in the process.

Even though he was no longer out of control, the demonic energies coming from Luo Yao were still messy and disorganized. His sense of self and identity was in a state of chaos, and he was also fearful of the sudden and unexpected change in events.

All the people still alive in the East Sea within the proximity of the Luofu Mystical Islands, be it cultivators or normal citizens, had blood on their hands. This was because they resided near the border between the worlds, and humans and demons were in a constant state of conflict.

The constant feuding compounded upon each other and they treated one another with increasing suspicion.

From Luo Yao's own experience, even though he did not have any unspeakable bad blood with the demons, he had grown up hating and fighting against them. Luo Yao himself had killed small demons at the Qi cultivation stage before.

His sudden conversion and rebirth into a demon gave him mixed feelings. He had always been calm and composed, but now he was feeling worried and frightened even. What made him even more uncomfortable was the fact that he had no clue why such a thing had happened to him.

All the bits and pieces that flashed through his mind previously were disconnected and made it all the more difficult for him to chain his thoughts together rationally.

The entire group of dragons kneeling beneath his feet did not

give him a sense of satisfaction or glory.

It was the eyes of Yun Jinxi, Cao Zhendong and the others that pierced his heart. He could tell that there was a new kind of wariness and doubt in their eyes. They were originally partners in battle, but now his partners were treating him with suspicion and even obscure tinges of hostility.

Luo Yao subconsciously extended his arm towards the group of humans and wanted to say something before he realized everybody shot backwards like shotgun bullets.

Yun Jinxi screamed, "Don't come any closer!"

Luo Yao retracted his arm like a disturbed scorpion and stared at the young girl in front of him in shock. He could see the fear and suspicion in their eyes – worse still, he began to feel their anger.

Yun Jinxi's entire family had met their ends at the hands of ruthless and warmongering demons, and she was very nearly killed in a bloody battle against another pack of demons. Her reaction to the sudden change in his physicality and whatnot was understandable.

However, the increasing sense of disgust coming from the young girl drove him towards hopelessness.

"Luo Yao, can you still recognize us?" Mu Yu was observing Luo Yao's expression closely and probed with a question.

Luo Yao began to speak with a bitter taste in his mouth. "Senior Mu, of course I recognize you guys. I... I don't know what's happening to me, I don't understand anything at all..."

Lu Ning glared at Luo Yao and burst out suddenly, "You're a demon! You were simply residing inside the body of a human. Your previous body was destroyed, but your demonic soul reformed a new body with the help of a magic item."

She paused momentarily before she continued to explain, "Your body is a demonic body. This is the original physical body that

your demonic soul inhabited – this is the real you! You are a demon from tip to toe!"

Her face was expressionless, but she was all riled up inside. There really was something wrong with Luo Yao!

Luo Yao's lips trembled upon hearing her words but his face turned even more bitter.

He could tell that Yun Jinxi, Cao Zhendong and the others turned even more hostile towards him after Lu Ning's emotional outburst. It appeared as if Luo Yao had been hiding his identity all along and deceived them on purpose, as if he had ulterior motives all along.

Everybody returned to a state of quiet tension as the air became heavier and heavier. Mu Yu wanted to say something, but he had no idea where to start. Even though he had no clue what race Luo Yao's new body belonged to, he could tell that it was something special and extraordinary judging by the reactions of the dragons before him.

He was a little unsure about how to handle the sudden change of events as well. Even if his master, Huang Ming, was here, he was positive that not even Huang Ming would know what to do.

Mu Yu was starting to develop the very same feelings that Luo Yao had lied to them all along, but felt a little guilty as he had watched Luo Yao grow up since he was kid after all. He observed Luo Yao's bitter expressions and heaved a heavy sigh as he thought to himself, "Forget it, forget it. We knew each other after all, and we even almost became teacher and disciple."

Mu Yu was just about to say something when a frightening sphere of energy blanketed everyone and sent chills down everyone's spines.

Such an aura could only come from an immortal soul stage cultivator, and a middle-aged man stepped out from the void and looked straight at Luo Yao.

"Senior Uncle?" Mu Yu was the first to be surprised. The arriving party was the oldest disciple of the Luofu Holy Man. He was the one anchoring down the Luofu Mystical Island while the Luofu Holy Man was holding off the Qiong Qi Grand Sage.

The task of reinforcing Mu Yu was relatively simple and did not require his personal participation. However, Mu Yu's master was the nascent soul advanced stage cultivator Huang Ming, and Luo Yao's explosive energies disturbed him – and so he was here.

The middle-aged man glanced at Luo Yao before turning back to Mu Yu and the others. "What's happening?"

Lu Ning kept quiet while Mu Yu started to recount the recent happenings from start to finish. The middle-aged man's eyes sparkled as his gaze returned to Luo Yao and looked him up and down – he was trying to match Luo Yao's appearance to a demon race that he had heard of but never seen before.

"A beast of Hades?!" This discovery made this middle-aged man shiver a little bit. He focused all his attention on Luo Yao and waved his hand a single time. Dozens of water pillars spiraled upwards from the sprawling oceans beneath him while dozens of thick cloudy energy plummeted down from the skies. Both forces worked together and imprisoned Luo Yao within.

This act did not really affect Luo Yao himself. However, he could that the demonic powers inside his soul start to boil violently and uncontrollably.

What was more frightening was the fact his purple pupils were flashing purple lights once again.

Wherever the purple light touched, the middle-aged man's cloud-water prison started to melt and crumble.

The middle-aged man frowned at this turn of events. He held down his voice and said, "I'll take you back to the Luofu Mystical Island for now and find out exactly what is happening to your

body. If you have no clue either, then do follow me and resolve your doubts once and for all."

This was not something that he was willing to let go. The mysterious Hades demon race resurfaced for the first time in over four thousand years in the Divine Lands. It was something that necessitated a degree of research and study.

Furthermore, the power that Luo Yao was displaying at this point was a mess but highly charged with destructive capabilities.

It was obvious from Luo Yao's reaction that he had little to no degree of self-control. A tiny amount of stimulus from the outside world could stir up his instinctive defensive mechanisms.

He had to play it safe as it was likely that something else could trigger him the same way if Luo Yao were to be allowed to roam the world by himself.

The middle-aged man had already made up his mind. He did not care whether he had to capture him using force. The best possible outcome was that he was able to bring Luo Yao back to his master, the Luofu Holy Man, so that the latter could make his own judgments and investigations. If that was not possible, then he was ready to eliminate Luo Yao on the spot.

What he did not expect was that the very moment this idea came up in his head, Luo Yao raised his head abruptly and a pair of purple eyes stared straight into his soul. The sinister purple light started to flicker again in Luo Yao's eyes and a stream of Hades' Dark Mantra rocketed towards the middle-aged man.

The middle-aged man was in the immortal soul stage but jumped out of his skin anyway. At his level of cultivation, his composure was not so easily eroded and his emotions could only be stirred up by individuals at a higher level than he was.

Even though he did harbor murderous intentions in his mind, he did not exhibit a single trace of it. All he did was consider his



options, and even this was immediately picked up by Luo Yao.

Lin Feng was even more intrigued as he watched on with amusement. "How did he do that? Such acute telepathy, and such extraordinary sensing abilities! Could this be the natural talent of the beasts of Hades?"

The power of the Hades' Dark Mantra was as overbearing as it could get. It seemed like just a tiny stream of it, but it had the ferocity that felt like it could pierce right through the heavens and annihilate everything in its path.

A haze of fear came over Mu Yu and company. The middle-aged man immediately cast a defensive spell, but was immediately overcome by the destructive ray of purple light and he could only dodge the initial ferocity of the attack.

"Indeed – he doesn't have much control over himself. It will be very easy to cause damage around him whether it's intentional or not. He's only in the nascent soul advanced stage, and even though he's a beast of Hades now, his power is still much greater than what it should be." The middle-aged man's thoughts stopped there as he prepared to flash his immortal soul and channel the powers of his magic items.

All of a sudden, Luo Yao's eyes snapped shut and an agonizing expression came over his face. "Senior Mu, I don't wish to be enemies with everyone."

As he spoke, Luo Yao's body started flickering with purple radiance as his entire body transformed into a ray of purple light and dashed straight into the void.

The middle-aged man was taken back by yet another unexpected sudden change of events. He wanted to pursue, but the gap in the void behind Luo Yao sealed itself as if nothing ever happened and he simply vanished into thin air.

Just a minute moment was enough for Luo Yao to disappear from

sight and there was no way the middle-aged man could catch up.

After Luo Yao escaped into the void, he flew to a place far away from the Luofu Mystical Island and paused on top a patch of ocean with the same bitter and agonizing expression on his face.

While he had his own suspicions as to whether or not the Luofu Holy Man and the others would hurt him, he had already made up his mind to return back to the Luofu Mystical Island with Mu Yu and the others. After all, he wanted to find out what exactly was happening to him as well.

Once the middle-aged man started developing murderous intentions, Luo Yao could already feel his demonic soul buzzing incessantly and his demonic powers started to tremble with the same uncontrollable violence.

He knew that he could not stay a moment longer and his only choice was to run away.

He cast his eyes over the vast and endless oceans and glimpsed his own strange patterned body from time to time. He turned to touch the large tail behind his body and reached up to touch the three horns on his head – he started to develop a dreadful feeling that the world was so huge but there was nowhere he could go and there was no place that he belonged.

His body trembled abruptly as his physical body started to disintegrate and he became a patch of golden light mist in the blink of an eye.

The Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl reappeared from within the golden lights as the thick mist was sucked back in. The mist all around turned back into its original white color, and Luo Yao's soul existed within the golden light mist.

Luo Yao felt a wave of relief come over his body, as if he had just awoken from a nightmare. However, after studying himself and his soul, he discovered that even though he was in a transparent

spiritual form, this form still took the shape and appearance of the hideous half-demon and half-human body.

His emotions returned to a state of grief and hopelessness.

Lin Feng was still watching on from the void as he began to ponder, "It was not the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl reforming its physical body – it was the demonic soul that inserted itself into the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl and temporarily produced a physical body. The level of mastery was also determined by the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl as well. Now that the effects of the pearl were over, it has turned back to its original state."

As soon as he figured out the rough state of affairs, he showed himself from the void. "It seems as if this is a key that can solve a lot of our problems."

# Chapter 742: Half-Master

---

Lin Feng waited for a moment longer to let Luo Yao recover and get his bearings again.

From their brief interaction previously, Lin Feng could tell that this young man was determined, his mind was rational and he was cool-headed.

This event heavily affected him, but was not enough to cause him to lose his mind. For Luo Yao right now, the greatest problem was with his confusion with his sense of self and the many questions he had that went unanswered.

Luo Yao's soul was residing inside the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl. Even though his thoughts were in a mess, he could still maintain a certain degree of composure and observe the outside world with objective eyes.

He began to realize that the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl was flying through the void, as if it was trying to go somewhere.

After a while, it surged through layers of the void and a young man with a bronze skin and a purple robe appeared in front of him – it was Lin Feng.

Luo Yao's mouth gaped open. "Sir, so you were the one that buried this magical pearl into my soul?"

Luo Yao was not trying to chide or blame Lin Feng. Instead, his tone seemed to suggest he wanted Lin Feng to explain to him what was going on. "Do you know what happened to me?"

Lin Feng extended his hand and caught the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl with his palm. He channeled his consciousness into the golden pearl and started to communicate with Luo Yao. "I am aware of what happened to you through my connection to the golden pearl."

"It's true that I am the one that buried the golden pearl into your

body. Before this, all I detected was that your soul was a little unusual and you were somehow fated with the golden pearl. This was the reason why I gave the pearl to you – everything else that happened afterwards was all part and parcel of your destiny."

Luo Yao nodded his head in acknowledgement. Even though the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl that Lin Feng left behind changed his life, and could even be said to have reversed his entire life before today. He lost his friendships and relationships with Mu Yu, Yun Jinxi and the others as well. However, he knew right from wrong and he did not resent Lin Feng for what happened.

If not for the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl reincarnating his demonic soul and remade a physical body for him, he would have perished under the claws and talons of the draconic onslaught. Even Yun Jinxi, Cao Zhendong and the others would have met unfortunate fates as well.

For self-centered people and people who liked to blame others for personal grievances, they would probably have harbored other thoughts and ideas. For example, Lin Feng could have beaten back the draconic invasion by himself and sent them back to the Luofu Mystical Island with great ease. That would have been a kind of 'happily ever after' scenario where nobody would get hurt, and Luo Yao himself would not turn into a demon and antagonize his human partners.

Luo Yao was not such a person. Everybody had only met Lin Feng once, and nobody knew whether they were friends or foes – there was simply no reason for Lin Feng to put himself in harm's way for them.

"Senior, What am I..." Luo Yao started to ask cautiously.

Lin Feng replied calmly, "That female cultivator was right. You are a demon, and you were born with a demonic soul. However, your demonic soul had been separated from your original physical body and inserted into the Samsara, where it was reborn in the

body of a human. The Samsara did not eradicate your true spirit, therefore this is the original body of your demonic soul."

"As for your foundations and your race..." Lin Feng paused momentarily and said, "You look like a wolf on two legs, limbs and claws that resemble those of dragons, silver-white fur and hair, three horns on your head and purple light patterns all over your body."

"The Hades Race of the olden days have the very same physical features. I don't think you've heard of this race before when you were still a human as the entire race went extinct for thousands of years. But I think you have some form of recollection."

Luo Yao's soul shook a little and made a gesture that resembled a sigh. "You are absolutely right. I actually have an impression of the word 'Hades'. However, a lot of the images that flashed through my head were in bits and pieces and everything was disconnected."

Luo Yao started to laugh. "It seems as if my name should be... Big Luo Hades. This is my original name."

"Who would have known? The nickname that Yun Jinxi gave me when we were kids turns out to be my real name. What a coincidence! Haha!"

Even though he was laughing, Luo Yao's words were charged with agony and grief – there was not a single trace of happiness or satisfaction in his words.

Lin Feng watched him and thought to himself, "Big Luo Hades... The person that gave him this name would not have been so clueless like the little girl. That person must have had high hopes for this young man, and the person himself must have been extremely proud."

"The only thing is, there are still so many secrets hidden within his demonic soul. I wonder what they are?"

Lin Feng continued to watch Luo Yao's new form in front of him.

Even though this young man did not resent Lin Feng, Lin Feng knew from the bottom of his heart that it was he who harbored ulterior motives. He wanted to see the rebirth of the Big Luo Hades, and he wanted to see it recover its original appearance.

If they had not met Lin Feng at all, the fates of the entire company would have been hard to predict. Mu Yu and the others could have simply perished in the initial attack by the three demonic lord stage powerhouses before Lin Feng stepped him. They could have met their demises in the chaotic battle that just transpired. However, it was a little different for the young Luo Yao. Whether it was the death of his human body or his rebirth into as a demon, it was unclear which part of his life was the preferable choice.

Especially so when Luo Yao had no choice at all in the entire procession of events. All he could do was watch on as everything unfurled before his very eyes.

While he suffered some form of psychological trauma from his experiences, he was still in awe about the way one's destiny can affect one's life. In the end, Luo Yao was not full of resentment or regret, and could still remember the single voice that resonated through his head as he was about to die.

"I cannot die! I want to save them! I want to save Senior Mu and Jinxi and the others!"

From that moment on and all the way till now, Big Luo was sure that he thirsted for power – at the very least, he thirsted for enough power to protect himself and the people around him.

This made him feel a certain degree of gratitude towards Lin Feng. Even though this came at a huge cost, but no pain no gain, right?

He turned towards Lin Feng and put his hands together as a sign of respect. "Thank you for saving my life.'

He asked again immediately after, "Senior, the flashbacks are all in bits and pieces and I can't fathom anything out of them. Can you explain them to me? What exactly happened to me?"

Lin Feng swept up the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl and started flying towards the entrance to the Ying Sea as he spoke. "There are many things that you have to find out on your own. If you wish to see the truth, you have to do it yourself. All I can do is give some pointers and give you some leads."

Big Luo had a sudden revelation as he answered, "Sorry, I was confused. I have yet to ask you how I should address you."

Lin Feng replied plainly, "I am the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, Lin Feng. The body you before you now is just one of my avatars."

He glanced at Big Luo's soul inside the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl and continued, "This avatar is forged from the Saros Steel Tree. However, the demonic form had yet to mature when I changed its physical quality. Therefore, it was cultivated in human form."

Big Luo was a little taken aback. "The Leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders!"

He glimpsed Lin Feng from time to time as he started to feel a little uncomfortable. If not for the reawakening of his demonic soul and that his soul had a kind of arrogance that originated from the Hades Race, he would have gone on his knees as a sign of respect.

In the end, in comparison to his previous existence as a Qi cultivation stage cultivation, even people like the Luofu Holy Man was pretty much a dictator-like supreme being to the other cultivators in the East Sea and enjoyed a great degree of reverence. Lin Feng, on the other hand, was a giant of the entire human race and was somebody not even the Luofu Holy Man could match.



Even though the body before him was just one of Lin Feng's avatars, the respect and reverence that came from the bottom of his heart was the same.

Lin Feng said quietly, "I unintentionally acquired the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl, and it seems as if you two are fated to be together. I will gift it to you temporarily to contain your soul, but if you wish to use the magic item and form a physical body, you should know your previous experience that it's only temporary and you can't sustain it for too long."

"Every time you reform your physical form, you need exactly seven days to recover before you can make the next transformation."

Big Luo's soul ended up kneeling down before Lin Feng anyway. "Thank you for everything you've done for me and for my rebirth. I may be useless and pathetic, but I hope to follow you around to repay my debts and I hope you can give me this opportunity."

He did not even dare to speak of becoming Lin Feng's disciple and whatnot. He had already received a great favor from Lin Feng, and his thinking was a little different now that he was starting to understand what being a beast of Hades meant. If Lin Feng were to take him in as a disciple, he could create a lot more unnecessary trouble for Lin Feng and would probably incur the public wrath of cultivators in the Divine Lands.

If he was simply another demon from a random race, then perhaps that would still be fine, but his identity as a beast of Hades was simply too unique.

The meaning in his words was similar to the position of Dao Zhiqiang. All he wanted to do was repay Lin Feng for his favors by doing whatever he could for Lin Feng, and he did not want to ask for too much.

Of course, he still thought like a human and did not even consider becoming someone's mount.

Lin Feng smiled plainly and said, "I can tell that your talent values must be way above average once your demonic form truly matures. Your personality has also exceeded my typical criteria, and you and I are fated after all. It's not too much to ask for even if I take you in as a disciple."

"If I wish to take someone in as a disciple, I act on my own volition and only my own."

He turned to look at Big Luo inside the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl. "However, if you wish to realize the potential of your talents and not waste your superior talent and innate abilities, I will have to forge the authentic physical body of a beast of Hades for you. Only then can your soul and spirit truly harmonize and your potential be realized."

"A human form will hinder your development. Even if you ply the craft under my guidance, your progress will be a lot slower than otherwise."

Lin Feng continued to explain. "The Hades Race controls the most supreme mantra of the demons – the complete version of the Demonic Book of the Heavenly Tao. Even though you're no longer with your tribe, you don't have to worry as you will surely make your own discoveries if you put in the effort to understand the secrets of your identity hidden in the recesses of your memory."

Big Luo nodded his head as he listened while Lin Feng kept explaining. "Therefore, you can't be considered my disciple and I don't need you to follow me around either. You have your own journey to travel. If you have any questions or if you need help, I will be there to guide you."

"Thank you, Half-Master Lin." Big Luo knelt down once again. He addressed Lin Feng according to the traditional customs of the Divine Lands – this title was something one called a senior that was not officially one's mentor, but had guided that individual in one way or another.

There were two types of Half-Masters in the Grand Celestial World. One type was the one being the mentor did not see himself as a master even though the disciple perceived him as one. Their relationship was distinct, and while one was undoubtedly of a higher status than the other, they could be considered equals.

This scenario usually arose when a cultivator gave another one pointers and guided him along the latter's path of cultivation. However, they were both unable to commit to such a ceremonial and official relationship as mentor and disciple, thus they were generally considered to be half friends and half master-and-disciple at the same time.

Big Luo belonged to the second type.

Lin Feng had bestowed upon him favors of rebirth amongst others. Even though he was not Lin Feng's direct disciple and did not learn his mantras, Lin Feng still gave him pointers about the road he had to take in the future. It was quite clear that Lin Feng intended to help him re-forge his original physical body as well. Therefore, Big Luo perceived Lin Feng as his master but did not feel qualified to think himself as one of Lin Feng's disciples.

He would put in his all to carry out the instructions that Lin Feng would eventually task him with, along with Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and the others. However, he would be extremely low-key in public and would not call himself Lin Feng's disciple.

Perhaps it was more appropriate to call him the 'half-disciple' instead, but the traditions of the Grand Celestial World lumped both circumstances together and simply called it the 'Half-master relationship'.

"Let's go. The first step to your discovery of the truth is to step into the Ying Sea." Lin Feng was not too concerned about what he should call Big Luo, and not before long he was already inside the Ying Sea and flying along the surface of the misty ocean.

# Chapter 743: Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, Green Glass Jade Stand

---

Lin Feng had eight direct disciples under his wing as of current. It would not be too excessive if he took in Big Luo as well. Lin Feng himself was not too concerned about the number of disciples he had. Even if he did care about traditional limits, nine was the appropriate number and he had yet to mentor a ninth and final one.

As for the negative effects from the news of him taking in Big Luo as a disciple spreading throughout the Divine Lands, which could possibly lead to further conflicts and furors between the human and demon races, Lin Feng was not too particularly concerned as well. Everything had pros and cons, but whether one was more than the other depended entirely on handling the matter afterwards and personal capability.

Still, Lin Feng had no intentions of passing on his mantras to Big Luo – at least not for now. This would not change even after reforming Big Luo's original physical body. Lin Feng planned to let Big Luo do his own cultivation and research, and be his guiding star when Big Luo was stuck or when he was in trouble.

As he watched Big Luo, a strange thought started to form in Lin Feng's head, and Big Luo was the most suitable for this.

It would be even more so if Big Luo was able to practice the Demonic Book of the Heavenly Tao in his cultivation of the demonic mantras.

Lin Feng had his Heavenly Classic of the Way's Virtues, thus he did not covet the Demonic Book of the Heavenly Tao. However, he had a theory and if he wanted to test it he needed to check against Big Luo and his practice of demonic mantras, which would act as a kind of case study.

This did not mean that he wanted to use Big Luo as a guinea pig for his experiments. This path that Big Luo was about to start on was the fastest way for him to discover his true identity. To Big Luo, this was more important than becoming Lin Feng's disciple and learning his mantras. It was a pleasant coincidence and beneficial for both parties as well.

Big Luo himself would be harmed, of course, and neither would he be subjected to some kind of external danger. Lin Feng would help him seek a better life and greater fortune as well. The only difference between him and Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and the others was that this path was molded and shaped by Lin Feng and not really of his own volition.

This was not consistent with Lin Feng's principles of taking in disciples, and this was the reason for Lin Feng's clarification that Big Luo could not be considered his direct disciple for now.

He was not about to sustain this relationship for the long term. He would give Big Luo the same choice he gave Xiao Yan and the others after Big Luo had discovered his true identity and background, and wherever he wanted to go and whatever he wanted to do was entirely up to Big Luo himself.

"It seems as if... He's really a key that can solve so many of my problems," Lin Feng thought to himself as he started to dodge the various dangerous illusions of the Ying Sea. Lin Feng could feel that the reappearance of the three mountains made the illusory powers of the Ying Sea a lot more potent and perilous.

As they were moving forward, Lin Feng suddenly felt a ripple of mana between the clouds and mist not too far from their location.

Once he was confident that it was not another illusion of the Ying Sea, he thought to himself, "People are fighting already?"

He split open the clouds and landed soundlessly at the side. It was an epic battle between a human and a demon – the demon was a Golden-Feathered Great Roc King, and the human was a nascent

soul cultivator under the command of the crown prince of the Great Zhou Empire, Liang Yuan. This human cultivator seemed to be from the East Heaven's Gate, and his name was Shao Peng.

Both Liang Pan and the Marquis of Xuanji, Zhu Hongwu were present during this reappearance of the three mystical mountains. Liang Yuan remained behind to hold down the fort at Tianjing City and Shao Peng was here in his stead.

The Golden-Feathered Great Roc King flashed its original demonic body and transformed into a gigantic Great roc with feathers that flickered with golden light that surrounded Shao Peng in an instant.

Shao Peng's Celestial Spell of Elusiveness was exquisite, but it was incomplete. Besides people like Zhu Yi whose powers could not be measured by normal nascent soul stage standards, the Golden-Feathered Great Roc King was one of the only few opponents that he was unable to shake off.

This put him in a tight spot. The Golden-Feathered Great Roc King began to speak with its human voice, "Stop struggling and spill the news about the Green Glass Jade Stand. If you wait for me to capture you, I will just use the Soul-Searching Technique."

Shao Peng grunted and replied, "I just don't have time to stick around – you're condescending towards me now?"

He grunted again as he placed his palms together. Streams of green energy steamed out of his body and transformed into clear air as they drifted into the sky and formed dome like a tiny illusory world with stars that sparkled in the sky.

Shao Peng started to cast another spell as a giant door opened into the tiny transparent world and a great force of gravity came out from within.

The Golden-Feathered Great Roc King had that momentary lapse of concentration and was very nearly sucked inside. He

immediately channeled his own natural abhijna and extended his wings to soar away but was locked in place by the door leading into the tiny transparent world.

The tiny transparent world immobilized the Golden-Feathered Great Roc King but was unable to suck him in completely, while the latter was also unable to break free as both entities entered a standoff.

Lin Feng was intensely amused at the sight. When Shao Peng first met Zhu Yi, he was captured right away and showed no attitude at all. However, there was some substance to this guy after all.

At least he was a disciple of the Heaven's Gate Sect and managed to pick up the Dark Boundary Curse technique from them. For a nascent soul cultivator, this performance was actually not too shabby.

Lin Feng was completely uninterested into the victor of this battle, however; what piqued his interest was the topic of their discussion.

The Green Glass Jade Stand – this was the name of a magic item.

Lin Feng was still interested in hoarding magic items after all. However, this still depended on the rarity and power of the magic item and normal ones definitely did not qualify.

This Green Glass Jade Stand was an exception. Its value was not in the magic item itself, but due to the fact that it was connected to the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea. This magic item was nothing extraordinary outside of the context of the Ying Sea.

The Green Glass Jade Stand's original owner was the Golden Hill Holy Man. This individual was one of the most active immortal soul stage cultivators during the Middle Ages, and even erected his own line of mantras and he named it the Way of the Golden Hill.

During the first appearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea, the Golden Hill Holy Man was one of the more powerful

cultivators who entered the Ying Sea with the hopes of taking control of at least one of the mountains.

However, he perished regrettably in the Ying Sea, and the Way of the Golden Hill was extinct ever since as he did not have any successors.

There were many powerful immortal soul cultivators like the Golden Hill Holy Man who perished in random events or in dangerous places like the Ying Sea over the course of history, so this piece of news was nothing new.

However, during the next appearance of the three mountains, there was a rumor that went around saying that people saw the Green Glass Jade Stand appear on top of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, one of the three mystical mountains.

The rumor was proven to be true as there were multiple witnesses. There were even people that came way after who reported the same sighting.

However, during the recent reappearances of the three mountains in the past few thousand years, the people that went by the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain could no longer locate the Green Glass Jade Stand.

People had a theory that this magic item did exist on top of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain before, but the people that wanted to take control of the mountain triggered its defensive mechanisms during their epic battle and caused the Green Glass Jade Stand to crash down from the mountain.

Even though the Green Glass Jade Stand was no longer on top of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, it had existed on it for more than a millennium after all. People postulated that it was likely that the retrieval of this item would be of great benefit to taming this particular mystical mountain. Therefore, the Green Glass Jade Stand became one of the most important leads to finding the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and was treated by all to be of



substantial importance in this collective endeavor to find the mountain.

Lin Feng finally showed himself and exited the void. He extended his finger outwards, and the tiny transparent world formed by the Dark Boundary Curse instantly shattered to pieces.

Shao Peng's face turned pale as the Golden-Feathered Great Roc King broke free. He did not take the opportunity to ambush Shao Peng but turned towards Lin Feng with a wary look and said, "You..."

Before he could even finish his sentence, Lin Feng flicked his fingers and a stream of purple energy surged towards the Roc King like a gust of strong wind and blew him away and knocked him off his feet.

A haze of shock and indignation came over the Golden-Feathered Great Roc King. However, he did not dare to say anything else as he was aware that he was no match for Lin Feng. In the end, he had no choice but to suck it up as he extended his wings, tucked his tail and escaped into the far end of the horizon without a single moment of hesitation.

Shao Peng's heart skipped a beat as Lin Feng turned around to face him. He sighed inside before he bent over in greeting, "Greetings, leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders."

It appeared that Shao Peng had seen pictures of this avatar before. Lin Feng was not too concerned as he said calmly, "Speak."

Shao Peng knew the meaning behind Lin Feng's request, and he swallowed as he considered his options. Even though this avatar was only at the nascent soul stage, Lin Feng's display of power by blowing away the Golden-Feathered Great Roc King meant that there was no way he could escape or even put up a fight. He was probably unable to commit suicide even if he wanted to – whether he lived or died was no longer up to him.

Shao Peng did not have the courage to deceive Lin Feng and started to spill the beans. "The Green Glass Jade Stand..."

Before he could talk any more, his eyes started flashing with green light as his entire soul began to tremble violently.

Intense fear appeared in his eyes as he spat out two words with agonizing effort, "My... Lady..."

In the next moment, his nascent soul erupted into roaring flames!

Lin Feng watched everything happen in silence and shook his head. He slashed down with his right hand like a blade and the Fences of the Heavens Technique started to work its magic.

The flames on Shao Peng's nascent soul vanished into thin air in an instant, as if it had never appeared before.

"I..." He was already in the nascent soul stage, but Shao Peng broke out cold sweat anyway, as if he had just woken up from a horrifying nightmare.

In the deepest recesses of his soul, a mark of some sort gradually disappeared and a chilling voice could be faintly heard from within. The voice became a lot more distant over time and ultimately became completely silent.

Lin Feng turned to look at Shao Peng as if nothing ever happened and said again, "Speak."

Shao Peng could feel the bitterness in his mouth and his heart sank. "There is a myriad of illusions in the Ying Sea. Even though the space is not as chaotic as the Void Battleground, it's still considered highly unpredictable. I don't actually know where the exact location of the Green Glass Jade Stand is."

"We have received news that this treasure has appeared on a tiny island Northwest from the Ying Sea. This tiny island formed a triangle-like formation with two other islands, and not far from these three islands, there were three other small islands with a

similar triangular formation. This is the only unique characteristic that distinguishes these islands from the others."

"The problem is that the Ying Sea is as vast as it gets. Furthermore, there are so many illusions as well and there may be more than one place with such a geographical layout. I haven't seen the islands myself, so I don't actually know how to distinguish it and neither do I know its exact location."

The 'Northwest' territory of the Ying Sea was equally large and had an incalculable surface area. Cloudy mist circulated around as layers of illusions blanketed the entire place. Even third-level immortal soul powerhouses would face a great many obstacles.

This lead was still murky and unspecific. However, Lin Feng nodded once before departing into the void.

Shao Peng was rooted to the ground momentarily before he realized that he was finally free. Still, he knew that he could not relax and lower his guard as the question of where he should go now remained a conundrum.

Lin Feng flew across the sky as he thought about what happened. He was observing Shao Peng's emotions as he was reporting and Lin Feng was positive Shao Peng was not trying to deceive him. Even though it was just a rumor that passed into his ears, it was still a helpful lead nonetheless.

Even if the Green Glass Jade Stand was able to run, it would be obstructed by the great many limitations of the Ying Sea compared to the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, which was able to move around freely. With a rough designated area to search was a lot easier than otherwise.

Furthermore, the task of controlling the mountains was not as simple as just finding them. One probably had to battle a great many people to gain control of the mountains. Therefore, the success of the victor would depend on personal capability after all and the Green Glass Jade Stand was likely to be something that

increased one's chances with the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

After flying for a long time, and meeting several human cultivators and demons who heard the same piece of news along the way, Lin Feng knew that he was reaching his destination.

The triangle-shaped islands finally appeared in sight. Even though it was covered by thick layers of cloudy mist, Lin Feng could feel that there was a raging battle not too far from here.

# Chapter 744: Archenemies Are Bound To Cross Paths

---

"Second Senior, how far away are we?"

A tall, skinny and dark-skinned youth was positioned above the rolling clouds of the Ying Sea – it was Lin Feng's sixth disciple, Li Yuanfang.

He was sitting on top of the Black Dragon Jieyu with his legs crossed, and Zhu Yi was sitting beside him along with the Jade Dragon Baiguang, who was in her human form.

Zhu Yi's eyes were wide open. His gaze was endless, much like the abyss in the deep sea, yet tinged with raging tides and monstrous waves as rays of light flickered ceaselessly.

There was a shadow of a giant turtle drifting in the void above his head. It was so immense that even the Jieyu, in his original dragon form, paled in comparison.

The eyes of this giant turtle seemed to contain the boundless oceans as well.

Innumerable glyphs and runes appeared in one moment and vanished in the next on the turtle shell and resembled the undulating air bubbles in the ocean.

These glyphs and characters were combining together continuously, and they seemed to form a giant formation of the eight trigrams.

"There are too many dangerous illusions in the Ying Sea and they are truly irritating. Thankfully, the information we received previously gave us a rough location and we can still find it." Zhu Yi's eyes were still fathomless as he cast his gaze across the skies. One could see, upon closer inspection, that there were patterns of the eight trigrams spiraling around within his pupils.

His tone was not so tense and was comparatively more relaxed. "We're getting closer. We just have to proceed forward in the same direction and we should reach our destination within a thousand miles, give or take."

As he spoke, his expression changed a little. "Oh, someone's already there. Looks like we're not the only ones that received this piece of news – everybody seems to be equally interested in the Green Glass Jade Stand."

Li Yuanfang was calm as he said, "Judging from the current situation, the Green Glass Jade Stand is lost somewhere, and is the treasure that is the most closely connected to the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. It's possibly the most important and valuable lead in finding the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain as well."

The company broke through the clouds and mist at breakneck speed and the three islands that formed a triangle appeared in sight in no time.

Zhu Yi glanced downwards and noticed immediately that there were flashes of golden light on one of the islands.

The golden light came from a small stand that was made entirely from green jade. As the green light flickered, voluminous numbers of golden runes surged into vision and released blinding bursts of golden light.

However, the permeation of golden light was intercepted at a radius of about a hundred meters away from the tiny island, as if there was some invisible barrier enveloping the island.

As the rays of light came into contact with this invisible barrier, they started to twist and refract. This made the whole thing look like an illusion and very surreal.

Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang immediately knew what was happening. "There's a giant illusion array surrounding the island, and the Green Glass Jade Stand is trapped by this illusion."

At this point, there were already five separate parties on a stand-off inside the island.

The people from the first pack were old acquaintances. They were cultivators from the Great Qin Empire, with the Vivant Joy Holy Man taking point and even the royal princess Shi Xingyun was among their ranks.

Of the four remaining parties, two were demon parties from the Barren Expanses and the remaining two were human cultivators.

One of the demon parties comprised Golden-Feathered Great Rocs. The leader of the flock was not a Great Roc, however, but a bird-type demon that was enveloped with black mist from top to bottom – it was the Sun-Swallowing Condor, who pledged his allegiance to the Golden Roc Grand Sage.

The rolling black mist around him seemed like it could consume all the light in the world. Even the group of Golden Rocs behind him kept themselves at a safe distance behind him.

The other party was a group of dragons. The leader of the pack was a Thunder Dragon at the Undying Demonic Soul stage.

The dragon race had varying abhijnas and talents depending on their breed. Jieyu was born into the Bastille Black Dragon Tribe and Baiguang was born into the Jade Dragon Tribe while the Falling Waves Dragon King came from the Sea Dragon Tribe.

This Thunder Dragon was called the Red Dragon King, and the natural talent and abhijna of the Thunder Dragons was the ability to control and wield the Eight Barrens Divine Lightning.

In the olden days, there used to be a powerful Thunder Dragon that managed to cultivate the Eight Barrens Divine Lightning in his possession to a level so formidable that its power rivaled even that of the Thunder Lord's Great Way of the Nine Heavens Divine Thunder and the Emperor Tai's Chaos Cave Saint-Slaying Thunderbolt.

Even though the Red Dragon King could not possibly compare to his old ancestors and predecessors, he was already in the Undying Demonic Soul Stage and his power was already quite incredible.

Of the remaining two human parties, one particular group was wearing uniforms with long white robes etched with pictures of blue waves and they had longswords strapped around their waists.

The sword aura around them gave a feeling that resembled the endless vastness of the oceans.

The typical sharpness and acuteness of sword auras was generally known to be opposites with the concept of power of vast oceans, but now both were on prominent and harmonious display at the same time.

There was no need to look at the leader of the group to know that this party of humans were from the Vast Sea Sword Sect.

Still, the leader of the group that was standing off against the Red Dragon King, the Sun-Swallowing Condor and the Vivant Joy Holy Man was a middle-aged man who was one of the four great immortal soul sword cultivators from the Vast Sea Sword Sect – the Tidal Sword Elder, who was in the first-level immortal soul stage.

Zhu Yi was still familiar with the Vast Sea Sword Sect and the Tidal Sword Elder, but the last party of humans was a lot less recognizable.

Everybody wore green robes and looked a lot more casual than the cultivators from the Vast Sea Sword Sect. The vastness of their auras and energies were no less formidable than that of the Vast Sea Sword Sect cultivators, and were even slightly superior.

Facing them was like facing the colossal heavens.

Zhu Yi's turned his gaze towards the leader of this group of humans. His eyes sparkled as his eyes entered that fathomless state once again.



He knew this person too well. All those years ago, when he was still living inside the residence of the Marquis of Xuanji, he had to visit this person's pavilion every morning just to greet her. According to Zhu Hongwu, this lady was his stepmother.

The rules of the House stated that he could only address his biological mother, Meng Bingyun, as 'aunt'.

Zhu Yi's expression was calm as he quietly watched the lady in front of him that seemed like she was only in her twenties. "It's been a long time, Lady Shao."

She felt a little different from the First Lady in his memory. Her features and physical characteristics were still the same, but she seemed a little younger than before.

Lady Shao of the House of the Marquis of Xuanji used pills and magic items to stall the onset of age and maintain her youth. However, her body was mortal after all, and even if she took special care to look young, the irrevocable passage of time would leave marks on her body anyway.

He could not really tell the age of this lady in front of him. One would think that she was only a little older than twenty with a quick glance, but upon closer inspection, she seemed more like a teenage girl that was not even twenty years old.

Their demeanors were also different. The Lady Shao back in the House of the Marquis of Xuanji was majestic and dignified with the disposition like a true 'mother of the house'. Yet, she seemed like the creeping vines spiraling around a giant tree. Her image of strength and power stemmed from the fact that she was the official wife of the Grand Advisor of the Great Zhou Empire, Zhu Hongwu.

Everything came from her husband, and therefore her status, as well as the rule of law in the Great Zhou Empire.

The Lady Shao in front of him now had an image of strength and power that clearly originated from her own cultivation.

She was just standing there casually – nothing like the old Lady Shao in the House of the Marquis of Xuanji, who was a lot concerned with her image and how dignified she looked. Still, no matter how casual she appeared, the other parties had to accord her with the same level of respect as before.

She gave off a feeling that heaven was one with the earth, and displayed a magical aura that seemed to integrate her with the heavens. The aura that came from her was also vast like the sprawling heavens.

The only thing about her that was no different from before was the fact that she looked exactly the same. Surprisingly, Lady Shao was also an immortal soul stage cultivator now.

Zhu Yi's instincts told him that even though there were five immortal soul stage cultivators who were all pretty much at the same level of cultivation – first-level immortal soul stage or first-level Undying Demonic Soul Stage – this lady in front of him was the most powerful.

He suddenly recalled Lin Feng's remarks about the Mystical Way of the Heavenly Being. "The Mystical Way of the Heavenly Being has a good track record with helping immortal soul stage cultivators ascend to the next level. If she has already mastered the Mystical Way of the Heavenly Being, then she probably has a good chance at breaking through to the Virtual Entity Stage."

Even though they were in silent tension, everybody still turned to look at Zhu Yi and company.

The lady stared at Zhu Yi and looked him up and down. "Meng Bingyun is useless, but she has a great son – definitely superior to my own sons and daughters."

As she spoke, a cold look flashed across the face of a good-looking girl behind Lady Shao before she lowered her head.

"Shao Qingcheng, eh?" Zhu Yi nodded his head. "So that's your

real name. But it doesn't make a difference to me."

"The person that made my mother vomit blood before she passed away has always been you. Avatar or your original body – it's the same."

"Even though Meng Bingyun was in love with Zhu Hongwu to the point that she broke her own heart, she has always been trying to seduce him even till the day she met her end." Shao Qingcheng replied plainly. "It was never meant to be her path. Our interests have always been at odds, and her fate had been determined a long time ago. If I didn't do it, Hongwu would have done it himself."

Her voice was plain and monotonous. However, she possessed a kind of self-confidence that stemmed from her own belief that her reasoning was impeccable. It was very different from the domesticated Lady Shao of the old, and was even a little similar to the same attitude that Zhu Hongwu possessed.

Zhu Yi's expression was equally calm. He was not upset at all – but this very fact sent chills down everyone's spine. "You murdered her just because your paths were different? You're not so different from that father of mine after all."

His turned his gaze towards the young girl behind Lady Shao who was still looking down at her toes and said quietly, "Zhu Yong and Zhu Le are the direct heirs to the position of the Marquis of Xuanji, but this person should be the person that you and my nurtured as your successor, am I right?"

"Truly a chip off the old block as well. You don't have to lower your head anymore. I can already sense your hostility and how badly you wish to murder me," Zhu Yi placed his hands behind his back as he continued, "If you wish to fight against your own flesh and blood, do go ahead. Just remember that you won't have a chance to regret that decision should you make it."

The young girl abruptly raised her head and shot a cold look at Zhu Yi.

Her name was Shao Huayang and her surname followed that of her mother. She was the child of Zhu Hongwu and Shao Qingcheng, and had plied the craft under the guidance of her mother ever since she was a little kid, and even Zhu Hongwu himself helped her along from time to time. Her talent values, potential and current level of ability were far greater than that of her siblings and cousins of the same generation.

She was already a nascent soul stage cultivator at this point. Even though she had a battle prowess that was superior to most others at the same level of mastery, her reputation was still nothing much compared to Zhu Yi's. The kind of power that Zhu Yi possessed was truly extraordinary and unbelievable – on the same day that he sat for the exams at Tianjing City, Zhu Yi defeated and killed a nascent soul advanced stage grandmaster when he was only in the aurous core advanced stage.

This was the reason why she refused to answer even though Zhu Yi had already called her out. Still, the murderous and hostile look in her eyes was still there, and she did not even try to hide it.

Shao Qingcheng placed her hand in front of her daughter and said softly, "You're no match for him. I made a mistake for not letting you leave the East Sea back then, but now you cannot engage in battle with him. You have to follow my lead."

Shao Huayang answered her mother with a voice-projected message and exclaimed, "Mother, I've said before so long ago that we could not let this child live! If we 'handled' him all those years ago, then I won't have to suck it up like I have to right now!"

## Chapter 745: Issuing The Challenge

---

Shao Qingcheng was still calm as she responded to her daughter's furious outburst. "Zhu Yi was lucky to have the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders as his master. He has reached quite an impressive standard since then. However, you have been cultivating for a much longer period of time than he has and yet you have been left in the dust – you should reflect as well."

"Even though the Celestial Sect of Wonders have their own unique traits and abilities, you have been brought up and nurtured with tireless effort from your parents, and our mantras and abhijnas are equally powerful as well."

Shao Qingcheng continued softly, "Even though you've experienced a lot more these few years, your life has been too smooth and easy after all."

"It's natural that you're upset. However, you can't let this kind of emotions eat into your willpower and your mind. You have to treat this like a lesson and return this humiliation to him a hundred times over in the future. Only cowards and weaklings curse and complain all the time."

Shao Huayang took a deep breath as her expression mellowed and the fire in her eyes disappeared. "I understand. We will see who reaches the immortal soul stage first. I will swallow today's humiliation and return it to him a hundred times over another day!"

Shao Qingcheng smiled at her daughter's revelation. "That's the way. Meng Bingyun was unable to defeat me, and this unholy child of hers will not be able to defeat my daughter as well."

She turned to look at Zhu Yi calmly and said, "Xuan... Yi? Is that the title you gave yourself on the invitation letter you sent to Liang Yuan?"

"Zhu Hongwu has always wanted to teach you a lesson himself. However, if you're here today for the Green Glass Jade Stand as well, then let me be the judge of your abilities."

She was an immortal soul stage cultivator, but even if she wanted to murder Zhu Yi on the spot, she had to take Lin Feng into consideration.

Even though Lin Feng was not too concerned about Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi facing off against first-level immortal soul stage cultivators, that was just his own personal opinion. To outsiders, Xiao Yan and company were only nascent soul stage cultivators after all.

According to traditional perceptions, Shao Huayang challenging Zhu Yi to a duel was reasonable and perfectly normal. Even if Zhu Yi lost the battle, it was his own fault for not training hard enough or that he was simply not good enough. However, if Shao Qingcheng was the one initiating the challenge, it would seem like she was trying to bully an obviously weaker opponent.

Lin Feng was particularly sensitive to this kind of actions.

However, if Zhu Yi was the one that antagonized her and initiated the challenge, then it would be something else altogether. Immortal Soul stage cultivators possessed a certain degree of self-confidence and dignity, and she was not about to let Zhu Yi get away with humiliating her and her daughter just because he had a powerful master and a powerful sect behind him. Her turning a blind eye to something like that was unthinkable.

"I will never violate you for nothing. However, if you start showing me humiliating disrespect then I'll just murder you on the spot. I don't care if this triggers your master or not. If I can't beat him, then I'll just run. If I can't run, then I'll just compensate in any way I can. If I can't compensate him, then it'll just be a fight to the death."

Even if it would cost them their lives, most immortal soul stage cultivators would never let such impudence of nascent soul stage

cultivators go unpunished. Turning a blind eye to something like this was simply unimaginable for people like them.

Of course, it would be completely different if the immortal soul stage discovered that this nascent soul stage cultivator was much more powerful than the usual. At least, if the immortal soul stage cultivator knew that this nascent soul stage cultivator was strong enough to match his or her own abilities, then he or she would have a different mentality.

This was the reason why the Freshwater Holy Man, the Falling Waves Dragon King and the others treated Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi the same way before they really knew the extent of their abilities.

No matter how much Shao Qingcheng disliked Zhu Yi, she would never initiate the challenge. The only exception to that possibility was that the Great Zhou Empire and the East Heaven's Gate was engaged in an all-out battle with the Celestial Sect of Wonders – only then would she not hold back.

She was here to retrieve the Green Glass Jade Stand. If Zhu Yi was here for the Green Glass Jade Stand as well, then he would be in her way, and the winner would be the most powerful individual – all the typical concerns of immortal soul stage cultivators bullying nascent soul stage cultivators and whatsoever were out of the question.

Zhu Yi was still standing upright on Jieyu's back. His long purple robe swayed in the wind as he answered calmly, "You wish to see what I can do? That's perfect as I also wish to see what you're made of."

"The Heaven's Gate Sect were considered one of the more reputable sects in ancient times. The reappearance of the Heaven's Gate mantras has made me very happy indeed. Although I do wonder, exactly how much of your East Heaven's Gate has received the true teachings of the Heaven's Gate Sect?"

Everybody was slightly taken aback at his words. Even though

they were all aware of the notorious reputations of Zhu Yi, Shi Tianhao and the others, it was still rather shocking and unbelievable that he dared to challenge an immortal soul stage cultivator when he was only in the nascent soul stage.

Of everybody on the island, the Vivant Joy Holy Man and the other cultivators from the Great Qin Empire were the most familiar with Zhu Yi's true abilities. Even though they were uncertain about the outcome of this battle – Zhu Yi was only in the nascent soul intermediate stage – they were still relatively cool and collected about it all.

Shi Xingyun glanced at Zhu Yi as she shook her head and laughed. "That's how he does things."

The Sun-Swallowing Grand Sage and the Red Dragon King were a little surprised about the news of the East Heaven's Gate bringing back part of the teachings of the Heaven's Gate Sect. Even though they knew that Shao Qingcheng and the others were quite powerful, they had yet to officially battle each other and were still unsure of their adversaries' backgrounds and identities.

Now that they knew, these two powerful demons grew a little anxious. The name of the Heaven's Gate Sect was relatively renown inside the Barren Expanses even though it had been extinct for a long time.

The cultivators from the Great Qin Empire and the Vast Sea Sword Sect shared the same astonishment. Only the Vivant Joy Holy Man and the Tidal Sword Elder remained expressionless as they probably knew about this beforehand.

The higher levels in the hierarchy of the Great Qin Empire were naturally familiar with the existence of the East Heaven's Gate. This was a powerful force under the wing of the Great Zhou Empire, and it was inevitable that they would draw the attention of the Great Qin Empire. Only the insider details were unbeknownst to them.



The Vast Sea Sword Sect were a big sect that relied and leaned towards the Great Zhou Empire, just like the East Heaven's Gate. They were both located on the oceans as well, so it was not surprising that they knew something about it. However, the East Heaven's Gate was extremely low-profile, so the Tidal Sword Elder knew nothing much other than their existence.

The East Heaven's Gate cultivators behind Shao Qingcheng, including Shao Huayang, all stared at Zhu Yi with mocking eyes.

The reappearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea could be said to be of national importance to the Great Zhou Empire. It was also a great opportunity for the Heaven's Gate Sect, and both parties had already decided to go full force in this endeavor.

The East Heaven's Gate Sect were prepared for the day they would show themselves to the world. Therefore, they were not too concerned about Zhu Yi exposing their identities. Everyone reacted with mocking laughter as, in their eyes, Zhu Yi engaging in battle with Shao Qingcheng was like a mantis stopping a car with its arm.

"Very well. Do bear in mind that you won't have a chance to regret this decision as well." Shao Qingcheng's expression remained the same. She opened her eyes a little wider as she stared straight at Zhu Yi. The amount of pressure she exuded was enough to cause Jieyu, Baiguang and Li Yuanfang to frown with solemn anticipation.

She did not make her move after finishing her statement, but turned towards the Green Glass Jade Stand somewhere else on the island.

Zhu Yi was not in a hurry to start the duel as well. Even though his challenge was shot back at him, he still kept in mind the true reason for their venture into the Ying Sea. The Green Glass Jade Stand was connected to the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, and thus it was indirectly connected to the progress of the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

Private matters could not be mixed up with professional ones. Zhu Yi was very clear about this, and he was not about to give anything up.

They both knew that if they engaged in battle right away, it would only benefit the other four parties for free.

The fight could only happen after the illusion surrounding the island had been broken, and after the Green Glass Jade Stand was in their possession. Everybody else was also here for the Green Glass Jade Stand, and it was inevitable that conflicts would break out all around.

The other immortal soul stage individuals were not too surprised that Zhu Yi and Shao Qingcheng were not too eager to start their duel.

The Vivant Joy Holy Man said, "Let's break the illusion above the island before anything else."

Even if conflict would eventually arise, everybody also wanted to make sure that the item was secure.

This stand-off was bad news for everyone in the long run. After all, more and more parties who heard the same piece of news would be coming into the island.

The more people there were, the lower their chance of retrieving the Green Glass Jade Stand for themselves.

The Tidal Sword Elder was in agreement and said nothing more. He pointed a finger towards the island beneath him and the ocean water around the island started to churn. Raging tides and waves condensed into sword-like water pillars and shot up towards the illusion around the island.

There were multiple 'water-swords', and they all looked rather thin and weak but nobody dared to underestimate the sword techniques of an immortal soul stage sword cultivator.

The thin 'water-swords' embodied the powers of space and were

formed through the integration of large volumes of ocean water. They were a lot harder than most metals in the world, and under the guidance of the Tidal Sword Elder, each and every sword was as sharp as ever.

Normal nascent soul stage cultivators would not have been able to repel even a single water-sword, and would probably be killed on the spot.

However, the water-swords pierced the illusion but did nothing other than go directly through it. The water-swords went through the island as well, and made it seem like the island itself was virtual.

The Tidal Sword Elder was still calm as he changed the stance of his swords. The tough and sharp water-swords turned into soft and malleable water pillars as they layered upon each other and encircled the illusion from the outside. A giant sphere of water with a radius of more than ten miles appeared in an instant.

The Tidal Sword Elder started to erode the illusion bit by bit as crackling sounds could be heard as his mana clashed against the illusion.

Even though the illusion that had the Green Glass Jade Stand trapped was powerful, it was not too much trouble for immortal soul stage cultivators. As long as they were careful and avoided getting trapped inside the illusions themselves, they would be able to destroy the illusions from the outside.

Since everybody was in in consensual agreement, the group of immortal soul stage cultivators were decisive as everybody started to team up with the Tidal Sword Elder to corrupt the illusion together.

A ball of green light appeared in the hands of the Vivant Joy Holy Man. The ball of green light drifted around in the sphere of water before transforming into a small tree and started to grow on the ground.

Complex and intricate roots started to reach deep down into the illusion and started to consume the spiritual energies of the illusion for their own nutrition like a parasite. The illusion was getting weaker and weaker as the small tree was growing bigger and bigger.

The Sun-Swallowing Condor howled once and the black mist surrounding him expanded outwards and started enveloping the illusion from the outside as the latter eventually became a patch of black.

The Red Dragon King channeled the Eight Barrens Divine Lightning and fired lightning strikes after lightning strikes that caused the illusion to tremble violently.

Zhu Yi looked up at Shao Qingcheng as she raised her right hand and seven streams of blood-red flames started to condense in the center of her palm. The ball of fire spiraled round and round, and transformed into a rotating flaming wheel in an instant.

# Chapter 746: Celestial True Spell of the Nine Planets

---

The crimson-red wheel of flame, spinning rapidly on Shao Qingcheng's palm, smashed towards the little island below, as if the sun itself was hurtling towards the earth.

Zhu Yi gazed at this scene with nonchalant calm, as beside him, Li Yuanfang asked quietly, "Second Senior...this, is the Heaven's Gate's Fire Wheel of Mars?"

"That's right. Now, it is only activated by Shao Qingcheng's own Mana and has not drawn upon the power of the star Mars, or else, its power would be even greater," Zhu Yi replied. "The Heaven's Gate's Solar Flare and Septem Brilliance Flame, despite not being included in the Seven Legendary Primordial Fires of the universe, are nonetheless extremely extraordinary. They are by no means inferior to the Great Thunderclap Temple's Vairocana Pristine Cleansing Fire – one can say that they are two of the most fearsome fires below the Seven Legendary Primordial Fires."

"One can still make the argument that for the Septem Brilliance Flame, without drawing upon the massive strength of the star Mars, its power is ultimately limited. However, the Solar Flare should never be underestimated – although it is not unmoving and unassailable like the Vairocana Pristine Cleansing Fire, but its destructiveness is even greater."

Since they came to know about the existence of the East Heaven's Gate, Zhu Yi and the other disciples all had a crash course on information about the Heaven's Gate from Lin Feng. Therefore, Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang both identified that Shao Qingcheng's Abhijna was one of the secret spells of the Heaven's Gate, the Fire Wheel of Mars.

Before the Celestial Sect of Wonders, in the entire history of human cultivation, the Heaven's Gate was Sect that experienced

the fastest rise of any Holy Land-level Sect, ever. In the span of mere thousands of years, it reached its apogee, synonymous with power and glory across the Divine Lands.

However, fast as its rise was, its fall came just as swiftly. After weathering, consecutively, the dethronement of the Emperor of Violence and the following War of the Two World, it eventually met its end, becoming the brightest falling star in the long history of the Divine Lands.

Apart from its many masters and numerous opportunities, the rapid, forceful rise of the Heaven's Gate can also be attributed to this Sect's style – determined and trailblazing, but also accepting of any and all. In the Grand Celestial World, be it human or Demon power, any powerful mantra or spell will draw their interest, broadening their minds and igniting inspiration, leading to the creation of one incredible Abhijna and spell after another.

Powerful magic that drew upon the massive strength of the stars and planets, for example, attracted the attention of the Heaven's Gate, with the Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formation, one of the greatest Demon formations, and the Xian Heaven Holy Stellar Light in the Great Void Sect's Great Void Nine Heavenly Spells being foremost among them.

After that, the masters of the Heaven's Gate ceaselessly pondered and studied them, and, with their own Great Heavenly Mantra as the base, they created the Celestial True Spell of the Nine Planets. It also called on the power of the Nine Planets of the Heavens; what's more, it was not a formation, but a spell.

The Fire Wheel of Mars, having been cultivated to its limit, could stimulate and call upon the power of the planet-star Mars, with the results being literally earth-shaking.

However, casting such a spell with an individual's power was much more difficult than drawing on the great power of the stars with the aid of a formation.

Even until the ultimate destruction of the Heaven's Gate, its Celestial True Spell of the Nine Planets still has not been completed. The two dark planets – Rahu and Ketu – could not yet be activated, so strictly speaking, this spell should instead be called the Celestial True Spell of the Seven Planets.

However, according to the conception of the old masters of the Heaven's Gate, if the Abhijnas for the last two planets were to be completed as well, then, with the simultaneous activation of the Abhijnas of the Nine Planets, one could utilize tremendous power almost on par with the Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formation with the spell of a single individual.

The strength of the Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formation was affected by the treasures used in the set-up; the Celestial True Spell of the Nine Planets, too, was affected by the level of cultivation of the user. However, if it was to be used by the top masters of the Heaven's Gate, it would hardly be inferior to the perfect version of the Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formations.

"Who knows how many of the Celestial True Spell of the Seven Planets have been inherited by the East Heaven's Gate?" Zhu Yi gazed, calmly, at Shao Qingcheng's Fire Wheel of Mars as it landed on the surface of the illusion atop the island. However, it did not attempt to brute-force its way through with the force of impact or explosion; instead, the wheel of fire rapidly spun, gradually wearing down the strength of the illusion.

Zhu Yi wasn't propping up his feet either; as he formed an arcane gesture with his fingers, the giant turtle illusion above his head fell towards the island as well.

None of the six would reveal their trump cards – that would only benefit the others at one's own expense. However, no one could stand back and use the others as cannon fodder either – or else, none would shed a tear when the rest allied together and expelled you after the illusion opened.

Everyone was a part of this gentleman's agreement, with Zhu Yi being no exception either.

As it fell, the giant turtle was continuously expanding in size; in the end, it grew to almost the same size as the entire island. It simply lay on the surface of the illusion and moved no further.

However, the eyebrows of Shao Qingcheng, the Tidal-Watching Sword Elder, the Red Dragon King, and the rest all twitched simultaneously. All of them could clearly sense that, being pressured like this by the giant turtle, the island illusion was gradually becoming dormant, as if falling into a deep sleep.

The activity of the illusion's power was declining; internally, the circulation of spiritual energy continuously slowed, until it was almost still.

The countless runes that formed the pattern of the Eight Trigrams on the back of the giant turtle began to flash incessantly as well. Arcane power and Concepts began stirring as they continuously derived the transformations of the illusion, identifying the nature and weaknesses of the illusion as well.

At this instant, to everyone, the illusion on the island was no longer a mystery at all. Once an illusion's mirages and transformations were disrupted and its true nature revealed, not even Nascent Soul, Aurous Core or Foundation Establishment cultivators would fear it, not to mention these Immortal Soul cultivators.

Now, even the Vivant Joy Holy Man glanced at Zhu Yi with surprise. "No wonder he dared to challenge the Immortal Soul Shao Qingcheng with Intermediate Nascent Soul cultivation...such power and Mana is truly outstanding."

The eyes of the Tidal Sword Elder, the Red Dragon King, and the Solar Sage flashed slightly as well. Although Zhu Yi was the last to make his move, but it was this Intermediate Nascent Soul junior who was most crucial in breaking the island illusion.



However, once the illusion was destroyed, the Green Glass Jade Stand on the island was naturally released from its predicament as well. Flashing a green shadow across the sky, it was about to open the Void and escape.

The Solar Sage first let out a long roar; turbulent black fog obscured the sky as he revealed his true Sun-Swallowing Condor body and surrounded the green shadow.

The green shadow darted and sprinted around, but was nonetheless unable to penetrate the black fog and escape – without reaching Mahayana realm, magic treasures without a master were unable to use the full extent of their strength. At this instant, facing the Solar Sage, it was left without any power to resist.

The others, however, would never sit and watch the Solar Sage leave with the Green Glass Jade Stand. Waves rolled and glimmered in the eyes of the Tidal Sword Elder like a stretch of the immensely azure sea, as the faint roar of the tide emanated from within his pupils.

The next moment, a streak of blue sword radiance shot out from the Tidal Sword Elder's right pupil. Sweeping up an enormous tidal wave, it slashed into the black fog surrounding the Solar Sage's body.

Furious, the Solar Sage refused to yield; as the black fog suppressed the Green Glass Jade Stand, it enveloped the blue sword radiance.

The Tidal Sword Elder made a guiding sword gesture with his fingers. The azure sword brilliance has already transformed into a flying sword radiating brilliance; shimmering with a blue glow and with the sword resonance seamlessly weaved into the sound of the tide, it swerved agilely in the black fog, encompassing the immense power of the bottomless seas as it blasted through the Solar Sage's black fog.

Simultaneously, below, the tides surged in the limitless oceans

around the island. Echoing the sword of the Tidal Sword Elder, countless streaks of watery swords rose into the sky as they shattered the Spatial dimension, attacking the Solar Sage together with the Tidal Sword Elder's magic treasure, the Oceanic Tide-Raising Sword.

"As annoying as the Sea Dragon Clan." The Solar Sage's expression changed slightly.

On the vast oceans, doubtlessly, the Sea Dragon Clan and the Vast Sea Sword Cultivators had an immense home-ground advantage. Vast, inexhaustible deposits of Water Elemental Spiritual Energy – this sort of home-ground advantage was so great as to be able to influence the results of the battle.

Left with no choice, the Solar Sage was forced to abandon the Green Glass Jade Stand first and concentrate on defense, and was only then able to successfully neutralize this wave of attacks from the Tidal Sword Elder.

However, before the Tidal Sword Elder could retrieve the Green Glass Jade Stand, a streak of lightning flashed past and already swept up the Green Glass Jade Stand – the Red Dragon King has made his move.

The Dragon King laughed thunderously. "You can stop the Sun-Swallowing Condor, but you can't stop me!"

The green-purple thunderbolts radiated outwards, completely unconcerned with being surrounded by the Tidal Sword Elder's watery swords. The Red Dragon King's Eight Barrens Divine Lighting shattered one watery sword after another as he swept up the Green Glass Jade Stand and was about to escape.

"Red Dragon King, please do not take your leave yet," The Vivant Joy Holy Man smiled slightly. Although not on the best of terms with Shao Qingcheng and the Tidal Sword Elder, but they were all humans, after all, and the Ying Sea Passage was located in the human world of the Divine Lands. If the Yingzhou Celestial

Mountain was to be obtained by the Demons, it would not look good for any of them.

Numerous green vines appeared in the air, blocking the Red Dragon King's path. The Red Dragon King, controlling the Eight Barrens Divine Lighting, shattered one vine after another.

However, it seemed as if there was no end to the green vines; some of the vines were destroyed, but the other ones that did not feel the direct force of the thunderbolts, instead, grew even more rapidly as if being nourished.

After being hindered by the Vivant Joy Holy Man like this, the Red Dragon King was no longer able to walk away. Above his head, Shao Qingcheng's Fire Wheel of Mars was already hurtling straight at him with devastating force.

The Red Dragon King let out a snort; as lightning flashed across his body and the roars of the dragon resonated across the sky, he showed his true body and transformed into a kilometers-long purple-scaled Celestial Dragon. Across his entire body, scales opened and shut; the power of his thunder grew even stronger as he forcibly withstood Shao Qingcheng's Fire Wheel of Mars while continuously destroying the millions of trees created by the Vivant Joy Holy Man's spell.

"The best of the Dragon Clan are truly remarkable," Shao Qingcheng said calmly as she made a guiding arcane gesture with her right hand. Instantly, the sky above began to waver like ripples in a pond.

The sky appeared as if an illusory crack was torn in it; in the crack, a sea of stars shined and flickered.

Within them, a fiery red star glowed brighter and brighter, and its size appeared larger and larger as well, giving the illusion of smashing downwards, closer and closer to the people below.

Yinghuo – Mars, one of the Nine Planets of the Heavens!

The power of Mars's starlight was projected onto Shao Qingcheng's Fire Wheel of Mars, which instantly strengthened her Abhijna as it continuously shattered the Red Dragon King's protective Eight Barrens Divine Lightning.

The clash of thunder and fire caused unceasing explosions; the skies above the island was enveloped completely in lightning and flames.

Despite his ferocity, the Red Dragon King still felt considerable pressure withstanding the attacks of the Vivant Joy Holy Man and Shao Qingcheng alone, especially since he still has to divert energy to suppressing the Green Glass Jade Stand.

Left with no choice, the Red Dragon King was also forced to abandon the Green Glass Jade Stand first and concentrate on handling the attacks.

The Green Glass Jade Stand changed hands yet again as the Tidal Sword Elder, in a streak of blue sword brilliance, charged straight at it.

Shao Qingcheng's eyes flashed; as she controlled the Fire Wheel of Mars with her right hand, her left hand formed a different arcane gesture. Extreme coldness, as if from the depths of the Netherworld Hell, diffused outwards, immediately blocking the Tidal Sword Elder's Vast Seas Way of the Sword.

Celestial True Spell of the Seven Planets, Abhijna of Chenxing - the Water Planet Mercury, Deadly Ice Billow of Mercury!

With this spell, Shao Qingcheng did not at all fear the home-ground advantage of the Tidal Sword Elder.

In the span of seconds, the Immortal Soul masters were engaged in a pitch battle; meanwhile, at this instant, Zhu Yi, controlling the giant turtle projection, hurtled downwards as well towards the Green Glass Jade Stand.

A cold glare shot from Shao Qingcheng's eyes. "Junior, you really

dared to come?"

Zhu Yi, calm and unhurried, said, "Shao Qingcheng, then let me see how much of the Heaven's Gate did your East Heaven's Gate inherit? The Celestial Spell of Elusiveness is fragmented...let's see if the other Abhijnas are complete?"

# Chapter 747: Releasing the Ultimate Move on Sight

---

Zhu Yi looked at Shao Qingcheng calmly with a radiant glow in his eyes as he puffed lightly, releasing a ball of white gas from his mouth.

The white gas condensed to solid form, forming clouds of vapor shaped like the scales of a fish. They floated above Zhu Yi's head, measuring over 2000 square meters.

Above the scale-shaped clouds appeared a Kirin, large as an imposing mountain and black like the December night. Its size was even larger than the day when Shao Peng was captured, and its air of dignified might even more intense.

The two mammoth projections – the Kirin and the Turtle – appeared beside Zhu Yi together, while simultaneously, in the air in front of him, a pitch-black stone stele emerged like the boundless darkness and engulfed the Green Glass Jade Stand. It was none other than the Metaplasia realm magic treasure, the Eternal Night Demonic Stele.

The Eternal Night Demonic Stele suppressed the Green Glass Jade Stand as soon as it has appeared. Zhu Yi's expression was calm and unperturbed, as if completely unafraid that he will become the common target of the others as a result.

Shao Qingcheng and the others, seeing this, felt their hearts sink a little. "This boy appears arrogant, but he does not seem to be someone who has his eyes blinded by greed. He dares to do this... his confidence must have came from somewhere."

Despite those thoughts, their movements were not a second slower. The one with his hands on the Green Glass Jade Stand would naturally become the common target of everyone – even the Vivant Joy Holy Man was preparing to unleash his magic.

However, at this moment, a pure-white robe suddenly appeared on Zhu Yi's body, outside the purple gown he was wearing.

This white robe was simple yet elegant, harkening back to an older, more graceful age. A radiant white glow emitted from its surface, and the sound of reading from within the white light. The sound was unremarkable at first, but soon it swelled until it seemed that every single student and scholar in the world was reciting the books out loud.

Seeing this, Shao Qingcheng, the Tidal Sword Elder and the Vivant Joy Holy Man all had complex expressions on their faces. "The Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel..."

The robe once worn by the Great Sage Departed Teacher of the literary world of antiquity, it was rather unique in that in the hands of other cultivators, it was of no use and was just like an ordinary piece of clothing.

However, in the hands of one with impressive Air of Literature as well as cultivation, it was a force to reckon with indeed. More than three years ago, when Zhu Yi travelled to Tianjing City for the Imperial Examinations, he shocked the world with his essay that caused the Resonance of the Hundred Sages – and subsequently when he achieved the recognition of this Metaplasia-realm magic treasure at the level of Advanced Aurous Core.

Afterwards, the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel left the Examination Hall in Tianjing City along with Zhu Yi, without demonstrating its power. Thus, many subsequently forgot about this event, only regarding it as an interesting piece of gossip.

However, Shao Qingcheng and the others were not going to overlook it – because they could distinctly sense a strong will on the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel.

It was as if the mental will of every single scholar under the Heavens has coalesced together – like the Righteous Path of the Universe, shaking every man from time immemorial to the present

day.

In the air beside Zhu Yi, the faint image of an elderly man with a long beard appeared, standing. He has a gentle and tranquil air about him, but it could not hide his pride and his honor.

Even Demons like the Red Dragon King and the Solar Sage, who were unaware of the details of the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel, appeared serious and solemn.

A Metaplasia-realm magic treasure...even an Immortal Soul First Level master like Shao Qingcheng or the Vivant Joy Holy Man would not be able to unleash its power completely, not to mention the Intermediate Nascent Soul Zhu Yi. At most, they would be able to utilize more of its strength than Nascent Soul cultivators.

However, the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel before them was strange indeed. No one has even been able to become its master without forcibly erasing the Original Soul of the magic treasure. However, in addition to bestowing its recognition on the then-Advanced Aurous Core Zhu Yi, right now, controlled by the Intermediate Nascent Soul Zhu Yi, it showed power that should only be able to be unleashed by an Immortal Soul First Level cultivator controlling a Metaplasia-realm magic treasure!

Although they felt that it went against all conventional logic, but Shao Qingcheng and the others had sufficient reason to believe that, if Zhu Yi reached Immortal Soul First Level, he might have hope of completely controlling such a Metaplasia-realm magic treasure!

Once the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel appeared, Zhu Yi raised his hand and started to write in mid-air.

Although he was just writing, but within a span of seconds, countless characters of light and darkness appeared in the air.

Unlike previous times, right now, the characters that Zhu Yi wrote with the symbiotic power of light and darkness appeared to



be ten zhang each in circumference. The gigantic characters, floating in mid-air, induced an extreme shock and awe in onlookers.

The many characters were forming up and moving about, as if forming some sort of giant formation, but also as if writing some earth-shattering essay.

Despite the location being an Alternate Dimension - the Ying Sea, the Air of Culture and Light of Wisdom came forth together from all corners of the universe. They formed streaks of meteoric light and beautiful melodies, emanating through the air like an angel scattering flowers from high up in Heaven, while playing a music so wonderful it did not appear to be meant for mortal ears.

This great essay transformed into a golden bridge, extending to the horizon as if it has no limit, no end.

The first paragraph of the essay was the past and also the future; continuously forging ahead, seeking the infinite possibilities of the future. It represented Creation – the great momentum of Humanity did not blindly adhere to the old rules or follow the herd. It was forever taking great strides, forward!

The second paragraph of the essay was the breaking of all obstacles and the transcending of all dangers. It represented Exceedance – enemies shall be exceeded, difficulties shall be exceeded, time shall be exceeded, the limits of the world shall also be eventually exceeded. The great momentum of Humanity, and only the great momentum of Humanity, shall thunder on, with no limits, ever!

The third paragraph of the essay, meanwhile, appeared unremarkable, but in fact carried deep meaning. It represented Sharing, represented Cultivation, and represented Guidance. To be willing to be the first one to step out, to be the Teacher of the world, to explain the philosophy and truth of the Sages and Saints – every single one of the people, regardless of talent, can receive

Cultivation as long as he was willing!

This third paragraph was perfectly compatible with Zhu Yi's own Air of Literature, and this was plain for all to see.

The three paragraphs, together, formed Zhu Yi's original, self-created Abhijna. The Essay of the Sages that perfectly fused the Air of Literature and the power of spells – none other than that essay which caused the Resonance of the Hundred Sages during Zhu Yi's examinations that day.

Once the essay appeared, countless figures flashed within the white glow of the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel – all of them, scholars and learned men throughout history. Every single one of them read this Essay of the Sages out loud, together; the power of the magic treasure fused perfectly with Zhu Yi's Abhijna, each feeding the other.

The power of the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel was added to Zhu Yi's Abhijna, while the Air of Literature in Zhu Yi's Abhijna resonated and reverberated with the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel as well.

Under the effect of the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel, the golden bridge was even more solid and tangible, appearing as if it passed through the entire universe. Bringing the Eternal Night Demonic Stele with him, Zhu Yi stepped onto the golden bridge and just disappeared.

All this seemed a long time, but time and space above the island appeared to be warped and solidified. In the span of seconds, Zhu Yi has already disappeared from where he was as he stepped onto the golden bridge and fled towards the horizon with the Green Glass Jade Stand.

Even as strong as Shao Qingcheng, the Red Dragon King, the Vivant Joy Holy Man et cetera, at the moment when the golden bridge rose, their senses were not with them as they were frozen in place for a moment.

By the time they came to their senses, looking at the golden glow disappearing on the horizon, all of their faces turned black. Instantly, they gave chase in five streaks of light.

As Shao Qingcheng formed different arcane gestures with her hands, an illusory crack opened in the sky above her, and two large stars, red and blue, can be seen shining together - none other than Mars and Neptune.

The Tidal Sword Elder, too, lifted the Oceanic Tide-Raising Sword and, in a streak of azure-blue sword brilliance, chased after Zhu Yi's tail, about to slash down with his sword.

The Red Dragon King's body transformed into a bolt of lightning, with his speed exceeding even that of the Tidal Sword Elder. The Vivant Joy Holy Man, despite being slightly slower in speed, did not lose his cool and followed right behind as well.

However, Shao Qingcheng, the Tidal Sword Elder and the Red Dragon King very quickly discovered that although Zhu Yi, atop the golden bridge, was already within their view, they were unable lock onto his position and thus, unable to intercept him with their attacks.

Zhu Yi stood atop the golden bridge calmly as the projection of the giant turtle floated above his head. As light flickered in its eyes, the billions of runes and characters on the shell were moving non-stop, conducting countless calculations.

If the distance was even a little closer, Shao Qingcheng and the others would be able to lock onto Zhu Yi and unleash their attacks.

However, it happened that the distance was always just a little bit too long, which made Shao Qingcheng and the rest so frustrated that they want to vomit blood. After Zhu Yi made the first move, it was just so hard to equalize the field.

The six – one in front and five behind – formed six bolts of light, flashing through the skies above the Ying Sea continuously. While

keeping an eye on the other, they also must take care to avoid the many environmental dangers in the Ying Sea.

Shao Huayang and the rest, and the many Demons of the Thunder Dragon and Golden Roc Clans, upon seeing this scene, were all in various stages of surprise and shock. It was truly unexpected that in the six-sided battle for treasure, the five Immortal Soul masters did not manage to seize the opportunity, but it was the Intermediate Nascent Soul Zhu Yi instead that scored the first point.

Even Shi Xingyun was slightly surprised that Zhu Yi, besieged by Shao Qingcheng and the other four masters, was still able to burst out of the encirclement and escape with the Green Glass Jade Stand.

When Lin Feng arrived near the island, he was just in time to see the scene of Zhu Yi making his grand escape. He shook his head, unable to contain his laughter, "Ha! Ha! Definitely little Yi's style!"

Lin Feng, as their Master, naturally knew much about the fighting styles of his disciples.

Unlike Xiao Yan, who liked to play the weakling and then make a spectacular comeback, Zhu Yi did not make cautious probes in his battles. He would unleash his ultimate move on sight of the enemy – dispatch his opponent and end the battle in the most simple and direct of ways.

He would make an exception and be more casual only when it was like Shao Peng then – when the gap between the two was just too large. The lion will go all out even when fighting a rabbit – but when it's fighting an ant, that would obviously be unnecessary.

For opponents that were not too much weaker than him, Zhu Yi would always blast him away with an ultimate move straightaway. When battling him, his opponent's only choice would be to go all-out from the start as well; everyone unleashing the powerful moves at each other and may the best man win.

If you had planned to hide your trump cards at the start, then sorry, but most likely, your trump cards would not be used all the way until you meet your end.

A great hand that did not have the opportunity to be used – such was not a good feeling at all.

For example, Shao Qingcheng and the others, now, were experiencing this feeling. Although they have already been trying to assess Zhu Yi generously, but as Immortal Soul cultivators facing a Nascent Soul cultivator, before the actual clash of arms and finding out about the other's abilities, the mental superiority would always be there.

This was not arrogance, but rather, normal confidence. If an Immortal Soul cultivator was to be hesitant and cautious in front of a Nascent Soul cultivator, then his years of cultivation were probably for naught.

But when meeting such an Intermediate Nascent Soul cultivator, Zhu Yi, as to defy all conventional logic, Shao Qingcheng and the rest instantly were instantly met with a setback as Zhu Yi seized the opportunity to make the first move.

When faced with such a posse of Immortal Soul masters, any Nascent Soul cultivator would unleash his entire arsenal from the start. Shao Qingcheng and the others had thought of this – but they had not expected that Zhu Yi, going all-out, would be so aggressive that after seizing the opportunity to make the first move, the five of them would be unable to equalize the score.

It was also because Zhu Yi was facing the encirclement of the five that he chose to penetrate the circle and retreat. If this was a one-on-one duel, had Zhu Yi unleashed his entire barrage of attacks, even the Immortal Soul masters would feel considerable pressure.

"If only someone could hinder this brat a little..." The Red Dragon King said with chill in his voice. They were only a little bit away from catching up with Zhu Yi, and Zhu Yi's Mana was paying

full attention to avoiding their lock-on as well.

At this moment, if even an Aurous Core cultivator interfered for a second, they could intercept Zhu Yi right away. This time, it would be impossibly difficult for him to escape with the Green Glass Jade Stand again.

Shao Qingcheng, despite her expression being slightly annoyed, did not lose her cool for the slightest. "He cannot run," she said quietly.

Before the last note of her voice fell, a blue-robed teenager appeared out of the thin air as he said, smiling, "Sorry I'm late, Senior Shao. However, by the looks of this, arriving at the right moment is better than arriving early."

# Chapter 748: No Zuo No Die

---

(Translator's Note: No Zuo No Die is a Chinese Internet meme that means "You won't be in any trouble if you don't do anything unnecessarily.")

After his apparition, the teenager, clad in a sky-blue robe, kept his eyes transfixed on Zhu Yi. Space itself was thrown into chaos by the flashing golden light; although Shao Qingcheng and the others had not been able to catch up with Zhu Yi, but they succeeded in making the routes available to Zhu Yi extremely limited.

The two sides were not merely racing, but it was in fact a competition of Abhijnas.

Although this teenager has not yet attained Immortal Soul, but he was of Advanced Nascent Soul cultivation as well. His Abhijnas and Mana, especially, were definitely not to be underestimated.

"Junior Yin, you did arrive in time," Shao Qingcheng said.

The direct successor of the East Heaven's Gate, Yin Cangchen, smiled slightly. "It is my honor to be able to lend Senior Shao a hand."

Although he appeared relaxed, Ying Cangchen did not underestimate Zhu Yi. Zhu Yi was able to penetrate the encirclement even when targeted by five Immortal Soul masters – such skills, he freely admit that he was not able to match.

However, he had not expected to defeat Zhu Yi in the first place. As long as he could stop him for just a little while, Shao Qingcheng and the others would be able to catch up.

Ying Cangchen did not say anything else; ribbons of light swirled atop his head as his Cosmic Form flew out, transforming into a giant over 400 meters tall.

Above the giant's head, the vague form of the Multiverse rotated,

generating enormous pressure – as if the Multiverse itself was bearing down.

With a push of Ying Cangchen's hand, the massive wheel spinning above the giant's head smashed down straight at Zhu Yi.

The fabric of space in front of him started shaking vigorously, like a scroll being kneaded aggressively. Within a hundred-kilometer radius, all Spiritual Energy was completely annihilated.

After Ying Cangchen's interference, Zhu Yi, whose golden bridge was fully occupied with Shao Qingcheng and the others, instantly felt his path being obstructed.

"You have a long way to go." Zhu Yi's expression did not change as he pointed with a finger. The Kirin let out a roar and started galloping in a ball of black light, like a massive mountain moving on land. The power of every step was incredibly violent, breaking apart the space that was sent into disarray.

Zhu Yi, atop the golden bridge, was about to streak past in a bolt of golden light, his speed not slowing by even the tiniest bit.

Ying Cangchen's brows furrowed together. He himself was one of the best of the East Heaven's Gate's younger generation, who was regarded as being of great potential. Although he was inducted rather late, he progressed extremely fast, and his Abhijna and Mana were outstanding as well.

However, now, with his Advanced Nascent Soul cultivation and even using his Cosmic Form, he wasn't even able to stop Zhu Yi. It was unavoidable that this would stir feelings of defeat and annoyance in his heart.

"The Sect must gather all our Mantras and books again, as soon as possible." However, Ying Cangchen was still an impressive one. He immediately regained his calm as countless thoughts flashed through his mind. "Actually, I only have to hinder this Zhu Yi a little and Senior Shao and the rest would be able to encircle him



again."

"When that time comes, facing three Immortal Soul cultivators and two Demon Grand Sages, the only possible outcome would be his demise."

Ying Cangchen squinted, his gaze cold and chilling. "I must anger him and make him lose his cool and rationality. No matter how stable a cultivator's mental state is, unless he is truly without desire or want, love or hate, he will always have his obsessions, his inner demons."

"As for this Zhu Yi's inner demon...doubtlessly, it is his father and mother!"

As he thought this, Ying Cangchen said, laughing, "Although Meng Bingyun was expelled by the Great Void Sect for the fragmentation of her Will to pursue the Way, but there is also the part about her causing the Great Void Sect to lose face by entering the mortal world to experience different forms of love in order to cultivate the Mantra of the Great Oblivion. Those lips of hers must have been kissed by thousands!"

This was a textbook example of telling a blatant lie; twisting the facts and slandering Meng Bingyun with specious information.

Hearing this, Zhu Yi gave him a cold stare as his brows raised slightly.

However, soon, Zhu Yi's eyebrows relaxed again.

At the next instant, he, standing on the golden bridge, came ramming straight at Ying Cangchen!

Ying Cangchen was already prepared. Above his head, the giant-shaped Cosmic Form pushed outwards with its palms; vast Mana formed a small world, shielding Ying Cangchen inside and meeting Zhu Yi's attack.

The Heaven's Gate's secret Abhijna, the Heaven's Curse, one of the best protective Abhijnas for self-defense.

Meanwhile, inside the Heaven's Curse, Ying Cangchen did not conserve his cards. Both his hands formed arcane gestures; "Treasure, please show yourself!"

A jet-black spellcaster's robe, resembling the original darkness of the universe, appeared on his body, enveloping his entire person.

The strong aura of an Immortal Soul magic treasure swelled from within the robe as a voice emitted from it. "What majestic Abhijna...plus the supplementary strength of a Metaplasia-realm magic treasure. The combination of the two is ferocious indeed; even if I unleash all of my strength, it is difficult to say if I would be able to block it."

"He could not attack me unreservedly, unless he wants to drag me to hell together. Or else, if he used all of his power to attack me, he would have left his back wide open for Senior Shao and the others."

Even having heard Ying Cangchen say this, the voice from the robe was still grave. "You still cannot let your guard down."

As it spoke, the gloomy black light swept Ying Cangchen up and shrank together with him, quickly becoming a small dot and disappearing in the small world formed by the Heaven's Curse.

Under the support of the magic treasure, Ying Cangchen was still able to see clearly what was happening on the outside. Watching Zhu Yi as he charged in attack, he smiled coldly. "So what if your Abhijna and Mana are powerful? The gaps in your mental state are too big. With just a light touch, you immediately started doing stupid things. A cultivator like you must thank your incredible luck and the protection of the gods for living until today."

"However, the end will be today!"

As he was thinking this, Ying Cangchen suddenly felt that something was off.

Shockingly, Zhu Yi completely ignored Shao Qingcheng and the

others on his tail and just charged towards him. He completely disregarded his own defenses, appearing as if he would stop at nothing to kill him here and now.

Ying Cangchen was taken aback for a moment. "Although his mother is probably his taboo, but he would really drag me to the grave with him for a verbal insult?"

At the next moment, Ying Cangchen's eyes widened as he watched Zhu Yi, clad in the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel and standing on the golden bridge formed by the Essay of the Sages, instantly crush the defensive small world formed by his Heaven's Curse.

Countless voices, reciting essays out loud, resonated in the universe. The Air of Righteous reverberated as the golden bridge bore down; it was as if time and space have been warped and frozen.

In the Void, a black dot, small as a speck of dust, was continuously expanding.

The black dot was resisting the expansion, but it was helpless and could only watch as it was restored to a ball of black light, exposing Ying Cangchen inside, protected by the black robe.

The Original Soul of the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel, the bearded elder, stared at the black robe and snorted loudly. White light flashed, and the black robe was immediately frozen.

The great power of Zhu Yi's Essay of the Sages bore down on Ying Cangchen with unstoppable momentum.

Ying Cangchen's face was cold as a pool of frozen water. "If you want war, war it is. Let's see who will be the one that ends up dead?"

The strength of his Cosmic Form was cranked up to its maximum extent as it went for Zhu Yi's Essay of the Sages heads-on. "This brief moment when he attacks me is already enough for Senior

Shao and the rest to catch up. Now, what I need to do is to focus on defense and avoid being dragged down together by this little brat. That would not be worth it at all..."

Right as he was thinking this, Ying Cangchen received a voice projection from Shao Qingcheng. "Junior Shao, retreat! Now!"

At this instant, a feeling of instinct danger surfaced in Ying Cangchen's heart as well. However, before he could respond, he saw a scene that left him so utterly terrified that he felt that his body was paralyzed.

A scroll suddenly appeared out of the thin air. Painted on the scroll was a river of blood; black light glowed from the scroll as the river of blood materialized into reality. Polluted blood, thick and pungent-smelling, flowed out incessantly, hanging across the sky like a great, blood-colored river.

This dirty river of blood blocked exactly the path of Shao Qingcheng and co. to chase after Zhu Yi!

"A magic treasure? A magic treasure forged with Blood River Primordial Water?" Shao Qingcheng and the rest all furrowed their brows slightly. They had not discovered that someone else was waiting, hidden; all they felt was a slight unease.

Now that the Scroll of the Blood River has appeared and the person showed himself, they finally affirmed his presence.

Once he made his move, the five immediately sensed the fluctuations of his aura as they avoided the blood river.

Immediately, Shao Qingcheng and the others casted their gazes at the same direction, to see an olive-skinned teenager, clad in purple, standing in the air calmly.

A cloud of icy fog, unpredictable and indiscernible, floated beside him. Among the illusory mist, the cold gleam of swords flashed indistinctly.

Seeing this, the hearts of Shao Qingcheng, the Vivant Joy Holy

Man and the Tidal Sword Elder all sank. However, they still sighed discreetly and nodded in greeting. "The Leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders himself. Greetings."

The Red Dragon King and the Solar Sage's brows were raised as well. "The Leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders' Avatar? But with only Advanced Nascent Soul cultivation, just now, he hid his trail and avoided our Awarenesses, and we could only sense a wisp of shadow vaguely. He seemed to be in no way inferior to an Immortal Soul First Level cultivator..."

"The Leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders...he lives up to his reputation indeed."

Shao Qingcheng, having had a sudden thought, linked up with the Mana seeds she has dispersed mentally. Immediately, she found that one of them has lost communications with her.

"It's Shao Peng's...he obliterated the Mana seed without me realizing at all. After the obliteration, if I had not checked myself, I would have been completely unaware of it. It seems that he obtained the news of the Green Glass Jade Stand from Shao Peng as well."

Lin Feng himself has arrived here. Even if it was just an Avatar, the power he demonstrated has already made Shao Qingcheng and the rest furrow their brows with worry. In addition, he has the two treasures, the Ice and Soul Clouds and the Scroll of the Blood River; even if his true body did not appear, he was not to be underestimated by anyone present.

It's just that, with Shao Qingcheng and co. stopped by Lin Feng, the joke's on Yin Cangchen.

Atop the golden bridge formed by the Essay of the Sages, countless projections appeared. It was as if billions of scholars were standing on the bridge together with Zhu Yi, letting out a great, united cry. The great momentum of Humanity was like the tide of history; irreversible, unstoppable!

The monumental and majestic force straightforwardly crushed Yin Cangchen's Cosmic Form!

"I miscalculated..." Yin Cangchen stared at Lin Feng, standing in the Void and blocking Shao Qingcheng and the others, with barely contained fury. Then, he saw golden light flash before his eyes as the sound of reading joined together – it was as if the entire world has coagulated, being frozen solid.

Zhu Yi's attack did not falter at all after the Cosmic Form, and charged straight at Yin Cangchen himself.

Shao Qingcheng's brows crunched together. After a slight moment of hesitation, her body, in a streak of emerald light, swerved around Lin Feng and chased after Zhu Yi.

For Shao Peng, she could leave a hidden mark on him, and activate it to silence him forever if important secrets are leaked. But Yin Cangchen was an important talent that the East Heaven's Gate was nurturing, as well as her supporter; if he died at the hands of Zhu Yi like this, it would be more than a little annoying.

A lantern flew to above her head as she guarded against Lin Feng cautiously, only to discover that Lin Feng made no attempts at stopping her. However, if the Tidal Sword Elder and the others showed the slightest notion of advancing, the Blood River Primordial Water swept towards them straight away.

# Chapter 749: Intimidation

---

After Lin Feng arrived, Zhu Yi made a gesture with his hand. The Green Glass Jade Stand, suppressed by the Eternal Night Demonic Stele, instantly regained its freedom, and shot up into the sky in a streak of emerald green.

However, before it could express its joy, it was captured by Lin Feng with the Scroll of the Blood River.

And together with it was that black robe suppressed by the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel.

Lin Feng, seeing the black spellcaster's robe, turned to look at the lantern above Shao Qingcheng's head and started chuckling. "The East Heaven's Gate has some good nest eggs."

It would not be easy for the Scroll of the Blood River, a Gestation-realm magic treasure, to suppress the Green Glass Jade Stand and Yin Cangchen's black robe by itself. If both sides were controlled by Immortal Soul cultivators, the Scroll of the Blood River might not necessarily be able to trap the two magic treasures on its own.

However, the power of the Scroll of the Blood River was that, although it did not have any other ability itself, it could hold and control vast amounts of Blood River Primordial Water within it.

That was an entire Unholy Blood River. Faced with such a massive amount of Blood River Primordial Water, the Green Glass Jade Stand and the black robe, both of which did not have the control of a master and could only use limited strength, were unable to escape.

If they resist forcibly, they might even be polluted by the Blood River Primordial Water, losing their Souls and damaging their foundation.

With regards to the working principle, this Scroll of the Blood River was analogous to the Heavenly Gods-Sealing Banner that Lin

Feng gifted to Wang Lin. When doing battle with the enemy, it was actually not the magic treasure itself at work, but rather, what was inside the magic treasure.

The Scroll of the Blood River depended on the Unholy Blood River, while the Heavenly Gods-Sealing Banner depended on the Souls imprisoned inside.

Therefore, although Lin Feng' Steel Tree Avatar has not yet attained Immortal Soul, but with him controlling the Scroll of the Blood River - and the Blood River Primordial Water inside – he could still trap the master-less Green Glass Jade Stand and black robe.

The only thing you need to remember was not to drive the Scroll of the Blood River too hard, or else, the Unholy Blood River controlled by the magic treasure might lose control.

Seeing Lin Feng retrieve the Green Glass Jade Stand and the black robe before their eyes, the Tidal Sword Elder and the others were in a dilemma.

They have numbers on their side; although Lin Feng, armed with the two treasures, was considerably strong, if they were to strike together, he might not necessarily be able to keep his hands on the Green Glass Jade Stand.

However, the Tidal Sword Elder, the Red Dragon King and the others were all aware that it was impossible to swiftly defeat Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar and get the Green Glass Jade Stand. An intense, bloody battle was unavoidable.

Even if they could emerge victorious, there would be enough time for Lin Feng's true body to arrive.

Unless the heavyweights like Liang Pan, Shi Yu etc could come as well, or else, they would still be helpless then.

The Vivant Joy Holy Man let out a bitter laugh and said, "Lord Lin, this matter concerns the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea; the



Great Qin will not compromise on this. Still, I could not defeat you, so I would not make things difficult for your Avatar. However, I have already reported it to my Emperor."

"His Imperial Majesty is already on the way. Unfortunately, I must delay you for a while; I apologize for any transgressions."

The Tidal Sword Elder said quietly, "I have also reported the happenings to His Imperial Majesty of the Great Zhou and the Leader of my Sect."

He glanced at Shao Qingcheng, who was charging towards Zhu Yi. Although both his Vast Sea Sword Sect and the East Heaven's Gate were allies and supporters of the Great Zhou Dynasty, but there were no friendship or bonds between the two. Strictly speaking, as two of the stronger entities within the Great Zhou Dynasty faction, they were still competitors.

Thus, when fighting over the Green Glass Jade Stand just now, he and Shao Qingcheng did not falter for a second when attacking each other. Ownership of the treasure was to be settled by strength and strength alone.

But now, facing Lin Feng, unquestionably, he would be allying with Shao Qingcheng.

The azure-blue Oceanic Tide-Raising Sword transformed into a glittering, thousand-hectare sea, sparkling in space and confronting Lin Feng's Ice and Soul Clouds.

One a Gestation-realm magic treasure that could fully unleash its power, the other a Metaplasia-realm magic treasure whose power was limited. The question of which would emerge victorious, ultimately, depended on their respective masters.

The Red Dragon King and the Solar Sage did not speak at all until this point, but now, seeing that the Tidal Sword Elder was ready to strike, they started to have thoughts as well.

They have little interest in the battle between Shao Qingcheng

and Zhu Yi; what they cared about was the Green Glass Jade Stand currently in Lin Feng's possession.

Despite being eyed with hostility by an Immortal Soul Sword Cultivator and two Demonic Grand Sages, Lin Feng's expression remained calm and composed. What's more, he looked at the Vivant Joy Holy Man and smiled slightly. "Right now, my disciple is going to put up a great, entertaining battle; naturally, I am not going to leave now."

"However, I am not going to wait too long for Comrade Shi. If by the time my disciple ends his battle, Comrade Shi has not yet arrived, then I do not have time to wait further for him."

The Vivant Joy Holy Man, smiling, said, "If His Imperial Majesty's arrival is delayed, I do not have the ability to really hold Lord Lin here." As he ended his sentence, he instead took a few steps back to show that he would not attack Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar together with the Tidal Sword Elder and the two others.

As long as Lin Feng did not leave, he would only silently watch the battle between Zhu Yi and Shao Qingcheng on the sidelines with him.

Lin Feng gazed at the restless Red Dragon King, Solar Sage and Tidal Sword Elder. Although he was simultaneously facing three Immortal Soul-level masters, he was still calm as always; in fact, he did not even plan to have his true body travel here.

As light flashed above his head, the Cosmic Form, measuring half a kilometer high and looming as the oldest, largest Mother Tree, appeared. It stood before the posse, stretching up into the Heavens like Atlas himself holding up the sky.

The power of Creation of the Eight Trigrams and the Four Symbols, the perennial endurance of the Saros Steel Tree, coupled with the timeless immortality of the Eternal Glow, formed together the kind of incredible defense that brought hopelessness to the hearts of the vast majority of Immortal Soul First Level

cultivators.

Surprise appeared on the faces of the Tidal Sword Elder and the rest. At first, it was already unthinkable that the power of Lin Feng's one Advanced Nascent Soul Avatar could make them, Immortal Soul cultivators, have second thoughts. However, it was only now that they caught up.

Actually, Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar was not particularly weak in terms of attack, in that it can match and even overpower most Immortal Soul First Level cultivators. However, compared to its defense, it was an entirely different magnitude.

In general, by its own standard, Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar was weak in offense and strong in defense. Defense was its actual greatest asset.

When the Steel Tree Avatar showed its Cosmic Form and raised its defense to the maximum, even an Immortal Soul Second Level master would get a headache looking at it.

Right now, under the attack of the Tidal Sword Elder and the other two masters, it would be extremely hard for Lin Feng to defeat them like how he dispatched the Freshwater Holy Man then. However, it would be even harder for the three of them to penetrate Lin Feng's defenses.

This was still without considering Lin Feng's Ice and Soul Clouds; if the Tidal Sword Elder and the others go all-out on offense, they leave themselves vulnerable to Lin Feng's counterattack.

After realizing this, whether it was the Tidal Sword Elder, who intended to aid Shao Qingcheng, or the Red Dragon King and the Solar Sage, who have their eyes on the Green Glass Jade Stand, all of them fell silent and lost the urge to strike, only continuing the standoff with Lin Feng.

Lin Feng's expression, meanwhile, was very relaxed as he gazed towards a faraway place. There, cultivators from the East Heaven's

Gate and the Vast Sea Sword Sect, as well as Demons from the Thunder Dragon and the Golden-Feathered Great Roc Tribes, were encircling Li Yuanfang, Jieyu, and Baiguang sinisterly.

However, right now, under the gaze of Lin Feng, everyone felt a chill down their spines and they were forced to stop in their tracks.

Although if the Tidal Sword Elder and the others were to insist on stopping him, it would be very hard for Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar to penetrate their line and go to their rescue, but for the Tidal Sword Elder and the others, that would be too petty of them.

They were just fighting for treasure, not some sort of mortal hatred. If they took Lin Feng's disciples hostage, they would only be creating irreconcilable hatred instead.

Regardless of whether they were strong enough to face the wrath of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, even if they were not afraid, it would be greatly unnecessary and only benefit the other powers that entered the Ying Sea.

If there was a second Immortal Soul master from the East Heaven's Gate or the Great Zhou Dynasty here, he would doubtlessly give Lin Feng a taste of his own medicine. However, of the masters present, even the Tidal Sword Elder, who was the closest to the East Heaven's Gate, would not fight to the death with Lin Feng over Shao Qingcheng and Yin Cangchen.

Under Lin Feng's intimidating stare, the situation started to stabilize. Meanwhile, on the other hand, the battle between Zhu Yi and Shao Qingcheng and co. was growing more and more intense!

Seeing that Lin Feng stopped the Tidal Sword Elder and the rest, but only allowed her to pass, Shao Qingcheng's eyes flashed. "You are really so confident in your disciple?"

"By doing this, although you stopped Tidal, Vivant Joy and the others, but you yourself have been mired down completely too."

Shao Qingcheng's gaze grew colder. Crimson-red flames, glowing

golden, flew out of the lantern above her head.

Twenty-eight separate flames in total. Dispersing and forming the pattern of the Twenty-Eight Mansions, they surrounded Zhu Yi, with him at the center.

Zhu Yi's golden bridge, bearing down, has already destroyed Yin Cangchen's Cosmic Form and was about to attack he himself.

Meanwhile, Shao Qingcheng moved fast as well. Looking at the twenty-eight blobs of crimson-red flames basked in golden glow, Zhu Yi nodded. "Good! Solar Flare, Heavenly Fire Formation of the Twenty-Eight Mansions! Very good, you guys did get some of the Heaven's Gate's inheritance."

The Essay of the Sages was one of Zhu Yi's strongest Abhijnas, which was why it could shatter Yin Cangchen's Cosmic Form with one strike.

However, as one of the best of the East Heaven's Gate's younger generation, Yin Cangchen was by no means mediocre. His shattered Cosmic Form transformed into the chaotic void, relentlessly grinding down the golden bridge formed by Zhu Yi's Essay of the Sages.

At this moment, the Heavenly Fire Formation of the Twenty-Eight Mansions unleashed by Shao Qingcheng's magic treasure instantly encircled Zhu Yi.

At the same time, Shao Qingcheng's right hand slashed across the sky. The illusory crack opened, exposing the constellations in the Heavens. The fiery-red Mars glittered steadily; the massive power of the stars sustained Shao Qingcheng's Fire Wheel of Mars as it smashed down towards Zhu Yi's head.

Multiple mighty attacks headed straight for Zhu Yi, to force him to retreat. If Zhu Yi insists on killing Yin Cangchen, then he himself was at risk of severe injury. Once Shao Qingcheng unleashed her second wave of attacks, he might very well be sent

to the grave together with Yin Cangchen.

"Retreat!" Shao Qingcheng let out a severe yell, her Deadly Ice Billow of Mercury ready to be unleashed as well.

For Yin Cangchen, whose heart was already deep in the pits of desperation, it was as if he saw the light of hope once again. Quickly, he attempted to cooperate with Shao Qingcheng to penetrate Zhu Yi's Abhijna and escape with his life.

Zhu Yi was not flustered for a second. "Before I came to the island for the Green Glass Jade Stand, I did some divinatory calculations with the Return of All Appearances Spell. Within the misfortune there's luck; when disaster strikes, there is good fortune. It seems that the misfortune and disaster would fall on you guys."

The Green Glass Jade Stand and the black robe were both already handed over to Lin Feng. Making an arcane gesture, he commanded the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel and the Eternal Night Demonic Stele, both of which have their hands free now. They started vibrating together, a forceful aura radiating from them.

# Chapter 750: Four Appearances Sky Formation

---

Brilliant white light surged from Zhu Yi's Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel. Within the white light, thousands of projections bobbed and wavered, as the sound of recitation reverberated in everyone's ears.

The white light lent itself to the golden bridge below formed by Zhu Yi's Essay of the Sages. With a twist, the golden bridge zoomed through the Void, leaving Shao Qingcheng's star power-strengthened Fire Wheel of Mars to complete its trajectory fruitlessly.

At the same time, the Eternal Night Demon Stele emitted an impossibly black glow, causing the surrounding patch of space and time to be seemingly trapped in the eternal night.

The bright flame of Shao Qingcheng's magic treasure, the Yang Heaven Lamp, was instantly devoured by the darkness. Dimmed together with it was the radiance of the Heavenly Fire Formation of the Twenty-Eight Mansions.

Even with all this, Zhu Yi did not forget about Yin Cangchen. With a clap of his hands, streaks of bright light and dark light weaved into the Great Boundaries of the Celestial Light and Darkness Mandala, sealing Yin Cangchen inside.

The next instant, the Great Boundaries of the Celestial Light and Darkness Mandala started to collapse towards a single point in the center. Yin Cangchen's Cosmic Form has already been shattered; now that he has been trapped within the Great Boundaries of the Celestial Light and Darkness Mandala, once the Mandala collapsed and the simulated power of the destruction of the universe erupted, his only possible fate was death.

"You still want to throw your weight around? You overestimate

yourself," Shao Qingcheng let out a condescending snort. "Like mother, like son indeed. Meng Bingyun was like this; the unworthy descendent she left behind as well."

With a guiding movement by her hand, the Deadly Ice Billow of Mercury transformed into Glacial Ice Waves, instantly freezing the Great Boundaries of the Celestial Light and Darkness Mandala.

The massive strength from the planet Mercury, converted into the energy of polar frost, would not be weaker by much even compared to a fellow Immortal Soul cultivator controlling Xuanming Primordial Water. It will freeze anything and everything; space, time, matter, spiritual energy, Mana...

Once it was touched by the Deadly Ice Billow of Mercury, Zhu Yi's Great Boundaries of the Celestial Light and Darkness Mandala, in the midst of collapsing, was instantly immobilized.

Yin Cangchen, overjoyed, was about to break the seal and escape.

"The Cosmic Form was destroyed...my cultivation was severely damaged, so much that it would probably take a few centuries for me to re-forge my Cosmic Form. But I still have time to attempt Immortal Soul; when I attain Immortal Soul, I shall repay today's humiliation hundredfold!"

Despite having rescued Yin Cangchen, Shao Qingcheng's demeanor did not show any sign of relaxing, but instead growing graver. This was due to her sensitive mental senses as an Immortal Soul cultivator.

Without a moment's hesitation, Shao Qingcheng swept up Yin Cangchen as a green glow appeared on her body, forming a small, emerald-green world that shielded her as she shattered the Void, ready to teleport.

However, the golden bridge formed by Zhu Yi's Essay of the Sages has already moved, streaking in front of her and blocking her path.

"The Heaven's Gate's Celestial Spell of Elusiveness was indeed



remarkable; if used by an Immortal Soul cultivator, it was strong enough that even I might not be able to catch up. However, this fragmented and broken escape spell of your East Heaven's Gate... don't make a fool of yourself!"

"It's like a three-legged chair; it might be able to confuse some people when it's just placed there, but if someone actually sits on it, it will fall instantly." Zhu Yi said with no hurry in his voice.

As he spoke, the golden bridge, supported by the power of the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel, paralyzed space-time as it bore down on Shao Qingcheng.

"What a cunning brat!" Shao Qingcheng instantly came to realization; from the start, Zhu Yi's target was never Yin Cangchen, but rather her!

To use Yin Cangchen to bait her to come to the rescue – which was why he used the Great Boundaries of the Celestial Light and Darkness Mandala to trap Yin Cangchen. Or else, if the golden bridge formed by the Essay of the Sages continued to press down, it would have destroyed Yin Cangchen instantly!

The power of the Intermediate Nascent Soul Zhu Yi could not be measured at all with the standards of Nascent Soul cultivators. Even facing the Immortal Soul Shao Qingcheng, he dared to challenge her himself.

If Shao Qingcheng was to battle him heads-on, Zhu Yi would not be afraid at all; but if Shao Qingcheng was set on fleeing, Zhu Yi would not be able to do anything to her either.

The East Heaven's Gate's Celestial Spell of Elusiveness was indeed incomplete, but if Shao Qingcheng had not been trying to rescue Yin Cangchen, she would not have lost the initiative. If she were to escape, she would have countless ways to hinder Zhu Yi and allow herself to leave with ease.

"Actually trying to prevent me from escaping?" Shao Qingcheng's

eyebrows rose upwards as a half-smile appeared on her exquisite face, as if humored by Zhu Yi's actions, but with a hint of murderousness.

"I said that you think too much of yourself, just like Meng Bingyun, and you took it as a compliment?" Shao Qingcheng's smile faded as coldness glinted in her eyes. "It would be alright if it was the Leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders doing the same thing, but you...you think you can be so presumptuous in front of me?"

She held the Fire Wheel of Mars in one hand, and the Deadly Ice Billow of Mercury in the other. Together, the two Abhijnas blasted towards the golden bridge formed by Zhu Yi's Essay of the Sages.

Facing Shao Qingcheng's powerful counterattack, Zhu Yi was not unnerved. Instead, he was so calm that he could still nod as he spoke. "Although with this essay, I caused the Resonance of the Hundred Sages and achieved first place in the examinations, with my name atop the Golden List, but I myself know that the knowledge within me has not been fully channeled yet."

"My Essay of the Sages still has room for improvement. If this essay was perfected, it could suppress you with a flick of the finger. However, if the essay was perfected, I would probably have attained Immortal Soul as well; then, I could suppress you with a flick of the finger even without the Essay of the Sages."

Zhu Yi smiled slightly. "Within the misfortune there's luck; when disaster strikes, there is good fortune. Today, it is the misfortune and disaster you caused that will bring about my luck and good fortune. Shao Qingcheng, first, take this!"

The island-sized turtle and the mountain-like Kirin appeared beside Zhu Yi again. At the same time, a penetrating roar sounded behind Zhu Yi. The might of the dragon radiated from within a sea of celestial clouds; a dragon, by no means inferior to the turtle and the Kirin in size, appeared in the Void.

Right after it, a clear phoenix cry sounded out as well. The multi-colored phoenix, in graceful dance, circled above Zhu Yi's head.

"Return of All Appearances Spell!"

"Celestial Kirin Mantra!"

"Rebirth of the Phoenix Spell!"

"Soaring Dragon Spell!"

As Zhu Yi's hands formed intricate gestures, the four forms converged. The roaring spiritual energy formed a gigantic circle, seemingly cutting off the space around Shao Qingcheng and sealing her inside.

Shao Qingcheng's pupils contracted slightly. This circle recurs eternally, harmonious and self-consistent, bearing and encapsulating the profound Way of the Heavens.

It seemed to have defined the laws and principles by which everything in the universe operated, from birth to death, from the origin to the end.

Within the circle, the images of the four forms alternately appeared.

The Turtle suppressed all agitation and changes, ensuring that the world tended towards a stop. Simultaneously, it conducted its divinations, calculating the future of the world, seeing all and knowing all.

The Kirin, full of righteousness, guarded the Center and the Just Way. It suppressed all evil, ensuring that everything did not err from their trajectories and continued to progress along their paths.

The Phoenix demonstrated the cycle of creation and destruction. Everything will eventually meet destruction, but after the destruction was rebirth, and so goes the cycle.

The Dragon did not show any aggressiveness, but rather, represented an enterprising, trailblazing will. It was not

selfishness or greed, but rather, the grand will of every single person under the Heavens to work hard and strive for prosperity.

All the lines are heads. There appears a flight of dragons without a leader. Good fortune.

The power of the four forms supplemented each other and continued to merge. The circle seemed simple, but appeared to be large as the entire world, epitomizing the power of the Sages.

"Shao Qingcheng, try my Four Appearances Sky Formation. You are an Immortal Soul cultivator; you should be able to give some constructive comments, right?"

The Four Appearances Sky Formation, inspired by the Four Appearances Heaven Cleaving Script taught to him by Lin Feng, was one of Zhu Yi's current two strongest Abhijnas together with the Essay of the Sages.

With the power of the Heavens bearing down, Shao Qingcheng suddenly realized that she was unable to crack open the sky and draw the power of the stars.

Even the connection of Immortal Soul cultivators to the universe and the control of Cosmic Vital Spirit were vaguely obstructed.

"Good! Very good!" Shao Qingcheng's eyebrows straightened slightly. "You're stronger than Meng Bingyun. If at this moment, you have already achieved Immortal Soul, this formation can cut off the connection between the universe and I right away."

"But a pity, you're not Immortal Soul yet."

As she spoke, Shao Qingcheng's body abruptly twisted in space, forming an entity that appeared like a patch of the cosmos, rotating like the worlds of the Multiverse.

At this moment, Shao Qiancheng has finally revealed her Immortal Soul Avatar. Within the Multiverse formed by her Immortal Soul, the Fire Wheel of Mars and the Deadly Ice Billow of Mercury suddenly rose. The two polar opposites, converging

together, did not cause chaos, but rather, started to merge!

"From using Junior Yin as the bait to entice me into your trap, you have indeed put in much effort. But, a pity; all tactics and strategy must be built on strength!"

"What I said still stands; you, are not your master!" Shao Qingcheng said coldly.

"I heard while you're young, Meng Bingyun taught you to read and violated Hongwu's rules, and she was even reprimanded because of that. Then, did she teach you this?"

"Fire and water cause disaster!"

The two dichotomous types of power, the Fire Wheel of Mars and the Deadly Ice Billow of Mercury, merged together. Instantly, an all-new Concept of power was born from within.

Earthquake-like tremors radiated outwards, each one stronger than the previous one. At the end, it was as if the earth itself was shattering. Volcanoes erupted and dams overflowed; the air of catastrophe shook every single bird and beast in the vicinity!

Apocalypse, the end times. It was as if Heaven and Earth were facing their inevitable end as well.

Fire and water meet, catastrophe of the stars!

Turbulent strength crashed against the Four Appearances Sky Formation. Even the world-halos materialized by the formation were shaking violently; this ultimate blow by Shao Qingcheng seemed as if it would brutally rip open the sky.

The Tidal Sword Elder and the other Immortal Soul masters, seeing this scene, appeared grim as well. With such power and Abhijna, in addition to her magic treasure the Yang Heaven Lamp, Shao Qingcheng's strength was, to a certain extent, the first among the five Immortal Soul masters present.

Under the effect of Shao Qingcheng's Mana, it appeared as if the

crack was going to open in the Heavens again.

If she were to succeed, when she drew upon the power of the stars, the strength of her Abhijna will be even greater. Then, it would truly live up to the name of "Catastrophe of the Stars".

Zhu Yi, however, was calm as always as he said flatly, "'Fire and water cause disaster', my mother naturally had taught me this. Apart from that, she also taught me that, small discrepancies lead to great errors!"

The Eternal Night Demonic Stele was using its full might to suppress the Yang Heaven Lamp, while the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel was blazing bright. Its strength was added to the golden bridge formed by the Essay of the Sages, causing the power of the golden bridge to grow even greater and more vast, resisting Shao Qingcheng's attack together with the Four Appearances Sky Formation.

With both Abhijnas using all of their power for defense, although Shao Qingcheng was already Immortal Soul, it was still impossible for her to penetrate their defenses quickly.

The golden bridge formed by the Essay of the Sages was even more wondrous. As it defended against her attack, it was also influencing Shao Qingcheng's Immortal Soul Avatar, causing her mental operations to grow more sluggish.

Shao Qingcheng's mind was dazed slightly. For a single moment, she even reverted back to her true form from the Immortal Soul Avatar.

Having regained her senses, Shao Qingcheng flew into a fury. She raised her strength up to the maximum, so as to destroy Zhu Yi's Essay of the Sages and Four Appearances Sky Formation.

"Little discrepancies lead to great errors? Your discrepancies are anything but little!"

Zhu Yi, atop the golden bridge, let out a light laugh. "Before, it

was little discrepancies; now, it was indeed more than little."

Vast, tremendous ripples of Mana radiated from the golden bridge, shaking the surrounding Void.

# Chapter 751: The Immortal Soul Stage

## Cultivator Almost Died From Anger

---

Looking at Zhu Yi and Shao Qingcheng locked in battle, silence fell upon the Tidal Sword Elder, Vivant Joy Holy Man, Red Dragon King and the Solar Sage.

They, the bystanders, had a clear view of what had transpired.

Although Shao Qingchen's Immortal Soul Avatar had briefly turned back into human form, the duo had been at a stalemate for quite awhile.

Zhu Yi's Four Appearances Sky Formation and Essay of the Sages had worked hand in hand to seal Shao Qingcheng's attacks.

But this was a temporal measure at best. Shao Qingcheng was, after all, an Immortal Soul elder already.

Should any one of Zhu Yi's defenses falter, Shao Qingcheng would once again be able to call upon the Meteor Aurora Technique. This time, his power would have expanded, and even if Zhu Yi were to harness the Supreme Ancient Holy Apparel, his safety was not guaranteed.

But out of the stalemate, Zhu Yi suddenly made a move that left the audience with their mouths agape.

Just as he was fighting Shao Qingcheng, he suddenly left his Nascent Soul and attempted the condensation of his cosmic form!

Zhu Yi's soul looked like him when he was ten years old and a coarse-looking branch from a Cloud Forest Tree appeared above his head and a crushing amount of spiritual energy poured down from above.

With the support from the spiritual pressure, Zhu Yi could match Shao Qingcheng's mana.

This increase in spiritual energy fueled his Supreme Ancient



Holy Apparel, Essay of the Sages and Four Appearances Sky Formation, while thoroughly powering up his nascent soul.

All of Zhu Yi's powers seemed to be contained in this human-like form, as it expanded and transformed into a giant.

"He's asking for it!" commented Solar Sage.

Going beyond one's abilities was no easy feat, especially with the cosmic form. To condense one's cosmic form was even more difficult.

Condensing one's cosmic form during a battle was not something that had not happened before. However, in most cases, they were killed before the transformation could even begin.

That was because a slip in focus was fatal in cases where one was not stronger than the opponent by a large margin. Without so much as a blow, anything the opponent did could distract one from perfecting one's transformation, resulting in one's self-destruction.

Anyone would love to chance upon an opponent that was so reckless. It would be an easy victory.

But Zhu Yi went straight to condense his cosmic form without a single hint of hesitation. Without any fear at all!

Zhu Yi's hands danced in the air as words formed in the trail left by his fingers, gathering voluminous amounts of spiritual energy and pouring it into the humanoid giant.

The forms of the dragon, phoenix, tortoise and Qilin all appeared and entered the human-like form.

Instantly, a four-faced, eight-legged giant appeared before the crowd, sitting astride on top of a giant Qilin, followed by a dragon which was trailing around him. A bright phoenix seemed to be floating above his head, shrieking as a warning to all who dared to challenge its authority.

Each of the giant's four faces contained a different persona.

The Knowledgeable one, the Wise one, the Strict one and the Cultured one.

The eight elements transformed into eight different limbs, which paired up to look for the four faces, resulting in every face matched with two limbs. ]

The Knowledgeable one was holding onto stacks of books while the Wise one held pen and paper. The Strict one held onto a ruler used to discipline disciples while the Cultured one was strumming a musical instrument.

Inside the void, the gigantic zither sat atop the back of a giant tortoise, which lay next to the giant silently.

Countless words danced in the air, forming scriptures, which preached morality, that pranced around the giant.

Shao Huayang and the rest were too far away to see exactly what was happening. They could only tell that Shao Qingcheng's meteors surged with immense power that seemed to be able to tear the sky away from the earth, and were pounding away at Zhu Yi's Four Appearances Sky Formation and Essay of the Sages.

Seeing Shao Qingcheng forcing Zhu Yi into a defensive position seemed to bring smiles to Shao Huayang and company.

"For someone in the intermediate Nascent Soul stage to possess such power is truly remarkable. But you have lost your way and overestimated your power. Challenging an Immortal Soul stage cultivator would only result in your humiliation!"

"Your pride is your weakness. The smooth-sailing journey you had thus far ends here today, and this defeat will stagnate your progress for some time to come if it does not destroy your cultivation."

"And I will surpass you and reach the Immortal Soul stage before you can even smell it, leaving you to choke on the dust behind me. I pray that the heavens spare your life today, for I will return to

defeat and kill you myself!"

Just at this moment, there was a rumbling above the golden bridge. From the void emerged a gigantic humanoid. Sounds of scriptures being read could be heard as soft light rained down gently.

Shao Huayang and the other cultivators stared dumbly.

Even Tidal Sword Elder, Vivant Joy Holy Man, Red Dragon King and the Solar Sage seemed to be mildly surprised at this sight as well.

Although Shao Huayang and the rest could not see clearly what was happening, they could tell for sure that Zhu Yi was withstanding Shao Qingcheng's attacks while brewing his own cosmic form.

Not only was Shao Qingcheng's attacks not doing real damage, it seemed to be hastening the rate of condensation!

Despite how Zhu Yi appeared to be fainting as his face grew paler, his soul only grew bigger and stronger, as the cosmic form becoming increasingly clearer.

"He's using his battles with the Immortal Soul stage cultivators to shave off the unnecessary bits in his techniques while refining the essence of his power," commented Vivant Joy Holy Man. "But this is also because he has reached the peak of the middle stage of the Nascent Soul stage. He was but one step away from completing the cosmic form in the first place."

Lin Feng smiled and replied, "Such an experience is hard to replicate. Even when he wants to breakthrough other levels in the future, it will be hard to repeat today's feat again."

"But without sufficient confidence, I'd say he would dare not be so impulsive. He must have calculated that this battle with Shao Qingcheng would give him the breakthrough to the final Nascent Soul stage."

The Tidal Sword Elder and the rest might have understood what was happening but they kept mum and remained solemn. What Zhu Yi did today was more than enough to leave an impression on these Immortal Soul stage elders.

Finally, when Shao Qingcheng escaped the influence of the golden bridge and unleashed enough power to overcome the Four Appearances Sky Formation and Essay of the Sages, Zhu Yi's cosmic form materialized with a bang!

His nascent soul grew to look like him when he was twelve, signifying his attainment of the final Nascent Soul stage.

The coarse-looking branch from a Cloud Forest Tree shrunk to release sufficient spiritual energy for Zhu Yi's mana recovery. It achieved the effect of soothing the nascent soul and stabilizing the cosmic form.

"Fairly speaking, the difference between us was really negligible," said Zhu Yi calmly. "But now, it's no longer negligible."

As he spoke, his giant cosmic form stomped once on the golden bridge, sending incredible sparks flying like fireworks.

Now that he was in the Advanced Nascent Soul stage, Zhu Yi's prowess surged and the power of the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel increased manifold. In a fury of sparks and scriptures, Zhu Yi began to push back Shao Qingcheng's Meteor Aurora Technique.

"The more you seek destruction, the more I call for resurrection and salvation!"

"Regardless of the tribulations and disasters that might stand in my way, I will lead the masses to salvation and to their own inner peace!" shouted Zhu Yi.

"Shao Qingcheng! You did not share a pleasant relationship with my mother! You were definitely involved in my mother's death in some way! I shall spare you your life so that you can clean her grave and beg for forgiveness!"

Her face turned cold as the mere thought of begging for forgiveness was already more humiliating than death could ever be.

She retaliated, "Clean the grave of that b\*tch Meng Bingyun? I only spared her grave from destruction on Hongwu's account!"

"You had better go now!" cried Zhu Yi.

His cosmic form rumbled like thunder as his Four Appearances Sky Formation's Sky Revolution throbbed.

It oscillated between expanding to envelop the sky and shrinking to the size of a speck of dust.

The oscillation created immense pressure that pounded hard on Shao Qingcheng's Immortal Soul Avatar, resulting in an unbelievable amount of pain.

It felt as though the avatar was about to turn into dust like the sky formation.

Zhu Yi's Four Appearances Sky Formation now went into full offensive mode. In a bid to complete his cosmic form previously, it had gone into total defense, but now it no longer needed to fend off any attacks.

"Advanced Nascent Soul Stage, cosmic form?!" Shao Qingcheng felt the wrath of Zhu Yi's attacks, "He actually achieved the cosmic form while battling me? Impossible!"

She felt a wave of despair and humiliation.

A middle-level Nascent Soul stage cultivator making a breakthrough while fighting an Immortal Soul stage fighter.

And it was not because Shao Qingcheng showed mercy or withheld any attacks, but solely due to Zhu Yi's own ability and resolve. The rage she felt was overwhelming, tearing at the seams of the avatar.

But against Zhu Yi's counter-attacks, the rage was doused

immediately as she reverted to her composed self.

She glanced at Zhu Yi once again before she ended her Meteor Aurora Technique.

If she could invoke the powers of the luminaries, her technique would greatly increase in capability and she would definitely go head-on with Zhu Yi. But Zhu Yi's Four Appearances Sky Formation and Essay of the Sages was creating a barrier that stood in between Shao Qingcheng and her full power, and there was no reason for him to choose a more difficult path to victory.

Denying one access was Zhu Yi's battle model, the more the opponent wanted something, the more he would not let them have it.

The world created by Shao Qingcheng's immortal soul started spinning, creating a force field around the Immortal Soul Avatar by linking all the space surrounding her.

This was no doubt the secret technique of the Heaven's Gate, the Heaven's Curse!

Performed by the Immortal Soul stage Shao Qingcheng, this defensive technique was far greater than the previous demonstration by Yi Cangchen.

"It's pointless," said Zhu Yi and the golden bridge crashed downwards once more.

# Chapter 752: Sky Revolution and Essay of the Sages

---

The golden bridge created by the Essay of the Sages tore through Shao Qingcheng's Heaven's Curse, breaking the separation between his world and the external one.

The Sky Revolution spun once more, and completely flattened that small world into oblivion.

Shao Qingcheng felt the mana that she released to create that space slowly disappearing under the control of Zhu Yi, mimicking the Destruction of Heaven and Earth.

Being in this space that she had created, she had to suffer the Destruction of Heaven and Earth.

Her Immortal Soul avatar displayed subtle emotions, that of rage, but more of fear and caution.

"Everlasting life! May the heavens bless us!"

As Shao Qingcheng's voice resonated through the air, streaks of purple and gold swirled around her immortal soul, forming some sort of jade deity-like outfit that functioned as an armour. It withstood the force of destruction and prevented her from collapsing.

The Everlasting Aerial Hide!

Lin Feng and Zhu Yi shared a glance as they thought, "That's the secret defense technique passed down from Emperor Tai!"

Following the Heaven's Curse, Shao Qingcheng had displayed yet another impregnable defense technique. Together, they finally withstood Zhu Yi's relentless attacks.

With a surge of her power, the Yang Heaven Lamp shone brighter than before, crashing out of the barrier from the Eternal Night Demonic Stele and then returning to her side.

There were no errors in Shao Qingcheng's anticipations in the flow of the battle. No sooner had the lamp reached her when Zhu Yi's attack came crashing down once again, leaving barely any time for her to catch a breather.

The Four Appearances Sky Formation-turned Sky Revolution encapsulated Shao Qingcheng's Everlasting Aerial Hide once more, immediately beginning its contractions. The purple and golden armour cracked and burst, dissipating into the surroundings.

"Rise!" cried Shao Qingcheng.

Red flames from the Yang Heaven Lamp rose in tiny patterns, casting a net of fire around her and forming the third line of defense.

As an Immortal Soul cultivator, she could fully harness the full potential of the lamp, effectively turning it into an Immortal Soul stage cultivator that was on her side.

The sea of fire from the Solar Flare transformed the thousand miles of void around it into a sea of flame, seemingly distorting space itself.

"If it were one of the seven primordial flames, I would at least be slightly concerned. But your Solar Flare simply isn't strong enough," chided Zhu Yi as he remained nonchalant about the fearsome sea of flames. His Supreme Ancient Holy Apparel glistened with bright white light as it negated the heat from the Solar Flare's fires.

In the meantime, his Four Appearances Sky Formation and Essay of the Sages continued their relentless assault.

With the Yang Heaven Lamp, Shao Qingcheng was hoping to get a breather and a window of opportunity to reorganize her strategy. But Zhu Yi did not waste his Sky Formation and Essay on defending against the Yang Heaven Lamp and instead carried on with his attack. Because Zhu Yi simply relied on his Supreme



Ancient Holy Apparel to withstand the Yang Heaven Lamp, he could continue to oppress her with the Essay of the Sages.

The Essay of the Sages itself was an unusual weapon. Wielded by Zhu Yi, it functioned like an Immortal Soul avatar, suppressing the offensive capability of the Yang Heaven Lamp.

Facing Zhu Yi's torrential attacks, Shao Qingcheng felt as though her four-limbs were not sufficient for defense as mistakes started to creep into her techniques.

When all of a sudden, an endless black curtain started to envelope her immortal soul avatar, sinking into a world of nothingness. There was neither sound nor light in this world.

"Damn it!" She knew it was the works of the Eternal Night Demonic Steele.

If she did not escape the darkness in time, she would be subdued and captured by Zhu Yi's Eternal Night Demonic Steele.

"Bastard! Don't you dare!" screamed Shao Qingcheng. The multiverse created by her immortal soul began to stir, as though many smaller worlds revolved around a great sphere of energy. The sphere of powerful energy expanded through barriers and began merging with the smaller worlds.

In the next moment, this powerful concept of energy transformed into streaks of light as it exploded out of the captivity of the Eternal Night Demonic Steele.

In a sorrowful moan, the Eternal Night Demonic Steele retreated and the darkness faded. Shao Qingcheng could see light once again. Even though she was only trapped in darkness momentarily, it felt as though a thousand years had passed.

The blow that Shao Qingcheng dealt on the steele was great. Despite it being a Mahayana level magic treasure, it had no way to fully regenerate itself in such a short span.

Nonetheless, Shao Qingcheng had also sustained considerable

damage, resulting in her inability to maintain her immortal soul avatar as she reverted to her human form.

Zhu Yi quietly said, "There may be some parts of the concepts of Great Heavenly Mantra and Celestial Treasure Wheel in your retaliation earlier. They might be little, but they are still quite impressive."

"But this will not change the fact that I will defeat you!"

Zhu Yi's Four Appearances Sky Formation and Essay of the Sages crashed down on Shao Qingcheng once again. Seeing how Zhu Yi had resumed with the attacks, Shao Qingcheng revealed a look of despair. With a damaged immortal soul, it would be taxing to block this attack.

Shao Qingcheng had given up all hope of turning this fight into a victory. Even the thought of dragging it to a stalemate or a draw was almost impossible. Lin Feng observed the fight from afar and believed the result of this was already predictable.

At this very stage, Shao Qingcheng had no choice but to admit that she, an immortal soul cultivator, was about to be defeated by a nascent soul warrior!

She took a deep breath and regained the decisiveness that she had always possessed. She pointed a single finger at her forehead.

Golden light emerged from her forehead, becoming what seemed like a golden plate engraved with symbols that were to complicate to decipher .

As the golden light faded, the plate revealed a black metallic colour with crimson words inscribed. But on closer look, only half a plate was there.

Her fingertip jabbed hard at the plate and shattered it, releasing a purple and gold mist that encapsulated her body. In an instant, the mist ripped open the void and extracted her out of the battle. Shao Qingcheng was about to vanish.

Even Zhu Yi's Four Appearances Sky Formation and Essay of the Sages were too slow to get her.

"The Emperor Tai's Diplomatic Immunity Certificate?" a thought flashed through Zhu Yi's mind.

In the Antiquity Age, Emperor Tai bestowed this Diplomatic Immunity Certificate upon his most trusted generals as a golden pardon should he commit any crime punishable by death. At the same time, it was also a treasure that could protect his beloved subjects.

By breaking the plate in half and activating it, the powers of Emperor Tai would protect the wielder of the half-tablet and break him through the void, sending the person back to Emperor Tai where the other half-tablet laid.

Therefore, centuries later, people named this certificate the golden pardon. Although it could only be used once, it gave the wielder another chance at life.

But this treasure was sacred and very rare, practically unseen in today's world.

However, it was not surprising for the Great Zhou Empire, which had excavated the Imperial Palace of Emperor Tai and other Emperor Tai possessions, to have obtained a few of them and given them to Shao Qingcheng, who was a core member of the East Heaven's Gate.

"Zhu Yi, you're good," said Shao Qingcheng as she regained her composure. "You're almost at the level to make Hongwu show himself, although that, for you, is bad news."

"Even if he doesn't look for me, I will find him," replied Zhu Yi with a wry smile.

"And when that day finally arrives, not even the East Heaven's Gate, the Great Zhou Empire, nor father himself can save you."

"And you think you can just walk away with this treasure ? Your

soul is hurt, but so is my steele. In that case, you can leave your beloved lamp as a form of compensation!"

As Zhu Yi spoke, the earth behind him began to tremble. The giant who was seated atop on the Qilin stood up and all four of his faces began to recite scriptures as his eight hands put aside their books, pen, zither and ruler, and took a ceremonious bow.

Immense power reverberated through the air. Reinforced by the Supreme Ancient Holy Apparel , Zhu Yi's Four Appearances Sky Formation revolved in mid-air and shook the void, momentarily holding the escaping Shao Qingcheng in place.

In the next moment, the golden bridge created by Zhu Yi's spell swept in a single swoop, knocking down the Yang Heaven Lamp that was on Shao Qingcheng's head.

"You may leave now!" laughed Zhu Yi, content and satisfied.

Amidst his laughter, Shao Qingcheng was whacked by the golden bridge as she tumbled and fell. It was only after that did the purple light from the Diplomatic Immunity Certificate broke free from the control of the Four Appearances Sky Formation and surrounded her to bring her to safety.

Everyone in the vicinity could see what had happened. Not just Tidal Sword Elder, Red Dragon King, Solar Sage, and Shao Huayang, but all of them from East Heaven's Gate and the other audiences.

"Zhu Yi!" screamed Shao Qingcheng. The embarrassment in front of everyone was suffocating.

Her calm composure shattered once more. If she was in her physical body, she would most likely have spit blood out of anger and shame.

"Senior Shao!"

But the Diplomatic Immunity Certificate could only save one person. Since Shao Qingcheng had used it, Yin Cangchen was

doomed to be left behind. Shao Qingcheng could not even save her own lamp, let alone another person.

Yin Cangchen was already severely injured by Zhu Yi before this and was only shielded by Shao Qingcheng. Now that Shao Qingcheng had left, he had no escape, and could only stare upon as Zhu Yi's Great Boundaries of the Celestial Light and Darkness Mandala bound and caught him.

"You are too talkative. Be careful you don't turn dumb after this," laughed Zhu Yi as he suppressed Yin Cangchen.

The crowd fell silent at this sight.

Nobody had expected such results from the beginning, they thought that Zhu Yi would be lucky to survive or force a draw. Little did they know that Zhu Yi would actually triumph over Shao Qingcheng.

The gaze from Tidal Sword Elder and the other elders leaped from Zhu Yi to Lin Feng, their emotions clearly not in one place. They felt as though they could not compare to Lin Feng anymore.

Not just in physique or power, but in seniority and rank as Lin Feng's student, Zhu Yi, could already match up to them. If that was the case, how else were they supposed to face the master if they had difficulty handling the student? The difference between Lin Feng and them was apparent.

Lin Feng's calm and composed self contrasted against the bewilderment apparent in the rest as though Zhu Yi's fight was of no major concern and his victory was guaranteed from the start.

He courteously motioned to everyone and said, "This fight is over, our sect will hence take our leave."

Vivant Joy Holy Man and Tidal Sword Elder were alerted by his words as they simply could not stomach the fact that Lin Feng was leaving with the Green Glass Jade Stand.

# Chapter 753: A Good Stepping Stone

---

"His Majesty hasn't arrived yet." Vivant Joy Holy Man felt a pinch in his heart but the thought of seeing Lin Feng walk away with the Green Glass Jade Stand was enough for him to develop ideas on how to stop Lin Feng.

The Tidal Sword Elder felt the same way, and tried to contact the Zhou Emperor, Liang Pan, and the Vast Sea Swordmaster, but only received even more shocking news.

On the Zhou Emperor's route across the vast seas, something of great importance had caught his attention and he had diverted his route for strategic reasons.

Vivant Joy Holy Man also tried contacting Qin Emperor Shi Yu, but received a similar reply.

Both Immortal Soul stage cultivators instantly knew that regardless of whether it was the Qin or Zhou Emperor, both would not be able to come here anytime soon.

"My leader will not arrive in time to send you off so let me express my regrets on his behalf." said Vivant Joy Holy Man with much resentment and regret.

"There are a total of three peaks including Fangzhang Celestial Mountain which now belongs to the Great Zhou Empire. I'm still in a dilemma as to how to maximise the returns. But perhaps Brother Shi already has an idea?" said Lin Feng.

"In that case, pardon me for not waiting."

After finishing his line, Lin Feng picked up Zhu Yi, Li Yuanfang and the rest and headed away.

Vivant Joy Holy Man and Tidal Sword Elder sighed at the same time, bringing their men and trailing behind Lin Feng. They made sure to leave a huge gap between them and Lin Feng.

Without any amicable agreements, they both considered the option of obtaining the treasure by force. However, the lack of strong reinforcements decided that they could only shadow behind Lin Feng in a rather petty manner. But being petty was the least of their concern. They were not willing to go down without a fight.

It was rumored that the Green Glass Jade could help one locate the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. And this alone was enough reason for them to act. Even if they could not utilize the jade itself, they might be able to scavenge something off Lin Feng by following him.

Should Lin Feng chase them away, it would not be too late to scatter only then without a direct confrontation.

But if the Green Glass Jade was really a crucial puzzle piece to the entire matter, they could inform Shi Yu and Liang Pan at a moment's notice.

And they were not alone in this. Even the Red Dragon King and Solar Sage had gathered their men and followed closely behind silently.

Only the fellows from East Heaven's Gate stayed behind, unable to keep up with the pace of the immortal soul warriors.

After Shao Qingcheng's defeat, Lin Feng and company could not be bothered to even make things difficult for them anymore.

Shao Huayang's blood boiled at the thought of not being viewed importantly by Zhu Yi.

Still sore, Shao Huayang's mind was like the tumultuous ocean as she thought to herself, "I still can't believe that Mother was not his match?"

"She, an Immortal Soul stage cultivator had actually lost to a Nascent Soul stage cultivator and was forced to use the Diplomatic Immunity Certificate. I just can't believe it."

"Does this mean even if Zhu Yi remains stagnant and I advance to

become an immortal soul, I might still be unable to win him?"

"That bastard, lowly life form back at the mansion who was not allowed to train at all...Who would have expected him to become who he is today?"

Shao Huayang felt the ground below her spin as stars appeared before her eyes.

Her nascent soul, the little figure that looked like a four year old child, felt like a thin, fragile ceramic plate that was already cracked, prone to shattering at the slightest impact.

"Father must be able to beat him. Yes. He would also be nothing in Grandfather's eyes...the Elders and the warriors of the Zhou empire would also be able to do the same as well and...and..Mother!"

"Mother was unprepared and caught off guard. If they met again, she would be well prepared...Today's outcome would never happen again."

She shook her head, taking awhile to regain her composure. Blood trickled from her nose and eyes from her intense thinking and self-reassurance.

"But I don't see how I can beat him... Unless he doesn't improve and I continue my ascent to the Immortal Soul stage...but how likely was that?"

All the East Heaven's Gate's disciples cast their gaze away from the crestfallen Shao Huayang. No one knew what would happen if their words triggered her wrath. She was after all, more unpredictable than the weather.

But they shared the same sentiments towards Shao Qingcheng's defeat to Zhu Yi, a mere Nascent Soul stage cultivator.

Some of them felt that their understanding world had been changed forever and that their life had been a lie so far.



Even those who followed Vivant Joy Holy Man and Tidal Sword Elder felt uneasy. This shocking news would take time to digest, and would shape the Divine Lands forever, even affecting the Barren Expanses.

No matter whether it was a coincidence or not, it had been ages since a Nascent Soul stage cultivator had defeated an Immortal Soul stage cultivator.

The thought of this had shaken everyone present.

Over the years, word had spread over all of the Great Celestial World, including the demons, of Lin Feng's prowess and that of his disciples. Not only were his powers incredible, but his four disciples, Zhu Yi, Xiao Yan, Wang Lin and Shi Tianhao were all geniuses that only surfaced once in every eon.

And it was even harder to believe that such talented people existed all at the same time, and studied under the same master as well.

Initially, the East Heaven's Gate was ready to let the world know of their name and emerge from secrecy. But who would have expected that in the end it was Lin Feng's Celestial Sect of Wonders who would make a name for themselves from their reappearance.

It was as though their reappearance was an excellent stepping stone.

In all fairness, Shao Qingcheng was a first grade warrior. With the Yang Heaven Lamp, she could rival most Immortal Soul elders, including the likes of Tidal Sword Elder, Vivant Joy Holy Man, Red Dragon King and Solar Sage. They would all have to admit that they might not be her match.

But her defeat to a mere Nascent Soul stage cultivator left them deep in thought.

On the other hand, it was Zhu Yi himself who did not think much about his victory.

For a cosmic form to triumph over an immortal soul, huge luck had to be involved. It was so rare that it was almost unheard of in the recent years. Thus, it stirred the many Immortal Soul stage cultivators who were present. And needless to say, the cultivators that had yet to attain the Immortal Soul stage were even more shocked after witnessing this incredibly rare sight.

But for Zhu Yi, it was just ridding himself of his demons. There was no pride whatsoever in his victory. Besides, his master had just demonstrated such a feat a few days before that.

Li Yuanfang, Jieyu and Bai Guang also offered their words of praise, though not as exaggerated as the others.

"Master, they're following us," said Li Yuanguang.

"Let them be," replied Lin Feng.

"The Green Glass Jade is only a clue to the celestial mountain, it does not mean that having the jade will get us the mountain."

"If the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was so easily obtained, the Golden Hill Holy Man would not have left the Green Glass Jade behind," continued Lin Feng.

"But we can take a look at the returns from Zhu Yi's win. The rewards seem to be rather bountiful," smiled Lin Feng.

Lin Feng proceeded to take out the Scroll of the Blood River. Inside the scroll was a black robe that struggled to escape the grip of the Blood River Primordial Water.

Zhu Yi interjected, "This robe's defensive ability is certainly not ordinary. When I was at the intermediate nascent soul stage, I may not have pulled through without the Essay of the Sages' golden bridge. And I have a gut feeling that its capabilities are more than what meets the eye."

"Of course," replied Lin Feng. "This is the You Heaven Robe. It has a very big reputation."

Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang looked at each other, "So this is one of the Nine Treasures of the Heavenly Gate?"

Legend has it that back when the Heavenly Gate was at its prime, apart from the destiny treasure - Great Heavenly Wheels, the next nine most powerful magic treasures were the Nine Treasures of the Heaven's Gate.

In the Center, Heavenly Imperial Jade, Mahayana class treasure.

In the East, Cang Heaven Spell Blade, Mahayana class treasure.

In the North-East, Min Heaven Banner, Metaplasia class treasure.

In the North, Xuan Heaven Seal, Mahayana class treasure.

In the North-West, You Heaven Robe, Metaplasia class treasure.

In the West, Yuan Heaven Emerald Needle, Mahayana class treasure.

In the South-West, Zhu Heaven Pagoda, Metaplasia class treasure.

In the South, Yan Heaven Crucible, Mahayana class treasure.

In the South-East, Yang Heaven Lamp, Metaplasia class treasure.

However, after the destruction of Heaven's Gate, many of the treasures were slowly stolen and soon forgotten.

Lin Feng smiled and continued, "The Great Void Sect's Yan Mingyue's Heavenly Imperial Jade was the pinnacle of the Mahayana treasures. When the Nine Heavenly Swords were absent, it was considered the number one treasure below the Great Heavenly Wheels. But during the revolution that overthrew the Emperor of Violence, it was harmed and fell to Metaplasia class, after which no one knows how it ended up with the Great Void Sect."

He gently stroked a finger down the robe, "If I remember correctly, the original You Heaven Robe was destroyed in that fight, both soul and body were disintegrated. So, that leaves this to

be a copy and not the original. The immortal soul cultivators from the East Heaven's Gate probably followed ancient scriptures in crafting this replica. Even so, it's still considered a marvelous treasure."

A soft moan emanated from the robe. It was the voice that conversed with Yin Cangchen, but gentler and younger.

Lin Feng added in, "It's the lamp that Zhu Yi brought down. It's indeed one of the nine treasures, just that it has fallen to the Gestation level."

"Robe or lamp, they are both Zhu Yi's spoils of war." laughed Lin Feng.

Zhu Yi nodded and replied, "Master, can the Green Glass Jade really help us locate Yingzhou Celestial Mountain?"

Lin Feng tapped the scroll once more, and out flew the piece of jade.

## Chapter 754: A Voracious Appetite

---

The Green Glass Jade flew out of the the Scroll of the Blood River, coming face to face with Lin Feng who managed a smile. It shook for a while, then a bright middle-aged male voice came from within, "Excellent powers from both master and student, a nascent soul triumphing over an immortal soul. A rare sight since ancient times."

Lin Feng replied plainly, "I am Lin Feng of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, and we've come for the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea."

The voice replied, "I am the Green Glass Jade Soul, the original soul of the magic treasure." He then continued, "If you're looking for the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, I'm more than willing to help, I just ask that you leave me atop that mountain in the event that you've managed to gain control over the celestial mountain."

"Truth to be told, there's a spring on that mountain that is fresh and sweet. I've bathed in its water for a thousand years before this, and almost attained the status of a Metaplasia treasure. Unfortunately I had to leave the mountain...Hence, I wish for your assistance," Green Glass Jade Soul continued.

Zhu Yi, Li Yuanfang and company's eyes lit up at the same time, "There's really such a spring?"

A Gestation magic treasure could attain the Metaplasia state by cultivating on its own but it would be an uphill task that would take more than ten of thousands of years without the opportune encounters, especially so without a wielder.

Lin Feng inquired, "How can you help me to find the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain?"

Green Glass Jade Soul replied, "I may have left the mountains for a long time, but I can still carry out the Retrospective

Reconstruction Spell to find my way back there because of the thousand years which I had spent in the spring on the mountain. It may not give me the exact location, but at least a sense of the general direction."

After a brief pause, he continued, "My previous wielder, Golden Hill Holy Man mastered the Golden Dome Restoration Technique. I was cultivated from the powers of this technique, and hence continued my own cultivation in the same ways as well."

Green Glass Jade Stand's ability laid in restoration. It was able to negate an opponent's attack to different extents, depending on the strength of the attack, by turning the power from the attack back into pure energy.

It was also able to reverse the damage dealt to existing objects, though the degree of restoration varied, and was not applicable to living beings. As such, he could not bring someone back to life.

And the treasure would leave some trace behind, somehow or another, on anyone or anything which had interacted with it.

In ancient times, despite being only an early stage immortal soul, many sought for the help of the Golden Hill Holy Man and the Green Glass Jade Stand. They came with requests to restore objects of find things and places.

Golden Hill Holy Man had faith in his learning and was bent on searching for the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea, but ultimately perished within, his Way of the Golden Hill lost together with him.

Many in the Divine Plains tried to fight for his Golden Dome Restoration Technique, but it was ultimately lost from the Divine Plains after years of fighting and arguments.

Green Glass Soul said, "For your avatar to have such power, I bet you are one to be reckoned with. I'm willing to refine and work for you so long as you raise me to become Metaplasia level again."

Lin Feng replied, "If you're willing to learn, I'm more than

willing to accept you."

"I'm most willing to do so," replied Green Glass Jade Soul.

"You can start by telling me what happened in the Ying Seas." said Lin Feng. "I've time to spare, so be as detailed as possible, including what happened to the Golden Hill Holy Man."

"One revolution around the mountains spans up to four thousand miles. Its flora and fauna has magical properties. Amongst them is the spring at the foot of the mountain in which I gather my strength, the Jade Nectar Spring."

"There are many complicated formations on the mountain, but they are not left by men, but by divine forces. These formations give the Ying Seas their magical potential and danger."

Lin Feng and his disciples listened intently to every detail, playing close attention to the ancient formations that were created by Nature along with the mountains.

Apparently, according to Green Glass Soul, these formations were so complicated that Golden Hill Holy Man got lost in them and perished within. Then, the Green Glass Jade Stand was also entrapped and lost within the formation for more than ten thousand years.

It took many occasions when the mountain appeared in the Divine Plains did the formations weaken with the exploration from generations of cultivators, giving Green Glass Soul the chance to escape. He subsequently escaped and landed in the Jade Nectar Spring which nourished him.

But after a thousand years, changes happened to the mountain. That was when Green Glass Soul was thrown out of the spring and fell off the mountain.

The fall was devastating, not only removing him from the mountain, but also hurting him in the process. It was only recently that he had began to recover from the injuries and reappear in the

Divine Plains.

He reminisced the spring for many years, and dreamed of returning to the mountain. But along the way, the illusion from an island north-west of the Ying Seas entrapped him and exposed his location, inviting searches from Shao Qingcheng, Red Dragon King, Vivant Joy Holy Man and the others.

Lin Feng nodded and smiled, "Yuanfang, what do you think?"

"Based on what Green Glass Soul elder has mentioned, the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain has been under attack many times and its formations are weakened."

"But it has since been thousands of years since he left, thus, it won't be easy to predict the current circumstances."

Li Yuanfang was a person meticulous with his words and would never introduce speculative terms in his comments. There were no 'perhaps' or 'maybe' in his words.

"But one thing for sure," his tone taking a turn, "If the formations were not left by men, but created by divine forces, then whatever happens to the formations will have an impact on the mountain as well."

"Since the formations are getting weaker, I posit that the mountain itself would get stronger."

Zhu Yi added, "I agree. But such increase in power may not appear solely in the strength of the mountain."

"It might be that the flora and fauna's magical properties have increased, or that the Jade Nectar Spring's nourishing powers have increased."

Li Yuanfang nodded in agreement.

Lin Feng added, "Or it may have grown in intellect."

Everyone paused and pondered about such a possibility. Even the Green Glass Soul kept quiet as he went into deep thoughts.



"On the island, we might have to rely on your experience," said Lin Feng towards Green Glass Soul. He agreed without any hesitation, and he allowed Lin Feng to refine him.

Lin Feng activated his powers, and streaks of golden light shone from the green jade, forming a light screen.

The image of a humongous celestial mountain could vaguely be seen on the light screen.. Although it was smaller than the Fangzhang celestial mountain, its powers did not pale in comparison.

The screen shattered and the light dissipated. But they did not vanish completely. Instead, they formed a golden line that seemed to extend forever beyond the limits of the eye.

Lin Feng and the rest nodded and smiled. The Green Glass Jade Stand was really the key to finding the mountain.

The sneaky group that was following behind grew excited as Lin Feng seemed to have found something. But the sight of how Lin Feng had stopped in his tracks took away all the excitement and joy from these groups of people. Lin Feng turned around to look at them. It was his usual unreadable expression.

Tidal Sword Elder, Vivant Joy Holy Man, Solar Sage and Red Dragon King stopped their men from advancing, looking at Lin Feng with a forced smile in their best attempt to mask their helplessness.

"Looking for the mountain is no easy feat. Even if one finds it, one may not be able to control it. The more clues we have, the more options we have. The more hands there are in finding it, the higher the chances of success. I welcome all to join in the search, but you will have to exchange clues of equal importance." said Lin Feng to the embarrassed crowd.

Vivant Joy Holy Man and the other elders looked at each other and shared a similar thought, "This Lin Feng is a really demanding

person!"

Among the crowd, there was not a single person who dared to claim that the mountain belonged to him. In fact, there was likely no one who would dare to take on the mountain all by himself.

Thus, it sounded like a good plan to pool all the clues they had and to combine their forces. Being greedy and not joining in might mean that one might totally miss out on the chance of finding such a treasure.

It was said that whoever controlled the three celestial mountains could control the whole Ying Sea. But practically speaking, it was beyond difficult for one person to have all three mountains, especially with everyone watching from the side and breathing down each other's neck. Even the Zhou Emperor, who already had Fangzhang Celestial Mountains, had a slim chance at obtaining all of them.

But looking at the calm Lin Feng, the elders could not form any reasonable doubt towards his idea.

As the crowd took its time to consider their options, Tidal Sword Elder decisively spoke up using the voice projection method, "In the southern region of the Ying Sea, someone had claimed to have found traces of the Penglai Celestial Mountain. Therefore Zhou Emperor and Qin Emperor Shi Yu had decided to check it out for themselves."

Vivant Joy Holy Man seemed to have been slower than Tidal Sword Elder as he could now no longer share the same concurring information which he had received earlier. concurred with the information provided by Tidal Sword Elder. Vivant Joy Holy Man felt like kicking Tidal Sword Elder in the guts.

Vivant Joy Holy Man took a deep breath and then used his voice projection to communicate to Lin Feng, "In the same southern region, Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, which now belongs to Zhou Emperor, had also surfaced."

"Oh?" Lin Feng was processing the information at hand.

Red Dragon King added in, "I don't have any clues in the search. What I do know is a trick or two on how to unravel the restrictive barriers of Penglai Celestial Mountain. Perhaps you would be interested."

"Oh? I'm all ears." replied Lin Feng.

Red Dragon King began, "Everyone knows that the Penglai Celestial Mountain is surrounded by sea, and the humongous tidal waves are the primary obstacles to reaching the mountain. The waves are said to follow the mountain wherever it goes, but I know of a way to counter it."

# Chapter 755: The Gift of the Gap

---

After the exploration by generations of powerful cultivators, the veil over the three celestial mountains was beginning to fade, and they laid in wait for a fortunate passer-by to control them.

Amongst the three, Penglai Celestial Mountain had a sea on its own. The waters were murky and dark, giving it the name 'Dark Sea'. There was no wind but yet there were powerful tides that surged up to over hundred feet high and moved with the mountain, protecting it wherever it went.

This Dark Sea was different from the Netherworld Sea and its real name was Vast Black Sea.

The intensity of its blackness was comparable to the darkness of the sky above. Its vastness was comparable to that of the void battleground where an ocean of space exists. Hence, it was given the name Vast Black Sea.

For the common folk who wanted to access Penglai Celestial Mountain, the Dark Sea was an effective deterrent.

Even for the Immortal Soul Third Level cultivators who tried bashing their way through, the pressure from the void of the Ying Sea would remain as a substantial challenge.

These obstacles applied to the other two mountains as well.

All three mountains were protected by some divine power. But just as the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain was subdued by the Zhou Emperor, the formations around Yingzhou Celestial Mountains were getting weaker, and people had found ways to cross the Dark Sea.

This amazed Lin Feng. The collective power of mankind was overwhelming. This was like a challenging game where while individuals failed, the combined abilities and intellect of additional players who joined in the fray would allow the group to solve one

of nature's greatest puzzles.

As generation after generation of people came and passed, they solved the puzzles and had new breakthroughs. The final breakthrough seemed to be on its way for this difficult puzzle.

Logically speaking, even if Lin Feng and crew did not succeed in this attempt, it would not be long before someone actually gained control over them.

But it was difficult to ascertain yet who would have the final laugh.

Lin Feng looked at Red Dragon King and said, "If your methods really work, then I shall allow you to follow."

After all, one had to find the mountain even before conquering the seas.

Red Dragon King replied, "In actual fact, this method has been tested and proven by my clan's Purple Sea Dragon King thousand of years ago."

"But the Hades Emperor's sudden arrival resulted in Purple Sea Dragon King losing contact with the Penglai Celestial Mountain, allowing the Dark Sea to regenerate and conceal the mountain thereafter."

"It was a lose-lose situation even for Hades Emperor," Red Dragon King continued with a sigh.

A thought flashed through Lin Feng's head. But he showed no expression and only nodded in agreement.

Red Dragon King added, "As the leader of the Celestial Sect, you ought to know that in the Ying Sea there exist a Space Monster that entraps anyone who enters. It will then proceed to kill them and feed on their energy."

Lin Feng nodded. He had encountered such creatures before and even slayed a few.

"These monsters can move freely through the mysterious space around the mountains, and could even swim in the Dark Sea. Purple Sea Dragon King knew this and captured thousands of these monsters, collecting their blood and soul and used it to pave a way to the Penglai Celestial Mountain." said Red Dragon King.

Lin Feng considered his words for a moment and ascertained that what the Red Dragon King had shared followed a sound logical before replying, "You may follow."

Solar Sage did not know what the other three immortal soul elders said to Lin Feng due to the usage of voice projection. But from their communication, there seemed to be nothing to hide, and from their expressions of delight, they must have provided substantial information for Lin Feng to allow them to follow him.

Solar Sage had his doubts. He had some information from Golden Roc Grand Sage, but did not know if it was worth sharing with Lin Feng.

He looked once more at the golden thread created by the Green Glass Soul before deciding to swallow his pride and proceed to share with Lin Feng, "The Zhou Emperor might have the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, but it does not mean that their control over the mountain is firm."

"The shadows of dragons that float above the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain were created by the infiltration of countless dragons eons ago. Their attempt to penetrate the defenses left a serious dent in the defensive mechanism of the celestial mountain."

"The Zhou Emperor probably leveraged on those weaknesses to come up with a strategy to break through," said Solar Sage.

He continued, "If what Master Lin said about the dragon shadows being the same as before, then perhaps the Zhou Emperor himself has yet to mend those gaps in the defenses."

"To integrate the old and new defenses together would be an

arduous process. The Zhou Emperor Liang Pan and the Marquis of Xuanji Zhu Hongwu did not have much time. Relying on the split of Immortal Stage Level 1 Liang Pan would take forever to complete the refining process."

After listening, and as Lin Feng recalled his encounter with the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, he realized things started falling into place.

Lin Feng's lips pursed into a smile as he faced the onlooking crowd. "I'll be making my move soon. Follow as you wish," he said as he gathered his disciples and headed in the direction of the golden thread.

Vivant Joy Holy Man and the others could only force out a bitter smile.

Lin Feng had used a single piece of information to exchange for four. A very worthwhile trade indeed.

This feat was only possible firstly because Lin Feng himself was powerful and credible; secondly because he possessed the Green Glass Jade Soul, the most valuable and trustworthy piece of information.

That alone made everyone else willing parties in the exchange.

They could only laugh bitterly. Lin Feng had permitted them to follow, but he was not about to act as a guide. Anyone who lost their way only had themselves to blame.

Li Yuanfang was not bothered by the crowd behind, he turned to Lin Feng and asked, "Master, are we going to focus on thinking of a way to subdue the Ying Sea Celestial Mountains?"

From Li Yuanfang's perspective, it was worthwhile to focus on doing one thing at a time.

Lin Feng calmly replied, "Fret not, I have a plan."

Lin Feng knew that he had a trump card up his sleeve that would

aid him tremendously in his attempt to acquire the Celestial Mountains - Big Luo and the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl.

Therefore, his main focus was to first locating the mountains. That first step was of utmost importance.

Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang looked at each other and knew. If Lin Feng had a plan, they would definitely trust his judgment.

As they rushed towards the Celestial Mountain, Lin Feng relayed the information to Xiao Yan and the rest. Despite also being in the Ying Sea region, communicating with them was still difficult. But it was better than not having any communication.

As Xiao Yan and the rest were in the north-east region of the Ying Sea, Lin Feng instructed them to head in the same direction as them.

At the same time, he helped Zhu Yi to cultivate the Yang Heaven Lamp and the You Heaven Robe.

The amount of effort required to suppress and refine treasures were completely different. Of a magic treasure was willing to be refined, it simply meant that it was willing to bow down to the refiner.

The You Heaven Robe was amateur and more cooperative towards Lin Feng and Zhu Yi. It was obviously shocked by the powerful methods of Lin Feng and Zhu Yi.

The Yang Heaven Lamp, on the other hand, having spent a long time with Shao Qingcheng, and having once been a Metaplasia class treasure from ancient times, it had seen much of the world and formed its own opinions.

Even facing the Blood River Primordial Water, which could pollute its soul, it did not give in.

"Yang Heaven Lamp, you have a long history together with the Emperor of Violence. You are a treasure with a conscience and are aware of what goes on around you," shouted Zhu Yi.



"The Zhou Emperor wants to restore the Emperors of Man, but we all know that the time for that is gone and past."

"Heaven's Gate was the first to step out against the idea of the Emperors of Man, but here you are aiding the faction that supports the idea. And you call this loyalty? You dare to call this be faithful to your values and principles?"

"They are just thieves who have learnt their powers but not their ways. They behave nothing like the real Heaven's Gate's people, and yet you are willing to collude with them?"

The Yang Heaven's Lamp fell silent, its flame flickering with its thoughts.

Zhu Yi changed his tone, "Looking at your present condition, you don't look much better off than after your injury. I can only conclude that the people from the East Heaven's Gate did not pay much attention to you."

"Perhaps it's because of your differences in ideals? Or is it because of some concerns that we might not be aware of?"

The flames flickered once again, but made no sound.

Zhu Yi continued, "If you trust me, I can help you and heal you. You can observe what I do. I just have to say that the beliefs and actions of the East Heaven's Gate are not representative of the entire Heaven's Gate. They might have inherited their techniques and cultivation but definitely not the values and spirit."

"The Heaven's Gate may or may not return, that I cannot say. But one thing is for sure, the East Heaven's Gate only spoils their reputation." said Zhu Yi.

Lin Feng glanced at the flickering flames and the lamp's softening attitude, and could not help but shake his head and smile as he looked at Zhu Yi.

"Zhu Yi does have the gift of the gab." thought Lin Feng.

Mount Yujing, from afar, added in, "My job here is complete."

"In that case, I'll be heading to the Ying Sea as well!"

# Chapter 756: Entering the Projection

---

In the void above Mount Kunlun, at the peak of Mount Yujing, Lin Feng sat cross-legged on the crown of the Black Heavenly Treasure Tree. He looked at a hovering spot of light in front of him and smiled: "While the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea revealed themselves more than a year earlier than I had expected, it is alright."

He rose to his feet and with a slight tremor, Mount Yujing started moving across the void towards the East Sea.

Meanwhile in the Ying Sea, Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar, following the path indicated by the Green Glass Jade Stand, brought Zhu Yi and all to find Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

As they traveled, the group interrogated their captives. Neither the You Heaven Robe nor its previous owner, Yi Cangchen, dared to hide the truth, telling the group everything they knew.

Even though Lin Feng did not know the art of making Unholy Marionettes with River Styx Primordial Water nor did he have the Heavenly Gods-Sealing Banner with him, he still possessed the means to get the truth out of them.

"From my knowledge, when Heaven's Gate sect fell in the past, tribulation befell the Nine Treasures of the Heavenly Gate. All nine magic treasures except the Cang Heaven Spell Blade of the East and the Zhu Heaven Pagoda of the South-West sustained severe damages. The Min Heaven Banner of the North-East, the You Heaven Robe of the North-West, the Yuan Heaven Emerald Needle of the West and the Yan Heaven Crucible of the South were completely destroyed." Lin Feng asked: "How many magic treasures have the East Heaven's Gate collected?"

Trapped under Zhu Yi's Great Boundaries of the Celestial Light and Darkness Mandala, Yi Cangchen is fully aware that if he decides to hide or distort the truth he will immediately perish from

the simulated Destruction of Heaven and Earth by the Mandala.

In fact, Yi Cangchen is not a reckless person. He spoke ill of Meng Bingyun deliberately to enrage Zhu Yi so that Zhu Yi will stop and attack him. This way, he figured, as long as he can defend one wave of Zhu Yi's assault he would have bought enough time for Shao Qingcheng and his men to catch up with them, leaving Zhu Yi with no way of escape.

Unfortunately for him, Lin Feng arrived before Shao Qingcheng and Zhu Yi turned out a lot stronger than he had expected.

"I have to save my life first before I can figure out a way to escape, and only after freeing myself will it be practical to think of revenge and the like." After calm considerations, Yi Cangchen replied truthfully: "The East Heaven's Gate had acquired the Xuan Heaven Seal of the North, Zhu Heaven Pagoda of the South-West, and..."

He looked at Zhu Yi: "... the Yang Heaven Lamp of the South-East."

"Moreover, the Yuan Heaven Emerald Needle of the West was not completely destroyed: its treasure spirit had perished, leaving but an empty shell behind, which we have acquired as well. After restoration, the treasure spirit had been reborn and is now in the Gestation Realm."

"While the You Heaven Robe of the North-West and the Yan Heaven Crucible of the South had indeed been destroyed, Elders from our sect reforged them using ancient techniques, obtaining two magical treasures of the Gestation Realm, one of which is my You Heaven Robe.

As he spoke, Yi Cangchen felt like vomiting blood. He was a rising star within East Heaven's Gate that people looked highly upon, which was why the sect gave him a magic treasure to protect himself from harm for his trip to the Ying Sea despite being only at the Advanced Nascent Soul Stage. While the You Heaven Robe is

not a Primordial magic treasure like Shao Qingcheng's Yang Heaven Lamp, it is nevertheless powerful.

By right, with his level of mastery and the You Heaven Robe, he would even be able to defeat some Cultivators of the Immortal Stage or at least escape from them safely. Who would expect him to face the combined power of Zhu Yi and the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel that instantly breached his defense and then captured him? Even the You Heaven Robe had been taken away from him.

Lin Feng nods: "So, the Zhu Heaven Pagoda is in the hands of your sect as well?"

Yi Cangchen replied: "Yes, the East Heaven's Gate Sect resides in its Alternate World."

The Zhu Heaven Pagoda was a magic treasure of the Metaplasia Realm which, similar to the Hidden Dragon Teapot and the Immortal Royal Flag, spawns an Alternate World within it. It is capable of absorbing energy from the moon and the stars and is one of the few magic treasures among the Nine Treasures of the Heavenly Gate untouched by the tribulation.

Had the Heaven's Gate not fallen at the end of the Primordial Era but survived until today, this magic treasure could very likely have advanced into the Mahayana Realm.

What caught Liu Feng and Zhu Yi's attention was that the magic treasure is capable of hiding inside the void, making it next to impossible for outsiders to find it. This was why the East Heaven's Gate highly valued the acquisition of this magic treasure and used it as a base for the sect. Thanks to the Zhu Heaven Pagoda, the East Heaven's Gate was able to maintain a low profile and rarely could anyone gather more information about the sect.

To a certain extent the Zhu Heaven Pagoda, which the East Heaven's Gate currently resides in, is similar to Lin Feng's Mount Yujing. Nevertheless, the Zhu Heaven Pagoda is inferior to Mount

Yujing given that it is unable to traverse the void easily, making it much more predictable. Wherever the Zhu Heaven Pagoda hides inside the void, it reappears at the same place.

"The Xuan Heaven Seal is held by my master, the leader of our sect, Holy Man Shao Dongtian." Yi Cangchen continues, "But the Xuan Heaven Seal was badly damaged by the tribulation as well and it fell from the Mahayana Realm to the Metaplasia Realm."

"Our Sect has devoted a large proportion of our efforts to restoring this magic treasure, but owing to the severity of its damages, we could not restore it to the Mahayana Realm even till now."

Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang looked at each other and shook their heads. Jieyu and Baiguang, the dragon couple who hailed from the Dragon Roost of the Great Void Sect, could not help but sigh.

Aside from the Great Heavenly Wheels, the magic treasure of the Destiny Realm that is capable of suppressing the Heavens, and the Nine Heavenly Swords that only existed on paper, the Heaven's Gate of the past had five magic treasures of the Mahayana Realm: the Heavenly Imperial Jade, the Cang Heaven Spell Blade, the Xuan Heaven Seal, the Yuan Heaven Emerald Needle and the Yan Heaven Crucible. These five treasures of the Mahayana Realm alone are equal to five Immortal Soul Stage Level three cultivators, let alone the numerous high leveled cultivators from within the Heaven's Gate sect itself.

In the Primordial Era, when Heaven's Gate was at the peak of its glory, the sect was unquestionably immensely powerful, an equal to the Great Void Sect at that time.

Lin Feng asked another question: "So your sect had reforged the Yan Heaven Crucible as well? How powerful is it compared to the Yan Heaven Crucible of the past?"

While the strongest of the Nine Treasures of the Heavenly Gate was undoubtedly the Heavenly Imperial Jade, but to Lin Feng, the

Yan Heaven Crucible is even more valuable.

From the perspective of people like Lin Feng, Yan Nanlai, Xin Longsheng, Liang Pan and Shi Yu, the Yan Heaven Crucible ought to be ranked first among the Nine Treasures of the Heavenly Gate.

In a way, one could even see the Yan Heaven Crucible as a magic treasure of equal value to the Great Heavenly Wheels, and the combined power of both magic treasures led to the glorious albeit short-lived prime of the Heaven's Gate Sect.

If the Heaven's Gate had not been destroyed in the Primordial Era, the sect would only grow stronger as time passes. This is because the Yan Heaven Crucible is one of the strongest magic treasures for the cultivation of elixirs and medicine in the human history of the Divine Lands, second only to the Crucible of the Divine Lands, the magic treasure of Destiny Realm owned by Emperor Xia.

When the Heaven's Gate was at its prime, the Yan Heaven Crucible was able to churn out astronomical amounts of elixirs in a day. A diverse range of powerful elixirs had been endlessly produced and provided to disciples of Heaven's Gate to supplement their own cultivation.

While massive amounts of resources may not be sufficient to produce master cultivators, it is able to produce many adept cultivators. As the number of cultivators grew, the chance of producing master cultivators increases as well.

Of course, the cultivators themselves must possess a strong spiritual resolve as well. This is why Lin Feng was able to use copious amount of resources to help Wang Lin build a top-tier Spiritual Altar when Wang Lin was at the Foundation Establishment Stage. With the Cloud Forest Tree to supply Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and all during their cultivation, they too can progress swiftly and not be bogged down by resource constraints.

Yi Cangchen says: "While the reforged Yan Heaven Crucible has

similar effects, it is only of Metaplasia Realm and incomparable to the Mahayana Realm magic treasure it was in the past."

He paused slightly and added: "The Yan Heaven Crucible is even weaker than historical records of the Yan Heaven Crucible of the past when it was at the Metaplasia Realm."

Zhu Yi replied dismissively: "Even so, the Yan Heaven Crucible is pretty remarkable."

They knew from the earlier encounter that there are four cultivators of the Immortal Soul Stage within the East Heaven's Gate, including Shao Qingcheng whom they have just encountered. Among the four, Shao Dongtian, Yi Cangchen's master and Shao Qingcheng's father just reached the Immortal Soul Third Level not long ago. Overall the East Heaven's Gate is stronger than many sects in the Divine Lands, and it must have taken lots of resolve to maintain a low profile until now.

After binding the Yang Heaven Lamp, the You Heaven Robe and Yi Cangchen securely, the group pressed on.

Zhu Yi suddenly remembered: "Master, when we first entered the Ying Seas, Mr. Miao left us after telling us that we should go our separate ways without leaving a voice-projection crystal behind. When Sixth Junior reminded him, he just walked off as if he never heard us. Now that we have news of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountains we could not reach him via any means."

Lin Feng said: "Let him go his own way. He was looking for the Semi-round Jade Disc which I heard was exclusive to the Yingzhou Celestial Mountains. Once he receives news of the Celestial Mountains, he will go and seek it out himself. Even if he fails, you can help him keep an eye out for the Semi-round Jade Disc if you can ascend the Celestial Mountain."

Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang nodded in agreement.

The path indicated by the Green Glass Jade Stand came to an



end, but the Celestial Mountain is nowhere in sight. Everything remained shrouded in a thick fog.

But the group knew that the path is right. They could clearly sense a large number of projections, more than any other areas in the Ying Sea that were at the same time more powerful and discrete. While the group had sensed many projections, there is little doubt that many more projections remained undetected.

Lin Feng, moreover, possessed a more reliable evidence compared to the group's speculations. His Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl started flashing a purple light.

The flash of light had a similar intensity compared to the time when they approached the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain. Lin Feng mused: "The flash is not as intense as the first time. It seems like the first time it flashed I must have unknowingly came very close to the hidden Penglai Celestial Mountain."

"The Royal Hades Region must have a shared connection with Penglai Celestial Mountain. The Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl reacted when it approached Fangzhang and Yingzhou Celestial Mountain well, which should be due to the shared properties of the three Mountains of the Ying Sea."

After carefully surveying the area, Liu Feng's expressions turned more serious.

Zhu Yi, who stood beside him, wore the same expression. He looked at Liu Feng: "Master, it seems that the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain has been enveloped by an enormous projection. We need to enter the projection and only after we break the projection from within can we finally reach Yingzhou Celestial Mountain."

Lin Feng nodded in agreement: "Yes that's right. Let's go." He walked towards the projection.

# Chapter 757: The Albatross Around Lin Feng's Neck

---

Lin Feng flew up from Jieyu's back and started hovering in mid-air. He looked left and right before reaching out to touch the seemingly empty void in front of him.

In the next moment, a stream of wave-like light circles expanded outwards from the center of Lin Feng's palm.

A giant sphere of light appeared in front of Lin Feng following the expansion of the light circles. The volume of this sphere was immense, and looked like a tiny star when one was in close contact with it.

Lin Feng laughed and said, "Alright, let's go in."

Zhu Yi, Li Yuanfang, Jieyu and Baiguang nodded their hands and followed behind Lin Feng into the sphere of light.

This sphere of light was a gargantuan spatial illusion. As Lin Feng entered the sphere, he turned around and suddenly realized that Zhu Yi and the others were nowhere to be seen.

"Fine. Let me see what's so special and mystical about your spatial illusion." Lin Feng placed his hands behind his back and sauntered forward.

Everything in front of him was a patch of blinding white light and nothing could be seen. Lin Feng was not worried as he strolled forward step by step.

All of a sudden, the white light began to dissipate and a human figure appeared in the middle of it and walked up to Lin Feng – it was Yang Qing, who was originally in Xiao Yan's company.

Yang Qing seemed a little anxious as he greeted Lin Feng. "Master, it doesn't seem like I'll get any better... What should I do?"

Lin Feng watched Yang Qing in silence for a long while.

Yang Qing became even more jittery at Lin Feng's response – or rather, his lack of it. A look of guilt and remorse came over him as he lowered his head to avoid Lin Feng's gaze.

"Is this a projection of the hidden worries in my heart?" Lin Feng shook his head faintly and laughed as he muttered under his breath. "This illusion is interesting."

Lin Feng completely ignored Yang Qing in front of him and looked up to survey his surroundings. "If I wallow in my own worries and am unable to correct my mentality and rediscover my motivations, then I may be stuck inside forever. This illusion is going to start corrupting and eroding my soul as well, to the point where my soul is eventually destroyed."

"Heh, interesting." Lin Feng turned back towards Yang Qing.

Yang Qing just looked so lost, as if he was about to collapse completely.

This was not because Lin Feng was worried that Yang Qing was lagging behind and he would never display the same amount of talent and success as his other disciples, and neither was it because Lin Feng despised Yang Qing. What Lin Feng was truly worried about was that if Yang Qing remained in his prolonged state of equivocal noncommitment and uncertainty of mind, he could eventually destroy himself.

Yang Qing was about to experience the same awkwardness when Wang Lin first became Lin Feng's disciple all those years ago. Every single one of his seniors and juniors were already making a name for themselves out there – everyone but him. He was the only one that was the 'ordinary' one, and it felt as if Yang Qing was blemishing his master's name and only dragging on his coattails.

Wang Lin resisted such pressure with raw willpower and resilience and eventually caught up with the others in some sense.

However, the mantle was now passed to Yang Qing. If this continued for too long, it was hard to say whether or not Yang Qing would eventually attain success himself.

In truth, even though Yang Qing could not be said to be extraordinarily resilient, he was already a lot better than his younger self.

From Lin Feng's perspective, if he ended up in the same spot as Wang Lin all those years ago, he was not a hundred percent confident that Yang Qing could make it out alive.

It was this deep concern that caused this projection to appear in front of Lin Feng at this very moment.

"Looks like it's time I let you out into the world to experience the rains and storms. You will never find your own path if I'm always protecting you." Lin Feng did not refer to him as his disciple – he was not even looking at the Yang Qing in front of him as he spoke.

His gaze was cast over Yang Qing's shoulder towards the far horizon and it seemed as if he was talking to himself.

Yang Qing lowered his head even more as he heard Lin Feng's words. "Then... Then what if I run into some great trouble outside and suffer a psychological trauma that I can't recover from? What if I die? I will be lost forever..."

This was not a true reflection of Yang Qing's mentality, but simply another projection of Lin Feng's anxiety.

"Only this way will you grow up, mature and become truly great. Only this way will you experience the most exciting moments of your life. This is my real role as your master, instead of protecting you like a little bird. I don't want to end up domesticating you – I don't want to see the eagle become a chicken that can't soar through the skies."

"Death and psychological trauma are real possibilities. But nothing in this world is free and you can't get anything without

putting in effort. If you want to achieve success, then you must have the courage to experience risk and take failure in your stride. The only thing you can do is maximize your chances of success one way or another."

Lin Feng continued softly, "I leave it up to you to choose. I trust you won't disappoint me."

Yang Qing finally raised his head looked Lin Feng in the eye with a warm smile on his face. "Yes, master."

Before his voice dropped, the figure before Lin Feng vanished into thin air.

Lin Feng was still expressionless as he continued forward. Not before long, another figure appeared in front of him – it was Zhu Yi, who was just with him not too long ago.

Zhu Yi wore a serious expression as he greeted Lin Feng just like Yang Qing did. "Master, I think you're showing favoritism towards some disciples."

"Oh, why do you say that?" Lin Feng responded with a question as Zhu Yi quickly answered, "When Third Junior was in the Qi cultivation and later on in the foundation establishment stage, you did everything you could to help him. You tried your best to find resources for his ascension and you were extremely attentive towards his state of mind and his direction. You gave him advice every so often to reduce the burden on his shoulders."

"Everybody says that Third Junior is a clear example of your misjudgment in choosing disciples – but you're always protecting him, egging him on."

Lin Feng's expression was still plain and calm. "Anything else?"

Zhu Yi continued his rambling. "Before First Senior formed the nascent soul, you worked extremely hard as well. You personally helped him master the technique of fusing five different primordial fires together, and you even protected him in the

process. This made him extraordinarily powerful after successfully forming the nascent soul."

Lin Feng repeated the same question as before. "Anything else?"

Zhu Yi was not about to stop as he nodded his head. "As for Little Junior, perhaps it's because he joined you when he was just a little boy and you watched him grow up. Perhaps it's because you made him into the man he is today. You are as much a father to him as you are his master, and even his own parents have never put in the same blood and sweat on him as you have."

"During his tribulations of the Yin Wind, you expended so much energy and material resources to plug the innate gap in his nine-holed aurous core. It's comparable to the effort you gave for Third Junior during his foundation establishment stage. You even resisted the number one holy ground in the Divine Lands – the Great Void Sect – and repelled them forcefully to seek justice for Little Junior."

"Everybody in the Divine Lands thought you were crazy and you had no idea what you're doing. You were willing to antagonize the Great Void Sect for such a young disciple."

Zhu Yi stared right into Lin Feng's eyes. "Of the four disciples that you are closest to, I am the only one that you have been relatively relaxed towards. Besides the time when I was forming the Crucible and I lacked the balance between light and darkness, you brought me to the Spiritual Conference of Hanhai to obtain the Mantra of Light, you haven't accorded me any special attention and care like you have towards the others."

Lin Feng met Zhu Yi's gaze and started to laugh.

This was obviously another projection of his own deep-seated worries – he was worried that Zhu Yi would be distanced from him and their master-disciple relationship would erode.

This was nothing too embarrassing or unnatural. It was a typical

representation of the relationships people had with one another. There would come a time when somebody would become a little more sensitive which would give rise to the possibility of the fear of loss amongst other sources of emotional anxieties.

This had nothing to do with the level of mastery or with one's resilience and willpower. This was something that normal people would eventually experience on an emotional level.

Lin Feng smiled at Zhu Yi and shot back another question. "Have you ever had any great trouble that required my help besides the time you needed help with forming the Crucible?"

Zhu Yi shook his head. "No."

Lin Feng laughed heartily and said, "That's it. Everything you've been doing has been near-perfect. Why are you making so much noise for nothing?"

"You are the disciple that I've worried the least for. Besides doing what masters should do, I will not interfere and give you additional trouble."

"Think about it. If you've been doing everything right, and there's somebody whispering into your ear like an annoying fly and nagging at you non-stop – 'You should be doing it like this,' – won't you lose your patience? Won't you want this person gone from your life?"

Zhu Yi nodded his head in acknowledgement. "Of course – bless my ears."

Lin Feng placed his palms together and laughed again. "That's the way. I don't wish to be someone like that."

Lin Feng retracted his jovial mood immediately afterwards as his face turned solemn. "When you run into trouble or something that you can't handle by yourself like Xiao Yan, Wang Lin and Xiao Budian have, I will not sit by and do nothing. I will try my best to help you resolve your conundrums."

He stared into Zhu Yi's eyes and said slowly, "I sincerely believe that you will understand my intentions and understand what I am doing."

Zhu Yi finally let go of his tense expression and smiled warmly. "Yes, master."

As he watched Zhu Yi's figure disappear from sight, Lin Feng shook his head once again and chuckled to himself. This spatial illusion was a chance to mow the lawn in the deepest recesses of his mind and face his deepest fears and sources of anxieties.

Some of these hidden worries were actually quite trivial. They were like one's subconsciousness – typically, one would just avoid them without thinking rationally about them.

They were like little parasites that bugged Lin Feng's deep consciousness. Inside the spatial illusion, Lin Feng found the opportunity to draw out these little parasites one by one. Ultimately, this was a formless improvement towards his path of cultivation and his mentality.

The people that he met one after another inside the illusions were all projections of his deep-seated worries and anxieties.

He even saw the Virtuous Zen Master. The Zen Master talked about the spectacular rise of the early days of the Great Thunderclap Temple, but after the Ten Great Disciples of the Buddha, the age of the Buddhist cultivators entered a state of decline and decadence. How could the Celestial Sect of Wonders avoid the very same fate?

Besides Lin Feng, the first generation of disciples from the Celestial Sect of Wonders were far too extraordinary, to the point where it was unprecedented and not replicable at the same time. Even though Lin Feng helped to choose the second and third generation of disciples with special care, they were ultimately inferior to Xiao Yan and the others. Was such a procession not similar to the Great Thunderclap Temple all those years ago?



He met Shen Qifeng as well. He spoke of the high-profile rise and expansion of the Samsara Sect under the great leadership of the Samsara Priest. However, following the unexpected death of the Samsara Priest, the sect immediately fragmented into several factions, and ceaseless and horrifying infighting ensued which eventually caused the Samsara Sect to crumble into dust. The Celestial Sect of Wonders today was intricately tied to Lin Feng – and Lin Feng alone. If he met some unfortunate demise, what would happen to the fate of the Celestial Sect of Wonders?

His direct disciples were all supreme in their own right, and were destined to be big players of the era. He was the only one that could unite them together and keep them under control – if he was gone, the Celestial Sect of Wonders was bound to fragment and break apart.

He spoke to Xuanli, who spoke of the Heaven-Destroying Sword Qi. He discussed the possibility that the highest level of power the Heaven-Destroying Sword possessed would bring about true apocalypse and the destruction of everything – including the sword itself, and ultimately its owner.

Lin Feng faced all these anxieties with an open mind and stood his ground against every single one.

"From the looks of it, my worries are no longer so hidden anymore and I do think about some of these problems from day to day," Lin Feng thought to himself as he encountered the next illusion.

It was the current leader of the Great Void Sect, Yan Nanlai.

# Chapter 758: The Imperial Palace Is Here!

---

Rolling white clouds appeared in front of Lin Feng before it trembled and split open to reveal a young man with black hair and white sideburns. He seemed like he was in his mid-twenties.

It was the current leader of the Great Void Sect, Yan Nanlai.

He was situated between the thick white clouds as two streams of energy – one black and one white – orbited his body.

Lin Feng watched Yan Nanlai as the two of them stared at each other in silence.

This encounter was a little different from the conversations that he had with the other illusions. However, Lin Feng was clear about what Yan Nanlai's projection represented.

He wanted to become the greatest cultivator and create the number one sect in history – there was just one giant mountain in his way that he could never seem to cross. It was the most powerful sect in the history of the Divine Lands, the Great Void Sect.

This was because of the Conservative Party that was currently in power. They ensured that the Great Void Sect was generally directed the events of the world with a low-profile. Even though they were used to playing the world like chess pieces and they still interfered once in a while, many people still frequently forgot about how powerful the Great Void Sect was.

At Lin Feng's level, along with people like Shi Yu, Xin Longsheng and Liang Pan, they were acutely aware of how powerful the Great Void Sect was and did not underestimate them at all. However, most other lower-level cultivators were not so clear-headed.

Outsiders aside, even Lin Feng's own Celestial Sect of Wonders was a clear example. The new disciples that had recently joined the sect disregarded the Great Void Sect like they were nothing. "The

Great Void Sect wants to be the 'Big Brother'. They are nothing!"

The truth was that it was not that the Great Void Sect wanted to be the 'Big Brother'. This sect was the 'Big Brother' of the human world of cultivation in the Divine Lands; they had enjoyed this status for millennium after millennium.

It was not Lin Feng's intention to regard his adversary too highly and deflate his own determination and motivation in the process. To know one's enemies and to recognize his adversaries' power was the right way to go about trying to overcome them.

Lin Feng had always been clear about this point.

The Great Void Sect had existed even during the days of the Human Emperor during the Antiquity Age. Before the rise of other great powers and other great sects, the Great Void Sect was already the only powerful sect in the Divine Lands that was not under the control of the Human Emperor. They recognized the divine rule of the Emperor, and had no intentions of usurping the throne and taking the power for themselves. All they did was focus their attentions on the demons and the happenings inside the Barren Expanses.

The cultivator that established the Great Void Sect was the Great Void Holy Man. He existed in the same era as Emperor Tai, and was there when the Primordial Age ended and the Antiquity Age begun. He led the human cultivators in their perennial battle against the demon uprising, and his level of mastery was no less powerful than that of Emperor Tai. Still, he had no intentions of wresting control of the throne from Emperor Tai.

After the demise of Emperor Tai, the Great Void Holy Man gave the throne away once again. This led to the ascension of Emperor Ru to the throne, which eventually led to him retiring from his post and forming the Great Thunderclap Temple in the process. The Great Void Holy Man refused to take the crown for himself for the third time, even till the end when he vanished inside the Death

Sea and was since never heard of again.

This was the famous story of the "The Three Chances of the Great Void" in the human emperor era of the Antiquity Age.

Even though the Great Void Holy Man disappeared without a trace during his venture into the Death Sea, the Great Void Sect remained on top of things and retained their superior status to all others. They remained so till the end, all the way till the time when they worked together with the Heaven's Gate Sect in the revolution to overthrow the Human Emperor and officially ended the Antiquity Age.

There were several reasons to explain this phenomenon. Besides the fact that the Great Void Sect produced a great many talented prodigies, the most important reason was the magic treasure that was passed down by the Great Void Holy Man and anchored down the sect – the Supreme Heavenly Mirror.

The title given to it, "The Number One Magic Item of the Grand Celestial World", explained everything.

Not much explanation was needed as one could simply look at the list of powerful individuals who perished under the powers of this magic item.

Emperor Jue, who went by the name of Xuan Shang, and Emperor Ji who was also known as Shen Yuan were amongst the list. Even the Hades Emperor, Tian Hai, also eventually met his demise at the hands of the Great Void Sect. They were known as the three greatest Demonic Emperors in history, and every single one of their unfortunate demises were closely related to the Supreme Heavenly Mirror.

This Destiny-Level magic item was like the core of the human world and ensured the peace and safety of all humans living in the Divine Lands.

The Supreme Heavenly Mirror sustained three great injuries over

the course of history. These injuries were related to the three Demonic Emperors – Jue, Ji and Hades – and every time it was damaged, the Supreme Heavenly Mirror needed a long period of time to recover and return to its pinnacle form.

In the process of recovery, the Great Void Sect would never use the Supreme Heavenly Mirror lightly as this would hinder its progress and lengthen its recuperation time.

Of course, it using the Supreme Heavenly Mirror was inevitable, the Great Void Sect would not hesitate at all.

From the same perspective, even some humans in the Divine Lands who wanted to challenge the leadership status of the Great Void Sect had these three demon emperors to thank.

Lin Feng watched Yan Nanlai in silence. Even if the Great Void Sect was all-powerful and was full of powerful cultivators and could rely on just themselves to control the entire Divine Lands, even if the Great Void Sect had the Supreme Heavenly Mirror, Lin Feng would never be afraid.

The fact that they were presently inferior did not mean that they would not be able to surpass them in the future. Everything was up to their respective efforts and methods.

Lin Feng's motivation and starting point was to create the number one sect in the world and become the greatest cultivator of all time.

In that respect, just simply surpassing the Great Void Sect may not be enough to realize his ambitions. Since that was the case, then what was so frightening about trying to overcome and surpass such a gargantuan entity?

His ambition was to become even more immense and powerful than the Great Void Sect.

Lin Feng was never fearful of the Great Void Sect. The projection before him right now represented his worry that the continuous

expansion and rise in power of the Celestial Sect of Wonders and himself could eventually lead to a hostile standoff between him and the Great Void Sect. He was worried about what this would mean for the human world of cultivation and what cost he would possibly incur with the realization of his dreams.

Even with the "Three Chances of the Great Void" that came before and the current low-profile disposition of the Conservative Party, the Great Void Sect was used to playing the big boss after all. Over the long course of history, whether it was the Heaven's Gate Sect, the Great Thunderclap Temple, the Ancient Satanic Sect or the Mount Shu Sword Sect amongst others who wanted to shake their supreme leadership status from time to time were ultimately unsuccessful.

However, when the Celestial Sect of Wonders grew to a point where it possessed the power to 'overthrow' the Great Void Sect and usurp their supreme leadership position, could the Great Void Sect still remain calm then?

Even though they were all trying their best to focus their attentions on the demons of the Barren Expanses, and avoid as much infighting as they could in order to prevent the demons from benefiting for free, how could everything go exactly according to their wishes? People like the Heavenly Charms Grand Sage and the Golden Roc Grand Sage, amongst other powerful demons, were not puppets that followed the ups and downs of his emotions.

Everybody had their own calculations and their own plans. Who would have the last laugh was hard to say.

Lin Feng was unable to accept it if the demons took the opportunity to turn on the humans due to infighting.

Perhaps, when he was in a higher status in the future, he would change his thinking and adopt a new perspective towards the conflict between the humans and the demons. However, from his current position, he had no choice but to perceive the demonic

threat with care, just like the Great Void Sect.

One man's disaster would bring his whole family into it.

Lin Feng continued staring at Yan Nanlai and suddenly started laughing. Yan Nanlai, who had a plain expression all along, began to laugh as well. Even though they looked very different, the expressions on their faces were extremely similar, as if they were born of the same mold.

"What a challenging problem," Lin Feng chuckled, "But that's the beauty of it all. The challenge makes the view from the top all the more exhilarating and worthy."

Yan Nanlai's figure withdrew into the thick white clouds and quickly disappeared.

This was the last projection. Lin Feng did not encounter any other illusions as all that was left in front of him were flickering sparks of light.

He was suddenly free again. He looked up and found himself back inside the Ying Sea. He turned around and noticed a layer of pale light that was almost transparent and refracted the outside world.

The illusion he had just encountered came from that layer of light, which projected the deepest worries of his heart.

However, if he was not clear-headed and steadfast in his beliefs, his soul would have been eroded by the illusion and would have eventually been assimilated into the layer of light – he would have been trapped forever.

This kind of illusion tested one's willpower and resilience and had nothing to do with one's level of mastery.

This spatial illusion was as strange as it was profound. After one individual's passage, the spatial illusion began to dissipate as Lin Feng watched the layer of light break down in front of him. Immediately after, Zhu Yi, Li Yuanfang and the others appeared from within the remnant sparks of flashing light with troubled

expressions and looks of anxiety.

"This is one dangerous illusion. However, it's good for grinding the soul and training our willpowers." Lin Feng laughed heartily as Zhu Yi and the others nodded in acknowledgement.

Everybody casted their gazes towards the far horizon and, lo and behold, a giant mystical mountain that resembled a tiny island appeared in front of their eyes and was drifting along the ocean surface.

A trembling voice could be heard from the Green Glass Jade Stand. "The Yingzhou Celestial Mountain!"

Zhu Yi and company held their breaths as they took in the sight of the majestic mountain that loomed before them.

The space around the magical mountain was slightly twisted and out of proportion. This caused its volume and surface area to seem a little smaller than it really was as the mountain drifted along the Ying Sea.

In reality, the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was not that different from the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain; the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was so vast that it was comparable to a small island. Even though it was not as immense as the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, it was more than four thousand miles in circumference.

Lin Feng raised his eyebrows as he scrutinized the mountain. "It's an ancient magic formation that was birthed by natural law."

Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang started to observe the mountain as well. Indeed, there were countless transparent planes and panel-like crystals drifting in the disproportionate and twisted space above it.

These panels were incredibly huge as well. They were rectangular and each one was almost three hundred square meters and were layered together while spread out at the same time. The panels encircled the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain like a dome.



"Even though it's unique and ancient, it's a lot weaker now." Li Yuanfang took in a deep breath as he continued to study the ancient magic formation.

Lin Feng waved his hands around and said, "Let's not waste any more time. Down we go." With that, he brought Zhu Yi and the others along as the company flew towards the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

Everybody behind them, including the Vivant Joy Holy Man, had their eyes wide open as they stared at the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain before them. Every single person was itching to make a move even though they knew Lin Feng was in front of them.

Lin Feng paid no attention to the people behind him as they journeyed towards the mountain. All of a sudden, he raised his head and began staring at a patch of void above the mountain. "It's here."

The white clouds and mist above the mountain began to burn and transformed into a million rays of golden light.

A vast shadow could be faintly seen within the flashes of golden light. Even though it was not clearly within vision, one could tell that there was a royal and majestic aura coming from it, as if it bore the mantle of the entire world and was the true ruler of the earth.

Numerous glyphs and runes floated around and expanded outwards along with the rays of golden light. And then, a sprawling royal palace that resembled an entire city shimmered into sight.

Pavilions, halls, courtyards and skyscrapers formed a royal palace in the sky that resembled the residence of heavenly saints and divine beings and possessed a near-unassailable majesty.

Lin Feng nodded his head slowly. "The Imperial Palace!"

The Imperial Palace! This Destiny-level magic item was forged by

the late Emperor Tai, and was eventually passed down to the Great Zhou Empire.

# Chapter 759: The Clash Of Destiny-Level Magic Treasures

---

The Imperial Palace was a destiny-level magic treasure that was forged by Emperor Tai after the end of the Primordial Age as the world ushered in the Antiquity Age.

The Imperial Palace worked hand in hand with the Supreme Heavenly Mirror and rained hell upon Xuan Shang, one of the ancient demonic emperors of old. It also had a part to play in the defeat of a great many powerful dragons, and single-handedly ended the supreme rule of the Immemorial Celestial Dragons over the Grand Celestial World a long time ago.

Unfortunately, Emperor Tai lost his life in this endeavor and the Imperial Palace was also heavily damaged and vanished without a trace for millennia.

It was eventually discovered and excavated by the Great Zhou Empire. The Great Zhou Empire integrated countless magic items and treasures within to repair it and set the Imperial Palace firmly on the path of recovery. The Imperial Palace was the backbone of the rise in power of the Great Zhou Empire as well.

During the War of Buddha Annihilation, Liang Pan used this very item to defeat and kill the last Abbot of the Great Thunderclap Temple and solidified the influence and power of the Great Zhou Empire.

However, the Great Thunderclap Temple retaliated ferociously like a wounded animal that was backed into a corner, even though Mount Meru had already been laid to ruin. The Imperial Palace was not yet completely repaired, and was once again suffered severe injuries at the hands of the monks of the Great Thunderclap Temple.

Lin Feng had a close encounter with the Imperial Palace once

before back on the Cloud Forest World. During that battle, he used Mount Yujing to clash forcefully with the Imperial Palace.

The Imperial Palace during that time was not nearly as powerful as it was during the War of Buddha Annihilation. It was far from the destiny-level magic item that reigned supreme over the Grand Celestial World all those years ago.

Lin Feng knew with a single sweep of his consciousness that the Imperial Palace before him today was nothing like his last encounter with it. Even though it was not yet in its peak condition, it was only a hair's breadth away; it was at a level that rivaled the power of the Immortal Dragon City and the Great Void Holy Pavilion, which were all destiny-level magic treasures.

The power of the Imperial Palace back in the Cloud Forest World was already quite incredible. The willpowers of thousands and thousands of subordinate and obedient citizens that wanted to serve the throne were channeled as raw power.

Great individuals of old were in service of the throne as well. They materialized as universal truths and unassailable natural law as their willpowers were channeled by the Imperial Palace as raw power.

Illusory fairies and servants roamed the halls and between the pavilions; they held divine nectar in their hands as if they were welcoming the start of a new and better world.

Uncountable numbers of saints and celestial beings hovered intimidatingly above the Imperial Palace.

During Lin Feng's last encounter, everything was just light shadows and illusions that existed inside the purple-golden radiance that came from within.

Now, whether it was the subservient citizens or the fairies and even the saints and celestial beings were nearly tangible. It was almost like a real Nine Heavens Divine Palace and commanded so

much reverence and respect that people could not help but kneel before it.

Lin Feng, in the body of the Steel Tree Avatar, felt his soul tremble a little as he faced this frightening magic treasure before him; he felt as if there was an entire world of fate and destiny weighing down on his head like an anchor.

This pressure was even more intense than what he felt previously with the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain.

The appearance of the Imperial Palace swept away the white clouds and mist around the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain as the waters in the Ying Sea below raged and curdled as if it was boiling. The illusions of the Ying Sea in the immediate vicinity started to crackle and flicker before every single one burst apart like air bubbles.

Even though most of the spatial illusions were of the weaker types and there was nothing of the most powerful sort, there were some that were strong enough to trap even unwitting immortal soul stage cultivators. Faced with the pressure of the Imperial Palace, even these powerful illusions crumbled and fell apart like porcelain vases and disappeared into nothingness.

The Imperial Palace was not even targeting these illusions deliberately. The illusions imploded and broke apart from just the aftershocks and ripple effects of the Imperial Palace's descent into the area.

There was no need to avoid the illusions and no need to overcome the illusions from within – all it did was crush the illusions forcefully from the outside and all the mystical energies and laws that formed these magical illusions along with it. It was simply pulverizing everything with raw power and force.

Lin Feng laughed as he witnessed the sight. "Not only have they remade the Imperial Palace, they have also taken after the overbearing methods of Emperor Tai of old."

The Imperial Palace completely disregarded Lin Feng and the others as if they were not even there ever since it shimmered into existence – it plummeted downwards and lunged straight for the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

Liang Pan, the emperor of the Great Zhou Empire, had always known the right time to do things.

Under the influence of the radiant purple-golden light that burned like supernovas, the ancient magic formation of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain started to shake violently.

Liang Pan had no patience nor the interest to wait for the changes of the magic formation to play out – he wanted to crush the magic formation with the brute force of his destiny-level magic treasure.

However, just as he was closing in on the mountain, an immense and immeasurably long streak of light surged across the void like a dragon soaring into the skies. Its length was truly limitless as it stretched across the heavens without visible end.

An unshakeable and unmovable aura came from this vast streak of light. It gave a feeling that it could protect everything in this world, as if all the destinies under the heavens was safeguarded and sheltered from all danger. In an instant, the formidable brute force of the Imperial Palace was repelled and forced backwards.

It was a piece of city wall that radiated with light for eternity; it was undying, and was the defender of all living souls for all time. It had a glorious and majestic aura that rivaled that of the Imperial Palace. It was forged by the very first emperor of the humans in the Primordial Age, Emperor Shi, and was ultimately completed by the Great Qin Empire into a destiny-level magic treasure – the Immortal Dragon City!

The clash of two destiny-level magic treasures!

The purple-golden light above the Imperial Palace flashed once

and transformed into a green Chaos Hole and a sphere of green energy exploded from within.

Thunderous crackles could be heard from this ball of green energy – it was the Chaos Cave Saint-Slaying Thunderbolt!

All people who defied the throne were vanquished by green lightning!

Lin Feng's eyes closed into slits. The Chaos Cave Saint-Slaying Thunderbolt released by the Imperial Palace was a lot stronger than it was back on the Cloud Forest World.

That single sphere of green energy truly resembled a divine lightning strike that could break open the great Chaos when the world exploded into existence.

The Red Dragon King slinked away into a corner. His own Eight Barrens Divine Lightning was nothing compared to the power of the Chaos Cave Saint-Slaying Thunderbolt in front of him – even the power of the third-level Undying Demonic Soul stage Thunder Dragon King was possibly inferior. Furthermore, the Imperial Palace released multiple lightning strikes at the same time.

A figure suddenly burst into sight on top of the Immortal Dragon City. He was wearing the royal crown and wore a flowing dragon-patterned robe with an air of majestic splendor – it was the emperor of the Great Qin Empire, Shi Yu.

He glanced at the Chaos Cave Saint-Slaying Thunderbolt surging towards him and said calmly, "Liang Pan, you are finally in the stage of the Way of the Virtual Entity – the third level of the immortal soul stage."

The Immortal Dragon City shimmered with golden light as he spoke. It seemed all too normal, but the sphere of green lightning exploded against the wall of golden light without even causing a single ripple or dent. The ball of lightning crackled once and crumbled apart as it dissipated into green-colored mist.

The Immortal Dragon City was like a barrier to another world. Across the city wall was a chaotic mess of broken patches of void and lightning strikes while it was peaceful and tranquil on the other side with nothing happening at all.

This insidious outcome placed the power of the Immortal Dragon City on full display.

Liang Pan watched on calmly from inside the Imperial Palace. He was wearing a dragon-patterned robe as well, and was charged with the same majestic aura that only an emperor would possess. He was a lot more intimidating than before, and this came not just from the power of the Imperial Palace beneath him but also from his own strength.

The commanders of the two most powerful royal empires in the Divine Lands were just watching each other in silence after the violent clash of their destiny-level magic treasures.

"I have attained the Way of the Virtual Entity not too long before the reappearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea, during the Spiritual Conference of Kunlun Mountains hosted by the Celestial Sect of Wonders." Liang Pan was sitting atop a dragon throne inside the Imperial Palace.

Shi Yu nodded his head in approval. "Congratulations. You are the first royal to reach the Way of the Virtual Entity stage since the inauguration of the Great Zhou Empire."

Liang Pan smiled faintly and replied, "This is just the beginning."

He glanced at the unmovable Immortal Dragon City before him that was completely undamaged by the Chaos Cave Saint-Slaying Lightning as he spoke slowly, "Not bad. The Great Qin Empire has finally completed this priceless destiny-level treasure passed down by Emperor Shi."

"Still, it's a pity. The concept of power used by Emperor Shi in the construction of this magic treasure meant that it's bound to be



a defensive item with relatively weaker offensive capabilities for purposes of protection. Even the Imperial Palace at its peak condition is probably inferior – but defenders are always behind on initiative."

"It's not easy for the Imperial Palace to break the Immortal Dragon City, but the Immortal Dragon City can't do anything at all to the Imperial Palace. I cannot possibly lose in this battle between us and you can only sit there and take the beatings. I am still ultimately in control of the fight for the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain."

Before his voice dropped, another flash of purple-golden light flickered beside the Imperial Palace as another gigantic chaos hole appeared above the Imperial Palace. Purple-golden light started to condense inside and a black ray of light followed by another white ray of light surged out from within in the next moment.

The two rays of light intertwined and rotated around each other like a spinning top and roared towards the Immortal Dragon City.

The Dual Polarity Chaos Cave Divine Light!

Everything that the spiraling rays of light came into contact with immediately crumbled into nothingness. The explosive and destructive magnetism permeated the void all around, and even places a thousand miles away were affected by the magnetic ripples. Lightning sparks shimmered and crackled in the void, metal objects started to twist and their shapes started to change as the ocean water beneath boiled violently and evaporated into steam.

Even third-level immortal soul stage individuals would not dare to face this ray of divine light head-on.

This was the destructive power of the Dual Polarity Circle channeled to its highest possible level.

Shi Yu was still as calm as ever. "You don't know what you're

talking about. I am the one that can't possibly lose this battle. It doesn't matter what kind of abhijna or spell that the Imperial Palace can throw at the Immortal Dragon City – there is nothing you can do to break through."

Colorful lights erupted again above the long city wall – out of nowhere, uncountable shadows appeared on top of the city wall. These illusions were standing shoulder-to-shoulder at the edge and the sum of their willpowers came together to support the Immortal Dragon City as they cried out in unison.

This war-cry caused the space all around to twist out of proportion and even immortal soul stage cultivators like the Tidal Sword Elder could feel their souls shaking to the core. There was a feeling of an ancient alliance of humans from the Primordial Age who came together to repel the uprising of the demons as they engaged in a blood-curdling war.

One for all and all for one – fearlessness and resilience in protecting each other.

This was the concept of power passed down over millennia. Everybody was shaken by the phenomenon and most even felt compelled to share a bit of their own power in support of the Immortal Dragon City to defeat its enemies.

The willpower of all humans in the Divine Lands seemed to surge through the void and into the Immortal Dragon City.

This great willpower was the true representation of eternity and a fire that would burn for all time.

Even the intense destructive power of the Dual Polarity Chaos Cave Divine Light could not pierce this eternal wall of light!

The explosive magnetic fields dissipated one after another as space-time became even more twisted and out of proportion. The clash between the two destiny-level magic treasures destroyed every inch of land in the immediate vicinity, and even immortal

soul stage cultivators would evaporate into hot air if they came near.

"The battle of two destiny-level magic treasures is indeed spectacular," Lin Feng watched on deliciously as if he was watching a drama. It was the first time that he had witnessed the clash between two destiny-level magic treasures.

When he was faced with the Great Void Holy Pavilion and the Saintly Celestial Sword during the battle of Xiling City, he used his vast repertoire of techniques and tactical plays to fight against those destiny-level magic treasures. However, Lin Feng himself had never possessed a true destiny-level magic treasure.

"As I expected, their announcement that they were going after the Penglai Celestial Mountain was a misdirection after all. It seems like everyone is here for the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain."

"That includes me as well."

As the Imperial Palace and the Immortal Dragon City stood off against each other, the void started to rumble once again as another intense aura surged across the sky and flickered into existence above the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

It was a white jade mountain – a lot smaller in size than the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, but with superior strength and power!

# Chapter 760: Confidence

---

A wave of purple energy that resembled a tsunami poured forth into the sky above the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and expanded in all directions as the sky turned purple in an instant.

The dome of purple energy was immense and stretched out for thousands of miles. In the middle of it all, a gargantuan mountain that was ten thousand feet high shimmered into vision. An ocean of black water supported it from beneath and the entire spectacle sent shivers down everyone's spines.

"Mount Yujing!"

From the moment the sea of purple energy burst into existence, the Imperial Palace and the Immortal Dragon City stopped resisting each other and withdrew into their respective corners and the three entities eventually formed a triangle in the void.

Lin Feng was sitting with his legs crossed on the tip of the Black Heavenly Treasure Tree at the summit of Mount Yujing. There was also a girl with black and white hair quietly standing behind him with a giant sword sheath behind her back.

Lin Feng laughed and said, "Thank you, friends, for letting me watch a spectacular show."

Even though Zhu Yi, the Vivant Joy Holy Man and did not dare to speak like Lin Feng, they shared the same thoughts.

The battle between the two emperors of the two remaining royal empires of the Divine Lands and the violent clash between the Imperial Palace and the Immortal Dragon City above the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was truly a breathtaking sight.

One magic treasure was reborn after sustaining serious injuries after the ending of the Antiquity Age and suffered another round of heavy damage after destroying the Great Thunderclap Temple, before it was eventually repaired and it regained the majestic

powers of the very same treasure that dominated the Divine Lands all those years ago.

The other magic treasure begun its journey from the Primordial Age, and was the product of the visions and ambitions of the very first human emperor. However, it was never truly completed, and it was only refined to perfection in recent years and returned to the world with a bang.

The offensive capabilities of the Immortal Dragon City were only comparatively weaker than its defensive powers – that was not to say that the Immortal Dragon City's offensive powers were actually weak.

These two magic treasures were far stronger than their initial showing at the battle of Xiling City when they had just been completed.

One could say that the giants were still in a daze as if they had just been awoken from their deep slumber – and now, the giants were wide awake.

The great willpower of the humans during their first uprising against the dark rule of the demons during the Primordial Age was imparted to this magic treasure and had since been at its core despite the eternal passage of time.

This was an unshakeable resolve that humans possessed and would remain so for all time.

"However, the Imperial Palace is touted as the most powerful treasure ever made by the age of the human emperors," Lin Feng smiled faintly from the audience. "It's not too far away from its original splendor and glory, and it's still able to fight against the Immortal Dragon City. However, that's also due to the special characteristics of the Immortal Dragon City."

"Even if the Imperial Palace was back in its peak condition, it may still not be able to break the defenses of the Immortal Dragon City.

Still, relatively weaker offensive powers of the Immortal Dragon City is no match for the Imperial Palace in its peak condition."

Shi Yu responded to his remarks from the top of the Immortal Dragon City. "Are you here for the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain as well, Lin Feng?"

Even though the relationship between the Great Qin Empire and the Celestial Sect of Wonders was a lot better than the relationship between the Great Zhou Empire and the latter, something like wresting the control of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was not something that could be compromised. The two parties were competitors after all.

However, the possibility of their alliance to chase the Great Zhou Empire out of the picture before settling their differences afterwards was still hanging in the air.

Liang Pan knew what was coming for him. The Imperial Palace was still hovering in the air with the continuous flashing of purple-golden light, but the entire body of the palace was becoming translucent as it prepared for withdrawal in the event that it was necessary to do so – if Mount Yujing and the Immortal Dragon City decided to gang up against Liang Pan.

The moment the Great Qin Empire and the Celestial Sect of Wonders displayed any intentions of form a temporary alliance against him, Liang Pan would retreat immediately without hesitation. However, that did not mean that he was giving up on the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain; he was going to watch from the outside in and wait patiently for his opportunity.

If this happened, then the Great Qin Empire and the Celestial Sect of Wonders would not dare to give their all to wrest control of the mountain from each other in order to avoid profiting the Great Zhou Empire for nothing. They had to consider the possibility of the Great Zhou Empire stepping back in the fray and ‘plucking the fruit’ from under their noses.

Lin Feng glanced at the Imperial Palace from his position at the top of the Black Heavenly Treasure Tree and thought to himself, "He is quite intelligent after all. He stopped assaulting the Immortal Dragon City from the moment I appeared. He's afraid that I will channel the Power-Destroying Catastrophe, after which he will be trapped with only a slim chance of escaping."

During the battle of Xiling City, Lin Feng used the very same technique during his epic fight against the Saintly Celestial Sword and the Great Void Holy Pavilion. He channeled the power of the black chess piece of the Viralopa Chess Game (Translator's Note: This is the edited name of the Power-Destroying Game to remain faithful to the Buddhist nature of the terms. Refer to chapter 595.) and swept Xin Longsheng and the others off their feet with his surprise move. They became ensnared within the array and were forced to resist the destructive and apocalyptic forces of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe.

Liang Pan was aware of this trump-card killer move, and raised his guard from the very start as he was not about to give Lin Feng the same chance.

This was a characteristic of the Imperial Palace that the Immortal Dragon City could not match. Even though the offensive Imperial Palace was unable to break through the Immortal Dragon City, it could retreat whenever it wanted to.

If the magic treasures were switched around, then the outcome would have been very different. Shi Yu would have continued his onslaught against Liang Pan so that he would be unable to withdraw from the battle and Lin Feng would have entered the fray happily so that the two of them could completely remove the Great Zhou Empire from the game before anything else.

"However, you don't have to be so wary," Lin Feng felt slightly amused.

The blemish on the Sky-Shielding Umbrella was never

completely removed, and five forms of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe was channeled during the battle of Xiling City as well. This caused the Sky-Shielding Umbrella to weaken even more. According to his own calculations, the Sky-Shielding Umbrella was still able to resist two more black chess pieces before it would crumble completely.

Lin Feng turned back towards Shi Yu and smiled as he spoke, "Greetings, my friend. Of course I am interested in the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain as well."

As long as Liang Pan's Imperial Palace had mobility and freedom of movement, Lin Feng and Shi Yu would never give everything they had to battle each other for control of the mountain.

The Imperial Palace, the Immortal Dragon City and Mount Yujing entered a tense stand-off in the void above the mountain.

Shi Yu was the first to break the silence. "Master Lin, why don't we work together? We will split the Yingzhou and Penglai Celestial Mountains. What do you think?"

"Standing off like we are now will benefit Liang Pan in the long run. Zhu Hongwu, along with the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, are already heading south of the Ying Sea to search for the Penglai Celestial Mountain."

Lin Feng smiled in response but said nothing. Liang Pan's arrangements and Shi Yu's proposal were both within his predictions.

In truth, Shi Yu's suggestion was extremely alluring. Even though there was still wriggle room in the details of splitting the loot afterwards, it was a beneficial outcome and a win-win situation for both parties at the end of everything.

If the Great Qin Empire and the Celestial Sect of Wonders controlled one mountain each, then there was a further possibility of the two parties working together to wrest control of the



Fangzhang Celestial Mountain from the Great Zhou Empire.

However, there were too many uncertainties in this proposition. For instance, the Penglai Celestial Mountain was still nowhere to be seen, and who should be the first to control the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain?

It was possible that the Great Zhou Empire would gain control of the Penglai Celestial Mountain during their efforts to win the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. If that happened, then the Great Zhou Empire would have the last laugh and they would be in control of the Ying Sea.

This was the worst-case scenario. Under more optimistic circumstances, the Penglai Celestial Mountain could be discovered and controlled by another party. It would not be easy for the Celestial Sect of Wonders and the Great Qin Empire to take it back, and the Great Zhou Empire would not sit by idly as well.

If the three mountains returned into the sea before anybody found the Penglai Celestial Mountain, then one of the two parties in the alliance would have to return home empty-handed.

The party that had already cultivated the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, whether it was Lin Feng or Shi Yu, would never give back their control of the mountain.

This was not a simple problem of worrying about splitting the prize before they even obtained it. There were actually two prizes – the first one presented the problem of who gets to cultivate the mountain first, and the second one represented another host of uncertainties.

The relationship between the Great Qin Empire and the Celestial Sect of Wonders had always been quite friendly. It was therefore unlikely that one party would try to scam and slander the other and burn bridges after obtaining control of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. However, cooperation still had too much ambivalence and too many unpredictable factors remained.

This was the reason why the Celestial Sect of Wonders and the Great Qin Empire did not set up this alliance before their entry into the Ying Sea – the circumstances were simply too unpredictable and uncertain. Nobody was a hundred percent confident about even finding the mountains in the first place.

Now that they had discovered one, the possibility of an alliance was no longer a complete impossibility.

If there was not a better option, then Lin Feng would have probably agreed with Shi Yu's proposal in the end.

"However..." Lin Feng fiddled with the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl as his mouth curled into a smile. "I have a better idea."

With regards to Shi Yu's proposal, Liang Pan was not too eager to respond. They had their respective decision-making processes and rationality at this level, and they were all not people that were easily swayed by words.

If Lin Feng agreed to Shi Yu's plan, then Liang Pan would have tucked tail and ran right away to focus all his efforts in obtaining the Penglai Celestial Mountain.

"Your proposal is pretty good, but from my perspective, natural occurrences like the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea embody the spiritual energy of the world, and where they will end up is up to fate and a little bit of luck," Lin Feng chuckled as he continued, "Why don't we let our disciples determine the fate of the three mountains?"

Once his proposal was put forth, the expressions on the faces of the Vivant Joy Holy Man and the others became a little strange.

On top of the Immortal Dragon City, even Shi Yu glanced at Lin Feng with a slightly astonished look. He thought to himself, "Is he that confident, or does he have other plans? If that's the case, what can it be?"

Liang Pan started to frown from his seat on the throne inside the

Imperial Palace as well. "This man has a big appetite. He wants to swallow both Penglai and Yingzhou for himself – what is he relying on? What plans does he have for the Penglai Celestial Mountain?"

Lin Feng was crystal clear about everyone's discussions and confusion. He wasted no time as he laughed again, "I will sit here with the two of you to hold down the forts and we shall see where fate and luck takes us."

Liang Pan was the first to respond. "Your breadth of mind and mannerism is truly impressive. You treat the Yingzhou Mountain so casually as well. However, the time that we have is limited and the Three Mountains can return into the sea at any time. Sitting around and doing nothing may ruin the opportunity for everyone."

Lin Feng grinned and said, "That just means it's meant to be. If you can't wait, then you can head south to join Zhu Hongwu and the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain and focus all your efforts to find the Penglai Celestial Mountain."

With that, he turned towards Zhu Yi and the others and said, "It's your turn."

Zhu Yi, Li Yuanfang exchanged glances before bowing at Lin Feng and descended onto the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

The Imperial Palace and the Immortal Dragon City shook and trembled but they were not able to do anything as long as Lin Feng was still on top of Mount Yujing.

After a moment of contemplation, Liang Pan and Shi Yu communicated with their respective disciples and subordinates and instructed them forth into the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain as well.

The Tidal Sword Elder and the Sun-Swallowing Grand Sage flew closer to the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and waited for Lin Feng's response. When they realized that Lin Feng could not care less, they entered the ancient mountain defense formation as well.

A group of cultivators flew out of the Imperial Palace. They were the cultivators under the command of the emperor, and even Shao Huayang and the other East Heaven's Gate cultivators were among their ranks.

What turned heads was the fact that the leader of this group of cultivators was not a renowned immortal soul stage cultivator from the Great Zhou Empire and neither was it a powerful East Heaven's Gate cultivator – it was a middle-aged man that was radiating with Buddhist light.

# Chapter 761: According To The Original Plan

---

Even though there was not much discussion about the decision, Lin Feng along with the two emperors had a degree of chemistry and limited the power of the cultivators venturing into the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain at the third-level immortal soul stage.

The Celestial Sect of Wonders had no immortal soul stage cultivators. However, Zhu Yi managed to defeat Shao Qingcheng, who was a first-level immortal soul stage cultivator when he himself as only in the nascent soul advanced stage and nobody dared to underestimate him.

Of the people from the Great Qin Empire's camp, there was another second-level immortal soul stage cultivator aside from the Vivant Joy Holy Man. Shi Yu's younger cousin, Shi Lin, who was also Prince Jingfang. He was one of the important pillars of the Great Qin Empire's royal family, along with Prince Anliang Shi Zongyue.

Shi Lin leapt down from the Immortal Dragon City and joined the Vivant Joy Holy Man and the others into the ancient magic formation surrounding the Yingzhou Mountain.

Any could tell that the middle-aged monk radiating with Buddhist light from the Great Zhou Empire's party was not simply at a high level of cultivation and mastery; his understanding of the Buddhist teachings was deep and profound as well.

Once he showed up, complicated expressions came over everyone's faces. "Da Kong..."

The middle-aged monk smiled and said, "Greetings, everyone."

He wasted no more time as he placed his palms together and greeted the Tidal Sword Elder before he took his party, along with

the cultivators from the Vast Sea Sword Sect, down into the mountain.

Even people who heard his name before gave the same complicated look.

Lin Feng glanced at the Da Kong Zen Master before his eyes returned to the Imperial Palace. He smiled faintly as he thought to himself, "Even this guy is here. Looks like the Great Zhou Empire is really out in full force."

The Da Kong Zen Master was in the same generation as the Virtuous Zen Master. He entered the sect later, but had a higher level of mastery than the Virtuous Zen Master, and was one of the more talented disciples in the younger generation of the Great Thunderclap Temple. He was taken in by one of the elders of the Great Thunderclap Temple when he was just a little nameless monk as his personal disciple.

After forming the Buddha Spell Body and attaining the second level of the Golden Form, he assumed leadership of the Garden of Enlightenment and officially entered the inner circle of the Great Thunderclap Temple.

After the War of Buddha Annihilation, the Da Kong Zen Master deserted the Great Thunderclap Temple and joined the Great Zhou Empire. This piece of news was rather obscure, and lower level cultivators were completely unaware. However, everybody above the immortal soul stage knew about this. The only thing was that the Da Kong Zen Master had been in seclusion ever since and was never seen in the outside world again after the War of Buddha Annihilation.

Lin Feng knew that this charming and friendly-looking monk was one of the key figures in the War of Buddha Annihilation.

The defeat of the Great Thunderclap Temples all those years ago was also partially due to the non-committal attitude of the Great Void Sect. Still, the use of the Formation-Bursting Drum to aid the

Anti-Buddha Alliance to defeat the Vairocana Formation clearly displayed their intentions.

There was a special reason for this particular action. According to their original attitude and the way the Great Void Sect generally did things, this was not supposed to happen.

Based on what Lin Feng knew, the Da Kong Zen Master was not a spy that was implanted within the Great Thunderclap Temple. However, the fact that he was able to live 'happily ever after' after the war meant that it was not as simple as him switching sides during the war.

It was possible that this man discovered some of the hidden secrets of the Great Thunderclap Temple and blew the whistle to the Great Void Sect that changed their minds about the War of Buddha Annihilation.

Lin Feng observed the Da Kong Zen Master for a moment longer. He could feel that his soul was clear and carefree, and was completely without remorse for deserting his sect and joining the ranks of their enemies. It was as if this was completely justified back then during the war.

Since he was not a spy that had been implanted by the Great Void Sect or the Great Zhou Empire within the Great Thunderclap Temple, this meant that his journey in learning the teachings of Buddha were not mixed with other unnecessary thoughts and was pure at its core – and even then, he supported the War of Buddha Annihilation.

"Perhaps... To him, what he did was not to 'annihilate Buddha' itself but to annihilate the disciples that have gone down the wrong path?" Lin Feng continued to speculate in his head. "It's like the splitting of the Great Void Sect into the Conservative Party and the Radical Party – the Great Thunderclap Temple was not just one uniform slab. There were different factions with different interpretations of Buddhist teachings, and different branches

would have formed naturally."

Lin Feng thought for a moment longer before he laughed and shook his head. The system alert rang incessantly in between his ears as he surveyed the Imperial Palace once more before he turned towards Zhu Yi and the others and sent a voice-projected message. "Zhu Yi – do help me monitor and watch out for the monk that's leading the Great Zhou Empire's party."

Zhu Yi's eyes sparkled as he listened to Lin Feng's explanation of the situation. "If we can capture this man, we may discover the true motive of the War of Buddha Annihilation all those years ago. However, he's a second-level immortal soul stage cultivator and I still can't do anything to him."

Lin Feng chuckled and said, "That's no matter. I have a rough idea of what happened during the War of Buddha Annihilation. You don't have to go rough with him – I just need you to pay attention because he might have a lot of relics in his possession."

"Oh?" Zhu Yi nodded his head. "I understand."

During their various journeys and expeditions over the years, Zhu Yi and his seniors and juniors had discovered miscellaneous relics here and there. However, it was not even ten percent of the total number.

According to Lin Feng's deductions, a great many relics probably ended up in the hands of the Great Zhou Empire after the devastation of the Great Thunderclap Temple.

The incessant beeping sounds from the system between his ears upon seeing the Da Kong Zen Master further proved this point. The Imperial Palace definitely had a quite a few relics in its possession – the fact that it was able to recover at such a steady pace such that it was only a hair's breadth away from its former glory was due to the injection of a myriad of resources by the Great Zhou Empire; the Hades' Dark Mantra and the various Buddhist relics were a few of the more substantial materials.



Even the Da Kong Zen Master himself had relics on his body.

"This monk is interesting. You call yourself a man on the true path of Buddhism, but you show no respect whatsoever for the olden relics of his predecessors. You're okay with the the Great Zhou Empire using these relics as materials to forge magic treasures, and even when you use it for yourself, you don't seem to be bothered by it."

Lin Feng had seen other Buddhist cultivators before who had no conscience about using their predecessor's relics for magic items and whatnot. However, both Monk Hui Ku and Monk Yuan Xiang still felt guilty about the whole thing.

Lin Feng smiled. "You call yourself Da Kong – have you truly seen through the world and detached yourself from all emotion? Even third-level Golden Form Buddhist cultivators may not be able to achieve that. Still, if that's the case, then you're not too far from the Virtual Golden Form of the Buddha."

The Vast Sea Sword Sect followed the Great Zhou Empire's party into the ancient magic formation while the Vivant Joy Holy Man and Shi Xingyun followed Prince Jingfang Shi Lin inside as well.

The Sun-Swallowing Grand Sage and the flock of Golden Roc demons along with the dragons under the command of the Red Dragon King knew the impossible difficulty of their task ahead and had already given up.

With the Immortal Dragon City, the Imperial Palace and Mount Yujing anchoring down the mountain above their heads, they would probably turn into dust in an instant if they blindly headed down to the mountain with thoughts of claiming it for themselves.

Lin Feng, Shi Yu and Liang Pan would not hesitate to team up temporarily against the demons as it would benefit their cause in the war between the two worlds and reduce the number of competitors as well.

Against such a line-up, even the Golden Roc Grand Sage and the Purple Sea Dragon King would have to think twice about taking them on, let alone the Sun-Swallowing Grand Sage and the Red Dragon King.

The Red Dragon King stared at the Imperial Palace and the Immortal Dragon City with an expressionless face.

Both destiny-level magic treasures had caused the dragon race great pain and were both ancestral enemies of the dragons.

The Immemorial Celestial Dragons once reigned supreme across the entire world during the Primordial Age. There was nothing much to be said about the humans at that time, and even other demon races were subservient under the rule of the dragons.

The Demon Emperor during that era was Xuan Shang, the First Dragon and the tribe leader of the Immemorial Celestial Dragons and was also known as Emperor Jue. He bred with his wife, Cang Ning of the Ancestral Dragons, and gave birth to the entire race of Immemorial Celestial Dragons and became the cardinal ancestor of the entire dragon race.

The first human emperor, Emperor Shi, united the humans and started an uprising and revolution against the rule of the dragons. Since the very beginning, the demon races that were unhappy with the dragon's rule of law had been helping out the humans in secret. They were the ones that gave the humans a chance to expand and grow in strength and enabled them to survive the toughest of times.

During the bloody battle that ensued, Ancestral Dragon Cang Ning was isolated, besieged and eventually killed. Emperor Shi used her remains as material resources and reinjected its power and spiritual energy in the war. The concept of power involved was that of immortal strength and eternal protection, and her remains were eventually refined and gave birth to the Immortal Dragon City – this was the origin of the name.

Before he could complete the magic treasure, Emperor Shi was murdered by a furious Xuan Shang whose wrath was unstoppable. However, the uprising of the humans was unstoppable by then as increasing numbers of powerful human cultivators stepped forward to replace their fallen comrades like the heads of a hydra. This epic war lasted all the way till the last battle that separated the Grand Celestial World into the Divine Lands and the Barren Expanses – and so ended the Primordial Age.

As the world entered the Antiquity Age, the Great Void Holy Man channeled the Supreme Heavenly Mirror and Emperor Tai operated the Imperial Palace as they worked together to defeat and kill Xuan Shang and a great many dragons. The supreme rule of the dragons since the beginning of time was officially over.

Today, even though the dragons were still dominant in the Black Sea, which was one of the Grand Celestial Seven Seas, and they were still a relatively powerful demonic race, it was nothing compared to the age of dragons all those centuries ago. They roamed the skies and the entire world bowed before them – their superiority was undeniable.

The Red Dragon King closed his eyes as he was afraid he would be unable to control his emotions. Many dragons considered the Immortal Dragon City and the Imperial Palace to be the two greatest sources of humiliation and some were even desperate for vengeance.

As he watched the departure of the Red Dragon King, Lin Feng's eyes curled into a frown as he contemplated momentarily before he placed his Steel Tree Avatar in pursuit.

His original body was still focused on the Imperial Palace and the Immortal Dragon City before him.

Both Destiny-level and Mahayana-level magic treasures were similar in the sense that they were able to independently channel their own unique powers. The only difference was the Destiny-

level magic treasures had a stronger and more powerful Original Soul and possessed immense willpower. They were essentially a part of nature in the Grand Celestial World, and would not expose themselves to the outside world for no special reason and were dormant for the most part.

They even resembled an independent world that simply existed in the Grand Celestial World, and were not vivacious and full of life like other living beings.

With the permission of these destiny-level magic items, even lower level cultivators were able to wield their formidable powers. However, if the gap in the level of mastery was too great, there was a possibility that there would be toxic feedback from the magic treasure.

For instance, aurous core beginner stage cultivators were generally only able to channel their own pools of mana while aurous core intermediate stage cultivators were able to absorb the spiritual energy from their environment. Different levels of mastery also meant a different level of understanding of the great theories of Heaven and Earth.

The ascension of the Emperor of the Great Zhou Empire, Liang Pan, to the third-level immortal soul stage and juxtaposed against the fact that the Imperial Palace had almost fully recovered, meant that Shi Yu's Immortal Dragon City was no longer able to overcome the Imperial Palace. Still, if Liang Pan was only in the second-level immortal soul stage, while the Imperial Palace could still go head-to-head with the Immortal Dragon City, Liang Pan would not have been able to unleash as much pressure as he did.

"In that case..." By studying Liang Pan and the Imperial Palace, Lin Feng managed to obtain a deeper understanding of destiny-level magic treasures. He had already made up his mind.

"My plan doesn't need to be refined. We shall move forward according to the original plan for now."

# Chapter 762: The Clandestine Operation

---

Liang Pan and Shi Yu both noticed the departure of Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar in secret to follow the Red Dragon King. They were not too bothered by it as most of their attentions were focused on Lin Feng's original body on Mount Yujing.

Still, they separated a part of their consciousness to monitor Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar to avoid any unforeseen and unexpected circumstances.

Lin Feng was prepared for this. The Steel Tree Avatar was following the Red Dragon King to monitor him as Lin Feng truly felt that something was off.

His secondary motive was also to distract Liang Pan and Shi Yu so that he could execute his clandestine operation with greater discretion.

Rows after rows of mystical glyphs and runes connected together as a somebody was packaged together with the Barrier-Breaking Stone and the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl and transformed into an obscure light dot. The light dot left Mount Yujing discreetly right the moment when Liang Pan and Shi Yu were distracted by the Steel Tree Avatar.

The layers of mystical glyphs formed a magical barrier and masked the movement of the light dot so that Liang Pan and Shi Yu would be unable to detect it.

The first step of Lin Feng's clandestine operation was successfully executed.

Lin Feng felt slightly amused. "This is the reason why I have to focus on completing the new spell before my journey into the Ying Sea. It's still the same old saying – preparation is always important."

If Liang Pan and Shi Yu were completely focused and they were

one with their destiny-level magic treasures, then detection was perhaps possible. However, just that tiny moment of distraction was all Lin Feng needed for the little spot of light to vanish within the clouds and mist above the Ying Sea.

Even though the spot of light remained undetected, both Liang Pan and Shi Yu felt their hearts skip a beat and their blood started to rush a little. Their instincts told them that the events were unfurling toward something not too beneficial for themselves.

The path of life and fate were masked by layers and layers of uncertainty, and their levels of mastery were not high enough to see through everything. It was only their instincts acting up, but it was hard to pinpoint the source of their discomfort.

For Shi Yu, it was possible that Liang Pan was the cause as much as it could be Lin Feng. It could also be because of the other people that were in the Ying Sea with them.

It was the same situation for Liang Pan.

However, as they watched Lin Feng's confident disposition, they began to heap their doubts and suspicion onto Lin Feng.

"What has he done?" Liang Pan frowned a little as he started to communicate with his avatar on top of the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain at a faraway place. The search for the Penglai Celestial Mountain was ongoing as Liang Pan raised his guard against any unforeseen circumstances.

Zhu Hongwu was a little disturbed by Liang Pan's description of the situation. "Your majesty, this feeling that you just felt is not a coincidence."

Liang Pan nodded his head in agreement and said, "We have to find the Penglai Celestial Mountain. However, we cannot be too hasty and we have room for taking a step back. It's okay even if we have to wait for the next reappearance of the three mountains. The Great Zhou Empire only needs to remain in control of the

Fangzhang Celestial Mountain at the end of everything for us to be in a beneficial position in the conflict of the Ying Sea."

"If we find the Penglai Celestial Mountain, then it will be up to you to retrieve it. My avatar will be on the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain just in case anything happens."

Zhu Hongwu acknowledged. "Yes, your majesty."

Once he was settled with the matters regarding the Penglai and Fangzhang Celestial Mountains, Liang Pan's full attention was accorded once again to Lin Feng and Shi Yu while monitoring the progress regarding the Penglai Celestial Mountain at the same time.

At this point, Zhu Yi, Li Yuanfang, the Da Kong Zen Master and Prince Jingfang were already inside the ancient formation surrounding the mountain.

As they landed on the pieces of jade planks, Zhu Yi and company started to feel a strange transformation in their environment.

The feeling was like as if they were submerged in water. They could see the ripples, but the key idea was that nobody could hear anything. Everything before them also seemed black and white and all color was lost.

At least they could still use their consciousnesses and voice-projection capabilities were unaffected. Zhu Yi studied the magic formation as he pulled out the Green Glass Jade Stand. "Senior, you've been inside this magic formation with the Golden Hill Holy Man before. We wish to break the formation again and we need your experience."

Spiritual energies rippled forth from the jade stand and were converted into audible sounds that only Zhu Yi and company could hear. "This is a natural-born magic formation and has been with the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain since a long time ago. The humans of the Divine Lands have taken to calling the Nameless

Ancient Formation."

"The ancient formation of today is a lot weaker than before. All it can do now is take away our sense of hearing and color. Back when I entered the formation with the Golden Hill Holy Man, the ancient formation was able to jam our sense of vision, touch, hearing, taste and smell all at the same time. We were only left with the autonomy of the consciousness to probe and move forward."

The Green Glass Jade Stand had been assimilated by Lin Feng and the stand now treated Lin Feng as its master. This was the reason why it referred to the Golden Hill Holy Man, its previous owner, the same way as Zhu Yi and the others.

"Even so, the flexibility of our consciousnesses is greatly reduced and our range of function is highly limited," the Green Glass Soul continued, "The combined effect of our continued exposure to the multiple layers of spatial illusions within the Ying Sea and the deficiency of our senses makes it very easy for us to end up becoming trapped inside."

"The Golden Hill Holy Man perished because he got himself trapped inside the layers of illusions."

Zhu Yi and company nodded their heads in unison. Over the years of exploration and adventure, the reputation of the Nameless Ancient Formation surrounding the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain is relatively pervasive.

Legend had it that during the initial appearances of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea, the power of the Nameless Ancient Formation was at its peak to the point that it was able to jam steal away cultivators' consciousness and rationality of thought. Once cultivators entered the ancient formation, they were unable to think nor speak and neither were they able to move. They would enter a kind of vegetable state.

This was not even accounting for the other dangerous things all



around. A cultivator in a vegetable state in such circumstances was as good as dead.

Emperor Tai launched a great assault on the Nameless Ancient Formation during his time which remarkably nullified its powers. This was the reason why the cultivators that came after were still able to use their consciousnesses and psychic senses.

With their consciousnesses still functional, the people that came after were able to discuss and experiment different resolutions to break the formation. Attack after attack caused the Nameless Ancient Formation to wither year after year.

The Green Glass Soul continued to explain. "From my experience with the Golden Hill Holy Man, who ended up being trapped inside, and the experiences of other adventurers who managed to escape, I can tell you that the method to breaking through this formation is very different from how we normally treat normal magic formations."

"The core of this formation is the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain itself. If we don't break through this formation somehow, there is no way we will even get close to the mountain. This means that looking for the eye of the formation is useless. The materials that is being used to set it up comprises the geological factors of the environment and are not fixed – they even include the layers of illusions of the Ying Sea."

Li Yuanfang's eyes sparkled as he listened. "That means the key to breaking the illusion is to use the same method as the Imperial Palace. We have to either attack it from the outside in with brute force, or we use the most primitive method of breaking formations – we analyze its patterns."

A long time ago, when humans and demons were just becoming civilized, there were already magic formations in existence. These formations were not the brainchildren of great cultivators or powerful demons who made them out of nothing – they were

formed through the analysis of the patterns of nature and the interactions of Heaven and Earth. The magic formations in practice back then were caricatures and replicas of natural occurrences like the Nameless Ancient Formation of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

This phenomenon was similar to ancient humans mimicking other animals and following their behaviors in order to survive.

The evolution of magic formations since the beginning of time went through a similar process as well. Cultivators analyzed the natural-born ancient formations of the world and studied the profound meanings embodied within, and modelled their own magic formations after these ancient formations using their own mantras.

With the passage of history, humans and demons became more adept at controlling their mana and their mantras, and their understanding of magic formations and the world accumulated over time. They broke free of the shadow cast by natural-born ancient formations, and were finally able to use their personal mantras and masteries as foundations to devise new magic formations based on their own ambitions and desires.

The Green Glass Soul affirmed Yuanfang's judgment. "You are absolutely correct. In order to break this ancient formation completely, we have to work out the formation patterns – to the very last one."

He continued to advise Zhu Yi and the others. "From my experience, this ancient formation is not a sphere but rather a spiraling loop of some sort. It only appears like a sphere due to the disproportionate space around it."

Zhu Yi turned to Li Yuanfang and asked, "What do you think, Sixth Junior?"

Li Yuanfang was not too hasty in reply. His eyes closed into slits as he started to analyze the magic formation by himself and

answered Zhu Yi only after he completed careful calculations. "Second Senior, we should split up and meet somewhere afterwards and consolidate our findings. It's faster this way."

"I wanted to say the same," Zhu Yi nodded his head in approval. "Even though the space around the formation is twisted, we can still afford to split up to work things out. We will go a half round in opposite directions and rendezvous at the end. We don't have to worry about running into other cultivators as well. This place is like our master's Purple Clouds Maze, and people that enter the ancient formation at different times will find themselves in the same place but in different dimensions. The Da Kong Zen Master and Prince Jingfang won't be able to see us as long as they haven't solved the conundrum of the ancient formation. This means that there is guaranteed safety for our splitting up."

Lin Feng's Purple Clouds Maze was only used on his foundational disciples as they were tested for their ascension to the status of becoming one of Lin Feng's direct disciples. It had been used several times after as well, and Zhu Yi and the others were able to replicate it after their levels of mastery became higher and higher. This was the reason why Li Yuanfang understood how it worked.

The two of them agreed on the plan while the Green Glass Soul was a little stunned. Zhu Yi's idea of going their separate ways meant that he would lead a group and Li Yuanfang would assume leadership of another group at the same time.

There was nothing to be said about Zhu Yi's level of mastery. However, Li Yuanfang was only in the aurous core beginner stage.

Both Jieyu and Baiguang were a little doubtful as well. They did not know much about Li Yuanfang as the two of them had been in seclusion for quite a prolonged period time. All they knew was that this dark-skinned youth was also Lin Feng's direct disciple.

"Across the Divine Lands below the level of the immortal soul, and this includes the other seniors and juniors of the Celestial Sect

of Wonders, there are not more than five people who are better than my Sixth Junior with magic formations." Zhu Yi said plainly as he could detect the skepticism of the rest of his company. "Even amongst the immortal soul stage cultivators, there are a great many who are not very good with magic formations. Of this group of people, Sixth Junior is better than every single one of them with regards to the transformations of magic formations."

The Green Glass Soul, Jieyu and Baiguang turned to look at Li Yuanfang with rather astonished expressions. It was clear that Zhu Yi was a man of truth and he did not take to slander and deceptions in his speech.

Even so, his words sounded a little too extraordinary to be true.

Li Yuanfang glanced at Zhu Yi without a single trace of arrogance nor humility and spoke with a serious attitude. "There are immortal soul stage cultivators in the parties from the Great Qin and the Great Zhou Empire after all. We do not know if there are cultivators who are adept in magic formations amongst their ranks."

"In the interest of time, you should cast the Soaring Dragon Spell to aid me in my endeavors."

Zhu Yi nodded in agreement. "I would have done the same even if you hadn't brought it up."

With that, his right hand started to move as he began casting the spell. The shadow of an immense dragon shimmered into sight as it roared and started wrapping itself around Li Yuanfang's body.

# Chapter 763: Touch Wood

---

The vast dragon encircled Li Yuanfang's body as voluminous power began to harmonize with Li Yuanfang's own pool of mana. The product was a mystical concept of power of continuous rise and non-stop improvement as the illusory dragon continued to enmesh itself with the light energy emanating from Li Yuanfang's body. In the end, it transformed into a halo and orbited Li Yuanfang quietly.

Everybody could immediately feel that Li Yuanfang's spiritual essence and energy were markedly stronger.

"This feeling... aurous core intermediate stage?" The Green Glass Soul was a little perplexed.

He was the original soul of the Green Glass Jade Stand, so aurous core intermediate stage cultivators were worthless to him. However, Li Yuanfang was only in the aurous core beginner stage and abruptly ascended to the aurous core intermediate stage under the effects of Zhu Yi's Soaring Dragon Spell. This sudden change piqued his interest.

Over the course of the history of the Grand Celestial World, there were multiple mantras and secret methods that could instantaneously increase one's level of mastery. However, many of them had negative side effects and most were only able to target themselves and were unable to target others.

It was not impossible for immortal soul stage cultivators and nascent soul stage grandmasters to raise the masteries of aurous core stage cultivators right away. However, there were usually side effects, and this was an action that would typically spoil things with the undue hastiness.

Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang came from the same sect and they were on good terms as well. There was no reason for Zhu Yi to harm the latter, and even though time was of the essence in the struggle to

break the ancient formation, it did not call for such a radical move with irreversible side effects.

If there was a loophole in the spell, it would be similar to that of other mantras that only temporarily increased one's level of mastery – there was a time limit. The Green Glass Soul could feel that the effects of the Soaring Dragon Spell would fade over time and once the mana had completely dissipated, Li Yuanfang would have returned to the aurous core beginner stage.

Zhu Yi widened his eyes and glared at Jieyu and Baiguang. "I can only use this spell on others and it has no effect on me. At my current level of mastery, I can only boost the powers of cultivators below the immortal soul stage. Jieyu is already in the demonic lord advanced stage, so I can't help to raise you to the Undying Demonic Soul. However, I can boost Baiguang to the demonic lord advanced stage."

"However, this spell can only be used once on the target individual for a period of time and it cannot be used continuously. I intend to use the same spell to boost Baiguang after we have picked apart this ancient formation and we are officially in the contest for the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain."

Both Jieyu and Baiguang nodded their heads in acknowledgement as Zhu Yi passed the Green Glass Jade Stand to Li Yuanfang. "The two of you will be following Sixth Junior. Your main task is to protect him and prevent him from being harmed by the illusions and transformations within the formation. You guys can leave the matter of understanding and solving the magic formation to him."

"I will do it alone. Let's split up."

The Nameless Ancient Formation was frail and weak at this point in time and did not possess that much destructive power in itself. However, the layers of illusions within the Ying Sea were still present. Under the effects of the ancient formation, cultivators lost

their sense of hearing and could not see color and were thus more susceptible to the deceptive illusions and would be more easily trapped inside.

It would be extremely perilous for any cultivator who found himself trapped.

The Green Glass Soul showed no further displeasure about the proposal as he thought to himself, "I have been inside the Nameless Ancient Formation before. If my master's Sixth Junior is unable to solve it, or if he's too slow, I think I can be of help."

The Green Glass Soul quickly realized that his worries were completely unnecessary.

"The first formation pattern: Yin advances and Yang retreats, Bingwu enters Jiazi, Yimo gives way to Guichen, Dingyi retreats into Renchou, Gengmao enters Binghai..." (Translator's Note: This text draws from the ancient Chinese system of sexagenary cycles, i.e., the twelve earthly branches and the ten heavenly stems. They are also used by Chinese astronomers and mariners as directions, on top of the four cardinal directions.)

"This formation pattern is too ancient. Calculations using the Heavenly Stems and Earthly Branches method overcomplicates things. I shall switch to Heluo's Law..." Li Yuanfang proceeded forward casually as he spoke quickly. However, his enunciation was as clear as his thought process even though he was not directing his speech at the Green Glass Soul or the others. It was a force of habit from talking to himself all the time during his own studies of magic formations.

"The cluster of the first ten formation patterns: The center doesn't move, the left-hand side coexists, the first, third, fifth, seventh and ninth formation pattern possesses Yang energy. The seventh formation pattern is abnormal, the Second Earth becomes fire, and the Seventh Sky is formed. If the Seventh Sky is incomplete, then the Second Earth doesn't exist." (Translator's

Note: This is another system derived from ancient Chinese literature, and is used to calculate positions amongst other things. There are positions, denoted by the numbers, within regions that are denoted by terms like "Sky", "Earth", "Fire", "Water", etc, and is related to the four cardinal directions as well.)

"The second, fourth, sixth, eighth and tenth formation pattern is positioned on the right-hand side. The second formation pattern is incomplete, we can use this as a point of entry to solve the formation."

"The second cluster of ten formation patterns: the center doesn't move, the left-hand side coexists, the first, third, fifth, seventh and ninth formation pattern possesses Yang energy. The first formation pattern is abnormal – First Sky becomes Water, Sixth Earth is formed and will not exist if the First Sky isn't there."

"The second, fourth, sixth, eighth and tenth formation patterns are positioned on the right-hand side. The sixth formation pattern is incomplete, we can use this as a point of entry."

"The third cluster of ten formation patterns..."

"The fourth cluster..."

Li Yuanfang kept moving forward and he never stopped once to take a break. For him, the powers of the Nameless Ancient Formation were a lot weaker than before and there was no need for him to pay attention to its dangers. He could focus solely on the changes in the magic formation, and once he made some headway or figured out the rhythm and patterns, the resolution of the magic formation would become much speedier.

Even though the Nameless Ancient Formation had assimilated the powers of the various spatial illusions around the Ying Sea, he had the protection of the Green Glass Soul, Jieyu and Baiguang so he was not did not have to be concerned about that either.

The Green Glass Soul and the two dragons watched him with



amazement, yet they developed a feeling that all this was somehow common-sense.

Li Yuanfang's eyes sparkled as he positioned himself squarely in the middle of the ancient formation. What was dry, complicated and challenging for most others was enjoyment for him.

Within the magic formation, Zhu Yi and the others existed in a separate plane. From the perspective of Lin Feng and the others outside the magic formation, the innumerable jade planks that formed a dome-like structure over the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain pieced together like an organized tessellation of rectangular brick flooring.

The countless numbers of planks started to move, yet there was an enchanting beauty to the chaos.

The Nameless Ancient Formation was a lot weaker than it had been. Lin Feng, Liang Pan and Shi Yu would not have too much trouble overcoming the magic formation had they been the ones inside. However, they would have required the brute force of Mount Yujing, the Imperial Palace or the Immortal Dragon City for a swifter resolution.

If not for the fact that there two other powerful parties watching him, Lin Feng did not mind using this speedy method to handle the magic formation. In the end, he was obsessed about magic formations like Li Yuanfang was.

However, the current situation was not too bad at all. Lin Feng had always been confident about the auspiciousness and good fortune of his disciples.

Furthermore, Zhu Yi was not the only one there – now there were two.

Xiao Yan, Xiao Zhener, Yang Qing, the Kui Cow King and the Spiritual Horse King had arrived in the space above the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. Lin Feng immediately sent a voice-projected

message to them and explained the current circumstance while Xiao Yan described his own encounters at the same time.

Lin Feng nodded faintly when he heard about the Ratnasambhava Monk but said nothing.

After everything had been arranged and instructed, Xiao Yan and his company bid farewell to Lin Feng and immediately descended into the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

Liang Pan and Shi Yu did not object to this new variant even though they were both aware that Xiao Yan was in the nascent soul advanced stage.

Compared to Zhu Yi's prowess as a nascent soul advanced stage cultivator, it was not hard to imagine that of Xiao Yan's, and that his abilities could no longer be measured by the standard gauges used for nascent soul stage cultivators.

In the end, there was no way they could object to what the Celestial Sect of Wonders were doing anyway. That just seemed too stingy, as if they were afraid.

The only thing they could do was bank their hopes on the Da Kong Zen Master and Prince Jingfang and the others.

However, Xiao Yan's company was a lot slower than Zhu Yi and the first batch of cultivators. It was expected that they would take a considerably longer time to break the magic formation than the others as they started a lot later.

The Nameless Ancient Formation was nothing like the spatial illusion that Lin Feng had just encountered. It did not dissipate once a single person had broken it. This was because the eye of the formation was the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, thus there was no way it could be completely removed. Furthermore, the strength of the formation was fueled by the spiritual energy of nature and the countless illusions around the mountain. Unless Lin Feng and the others eroded them from the outside, the magic formation as there

to stay.

Therefore, Xiao Yan and his company were unable to share in the fruits of Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang's success – they could only rely on themselves.

As time passed by, the spherical-shaped structure of jade planks surrounding the mountain started to transform into a complete annulus before their movement stopped entirely and radiated with colorful radiance.

Zhu Yi sauntered forward calmly within the Nameless Ancient Formation as a giant turtle-shaped turtle hovered above his head.

The spiritual turtle's eyes were calm but was deep and profound like the vast oceans.

An immeasurable volume of light patterns and characters appeared and vanished on the back of the turtle shell and resembled the ephemeral nature of air bubbles in the ocean water.

These characters clustered together and continuously connected to one another. It seemed like a giant diagram of the eight trigrams from far away.

Through the use of the Return Of All Appearances Spell, the speed at which Zhu Yi was solving the Nameless Ancient Formation was actually faster than Li Yuanfang. After all, he was more than a single level higher in mastery, and he was a lot more sensitive to the flow of spiritual energy within the magic formation.

Suddenly, Zhu Yi stopped in his tracks and smiled as a black-white ripple appeared in the colorless waves before him as Li Yuanfang and his company stepped out.

The two of them did not even bother greeting each other as they immediately got down to consolidating their respective findings and cross-referencing each other.

After completely understanding the changes within the magic

formation, Zhu Yi nodded his head one final time and said, "I will cast the spell."

Li Yuanfang was in complete agreement as it was clear that Zhu Yi was more powerful than he was and thus had a higher chance at success.

Zhu Yi had already begun to cast a spell as he formed a handprint on his stomach. It was agile and dense at the same time, and primitive yet profound.

Calm yet distant lights suddenly shot out from the eyes of the giant spiritual turtle above his head and stirred up the wave-like spaces in front of them.

The entire sea surrounding the company began to tremble and ripple like boiling water as the lights from the turtle's eyes began to take effect; giant air bubbles appeared and exploded before Zhu Yi and the others.

Color gradually returned to the environment as ear-splitting booming sounds could be heard.

The entire layer of void shattered before their very eyes as their environment changed once again – they were out of the Nameless Ancient Formation, and had finally arrived on the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

Zhu Yi could confirm that they were not in an illusion and had truly landed on the mountain. They stepped over solid ground and felt the ample spiritual energy of the mountain as they began to take in the profound laws of nature.

"It's actually so simple. This feeling is just too unreal," The Green Glass Soul was the first to speak. The tone of his voice clearly showed his disbelief and incredulity towards the entire process.

Zhu Yi smiled and said, "We are stepping on the shoulders of giants who came before us after all. The repeated assaults upon the Nameless Ancient Formation has weakened it so much that it is

only able to disable our sense of hearing and take away the color of the environment. These two items are not really that important in our efforts to break it. A magic formation that has lost its offensive capabilities is just like a dying man – all it can do is watch as we analyze the transformations and derive the proper solution."

Li Yuanfang continued, "The same goes for the others who are not that good with magic formations. Even though they will be slightly slower and we are clearly the first to break through, time is still of the essence."

Zhu Yi turned his gaze towards the vast and sprawling magical mountain. "Let's go."

# Chapter 764: The Illusion At The Core Of the Mountain

---

Compared to the colossal square-shaped Fangzhang Celestial Mountain which was more than five thousand miles wide, the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was a lot smaller as it was only four thousand miles wide. However, this magical mountain was still enormous and was large enough to be called an island.

Zhu Yi and company wasted no time as they flew towards the summit of the mountain immediately after breaking the magic formation.

No experience was required as their senses told them that the summit of the mountain was where most of the spiritual energy of the mountain were condensed at.

Voluminous amounts of spiritual energy permeated from the top of mountain and streamed into the midsections like a wheel that orbited the mountain.

As they were walking, both Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang glanced backwards towards the Nameless Ancient Formation at the same time.

They exchanged a look. "The others have broken the formation as well."

The others were not that much slower than Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang. The reason why their company was faster than the others was because Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang were relatively more adept with magic formations and the result of their decision to split up.

The void split open in the Nameless Ancient Formation at a distance behind them as a group of people finally stepped foot onto the mountain – the Great Qin Empire's party.

The leader of the group was not Shi Lin and neither was it the

Vivant Joy Holy Man – it was Shi Xingyun.

She raised her head and turned towards the direction of the summit. "It's Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang from the Celestial Sect of Wonders. Looks like they split up as well and completed a half-circle each."

Shi Lin frowned a little. He was called forth to lead the Great Qin Empire's party into the Nameless Ancient Formation and probe the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and was naturally one of the cultivators that with higher level of mastery with magic formations. In addition to Shi Xingyun's previously unknown finesse with magic formations, they used the same method of completing a half-circle each and even then, they were still slower than the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

Their pairing was a second-level immortal soul stage cultivator with a nascent soul intermediate stage cultivator and yet they still came up short against a nascent soul advanced stage pairing with an aurous core beginner stage. This was actually slightly humiliating.

Shi Lin lowered his voice and said, "Let's go. We will catch up with them at the summit."

"Yes, uncle." Shi Xingyun nodded her head and the Vivant Joy Holy Man said nothing as they called the rest of the cultivators of the Great Qin Empire and followed behind Zhu Yi and headed towards the summit of the mountain.

Not before long, the void shifted once more as the Great Zhou Empire's party burst through the void and arrived onto the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

The Da Kong Zen Master cast his gaze forward towards the tip of the mountain and laughed as he shook his head. "Even with the guidance of my ancestors, one man's speed is ultimately slower than two people working together."

The Tidal Sword Elder refused to comment. Sword cultivators

were never too good with magic formations, and even if they were, they were only good with sword formations. There was also a huge difference from typical magic formations, thus the valuable input he could provide was highly limited.

The Da Kong Zen Master wasted no more time as he started flying towards the top of the mountain as the Tidal Sword Elder and the rest of the group followed closely behind.

Zhu Yi and the others took point as everybody proceeded towards the top of the mountain. The amount of mystical herbs and other natural objects were plentiful enough to make people dizzy, and the ample spiritual energy was also made it a highly suitable environment for people to cultivate in.

"Even though it's still inferior to Mount Yujing, it's actually superior to the Celestial Wonders World. Even if the resources on this mountain are inferior to a middle world like the Celestial Wonders World, the sheer numbers and variety are already extraordinary."

Zhu Yi surveyed his surroundings and continued, "Furthermore, there is the Jade Nectar Spring that the Green Glass Soul senior spoke off that helps to raise the powers of magic items."

Even though the Green Glass Jade Stand craved the Jade Nectar Spring, he knew that it was not the right time to indulge himself. He had to wait until Lin Feng and Zhu Yi gained control over the mountain before anything could happen. He would have all the time in the world after that as well.

Just like the Ying Sea, the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain had a great many illusions inside as well. Most of the treasures and mystical herbs that everybody kept coming across were actually created by visual illusions.

The most dangerous ones were still illusions that possessed the highest level of deceptiveness. One was positioned at the very top of the mountain as well, as the space above was twisted and out of



proportion and an illusory summit that released strong ripples of spiritual energy was created to mislead unwitting adventurers.

After a long time of searching, victory was near and only one last step was needed before the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was fully in control, and it would be able to roam freely throughout the Ying Sea.

The greater the suffering that came before, the stronger the feeling of victory, satisfaction and hopeful relief would be.

However, Zhu Yi and Li Yuanfang were clear-headed enough to dispel all such notions. They refused to be misled and trapped by the illusion of the summit as they repositioned themselves in the void above – they discovered that the illusion was actually in a place far away from where the real summit was located at.

In comparison with the real summit of the mountain, it was like a reflection from a mirror.

Zhu Yi and the others broke through the illusion in an instant and finally found themselves at the summit of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. The mountain seemed to tremble at the very moment they set foot onto the summit.

Uncountable rays of light lit up from the summit and formed a gigantic circular formation. It was not an aggressive one, however, and it led Zhu Yi and his company inside the middle of the mountain!

The midsection of the mountain was pitch black and without a single ounce of light.

All natural light was blocked off, and even when Zhu Yi and the others tried to create sparks of light, they still found themselves mired in complete darkness.

"This concept of power is similar to that of the Eternal Night Demonic Stele. It resembles the darkness of the primitive ages and the eternal and sleepless night – as if all sources of light have been

consumed." Zhu Yi and the others remained calm and started using their psychic senses to probe the path ahead. They began to feel the flow of spiritual energies inside the mountain.

Vast amounts of spiritual energies that were condensed together were like tides along the coast – there was a clear direction of movement.

Zhu Yi and company followed the general direction of the flow of spiritual energy as they moved forward slowly. Even though they were obstructed by multiple sources of mana, everybody fought them off as they went with relative ease, and tiny sparks of light eventually returned to their eyes.

"Over here." Zhu Yi felt his spirits lift as he started towards the tiny specks of light. The more they walked, the clearer the lights became.

At the end of everything, everybody found themselves faced with a flat wall. The wall was translucent like water crystals and radiated soft light from within.

However, strangely, the crystal-like wall did not reflect their images.

Everyone started exchanging glances as it was clear there was something wrong with this crystal wall. Zhu Yi reached out to touch the wall – it was not ice-cold, but rather exuded a certain degree of warmth. He tried to pierce the wall through the void but realized that was not possible.

They changed tack and tried to destroy the wall with brute force but discovered that the wall was like liquid water – it rippled and twisted momentarily before it returned to its original state.

Zhu Yi's brows furrowed into a frown. "Seems like we need an third-level immortal soul stage cultivator to break this crystal wall forcefully... Or not – it seems like even cultivators at the Way of the Virtual Entity may not be able to accomplish that as well.

Perhaps we need a destiny-level magic treasure."

Baiguang stepped forward and touched the crystal wall lightly. "Perhaps it has something to do with illusory power. It even feels like an abnormally powerful spatial illusion – the only thing is, why can't we enter it?"

Baiguang came from the Jade Dragon Tribe, and the natural talent of the Jade Dragons was the mastery of illusory powers and the switch from corporeal forms to incorporeal ones. Even though their illusory powers were not seductive and deceptive like that of the Fox Race or the Oyster Race, they were still relatively more sensitive towards changes in space.

"It's different from the illusions we have encountered before. It doesn't just forbid us from entering inside – it seems to be discriminating against us."

Zhu Yi mulled over her analysis momentarily before he turned towards the Green Glass Jade Stand. "Green Glass Soul senior, much important information passed down over the years could be lost in translation."

"Having an advisor like you, who have existed since the middle ages, is extremely helpful. Do you know if anybody managed to get themselves into the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, or if anybody has faced an illusion such as this before?"

The Green Glass Soul pondered for a moment before he replied slowly, "I have heard rumors before, but I can't verify it."

"Legend has it that during the early years of the Middle Ages, one of the third-level Golden Form stage elders of the Great Thunderclap Temple that went by the name of Zhi Guang Zen Master managed to beat the Nameless Ancient Formation and eventually entered the middle of the mountain like you guys just did."

"However, the Zhi Guang Zen Master was unable to take control

of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain in the end. He was eventually rejected and chased away by the magical mountain, which channeled the powers of the Ying Sea. He returned to the Great Thunderclap Temple and lived to tell the tale. He once spoke of a unique illusion in the middle of the mountain that rejected all outsiders."

"Perhaps this is the illusion that he spoke of," the Green Glass Soul continued, "The Zhi Guang Zen Master had the intention to revisit the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain during the next reappearance of the three mountains, but the chance never came and he passed away for some other reason."

Jieyu's mouth twitched a little. "After the forceful assault of generations after generations of cultivators, the defensive mechanisms of the three mountains have become weaker and weaker over the years. At least we haven't been chased away by the might of the Ying Sea. Still, we can't just pace around at the entrance to the treasure trove!"

"The defensive mechanisms of the magical mountain are still relatively powerful," Zhu Yi fiddled with a voice-projection crystal as he spoke, "This uncanny illusion seems to be formed by the mountain by incorporating the mystical and vast powers of the Ying Sea. This also means that we are coming closer and closer to the key to controlling the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain."

"We are unable to contact Master and the others while we are on the mountain. We don't even know if Eldest Senior and his company are already here on the island or if they're still stuck inside the Nameless Ancient Formation. If we can communicate with them, then we can help them break through the formation as fast as possible."

Zhu Yi kept the voice-projection crystal as he started to study the crystal wall in front of him once again.

While the Celestial Sect of Wonders were analyzing the crystal

wall, the Great Zhou and the Great Qin Empires' parties had finally entered the middle of the mountain as well.

The magical mountain possessed strange spatial defensive mechanisms, and the three parties that entered separately found themselves in completely different circumstances with varying encounters.

However, everyone found themselves faced with a crystal-like wall that prevented them from moving forward.

"The illusion at the core of the mountain... it's also the key that connects the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain to the Ying Sea."

The Da Kong Zen Master took a deep breath and retrieved a relic from his possessions

This relic appeared extremely small and plain and resembled a date seed – dark-colored and unassuming.

"Zhi Guang Ancestor, I call on your wisdom and your experience." The Da Kong Zen Master placed his palms together and started to chant. The relic hovered in the air but still seemed dull and unimpressive, and was quite unlike the other relics which all radiated with Buddhist light, exuded the smell of sandalwood and rang with songs of Zen.

However, there was a feeling of freedom coming from the seed-like relic and permeated the air with profound concepts of Buddhism.

All of a sudden, rows of black scripture streamed out from the relic and drilled into the crystal wall!

At the same time, rows of black scripture formed the shape of a rope and started wrapping themselves around the Da Kong Zen Master.

# Chapter 765: The Starlight Being, Memories Of The Dead

---

The Da Kong Zen Master seemed like he became one with the crystal wall through his connection with the relic and the relic's connection to the wall through the rows of black scripture.

Buddhist light flashed above his head and transformed into a spell body of a giant Buddha that was pure-gold and emanated green light.

The Tidal Sword Elder had already been briefed by the Da Kong Zen Master about the current situation, so they were not too surprised as they watched the Da Kong Monk place his Buddha Spell Body on full display.

The Da Kong Monk used to be part of the inner circle of the Great Thunderclap Temple and was raised as a talented prodigy with a great destiny. The mantras that he practiced was the Amoghasiddhi Mantra, which was part of the Five Tathagata Dharmas of the Compass and ranked amongst the likes of the Forever-Bright Tathagata Mantra and the Vairocana Sutra.

He was at the second-level Golden Form stage and the form of his Buddha Spell Body was naturally that of the Amoghasiddhi Buddha. His right hand gripped two Vajras and his left hand held a bell and his throne was supported by the horned Sangsang Bird.

The Sangsang Bird was a spiritual bird that existed between the Primordial Age and the Antiquity Age and was now extinct. It had a human-like body with feathers and horns on its head.

Legend had it that the olden adventurers that were on treasure-hunting expeditions would sometimes hear the sounds of the Sangsang Bird and they would immediately find what they were looking for even though the Bird never showed itself. Such was the fabled effects of the call of the Sangsang Bird.

In Buddhist Scripture, the special characteristics of the Sangsang Bird originated from one of the Buddha representations of the Five Wisdoms, the Amoghaisiddhi Buddha, who had the power to make every dream come true and accomplish all necessary activities.

However, the revelation of the Amoghaisiddhi Buddha Spell Body was not meant to pierce through the crystal wall but to activate the ancient relic left behind by the Zhi Guang Zen Master.

As black scripture continued to stream out of the ancient relic, it finally started to change and began radiating with golden Buddhist light.

The Amoghaisiddhi Spell Body above the Da Kong Monk's head began to materialize and became something like a transparent soul. Subsequently, it was absorbed into the relic through the rows of scripture, which was now golden in color. The ancient relic exploded with light as a light shadow appeared out of nowhere, drifted momentarily in midair, and entered the interior of the crystal wall.

Most of the other cultivators from the Great Zhou Empire and the Vast Sea Sword Sect stepped forward in front of the crystal wall. Their souls immediately left the shell of their physical bodies as they did not even channel the powers of their nascent souls or their aurous cores – they simply floated through the crystal wall.

The people that remained, which included the Tidal Sword Elder, waited in silence and kept watch for the others whose souls had left their bodies.

The Da Kong Monk had directly activated the original soul of the relic and the remnant memories within, therefore he already had a rough idea of how to enter the mysterious illusion at the core of the mountain.

It was a lot more troublesome for the Celestial Sect of Wonders and the Great Qin Empire as they had to work out the solution by themselves.

Zhu Yi, Li Yuanfang, Jieyu and Baiguang sat on the ground with their legs crossed and stared at the crystal wall. They were still patient in searching for an answer despite the time they had already spent doing practically nothing.

The Green Glass Jade Stand was placed in front of Zhu Yi and said nothing as the Green Glass Soul was studying the crystal wall as well.

The shadow of a giant turtle flickered within Zhu Yi's pupils as countless ancient characters surged around as Zhu Yi did his calculations.

All of a sudden, he felt as if he had entered a mystical world as his consciousness departed from his physical body and even his soul. He 'integrated' into Heaven and Earth as he watched his physical body sitting cross-legged on the ground.

He could no longer feel his nascent soul and neither could he feel his physical body – he could not even feel his soul. However, Zhu Yi could see the burning fire of his soul which became stronger and stronger.

This strength did not come from the innate power of his soul or his agility. Rather, it was something more mystical and profound, as if he could see through everything from the past to the future.

Only Zhu Yi could see this fire – it was the Fire of Intelligence.

Amongst Lin Feng's direct disciples, Wang Lin and Zhu Yi had the most powerful souls, but both of them could not compare to the innate strength of Shi Tianhao.

Wang Lin cleansed his soul with the River Styx Primordial Water. During the Spiritual Conference of Huanghai, Zhu Yi's soul was sparked with the Fire of Intelligence which caused his soul to evolve.

However, this inexplicable phenomenon had never occurred again ever since. Even Zhu Yi himself could not bring about such



an event.

Through the crystal wall in front of him, Zhu Yi quietly observed and felt the unique willpower and the mystical transformations of the Ying Sea and once again sparked the Fire of Intelligence and his soul evolved to become a lot more acute than before.

He felt as if he had freed himself from the chains of life and detached himself from the eternal river of time, and was also able to perceive the secrets of the past and the uncertainties of the future.

Such powerful senses and acuteness of perception was something that not even immortal soul stage cultivators typically possessed. Not even they could reach this level.

Even though the fire flickered for a tiny moment and was extinguished immediately after, Zhu Yi managed to grasp the key to the problem.

"The... Soul?" Zhu Yi's eyes sparkled as Li Yuanfang and the others turned and gazed at him. Zhu Yi took a moment to settle down and explained, "If my senses and my calculations are not wrong, then only the pure soul can enter the crystal wall onto the other side of the illusion."

"Even immortal soul stage cultivators have to transform their immortal souls into the original form of the soul."

Li Yuanfang frowned a little and said, "If only our souls are allowed to enter, then we can only rely on the strengths of our souls in response to any unforeseen circumstances within the illusion. All spell-power and mana will be rendered useless, and not even our magic items or whatsoever can be used."

Zhu Yi shook his head slowly. "I don't think so. I may be wrong, but I can feel that there's something else hidden within the illusion and it's not as simple as that."

He glanced at the others and said, "I will send my soul inside and

you guys will remain here to protect my body."

Jieyu seemed a little worried. "All by yourself?"

Zhu Yi nodded his head. "The illusion is strange and insidious. While it may not simply purely be about the strength of the soul, my soul is still the strongest amongst our company. Only I need to go inside."

Jieyu and Baiguang exchanged a look. Their souls were relatively powerful as well, but there was no way they would let Li Yuanfang keep watch by himself. Even though Zhu Yi had multiple magic items in his possession – including the Green Glass Jade Stand, the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel, the Eternal Night Demonic Stele, and the Yang Heaven Lamp and even the You Heaven Robe – these Gestation-level and Metaplasia-level magic treasures could not be channeled properly without Zhu Yi at the mantle.

However, Zhu Yi's solo entry might be a little too perilous and risky. Baiguang contemplated momentarily and suggested, "Why not let me follow you inside? My husband can keep watch with Li Yuanfang with the magic items that you will leave behind."

Jieyu's mouth hung open and wanted to object but Baiguang interrupted him. "Us demons have never been too adept with the use of magic treasures, and neither did we forge these things either. You are in the demonic lord advanced stage and I'm only in the demonic lord intermediate stage, so it's more suitable for you to wield them instead of me."

"Do take care." Jieyu had no choice but to nod his head in agreement.

Once a consensus had been reached, Zhu Yi and Baiguang wasted no more time as their souls departed from their bodies and flew into the crystal wall.

Zhu Yi's senses were correct. Once they left their physical bodies, their souls felt no obstruction at all as they passed through the

crystal wall and officially entered the strange illusion at the core of the mountain.

Once they were inside, their environment changed once again. Supernovas flashed in the sky and they found themselves in a vast space that resembled the endless starry universe.

Zhu Yi was not even able to react as his soul became enveloped by spheres of starlight.

"Eh?" Zhu Yi activated his senses once again and realized that this sphere of starlight was not toxic or harmful towards his soul. Instead, it seemed to provide his soul with a new physical shell. However, this new physical body was not human-shaped, and neither was it shaped like any living thing in the world – it was a simply a sphere of starlight that flashed with faint traces of red.

However, once he integrated with the sphere of starlight, Zhu Yi started to feel flashbacks of memories inside his soul.

This were not his own pieces but someone else's, and pictures after pictures flowed into his mind.

"These are... The memories of the Wang Hao, the Great Sun Holy Man?" Zhu Yi was the most knowledgeable out of all of Lin Feng's disciples, and he fell short of omniscience, he was able to infer the identity the original owner of these set of remnant memories.

His name was Wang Hao, and he was the successor to Emperor Chen during the Antiquity Age of human emperors. He was known as the Great Sun Holy Man and practiced his mantras side by side with Emperor Chen, and succeeded the Emperor Chen's lineage of mantras that were based on the transformations of the stars. He managed to attain the second-level immortal soul stage as well, but met his unfortunate end during one of the reappearances of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea.

However, based on his own repertoire of knowledge, the death of the Great Sun Holy Man had nothing to do with the Yingzhou

Celestial Mountain but was connected to the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain instead.

Zhu Yi oriented himself as he assumed control of this new temporary physical body and probed forward into the spatial illusion.

In the next moment, countless numbers of stars exploded forth towards him!

Amongst them included the Path of Hell's Molten Lava Netherworld Formation from the ancient Samsara Sect, the Shaoshang Sword from the Mount Shu Sword Sect, the Blood River Sect's Light of Divine Plasma from the satanic sects of the Antiquity Age, the Purple Clouds Sect's Nine Heavens Thunder and even the Supreme Nine-Holes Mantra of the True Gods from the Great Void Sect!

All kinds of mantras and spells besieged Zhu Yi at the same time.

Every star possessed a unique and secret spell or mantra from the powerful sects in the history of the Divine Lands.

Zhu Yi's mind spun with ideas and thoughts as he desperately tried to find a way out. "The forces of these spells are not the same – the cultivators behind them are not of the same level of mastery."

"The Supreme Nine-Holes Mantra of the True Gods is channeled by a first-level immortal soul stage cultivator, and the Shaoyang Sword Technique is executed by a second-level immortal soul stage, and the Molten Lava Netherworld Formation is directed by a nascent soul advanced stage cultivator. The Nine Heavens Thunder should also be a first-level immortal soul stage cultivator..."

Zhu Yi meticulously went through the various information and materials that he had received about the Ying Sea before they started on their expedition. With the strength of his soul, he had no problem remembering any volume of information and

materials and he could recall every single name that he had seen before at whim.

"The Spiritual Zither Holy Man of the Great Void Sect, first-level immortal soul stage, died inside one of the illusions of the Ying Sea."

"A Shaoyang Swordmaster from the Middle Ages, second-level immortal soul stage, failed in his endeavor to control the Penglai Celestial Mountain and was crushed by the mountain which channeled the strength of the Ying Sea."

"Not too sure about the Path of Hell of the Samara Sect. Information is unclear – records and archives probably exist only within the sect itself."

"An immortal soul stage cultivator from the Purple Clouds Sect from over six thousand years ago, named the Shocking Thunder Holy Man, failed in his ambition to take over the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain and was pulverized by the dragon illusions which besieged him at the summit."

"The others... including my own temporary body – the Great Sun Holy Man," Zhu Yi took a deep breath, "the illusion at the core of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain is drawing on the powers of the Ying Sea and has managed to replicate the remnant souls of powerful cultivators that perished within the Ying Sea over the years!"

Faced with an overwhelming assault, Zhu Yi started to make his move. The stars flickered but he was not casting his own mantras and abhijnas – the sphere of starlight materialized into the figure of a man and he punched out with an explosive roar.

The secret Martial Way of the Lineage of the Emperor Chen – the Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions!

# Chapter 766: The Battle Of The Stars!

---

Upon closer inspection, Zhu Yi started to realize that the various spells and techniques that were surging around were not all targeted towards himself.

Every star seemed to be fighting against another one as they unleashed spell after spell and it felt like all they wanted to do was destroy the other stars around them.

These stars were chaotic and disorganized as if they had no mind at all.

Even though the stars perfectly replicated the strengths of the powerful cultivators that lost their lives inside the Ying Sea and their spells were on full display, they seemed to have lost their autonomy and every star seemed like a puppet.

"The remnant memories of the stars are incomplete, therefore the abhijnas and spells are also incomplete. This is the reason why they are unable to execute the spells smoothly and can only draw upon the power of the stars to unleash their personal spells and martial ways."

"However, the remnant memories and souls are one with the stars but separated from my own – therefore I am unable to use my own spells and abhijnas. Forced execution is virtually impossible as we will be doing everything wrong."

"The consequence of the ruination of y new starlight body that formed around my soul after my entry is unclear and hard to predict. I may possibly reform a new sphere and a new identity, yet I may also be rejected by the spatial illusion, and my soul can even be destroyed in the process."

Thoughts raced through his mind as unleashed a spell from the soul memories of the Great Sun Holy Man's esoteric Martial Ways of the Emperor Chen. The Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight

Mansions opened with the form of the Jiao Wood Serpent and launched towards the Shaoyang Sword Technique directly in front of him.

The first one of the seven mansions of the Green Dragon was called the Jiao Wood Serpent – its determinative star was Alpha Virgo, wood-typed, and formed a serpent-like figure in the sky. It was the first of the seven Mansions of the Eastern Sky and had two stars that were shaped like the horns of a dragon.

The horns of the dragon represented the ferocious charge into battle. The Jiao Wood Serpent Form was one of the killer moves of the Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions.

Both fists punched out and the force of the attack were like two giant hammers that could pulverize his adversary in an instant.

The Shaoyang Sword was the fiercest branch out of the Six Swords of the Mount Shu Sword Sect, yet Zhu Yi had no intention to dodge or retreat. He retaliated with the form of the Jiao Wood Serpent and met brute force with brute force.

The force of the clash exploded with bright light as the Shaoyang Sword star flew backwards from the aftershocks and Zhu Yi's star was forced backwards well.

His opponent sustained a greater loss than Zhu Yi as the Shaoyang Sword strike had no focal point – it blindingly treated all surrounding stars as a target but Zhu Yi concentrated all his energy towards him, and Zhu Yi almost turned that star into a supernova.

However, other stars started to launch other spells and attacks towards Zhu Yi.

Zhu Yi's soul was trembling violently as he tried his best to connect with the remnant memories of the Great Sun Holy Man and struggled to understand the profundity of the Martial Ways of the Emperor Chen.

Of all the human emperors in the history of the Divine Lands, the

Emperor Chen was the most adamant about taking control of the Ancient Desolate Galaxy away from the demons. He harnessed the powers of a million stars and, coupled with his deep understanding of the transformations of the stars, he managed to form a physical body so strong that that hardly anybody in the Middle Ages that could match him.

The Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions was the most popular Martial Way amongst all the techniques and spells passed down from the Emperor Chen.

The Twenty-Eight Mansions comprised four groups of mansions. The Seven Mansions of the Green Dragon of the East – the Horn Wood Serpent, the Neck Gold Dragon, the Root Earth Raccoon, the Room Sun Rabbit, the Heart Moon Fox, the Tail Fire Tiger and the Winnowing Basket Water Cheetah.

The Seven Mansions of the Vermilion Bird of the South – the Well Wood Tiger, the Ghost Gold Goat, the Willow Earth Roe, the Star Sun Horse, the Extended Net Moon Deer, the Wings Fire Snake and the Chariot Water Worm.

The Seven Mansions of White Tiger of the West – the Legs Wood Wolf, the Bond Gold Canine, the Stomach Earth Pheasant, the Hairy Heard Sun Chicken, the Net Moon Crow, the Turtle Beak Fire Monkey and the Three Stars Water Ape.

The Seven Mansions of the Black Tortoise of the North – the Dipper Wood Xie, the Ox Gold Bull, the Girl Earth Bat, the Emptiness Sun Mouse, the Rooftop Moon Swallow, the Encampment Fire Pig and the Wall Water Yu. (Translator's Note: The Twenty-Eight Mansions are part of the Chinese constellations systems. The names of the mansions are directly translated and the naming consists of three parts and they make not make too much sense without reference to the Chinese charts.)

Zhu Yi continued to mull over the deeper meanings of the stars embodied within the twenty-eight forms and cross-referenced with



his own knowledge for maximum speed and effect.

"This Martial Way is a little similar to the ones practiced by Eldest Senior. His Four Appearances Heaven-Cleaving Script also consists of the Dragon, the Sparrow, the Tiger and the Tortoise. Will continual derivation of the Martial Way and incorporating the transformations of the stars lead to other types of martial ways?"

Zhu Yi's soul was as lively and vivacious as it could be at this point – he even had the time and energy to contemplate about things that were completely unrelated to the dire circumstance at hand.

The starlight around his body started to flicker and materialize into a physical body of a man. The pores and holes around his body trembled and sparkled like the stars in the universe as vast energies connected them all together.

However, Zhu Yi took a different approach this time. The body that the starlight transformed into extended its arms to the side as if it was giving up on all forms of protection before it dashed backwards like the flight of a giant bird – it was the form of the Wings Fire Snake.

The determinative star was Alpha Crateris, and it was fire-typed and took the form of a snake. It was the sixth mansion of the Southern Mansions and took its position at the wings of the Vermilion Bird. Birds could only take flight with wings, and it was one of the agility-based techniques of the Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions.

The Emperor Chen of the Antiquity Age 'flapped' his wings and travelled to a place ten thousand miles away with this exact technique. It was faster than most other techniques that had similar effects, and rivaled even the speed of the Golden Roc.

Zhu Yi almost had full autonomy with offence and defense. He managed to evade the onslaught of miscellaneous spells in an instant as the spells found themselves without a target.

"I shall not waste my time with them – the important task right now is to break the spatial illusion," he thought to himself as he continued to shake off several other attacks with the Wings Fire Snake form and soared towards the far end of the starry galaxy.

He clashed with multiple spheres of starlight along the way, with varying levels of mastery. However, the lowest was already the nascent soul stage – it seemed like only the remnant soul memories of cultivators that were at least at the nascent soul stage that had perished in the Ying Sea at some point were preserved and guided into this spatial illusion.

Zhu Yi pondered over everything as he travelled. "Even though we entered the illusion at the same time, Baiguang is nowhere to be seen. None of the chaotic starlight beings that I ran into previously belonged to her soul – I do hope she's safe."

Even though he was unsure, Zhu Yi's guess was that whichever starlight soul that enveloped the people that entered the spatial illusion was purely by chance.

Zhu Yi was a little more fortunate than others to have been implanted into the remnant starlight soul of the Great Sun Holy Man. Of all the records of cultivators that had lost their lives inside the Ying Sea at some point, besides the small number of third-level immortal soul stage cultivators, the Great Sun Holy Man was one of the more outstanding individuals.

This was the reason why Zhu Yi could repel the onslaught of starlight and still had the energy to move forward.

If he had been implanted into the remnant soul of a nascent soul beginner stage cultivator, then he would be in deep trouble. Even the aftershocks of the battle between powerful cultivators could eradicate his entire sphere of starlight.

Besides the good fortune that he was enjoying currently, this outcome was beneficial for Zhu Yi in the long run as well. He was able to connect with and understand the Great Sun Holy Man's

remnant soul memories, and this would be helpful when he was in the immortal soul stage himself and breaking through to the second-level immortal soul stage.

Still, Zhu Yi felt a little disoriented as he was wielding the shell of a second-level immortal soul stage cultivator when he himself was only in the nascent soul advanced stage. Even though his original body's battle prowess was greater than most other first-level immortal soul stage cultivators, there was still a rift in understanding of the world between the levels of masteries and was not something that could be bridged in the short term.

However, with his current experiences, if he could consolidate the knowledge he had obtained in the process, then it would be a kind of formless improvement for Zhu Yi.

"Eh?" Zhu Yi's eyes squinted a little as he gazed towards the far horizon.

There was another Void Battleground in the far end of the galaxy as spheres of starlight collided violently.

However, Zhu Yi's extraordinary levels of perception told him that there was something different about a group of starlight beings amongst the chaos.

They were humans!

Another group of souls had entered the spatial illusion and were implanted into various remnant soul memories as well. They were relatively organized and displayed a certain level of intelligence and rationality as they overcame the other stars with collective effort and proceeded forward with a clear direction and destination in mind.

"This level of mastery – a third-level immortal soul stage cultivator?!" Zhu Yi was a little surprised. "From the looks of his spells and abhijnas, it seems to be rooted within the Amoghasiddhi Mantra."

"But I have never heard of a third-level Golden Form cultivator who died in the Ying Sea."

Third-level immortal soul stage cultivators were revered and considered extremely important in their respective eras. Besides a few special exceptions, the death of a third-level immortal soul stage cultivator would send ripples throughout the world and the entire Grand Celestial World would feel the aftershocks.

Therefore, the deaths of most third-level immortal soul stage cultivators were clearly recorded in the archives with meticulous detail.

"The most prominent connection between the Great Thunderclap Temple and the Ying Sea is the Zhi Guang Zen Master of the Middle Ages. Legend has it that the Zhi Guang Zen Master has been into the Ying Sea multiple times over, and even tried to take control of a Celestial Mountain by himself when they showed themselves to the world. However, the death of the Zhi Guang Zen Master had nothing to do with the Ying Sea."

Zhu Yi continued to deliberate. "However, the Zhi Guang Zen Master's mantras are based on the Amoghasiddhi Mantra..."

There was something abnormal about this group of stars.

Zhu Yi was just about to continue to monitor and observe this group of stars. However, before he could do anything, this group of stars came up to him in the blink of an eye.

Starlight sparkled and flashed as rays of Buddhist light surged into vision in front of Zhu Yi.

The form of the Amoghasiddhi Buddha. All activities could be accomplished, and no matter where it was, there was no unfinishable task.

The soul embedded within this sphere of starlight was the leader of the party from the Great Zhou Empire – the Da Kong Zen Master. He had activated the Zhi Guang Zen Master's ancient relic

and subsequently used the Zhi Guang Zen Master's remnant soul memories as his temporary body inside the spatial illusion by turning it into starlight. This ensured that he possessed the third-level immortal stage powers of the Zhi Guang Zen Master.

He also practiced the Amoghasiddhi Mantra as well, and his control of the Zhi Guang Zen Master's remnant soul was very similar to him breaking the bottleneck into the third-level immortal soul stage in real life.

He had an understanding of the spatial illusion before he was even inside. Therefore, he had instructed the other cultivators from the Great Zhou Empire to use his Buddhist light as a beacon and rally towards him once everyone had entered the spatial illusion. They used three different protective spells to distinguish their identities.

There was clear difference from the other group of disorganized and chaotic starlight beings as it was obvious this group had souls implanted into the starlight forms. Therefore, any sphere of starlight that was not following orders and had an intelligence of its own was a competitor from the Celestial Sect of Wonders or the Great Qin Empire!

Chants of Buddhist scripture could be heard as streaks of golden light surged across the galaxy and circled around Zhu Yi's starlight body.

The battle raged on inside the independent galaxy of the spatial illusion. Outside the spatial illusion across the mysterious crystal wall, another group of people appeared, and out stepped a youth clad in tight purple clothes and a long black robe. It was Xiao Yan and his company.

"Tsk, that ancient formation was truly annoying. From the looks of it, something more irritating is coming up – an illusion that actually rejects people from entering it. The world never ceases to surprise me."

# Chapter 767: Ferry Everyone to the Opposite Bank

---

In the spatial illusion, Monk Da Kong unleashed the Abhijna of the Amoghasiddhi Mantra. Endless verses of scriptures materialized and morphed into infinite stretches of golden paths.

In the chaotic battle in Space, the various moves and spells launched by other starlights landed on these golden paths. Regardless of their original target, these moves and spells changed their directions and, following the golden paths, channeled themselves towards the starlight that Zhu Yi's soul had possessed.

Zhu Yi responded calmly. He morphed the starlight into a humanoid body and moved. He stepped into the void and with an uncanny maneuver, he evaded the barrage of powerful spells that lost their mutability by a hair's breadth. It seemed almost as if the spells were not directed at him but the air beside him.

Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions, the form of the Chariot Water Worm!

The Chariot Mansion was wood-typed and had the shape of an earthworm. It was the seventh Mansion of the South, at the tail section of the Vermillion Bird region. The tail of the bird gave it control over its directions.

In ancient times, the wooden plank at the bottom rear portion of carriages was known as "Zhen," or "Chariot." It shared a similar position in the carriage as the Chariot Mansion in the Vermillion Bird region, giving the Mansion its name. The Chariot Mansion was once known as the "Sky Carriage" as well.

The Chariot Water Worm Form was the last move of the Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions, representing the restoration of all things to their original position. This finisher move was also an intricate maneuver technique: after taking a final step, one's body

would shift back to its starting position.

Zhu Yi used this finisher move as his starter move, which worked exceptionally well, allowing him to evade this enormous salvo of attack.

As Zhu Yi took the final step, his starlight soul body became seemingly unstoppable, like a "Sky Carriage," and whizzed towards Monk Da Kong's starlight soul body.

The situation somewhat surprised Monk Da Kong: "It's Emperor Chen's Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions! Who is in that in the starlight body? Everyone's souls had just entered the starlights. How did he master Emperor Chen's Martial Way so quickly and become adept at using it?"

As Monk Da Kong had done preparations beforehand and used the starlight derived from the remnant soul of Zhi Guang Zen Master as his body, he did not have to accept the starlight soul bodies randomly assigned by the spatial illusion. This not only eliminated the uncertainty of the process but also got rid of issues of incompatibility with the new mantra received from the soul remnants. At the same time, this further increased his prowess. In this spatial illusion, his power was almost equivalent to Zhi Guang Zen Master reincarnate, who was at the third level of the Golden Form.

This experience was vastly beneficial to Monk Da Kong, which was partly why he was so determined to come to Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

Even if he failed to gain possession of Yingzhou Celestial Mountain in the end, as long as he can make a safe departure, this would not be a wasted trip. The experience he gained during this journey has paved a smooth path for his advancement into the third level of the Golden Form Stage, which would likely not take long.

Hence, Monk Da Kong did not take Zhu Yi's counterattack to

heart. Even if the Great Sun Holy Man had been resurrected, he would only be at the second level of Immortal Soul Stage and would be no match for Monk Da Kong himself who was almost equivalent in strength to Zhi Guang Zen Master.

Monk Da Kong's starlight soul body emitted waves of Buddhist chants, and the void around him froze under a Buddhist aura. Within the aura, countless Buddha chanted scriptures in unison, which seemed as if Nirvana has been brought to Earth.

"Fall!"

Monk Da Kong did not utter this word; it was the sound formed by the chants of the countless Buddha, which resonated within Zhu Yi's heart.

An Acalanatha Spell Body emerged in the Space. Its right palm struck down at Zhu Yi. At the center of the palm was a "卐" symbol, which radiated an intense Buddhist aura.

Secret Buddhist Abhijna, Full Circle of Life Swastika Palm Print!

Faced with Monk Da Kong's Full Circle of Life Swastika Palm Print, Zhu Yi's starlight soul body switched to a gentle maneuver. He retracted both of his arms to defend himself using "Wall Water Yu Form," a move in the Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions that specializes in defense.

The Wall Mansion was wood-typed and took on the shape of Yu, a mythical beast. It was the seventh Mansion of the North and was on the exterior of the Encampment Mansion, seemed like the wall of a camp, hence its name.

Monk Da Kong still did not take Zhu Yi to heart. He fully utilized the power at the third level of the Golden Form Stage to overwhelm his opponent with his sheer might, hoping to achieve a swift victory.

While he had gained an edge with the Zen Master Zhi Guang's remnant soul, he could not guarantee that he can solve this spatial



illusion. Therefore, he would be more than happy to save time by resolving this battle quickly.

However, Monk Da Kong's optimism did not last long. While the Full Circle of Life Swastika Palm Print breached the defense of Zhu Yi's Wall Water Yu form, the attacks started to feel entangled.

He frowned: "Tail Fire Tiger Form?"

The Tail Mansion was fire-typed and took on the form of a tiger. It was the sixth Mansion of the East and consisted of nine stars that together form the tail of the Azure Dragon.

The Dragon's Tail was the most attacked part of a dragon in battle, making it an omen of grave danger. In the Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions, it has been designed as a riposte move that exposed a loophole on purpose to execute a devastating hidden counterattack!

Zhu Yi's move was never "Wall Water Yu Form" but "Tail Fire Tiger Form" all along!

Emperor Chen had fallen a long time ago, and descendants from his lineage were few and far between, hence hardly anyone in the Divine Lands are familiar with the Martial Way that he had passed down.

It was only thanks to Monk Da Kong's upbringing in the historical powerhouse, the Great Thunderclap Temple that he could even identify Zhu Yi's moves. It would be a tall order for him to fully comprehend the intricacies of Emperor Chen's Martial Way as well.

Zhu Yi's understanding and mastery of the Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions had been greater than Monk Da Kong had expected. Within such a short amount of time, while Zhu Yi was still incomparable to Emperor Chen, his power was almost equal to the Great Sun Holy Man reborn.

Seeing that Monk Da Kong fell for his trick, Zhu Yi took

advantage of it. The arms of his starlight body swerved circularly, forming the shape of a giant net, trapping the arm of the Acalanatha Spell Body, stopping the Full Circle of Life Swastika Palm Print in its way.

The Well Mansion was wood-typed and took on the shape of a tiger. It was also known as Well Wood Tiger and was the first Mansion of the South Vermillion Bird region.

The Mansion comprised of stars that formed the shape of a net. Hence the Well Wood Tiger Strike took on the form of a net, which seemed like a bottomless abyss, trapping any foe that got caught by it.

Within a short while, Zhu Yi's attack had shown a high level of mastery of the Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions by combining the attack of three different moves. Once the arm of the Acalanatha Spell Body gets ensnared, Zhu Yi could disable its arms with a twist of his arms.

Monk Da Kong quietly muttered a chant. The Acalanatha Spell Body radiated an intense wave of light, warping the void around it. Verses of scriptures formed stretches of paths again, and as Zhu Yi's strike landed on one of these paths, the blow gets deflected away.

Zhu Yi's target is no longer Monk Da Kong as his strike meets a Vast Sea Sword Sect move used by a chaotic cluster of starlight some distance away.

Monk Da Kong no longer dared to look down on his opponent, who turned out a lot trickier than he had expected. He unleashed the full power of the Abhijna of the Amoghasiddhi Mantra. The Abhijna breached Zhu Yi's Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions, while the Full Circle of Life Swastika Palm Print continues to approach him, threatening to strike him down and restore a circle of freedom to the world.

"For such a high level of proficiency to be reached with the

Abhijna of the Amoghasiddhi Mantra, it takes more than the Abhijna derived from the soul remnant within the starlight. Whoever resides in the starlight must be a practitioner of the Amoghasiddhi Mantra as well."

Zhu Yi confirmed his suspicions: "This person must be Monk Da Kong of the Great Zhou Empire, who had the Sarira of Zhi Guang Zen Master or some other powerful Buddhist cultivator of the third level of Golden Form Stage who specializes in the Amoghasiddhi Mantra!"

After reaching this conclusion, Zhu Yi realized that he was facing a formidable foe.

If he were to fight Monk Da Kong at the third level of the Immortal Soul stage with his cultivation level of the second level of the immortal soul stage, he would have absolute confidence in ending his opponent's life.

Now that he had to use the cultivation level of the starlight soul body morphed from the Great Sun Holy Man, he would have trouble fighting against Zen Master Zhi Guang.

"I might as well test my other hypothesis."

Zhu Yi made the decision, and his soul started to tremor.

The soul contained in the starlight body breaks up into a million fragments. Instead of breaking down, these fragments morphed into millions of little people, each one of them looked like Zhu Yi himself.

Every one of these little people had traces of flame burning away, a sign of the fire of intelligence igniting the soul. Instead of genuinely burning, these flames merely ignited the force of Zhu Yi's soul.

Zhu Yi had no time to regret that he could not fully ignite the fire of intelligence. He mustered all the force of his soul, and a word appeared on the body of each one of the little people!

The millions of words combined, forming a chapter of words that was so earth-shaking that his starlight soul body started to tremble.

It was Zhu Yi's Essay of the Sages!

As his body was formed from starlight at the moment, Zhu Yi was unable to use any other Abhijnas and spells. However, the Essay of the Sages had been deeply engraved into his soul and represented the fusion of Zhu Yi's cultivation and the essence of his thoughts, setting it apart from the other Abhijnas and spells that he knew.

At that moment, the chapter broke free from the constraints of the Great Sun Holy Man's soul remnants and, making use of starlight, shaped itself into a majestic golden bridge!

The golden bridge flew across the sky, cleansing it of the lines of path-like golden scriptures. Sounds of book recitation replaced Buddhist chants and resonated loudly in Space.

The magnificent golden bridge destroyed the right half of the Acalanatha Spell Body in one hit!

At the sight of the golden bridge, Monk Da Kong immediately realized: "Zhu Yi, so it is you! But, here, how can you use your own Abhijna?!"

While he was astounded, he did not pause. Pushing the power of the Amoghasiddhi Mantra to its limits, Monk Da Kong condensed the broken Acalanatha Spell Body into a golden sphere of light.

It seemed as if Nirvana existed within the sphere of light, where Sankharas was complete. When one went inside it, one can easily achieve anything one wanted.

After forming the Buddha Spell Body to reach the second level of the Golden Form Stage, the Buddhist cultivator needed to attain the realm of Nirvana, turn all afflictions, cleanse all five skandhas and to gain the wisdom of Buddha in order to advance into the

third level of the Golden Form Stage, which was equivalent to the third level of the Immortal Soul stage.

Reaching the realm of Nirvana was equal to attaining the way of the virtual entity.

The realm of Nirvana attained by practitioners of the Amoghasiddhi Mantra was known as the Nirvana of Industry, which embodies perfection, wholesomeness, the attainment of what one desired.

Zhu Yi looked at the Nirvana, his state of mind did not even flicker. He controlled the golden bridge and rushed forward in a valiant assault: "Your Mantra only ferries those with affinity to you, those who believe in you, while my golden bridge ferries everyone to the opposite bank!"

# Chapter 768: Friend or Foe

---

At the highest levels of cultivation with the Amoghasiddhi Mantra, one would attain the Nirvana of Industry, turning jealousy and vexation while cleansing oneself of the skandha of perception.

By turning jealousy, one would understand the perfecting wisdom of Buddha, which represented the perfect actualization of Buddhahood.

As the Nirvana of Industry appeared and illuminated the void of Space, Monk Da Kong pondered its concepts of strength. He could not feel more satisfied than he did.

Studying the Nirvana of Industry of Zen Master Zhi Guang allowed him to understand the true meaning of the Amoghasiddhi Mantra completely.

Monk Da Kong was incredibly talented: While he started his cultivation last among his peers at the Great Thunderclap Temple, he was that gifted disciple who improved the fastest.

Before the fall of the Great Thunderclap Temple, Monk Da Kong had already attained the second level of the Golden Form Stage. He had cultivated in seclusion all these years in the hopes of making his way past the final obstacle-attaining the realm of Nirvana-to advance to the third level of the Golden Form Stage.

Now, Monk Da Kong could sense that he had broken through that final barrier. He just needed to retreat for cultivation for a while after leaving the spatial illusion to safely advance to the third level of the Golden Form Stage and attaining his own Nirvana of Industry.

Nevertheless, as he faced the golden bridge of Zhu Yi's Essay of the Sages, Monk Da Kong felt from the bottom of his heart that he had to deal with the desperate situation at hand first before

thinking about anything else!

The majestic golden bridge seemingly traversed the endless abyss of worldly suffering, forming a path that led straight into the lands of nirvana, ferrying everyone to the realm of transcendence.

The golden bridge extended into Monk Da Kong's Nirvana of Industry, piercing this pure land that encompassed the true meaning of the accomplishment of everything.

Even this wholesome and joyous Buddhist nirvana could not stop the continued momentum of this path of man in its tracks or cause it to lose itself in the nirvana. The will of all living beings, carried by the golden bridge, remained incredibly high and spirited. Onward, onward. Onward!

The once-glittering Nirvana of Industry now hangs in the balance. Its Buddhist aura faded as if the Vipralopa Age has begun.

At this moment, a vast stream of the Unholy Blood River appeared in the void, its great murky waves gave out a nauseating putrid smell. Zhu Yi and Monk Da Kong's starlight soul body became harder to control by merely sniffing this vile scent; their starlight soul body became less radiant as well.

In the far distance, a dark red clump of starlight controlled vast amounts of Blood River Primordial Water, channeling it in their direction.

The starlight's target was obvious. It left all other starlights, including Zhu Yi, alone, heading straight towards Monk Da Kong's starlight soul body.

Monk Da Kong dared not to remain at his spot. He re-summoned his Nirvana of Industry to stop his opponent's Unholy Blood River from closing in while he retreated, controlling his starlight soul body to leave the place.

However, Zhu Yi would not give him the chance to do so. Within his starlight, the millions of little people converged to reform Zhu

Yi's soul. New words started to appear after the existing three paragraphs of the Essay of the Sages!

"Indeed, I can only complete the Chapter after reaching the Immortal Soul Stage. Now with the help of Great Sun Holy Man's remnant souls, I was able to figure out a little more about it." Zhu Yi mustered the flow of inspiration in him and quickly constructed the Chapter.

The aura of the Essay of the Sages's golden bridge grew increasingly grander, and with a deafening roar, it lashed out at Monk Da Kong.

Monk Da Kong's soul, which was busily defending against the Unholy Blood River in an attempt to escape, muttered a Buddhist chant. In the void, the infinite stretches of golden paths reappeared. The various Abhijnas and spells launched by other starlights landed on these golden paths once again and channeled themselves towards Zhu Yi's golden bridge.

Unfortunately, the golden bridge of the Essay of the Sages had become stronger than before and continued towards its target.

Mount Shu cultivator of Immortal Stage Level one's Grand Moon Sword, Ancient Sacred Sect cultivator of Immortal Soul Stage Level two's Avici God-Slaying Sword, Suanni Grand Sage of level one Demon Soul Stage's natural-born Abhijna Purple Smoke Thunder of Heaven and Earth...

The golden bridge broke through all of these Abhijnas, none of which could stop the golden bridge from reaching its target!

In what seemed like the blink of an eye, the golden bridge traversed a vast distance in the void, smashing Monk Da Kong's starlight soul body into pieces!

In the depths of Zhu Yi's soul, he seemed to have heard Monk Da Kong whimpered in pain.

Monk Da Kong's golden starlight soul body broke up into several



pieces, only a small ray of light escaped into the far distance. The golden Buddhist aura on the other fragments of starlight faded and gradually disintegrated in the void.

"While you had formed the body with the starlight of Zen Master Zhi Guang's remnant soul and the damage taken had not affected your own Buddhist Spell Body or your nirvana, this blow would nevertheless hurt your fundamentals which you would need a long time to recover from. Don't even think about advancing into the third level of the Golden Form Stage now."

Zhu Yi was well aware of the state of Monk Da Kong's soul. However, he did not give chase. There was one more person at the side whom he did not know was friend or foe. The person had attained the starlight soul body formed from the remnant soul belonging to a powerful cultivator from the Blood River Sect, once a sacred demon ground, which was not a force to be reckoned with.

Due to the golden bridge of the Essay of the Sages, Zhu Yi's identity had been revealed, while the identity of this person remained a secret. While he had attacked Monk Da Kong moments ago, there was no telling whether he will attack Zhu Yi next without knowing his identity.

Hence, Zhu Yi remained on-guard. At the same time, summoning the Essay of the Sages just now had brought severe side effects.

Zhu Yi could feel his starlight soul body quivering non-stop as if it would disintegrate at any moment. The connection between his soul and the starlight body grew incredibly weak as well.

"This is the consequence of me forcing the use of my own Abhijna." Zhu Yi figured: "I broke the basic rule of this spatial illusion. Hence the spatial illusion would naturally start repulsing me."

"I'm afraid that I would not be able to use the Essay of the Sages from now on. Otherwise, I don't need an enemy to attack me for my starlight soul body to disintegrate by itself. That way, even if

my soul did not take any damage but merely got sent out of the spatial illusion to start all over again, it would be hard to make up for the lost time."

As he thought about his Essay of the Sages, Zhu Yi shook his head. He was mere sentences away from finishing the chapter, but he nonetheless failed to complete it.

The cultivation level of level two Immortal Soul Stage, in the end, belonged to the Great Sun Holy Man, and not to him.

Even so, after what had happened, Zhu Yi could feel that he's now much closer to the Immortal Soul Stage. It seemed as if the door to the advancement of his cultivation is somewhere in front of him now.

He had just entered advanced Nascent Soul Stage.

Zhu Yi gazed at the dark red starlight opposite him surrounded by Blood River Primordial Water and tried to communicate with it, but as soon as he had the intention of declaring his own identity, his starlight soul body started to tremble violently, repulsing his soul even further.

"By declaring my own identity, I am essentially reinforcing my existence, which goes against the union of the starlight body with the remnant soul of Great Sun Holy Man."

Zhu Yi saw the dark red starlight opposite him trembled as well, which showed that he obviously shared his intention as well, but had to give up doing so after realizing that doing so would lead to the separation of his soul from his starlight body.

"I wonder if Big Senior and the rest entered this spatial illusion as well."

While they could not communicate with each other, the two decided to team up for now. Of course, neither of them would let their guards down completely. While they temporarily moved together, they retained some caution in their hearts about each

other.

Nevertheless, joining forces had substantially increased their efficiency and progress. When they encountered another starlight, the other person will surround it with Blood River Primordial Water to contaminate its power while Zhu Yi launched strong attacks with the Celestial Fist of Twenty-Eight Mansions.

During this process, Zhu Yi, after careful observation, noted that when these chaotic bodies of starlight had been destroyed, the bulk of the starlight would slowly disintegrate in space while a ray of crimson light would fly away into the distance.

The way that these rays of light travel were unlike Monk Da Kong's escape; it was more like dreary birds returning to their roost, all of the rays of light converging in a single direction.

After making the discovery, Zhu Yi and his temporary teammate adjusted their path and explored together in that direction the rays of lights converged.

The massive space seemed to cause people to lose their concept of the distance they have traversed. After a long time, the duo gradually slowed down. In the distant region that they could see, there was a giant vortex of clouds of stars that gently rotated.

The cloud of stars was of a deep fire-red and gave people observing it an odd sense of distortion: it was as if it was immensely large, almost indescribably so, but at the same time it seemed incredibly small, like a grain of sand.

All of the crimson rays of light from destroyed starlights before converged here.

The center of this vortex-like cloud of stars rotated continuously. One can barely make out a doorway at its center that was going to open.

Without any hesitation, Zhu Yi and the dark red starlight beside him charged towards the center of the cloud of stars!

The fights between different starlights occurred intensely here as well. As they approached the center, Zhu Yi immediately noticed that there were other starlights here other than the two of them that had been possessed by the souls of those who entered the spatial illusion. These starlight bodies moved logically with a clear sense of purpose.

All of them were headed towards the doorway at the center of the cloud of stars.

Zhu Yi controlled his starlight soul body in a beeline towards the center of the cloud. Those people around him who had the same target as him immediately noticed him as well.

With the target now close to them, some of these people decisively launched attacks at Zhu Yi, even though they could not identify Zhu Yi. Zhu Yi did not hesitate and retaliated with moves from the Celestial Fist of Twenty-Eight Mansions straightaway.

The azure flame that an emerald dragon breathed out got blown into pieces by Zhu Yi's Horn Wood Serpent form of the Celestial Fist of Twenty-Eight Mansions.

Immediately following that, faced with the huge dragon starlight body, Zhu Yi transformed his starlight soul body into a giant in the void. He crossed his arms and extended both of his hands, one of which was in the shape of a claw and the other in the shape of a sword.

The claw grabbed the seventh inch and the sword pierced at the eye of the dragon. This single move encompassed the essence of three forms of the Celestial Fist of Twenty-Eight Mansions, "Ghost Gold Goat," "Willow Earth Roe" and "Star Sun Horse"!

These three mansions all belonged to the vermillion bird region of the South, and the hands of the starlight giant had the shape of the beak and claw of a bird respectively. Birds are natural enemies of snake-like creatures, and Zhu Yi, like a radiant vermillion bird, grabbed the emerald dragon king and punctured its eye, blinding

it!

Almost at the same time, another cluster of starlight summoned the exclusive Abhijna of the recently fallen Heaven Lake Sect and attacked, only to be repelled by Zhu Yi.

With the target near in sight and being in such a dire situation where one could not tell friend from foe, Zhu Yi collected his mind. Knowing that hopes lie in his own hands now, he treated the other starlight equally, repelling all attacks on him one by one while he sprinted towards the center of the cloud of stars.

However, as he repelled his next opponent, Zhu Yi suddenly had a strong premonition of danger. Instead of continuing sprinting, he stopped.

At the next moment, a shadowy figure appeared suddenly from below and attacked Zhu Yi!

# Chapter 769: Intensified Battles

---

While he had defeated several rivals, who intended to approach the center of the cloud of stars, in rapid succession, Zhu Yi did not let his guard down. The remaining rival, who controlled the Blood River Primordial Water remained a threat.

Blood River Faction, which existed since the Primordial Age, was a super demonic sect that had its moments of glory. It had historically been an enemy of Mount Shu Sword Sect and had even been successful with flooding Mount Shu with the Blood River on one occasion. While they have eventually been driven back, the battle had been one of the biggest tribulations in the history of Mount Shu Sword Sect.

Unfortunately, Blood River Primordial Water truly incited hatred. Even during the harshest periods of the stand-off between humans and demons, everyone in the divine lands remained hostile to Blood River Faction; even the demon faction could not tolerate them. The overall hostility eventually led to the sect's demise.

In the Primordial Age, Blood River Faction had also dispatched strong cultivators to enter the Ying Sea to seek control of the three celestial mountains. However, as they attempted to scale the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, they eventually fell under the crushing might of the Ying Sea triggered by the Celestial Mountain.

Only a few cultivators of the third level of Immortal Soul stage had ever fallen in the Ying sea, and Blood River Prince had been one of them.

As Zhu Yi had observed, the one who possessed the starlight body formed by the remnant soul of Blood River Prince had a high cultivation level as well.

Among those who entered the spatial illusion, if they had a low

cultivation level, they would not be able to utilize the power of their starlight soul bodies to their fullest potential even if it was infused with the soul remnant of an incredibly strong cultivator. This was similar to how a three-year-old child could not wield a thousand-pound hammer properly, if at all.

But the one before Zhu Yi's eyes had formidable strength even if he did not fully utilize the former Blood River Prince's full power.

However, before engaging this person in battle, Zhu Yi sensed a greater danger approaching him. A ball of shadow closed in on him from below; its shape resembled that of an abyssal monster opening its mouth, ready to sink its teeth on him.

Zhu Yi frowned slightly and utilized the maneuver technique of "Wing Fire Snake" move to evade the shadow, but the ball of shadow immediately expanded itself to an enormous size as it tried to engulf him.

Faced with this massive assault, Zhu Yi decided to hold his ground. He braced himself in a fighting posture and eyed the enormous ball of shadow calmly.

Zhu Yi's starlight soul body, while seemingly standing still, was, in fact, shifting at a maniacal pace that the human eye couldn't see!

Zhu Yi stood with one leg in front of the other; his back was perfectly straight. His entire upper body seemed like the chord of a fully strung bow that had just fired its arrow.

"Star Sun Horse!"

The star mansion had the form of the Sun and a shape that resembled a horse, hence the name Star Sun Horse. It was the fourth mansion of the south, forming the eye of the vermillion bird region. The eyes of birds tend to twinkle like the stars, giving the mansion the name "star."

The Star Sun Horse move in the Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions countered moves by remaining still. Its user would

move last after astutely capturing his opponent's movements and spotting flaws in the enemy's assault. This way, the user would keep still when his enemy keeps still. Once his enemy strikes, he would be able to land his attack first!

In the mere split second of a moment, many information ran through Zhu Yi's mind.

"This is the mantra of the Dark Emperor, one of the Emperors of Man in the Primordial Age... It is not the complete Dark Emperor mantra, but a version recreated by his descendants. "

"Among the powerful demonic cultivators in the Middle Ages, Demonic Shadow Sect had a powerful cultivator at the second Level of Immortal Soul stage who died in the Ying Sea for the three mountains. He was known as the Hell Shadow Holy Man, so this person must have possessed the starlight formed from Hell Shadow Holy Man's soul remnants."

As he thought about the situation, Zhu Yi controlled his starlight soul body. With a flex of his fists, his entire body emitted a wave of seemingly realistic pugilist's blood aura. The orifices all over his body trembled at the same time. From each orifice, an ethereal star rose into the air.

The glimmer of starlight all over his body repelled the shadow around him. The fierce aura of the fist around him slowly condensed into a surreal illusion, within which innumerable stars twinkled.

Physical martial arts of Emperor Chen, Divine Palm of Three Enclosures, Heavenly Market Enclosure Divine Palm!

After battling Monk Da Kong, while Zhu Yi's starlight soul body almost disintegrated when he forced the use of his Essay of the Sages, he had gained a greater understanding of the martial arts of Emperor Chen, learning the Divine Palm of Three Enclosures which he had not been able to master.



The three enclosures refer to the upper Supreme Palace Enclosure, the middle Purple Forbidden Enclosure, and the lower Heavenly Market Enclosure.

The martial art that Zhu Yi was using at the moment was the Heavenly Market Enclosure Divine Palm. As the truth of the martial way condensed, it almost formed an expansive universe.

As the palm strike landed, it seemed as fierce as the fall of stars, fully demonstrating the prowess of Emperor Chen, one of the most powerful pugilist of the Primordial Age, the true form of the one who tore Primordial demons apart with his bare hands.

The ball of shadow stalled for a moment when it faced the Heavenly Market Enclosure Divine Palm. It then suddenly split into smaller balls of shadow that veered to the sides to avoid Zhu Yi's palm strike.

While he could execute the Demonic Shadow Sect's Abhijna to convert his body into shadows which allow him to defend or even devour many different types of Abhijnas and spells, a direct physical martial strike such as this could still damage his soul.

While the shadow splited, it did not intend to give in. On the contrary, the balls of shadow continued to split seemingly endlessly in space before launching themselves at Zhu Yi in an enormous barrage of attack.

Each ball of shadow morphed into a shadowy Taoist figure wearing a tall hat and old black clothing.

Zhu Yi remained undaunted by the attack. He swung the fists of his starlight soul body, preparing to strike these shadowy figures down one by one.

Soon, however, he realized that he was in trouble. The black Taoist figures did not attempt to dodge the incoming fist strike but instead faced it head-on. The power level of these Avatars remained at Level two of Immortal Soul Stage and did not

diminish by splitting into so many Avatars.

Zhu Yi remembered: "The Yuan Shadow Avatar of the Demonic Shadow Sect, which was passed down by the Dark Emperor!"

A Yuan is equivalent to 129600. According to legend, When the Primordial Dark Emperor cast this spell, he would be able to summon 129600 Shadow Avatars that could be anywhere, and each avatar is as strong as the Dark Emperor himself.

When this Abhijna first appeared, it shook the entire Greater Worlds. Many strong demon cultivators had been slain by this move, yet none of them could even find Dark Emperor's real self. Even the Chieftain of the Immemorial Celestial Dragons, the Emperor of all Demons, the First Dragon Xuan Shang had a hard time dealing with the move.

It was only much later when Xuan Shang discovered the details of this powerful Abhijna that he was able to defeat and slay the Dark Emperor.

While the Yuan Shadow Avatar summoned numerous Shadow Avatars, not all of them were as strong as the real person. Instead, the caster can swap his real body with any of these avatars at will.

There were many spells with the same effect. Many cultivators of Immortal Soul Stage did not even need a spell to swap the location of their real body with that of an avatar.

Nonetheless, it was exceedingly rare to be able to complete the swap as quickly as the Yuan Shadow Avatar, which transposed at the mind's will.

A strong cultivator like the Dark Emperor could swap numerous times in the blink of an eye, which was amazingly quick.

Being able to execute the swap at lightning speed effectively gave each avatar strength equal to the real body.

In this situation, unless one possessed superior strength such as Emperor Jue, Xuan Sheng, had over the Dark Emperor and

launched strong area-of-effect attacks that damaged all the Shadow Avatars and the real body at once, it would be impossible to hit the real body.

However, area-of-effect attacks spread the attacker's strength thin over a large area, making it hard to defeat the Yuan Shadow Avatars.

Hence, in battles between equally matched opponents, the Yuan Shadow Avatar remained a difficult Abhijna to deal with.

"The Yuan Shadow Avatar is an advanced Abhijna in the lineage of both the Dark Emperor and the Demonic Shadow Sect. It would have been challenging for this person to cast the Abhijna with his starlight soul body." Zhu Yi mused: "The lineage of the Demonic Shadow Sect had been broken a long time ago, so he must have figured out the Abhijnas himself as I did."

While Zhu Yi grew more cautious mentally, he was not afraid of the Yuan Shadow Avatar given that he knew about its secrets. He opened his mouth, and his starlight body gave out an inaudible roar.

While no sound can be heard, all the starlight bodies around him shook slightly.

At the next moment, Zhu Yi controlled his starlight body. With a sway of his body, he seemingly produced many copies of himself that blinked in and out of existence in the void. The fists of all of the figures attacked the Shadow Avatars in unison.

Zhu Yi achieved this not because he could summon countless numbers of avatars like his opponent. Instead, he used the explosive force of a pugilist to dash across short distances and strike with his fists repeatedly at the speed of lightning.

While his speed was no match to that of the Dark Emperor, the Soul Remnant of his opponent's starlight body belonged to Hell Shadow Holy Man and not the Dark Emperor himself!

Faced with his lightning fast strikes, Zhu Yi's opponent retaliated unrelentingly. He braced the impact of Zhu Yi's fist blows, cast one Demonic Shadow Abhijna after another, trading each attack with an attack.

Many a time he allowed Zhu Yi to take down some of his Shadow Avatars to attack Zhu Yi with a powerful spell.

He even made use of the swap between his real body and the avatars to mislead Zhu Yi, hiding genuine critical blows under the guise of fake loopholes in his stance.

In the matter of mere moments, their fight had grown so intense that whoever dared to be close to them, be it chaotic starlights or starlight soul bodies controlled by people, would be affected by the fight and end up either injured or dead.

After the round of battle, the duo stopped together and rushed towards the doorway at the center of the cloud of stars.

The person who possessed Blood River Prince had already cleared away a large number of starlights blocking his way and was going to reach the center of the cloud of stars.

Zhu Yi and the person who possessed the starlight of Hell Shadow Holy Man attacked in unison to stop him. The Heavenly Market Enclosure Divine Palm and a giant net of shadow landed on the starlight surrounded by the Blood River.

However, their opponent would not be defeated so easily. The starlight extended the Unholy Blood River that surrounded him into the void and shaped it into a dozen dark red lotuses that blocked the duo in their paths.

The shadowy starlight didn't hesitate and controlled a dozen shadow avatars to collide into the lotuses, attempting to clear them away.

Zhu Yi gave a silent cheer. While the shadowy starlight had been a formidable opponent, he could not have been a better teammate

when they attacked someone else together.

The Unholy Blood Lotus of Blood River Faction naturally could not be overcome so easily. However, at the very moment when the Blood Lotus engulfed the shadow avatars, Zhu Yi took the opportunity and unleashed all of his pugilist's blood aura, boosting his speed to its maximum which allowed him to pass through the blockade formed by the lotuses to reach his opponent.

At the same moment, another cluster of starlight arrived from another direction. Golden flames erupted from its surface, its glow as glaring as sunlight. It transformed into a three-legged golden crow and attacked the starlight surrounded by the Blood River.

# Chapter 770: Who is Everyone?

---

Zhu Yi's heart raced slightly as the golden crow figure, cloaked in the Grand Sun Primordial Fire, suddenly appeared. He soon calmed down.

The person before him had obviously possessed the starlight body formed by the Soul Remnant of the Golden Crow Grand Sage that died in the Ying Sea.

As far as Zhu Yi was aware, aside from the unfortunate guy who had been suppressed by his master, the golden crow tribe had another grandmaster cultivator of Level two Undying Demonic Soul Stage who died in the Ying Seas in the Middle Ages.

Aside from the odd situation where Monk Da Kong possessed Zhi Guang Zen Master 's starlight body, Zhu Yi postulated that other people who entered the void had starlight bodies randomly allocated to them and were unable to decide on whose Soul Remnant they would possess of their own will.

Nevertheless, regardless of who had possessed the starlight body of the Golden Crow Grand Sage, they had the same goal of dealing with the one with the starlight soul body of Blood River Prince. On the one hand, this person had been ahead of everyone else by being the closest to the center of the cloud of stars. On the other hand, he possessed the starlight body of Blood River Prince who had the highest cultivation level among them at Level three Immortal Soul Stage.

Therefore, he naturally became everyone's target.

This person who possessed starlight body of Blood River Prince had retaliated fiercely. After the initial dozen of Unholy Blood Lotuses, he summoned another dozen of them and used them to form a terrifying formation that surrounded and trapped the golden crow starlight.

The twelve blood lotuses formed a dark and sticky circle that ignited, forming clusters of blood flames seeking to incinerate the golden crow.

The golden crow gave out an inaudible shriek, the layer of Grand Sun Primordial Flame on his body crackled as it blasted away blood flames that came too close for comfort.

The Blood River Primordial Water was capable of contaminating most things in existence. Only the One Heavenly Primordial Water, one of the six Primordial Water, also known as the mother of all waters, was said to neutralize it.

However, as with all things, there were exceptions. Like how the Vairocana Pristine Cleansing Fire was immune to the Heavenly Apocalyptic Blaze, certain things were resistant to the corrosion of the Blood River Primordial Water in their pure states. The Grand Sun Primordial Flame, one of the seven primordial flames that emitted incredible levels of Yang energy, happened to be one of them.

Of course, the amount and power level of the two sides must be similar to each other. Excessive volume of water can douse a fire, just like how a large fire can vaporize water.

It would be difficult for the Blood River Primordial Water controlled by Blood River Prince of level three Immortal Soul Stage to defeat the Grand Sun Primordial Flame of the golden crow demon of Level two Immortal Demon Soul stage unless Blood River Prince unleashed the power of his virtual entity.

Nevertheless, the golden crow had to stop on its way to reinforce his defense to prevent contamination. While the second wave of twelve blood lotuses trapped the golden crow, the first wave of twelve blood lotuses exploded into a shower of blood that morphed into lotus petals of blood and flew towards the starlight body of the Hell Shadow Holy Man. Given the countless drops of blood, none of the Shadow Avatars could bypass this barrier.

After stopping the golden crow and the shadow from chasing him, the starlight shrouded in blood continued its way towards the center of the cloud of stars.

He did not attack Zhu Yi, who was next to him, but merely shrouded himself with the Blood River in defense.

Zhu Yi frowned. The starlight shrouded in blood seemed to know who he was. The difference in treatment seemed to suggest that he was on Zhu Yi's side.

It would probably be impossible for Baiguang to restore so many of Blood River Prince's Abhijnas and spells.

In which case it would have to be Xiao Yan or one of the others. Yang Qing would likely be unable to do so as well given his low cultivation level, while Xiao Zhener would most likely stay as the backup and therefore unlikely to have entered the spatial projection.

Could the starlight be Big Senior? As Zhu Yi's gaze flickered while trying to figure out the starlight's identity, the situation behind him changed.

Faced with the Blood River Primordial Water, the starlight body of Hell Shadow Holy Man morphed its shape all of a sudden. The cluster of shadow compressed itself until eventually, it formed a jet black antique mirror.

The surface of the mirror was pitch black as well. It reflected no light and seemed like a bottomless abyss that devoured everything, even including light rays and spiritual energy, that dared to be close to it.

Zhu Yi recalled the information he had received about the Dark Emperor, and a sentence came to his mind: "The Three Ultimate Abhijnas of the Dark Emperor, the Primordial Darkverse, the Realm of the Dim and the Dark Ancient Mirror, all of them are incredibly powerful. Together with the Yuan Shadow Avatar,



these moves made the Dark Emperor a significant character in the history of the Primordial Age."

The Abhijna cast by the person in front of him was no other than the Dark Ancient Mirror.

According to folklore, this spell was capable of replicating the Abhijnas and spells cast by other people, making it seem immensely strong. Miao Shihao's Ray Reflecting Mirror reflected his opponent's spells back. Within the limits of his Abhijna, he can cast the opponent's spells back at them at the same power level. He was limited to casting the spell once at the same time his opponent attacked, and it didn't mean that he can cast the particular spell from then on.

In comparison, the Dark Emperor's Abhijna truly copied the spells, taking the opponent's moves over for himself. While there were several limitations to this Abhijna, it was enough to make his foes cringe.

At this moment, the person who possessed the starlight of the Hell Shadow Holy Man aimed the Dark Ancient Mirror towards the rain of blood coming his way.

A scarlet blood shadow appeared on the deep dark surface of the mirror.

Immediately after that, as the shadowy starlight shook violently, some of the Blood River Primordial Water that was filling up the void turned against itself, part of it morphed into a rain of blood as well in opposition with the rest of the Blood River Primordial Water.

Nevertheless, this stream of Primordial Water was greatly outnumbered by the Blood River Primordial Water controlled by the starlight body of Blood River Prince.

Exalted treasures such as the Blood River Primordial Water and the Grand Sun Primordial Flame do not simply materialize in mid-

air by casting a spell. Instead, the corresponding Abhjinās and Spells merely controlled them. Therefore, while the Dark Ancient Mirror replicated the opponent's Unholy Rain of Blood Abhijna, he had to wrest control of the Blood River Primordial Water first before the shadowy starlight can attack his enemy with his Abhijna.

As the shadowy starlight had only the Unholy Rain of Blood Abhijna and lacked the mana of the Blood River mantra, he could only control a very limited volume of Blood River Primordial Water.

Having realized where the problem lay, the shadowy starlight turned the Dark Ancient Mirror to face the golden crow that had been trapped by the Blood River Primordial Water as well.

Specks of golden light appeared on the deep dark mirror.

The golden crow who had used most of his strength wrestling with the Blood River Primordial Water had no means to defend himself against the Dark Ancient Mirror. Large clusters of Grand Sun Primordial Flame left his body, abandoning its former owner and headed towards starlight soul body of the Hell Shadow Holy Man.

The shadowy starlight morphed itself into a black-robed Taoist whose finger pointed at the Unholy Rain of Blood in front of him. The large clusters of Grand Sun Primordial Flame became shaped into golden needle-like Stings that blasted the drops of the blood rain that it touched into pieces.

The void around him instantly became transformed into a world with intertwining colors of bright gold and blood red.

While the putrid blood rain had been blasted to smithereens, the Blood River Primordial Water didn't disappear. It soon gathered itself and was in the process of reforming the rain of blood.

In the short moment when the rain of blood had been blown into

pieces, the black-robed Taoist from the shadowy starlight transformed itself into a shadow and quickly traversed the blood rain blocking his way. He continued chasing the starlight of blood and Zhu Yi.

The starlight of blood had already reached the center of the cloud of stars, but the doorway had yet to open up. No one could pass through at the moment.

Massive volumes of Blood River Primordial River converged into what seemed like an ocean of blood at the center of the cloud of stars. It exerted its force on the closed doorway, hoping to open it up.

Aside from exerting its force, the ocean of blood generated a huge suction force, pulling everything around it.

This was the Borderless Blood Sea, the secret Great Way Abhijna of the Blood River Sect. It had been crafted from the combination of the blood and spirit essence of thousands of living beings and the Blood River Primordial Water. It was capable of absorbing the enemy's attacks as well as sucking the enemies into the Blood Sea.

The sea of blood seemed like a bottomless abyss that greedily devoured all that landed in it before digesting and assimilating them like a hungry primordial beast.

As the Blood Sea spread, covering the entire center of the cloud of stars, the golden crow unleashed a deafening screech. While the black-robed Taoist stole some of his Grand Sun Primordial Flame, its aura became boosted instead. To people's surprise, the golden crow had been hiding its strength, hoping that Zhu Yi and the black-robed Taoist would engage the starlight of blood in battle first.

The golden crow mustered his real power. A massive surge of Grand Sun Primordial Flame erupted around the golden crow. The flame then clustered together, forming a golden sun.

The golden sun sacrificed some of its Primordial Flame and forced a way through the blood flames surrounding it. It transformed into a golden ray of light and charged towards the sea of blood.

However, neither the golden sun nor the black-robed Taoist, or even Zhu Yi, dared to charge head-on into the Borderless Blood Sea. They were aware that such a move would be suicide.

While the Borderless Blood Sea remained cautious about the golden crow and the black-robed Taoist, he was not hostile to Zhu Yi. Not only did he not worry about Zhu Yi, but he also seemed to hope that Zhu Yi would help him delay the golden crow and the black-robed Taoist to buy him some time.

Zhu Yi's gaze shifted between the golden crow, the black-robed Taoist, and the Borderless Blood Sea.

Without knowing everyone's true identity, it was hard to decide who was on his side whether they had teamed up or fought with each other before.

As people approached the core of the spatial illusion, changes could be seen all over the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. Brilliantly colored rays of light illuminated the entire landscape, dispersing the clouds surrounding it and lighting up the vast blue sea beneath.

Above the celestial mountain, in the midst of the churning light and fog, a vast projection of a spatial illusion could be seen depicting the situation in the core spatial illusion of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountains.

Lin Feng, Liang Pan, Shi Yu and the rest of the people outside the celestial mountain looked on, keeping a cautious eye on one another in the process.

While they have not experienced the spatial illusion in person, the superior insights of these people allowed them to understand

gradually how the spatial illusion worked.

As he looked at the group of people battling it out with each other, Lin Feng frowned; "Could they not communicate in the spatial illusion? Even if they couldn't talk, couldn't converse spiritually, couldn't send messages with mana, don't tell me that they couldn't even form words with mana in the void to identify themselves?"

"Hmm, it seems that to possess the starlight bodies, one must minimize acts that reinforced their own identity. The purer one's soul, the easier it would become to control their starlight soul bodies?"

Lin Feng smiled: "Interesting, interesting, so across one layer... no, two layers of starlight, how could one tell if the one next to him is man or beast, male or female?"

As he silently laughed, Lin Feng's mind shook as he received a message from the Steel Tree Avatar who had been in pursuit of the Red Dragon King.

"Indeed, he is up to no good."

# Chapter 771: Evil Doings that Benefits No One

---

Lin Feng controlled his Steel Tree to follow the Red Dragon King from a distance. While he did not fear the Red Dragon King, it was no easy matter for his Steel Tree Avatar at advanced Nascent Soul stage to hide from detection by the sensing ability of a demon Grand Sage.

Of course, while Lin Feng could pursue the Red Dragon King openly, that would be equivalent to a wolf constantly driving a herd of sheep to run for their lives.

When the Red Dragon King left, Lin Feng vaguely felt that something was not right with its mood. Hence, Lin Feng wanted to find out what trick this old dragon was hiding up his sleeve.

Shi Yu and Liang Pan had some interest in the matter as well. As they had inherited the lineage of the First Emperor and Emperor Tai respectively, they had inherited the hatred between the dragons and the two Emperors of Man as well.

While time flied and things gradually change, as long as the Immortal Dragon City and the Imperial Palace of Emperor Tai continued to exist in broad daylight and upheld their former glory, they would undoubtedly tear open the wounds of the Dragon Clan once again.

Both Shi Yu and Liang Pan deposited a fragment of their soul on Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar, pursuing the Red Dragon King together. Lin Feng did not oppose their move, as it represented a continuation of the balance precariously held between the three of them. All three of them shared a tacit agreement.

The Steel Tree Avatar stalked the Red Dragon King for several thousand miles. It watched as Red Dragon King briefed the dragons under his command. The thunder dragons departed subsequently,

leaving the Red Dragon King alone at the place.

The old thunder dragon reverted to his true dragon form and cruised above the Ying Sea. It seemed as if he was waiting for something.

After a while, a large shadow appeared from the depths of the sea before finally surfacing. A sapphire creature that was nearly a thousand foot long showed up. It was a Sea Dragon King with demonic powers on par with the Red Dragon King.

Being in the ocean boosted the Sea Dragon King's powers above and beyond that of the Red Dragon King, who was a thunder dragon.

"Red Dragon King, have you found the Yingzhou Celestial Mountains?" The sapphire sea dragon asked.

The Red Dragon King grunted: "While I have indeed found it, but on the human side Zhou Emperor Liang Pan showed up with the Imperial Palace of Emperor Tai, the Qin Emperor Shi Yu arrived with the Immortal Dragon City. The grandmaster of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, Lin Feng, appeared as well with Mount Yujing. "

As the Sea Dragon King heard the names of the Immortal Dragon City and the Imperial Palace of Emperor Tai, its demonic aura shook violently. As a result, massive volumes of seawater became displaced into the air, forming terrifying tsunami-like waves.

However, as he took in the whole message of Red Dragon King, he fell silent.

He would potentially be facing two magic treasures of the Destiny Realm and Lin Feng, who had already proven himself to be able to take on the might of a Destiny Realm treasure as well. This would be too much for even the Purple Sea Dragon King, let alone him or the Red Dragon King.

Even the combined might of all strong dragon clan cultivators would be no match for the combined force of the Celestial Sect of

Wonders, the Great Zhou Empire and the Great Qin Empire.

The Red Dragon King asked: "Yunlang, do you know where is Soaring Blaze Dragon King now?"

This Sea Dragon King was none other than Falling Waves Dragon King whom Xiao Yan's group have met before. On hearing Red Dragon King's question, he shook his giant head: "It's useless. Even if Soaring Blaze Dragon King had been here, we are still too weak to fight with them."

Soaring Blaze Dragon King was one of the strong cultivators of the fire dragon clan. He was an arch-demon Level three Immortal Demon Soul Stage that left the Xuan Sea in search of opportunities in the Ying Sea. He was the strongest cultivator sent by the dragon clan for the unearthing of the three mountains this time.

"The Ying Sea is part of the Divine Lands. While it is close to the inter-world passage to the Barren Expanses, the humans nevertheless had a geographical advantage. Humans made up the majority of the strong cultivators entering the Ying Sea this time around."

Falling Waves Dragon King added: "There might have been conflicts between Celestial Sect of Wonders, the Great Zhou Empire and the Great Qin Empire and they will fight to the death for the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. Even so, as long as we show up, the three sects will join forces to repel us first."

"If there are only two of the sects around we might be able to gain the temporary support from one of the sect to help them fight with the other sect. With three sects present, we would never be able to gain a foothold in the situation."

As he talked, Falling Wave Dragon King gave a despaired sigh: "It all boils down to the fact that too few of our strong cultivators had entered the Ying Sea this time. Even if we were to team up with one of the sects, we would not be any match for the combined strength of the other two sects. We have too little to offer, and



hence we will be the first faction to be driven away. If only our clan leaders were here, the situation would be a lot different."

The Red Dragon King's voice boomed through the air: "There is no point complaining about these now. Since we cannot get the Yingzhou Celestial Mountains, no one else can!"

Falling Waves Dragon King understood him immediately: "You mean triggering the Illusory Sea Tide?"

Red Dragon King replied: "Of course I'm talking about triggering the Illusory Sea Tide. I know that you have the dragon scale belonging to that sea dragon elder."

Whenever the three mountains of the Ying Sea appears for a period, a giant wave would sweep across the Ying Sea, triggering all the spatial illusions together in the form of a dangerous tide. That's the Illusory Sea Tide.

When the Illusory Sea Tide became active, Penglai, Yingzhou and Fangzhang mountains would stay hidden in obscure locations until they were discovered again.

The terrifying tide was the result of the will of the Ying Sea, an immense Outer Realm. Before the onset of the Tide, cultivators in the Ying Sea would retreat to the Divine Lands. Otherwise once the Tide set in the Ying Sea would become much more dangerous than before.

In the past, a sea dragon king of Level three Immortal Demon Soul Stage had entered the Ying Sea. While he failed to gain control over the Three Mountains of Ying Sea, he did not walk away empty-handed.

Using his unique gift, this sea dragon king not only managed to escape from the Illusory Sea Tide but even managed to unravel some of the mysteries of the Tide. With this knowledge, he devised a secret Abhijna that was capable of triggering a small Illusory Sea Tide in the Ying Sea.

However, it was very difficult to use this Abhijna.

For instance, it could only be used in the vicinity of one of the celestial mountains as it needed to tap on the connection between the celestial mountain and the Ying Sea.

Normally speaking, it would be a very rare opportunity for one to find the exact location of any one of the celestial mountains, and whoever discovered a celestial mountain would try their best to control it.

Contrary to this notion, once a regional Illusory Sea Tide had been triggered, it would cause the particular celestial mountain to hide in the Ying Sea prematurely.

Hence, no one would do such an evil deed that would not benefit anyone unless they had no better option.

However, Red Dragon King and Falling Waves Dragon King had no mental stress about casting the Abhijna.

With three different sects vying for the celestial mountain, it would be almost impossible for them to succeed in controlling the celestial mountain in the end. In which case, the dragon kings decided, they might as well prevent anyone from securing the celestial mountain!

The prospect of the Great Zhou Empire or the Great Qin Empire possibly gaining control of the celestial mountain further strengthened the resolve of these two old dragons.

Falling Waves Dragon King opened his mouth and spat out a clear piece of dragon scale the shape of a drop of water. While it was relatively small in size, it contained a profound level of water-typed demonic energy which could create an ocean if its energy were released.

The Falling Waves Dragon King's scales started glowing blue. One after another, ancient glyphs lit up and became infused into the water-drop shaped dragon scale.

The Red Dragon King remained on alert while glyphs of lighting appeared all over his body as well.

As time passed, the dragon scale started expanding, almost like a giant water bubble.

Lights flickered across the surface of the water bubble which seemed to form connections with the many spatial illusions in the Ying Sea. Under the control of Falling Waves Dragon King, the giant water bubble sank deep within the sea and hovered at its position.

Together with the chanting of ancient incantations, Falling Waves Dragon King took out twenty-four tokens carved from blue crystals and arranged them intricately around the water bubble.

After that, the old sea dragon cut the scales on one of his claws. A large volume of dragon blood flowed out of the wound and landed in the sea, which became absorbed by the tokens.

Instantly, luminous pillars of light shot up into the sky. These pillars formed an intricate pattern, with the water bubble at its center.

Falling Waves Dragon King looked up at the sky before lowering his gaze to examine the sea: "The time isn't right. I can only activate the Abhijna within a short window of opportunity forty-five minutes from now for the spell to work."

"It is alright. We will wait forty-five minutes. If it only takes forty-five minutes for the humans to control the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, then so be it." Red Dragon King replied: "But it is essential that within this period we must continue to nourish the tokens with the essence of our blood."

"I will not let you bear all of the cost of the Abhijna. Aside from guarding you, I will contribute some of my blood essences as well. You must conserve your energy to unleash the Abhijna when the time has come."

As Red Dragon King talked, his facial expression suddenly changed: "Oh no!"

Falling Waves Dragon King had been busy handling the Abhijna and made the same realization right after Red Dragon King. They could see that in the distant sky a gap opened up into the void. A tanned young man dressed in purple appeared amidst clouds of purple mist.

"That is one of the avatars of the grandmaster of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. While its cultivation level is only at advanced Nascent Soul Stage, it is as powerful as a human Immortal Soul Stage cultivator and likely owns more than one magical treasure." Red Dragon King was afraid that the Falling Waves Dragon King would act rashly and immediately projected his voice across: "While our combined strength is greater than that of the avatar, I'm afraid that we cannot sustain the Abhijna ritual any longer!"

Falling Wave Dragon King's mouth twitched slightly. While he might have underestimated his opponent before arriving at the Ying Sea, he would no longer do so knowing that it was Lin Feng's avatar. After he witnessed how Xiao Yan slew the Marquis of Jinghuan, he would not underestimate it even if it was only at advanced Nascent Soul Stage.

While they felt that it was a shame, both dragon kings knew that they could no longer continue with the Abhijna ritual.

Falling Wave Dragon King opened his mouth again and attempted to keep the water bubble and the tokens.

On seeing Falling Wave Dragon King's action, Lin Feng smiled. He raised his right hand in the shape of a knife and gently slashed down in the air.

The water bubble and the tokens in sea shook and remained in their position. Falling Wave Dragon King did not manage to keep them.

At this moment, another tremor could be felt originating from another part of the sky. Lin Feng's gaze flickered slightly. The void opened again at the edge of the horizon, and another figure walked out of the spatial gap.

# Chapter 772: Heavenly Hand, Tiny Speck of Light

---

As Lin Feng used the Fences of the Heaven Abhijna to stop Falling Wave Dragon King from escaping with the tokens and the water bubble, a gap opened up in the horizon, and a man strolled out of the void.

He was a senior man wearing a green robe. While all his hairs had turned white, he remained in the pink of health. There were no wrinkles on his skin, which was as smooth as that of a toddler.

This white-haired old man had an immense aura of power. While he arrived from the void, it seemed as if his lone figure encompassed a world of its own. While he appeared to be out of place compared to the space around him, he seemed to be in perfect harmony with it at the same time, giving people an odd feeling of contradiction.

Through the lens of the old man's eyes, one could vaguely see an expansive universe. The celestial worlds rotated in his iris which seemed to speak of profound reflections about the Great Taoist Way.

Lin Feng frowned. After sizing up the old man he spoke in a mild manner: "Shao Dongtian?"

While his words came across as a question, Lin Feng's tone had been factual as if he was talking about something obvious.

The white-haired old man smiled: "Greetings, grandmaster of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. I am Shao Dongtian."

Indeed, he was the Immortal Soul Stage cultivator who had singlehandedly established the East Heaven's Gate sect, the grandmaster of the East Heaven's Gate sect. At the same time, he was Shao Qingcheng's father and Shao Huayang's grandpa.

According to what Yi Cangchen had told him, Shao Dongtian had

just attained the way of the virtual entity after a long period of close-door cultivation.

At Lin Feng's current level, this information was among one of the most important ones among what Yi Cangchen had divulged to him.

If Shao Dongtian could achieve the way of the virtual identity, it meant that the East Heaven's Gate must have controlled a substantial number of books from the Heaven's Gate sect, even if they might not have a complete collection.

Even if the books had been incomplete before, Shao Dongtian must have had a major discovery before his close-door cultivation that enabled his breakthrough to the way of the virtual entity. If he were to be left alone, the East Heaven's Gate would surely enter a period of fast developments.

However, Lin Feng was most interested in whether Shao Dongtian had obtained the complete version of Heaven's Gate's secret Great Way mantra, the Great Heavenly Mantra.

Shao Dongtian's daughter had been defeated by Zhu Yi, Lin Feng's disciple and her Yang Heaven Lamp had been looted from her. His disciple, Yi Cangchen had too been captured and his You Heaven Robe had been looted from him as well. The East Heaven's Gate had a score to settle with the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

However, Shao Dongtian did not rush to take revenge on Lin Feng. His face had not shown the slightest sign of anger.

After greeting Lin Feng, he proceeded directly to grab Red Dragon King and Falling Wave Dragon King!

Dragon King and Falling Wave Dragon King could no longer care about the water bubble and the tokens and scrambled to make their escape. Shao Dongtian palm extended and seemingly enveloped this vast region of the sea. No matter how fast Red Dragon King and Falling Wave Dragon King tried to escape, they

could not escape from the reach of his palm.

While the move seemed to be nothing special, it was in fact Heavenly Hand, the secret Abhijna belonging to the Heaven's Gate sect.

Falling Wave Dragon King dived deep into the sea and used his unique gift to control an immense volume of seawater to shield him against Shao Dongtian's grab.

However, it seemed as if there was a wheel of light at the center of Shao Dongtian's palm. As the wheel spins, it sucked the seawater dry, allowing Shao Dongtian to capture Falling Wave Dragon King.

While Falling Wave Dragon King was a dragon at Level one Immortal Demon Soul Stage, he was powerless to resist Shao Dongtian who had reached Level three of Immortal Soul Stage.

On the other side, Lin Feng made a move as well. The Fences of the Heaven morphed into the Heaven Arrest move and proceeded to capture the Red Dragon King.

Shao Dongtian raised his brow for an instant. A smile-like expression appeared on his face.

He was aware that as he had just reached Level three of Immortal Soul Stage, he was not as strong as Kuang Heng or Xuan Lin Holy Man from the Greater Void Sect. Lin Feng's power even exceeded that of Kuang Heng and Xuan Lin Holy Man. Therefore, he would probably lose if he fought with Lin Feng.

By Lin Feng Shao Dongtian was referring to Lin Feng's real body, not the avatar that he now faced which only had a cultivation level of advanced Nascent Soul Stage.

While Shao Dongtian agreed that Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar had incredible powers such that even cultivators of Level one Immortal Soul Stage might be defeated by it, its power wouldn't have sufficed to challenge him.



While the avatar might prove to be tougher than dealing with Falling Waves Dragon King, the result would be no different.

If Lin Feng wished to humiliate himself Shao Dongtian would gladly oblige.

With one hand, Shao Dongtian captured Falling Wave Dragon King. He then cast the Dark Boundary Curse, generating a small world with his mana and then locked Falling Wave Dragon King inside it.

He grabbed towards Red Dragon King with his other hand.

Lin Feng's expressions remained calm. Wondrous glyphs spew out from his eyes; each glyph was black and white in color. As they turned, they condensed into an inconspicuous tiny sphere of light that almost seemed like a speck of dust.

Shao Dongtian's irises contracted sharply in alarm: "This move was not made by the avatar! It originates from the Abhijna of the mantra learned by Lin Feng's real body!"

"It is not an Abhijna spell body nor is it an item like a magic treasure or a talisman, but it possessed a physical shape and can be preserved for a long time."

As Shao Dongtian figured out many details of the move, he grew more puzzled: "I have never seen him cast this spell before..."

The hand that Shao Dongtian used to grab Red Dragon King grew as large as the sky.

In contrast, the tiny sphere of light condensed from Lin Feng's glyphs was as small as a grain of dust at the other extreme.

As the huge and the minute collided, Lin Feng's speck of light emitted an explosion of dazzling light. Countless glowing glyphs diffused across the sky, covering a massive area and transformed the sky above the Ying Sea into an ocean of white and black light.

The strong impact stayed Shao Dongtian's hand before retracting

quickly to envelop Red Dragon King. It reformed the speck of dust and returned to Lin Feng's hand.

Lin Feng looked calmly at Shao Dongtian: "Thank you, Grandmaster Shao."

Shao Dongtian took a good look at Lin Feng and smiled: "Grandmaster Lin is truly an adept cultivator. I respect you for that."

Shao Dongtian would not be concerned if this speck of light was all that Lin Feng had. Aside from this speck, he did not see any other moves by the Steel Tree Avatar as significant. While the speck caught him off guard this time, he would not make the same mistake again.

However, Lin Feng had always been known for his sly moves. Without knowing exactly what Lin Feng was up to, Shao Dongtian did not intend to be fodder for other people. Moreover, he came to the Ying Sea to assist Emperor Zhou in controlling the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. Everything else could wait.

Shao Dongtian was clear on the priority of things at different times.

Hence, after his move had been countered by Lin Feng, Shao Dongtian did not make any other moves but merely held onto Falling Wave Dragon King.

Both Lin Feng and Shao Dongtian shared the understanding of not disrupting the formation the two dragons had constructed moments ago under the sea.

Shao Dongtian calmly controlled the small world generated by the Dark Boundary Curse to force Falling Wave Dragon King imprisoned within it to continue supplying its dragon blood, which continued to drip onto the surface of the sea. Falling Wave Dragon King had no choice but to allow him to tap away at his blood essence.

Lin Feng and Shao Dongtian stood at opposite ends of the magical formation of the twenty-four pillars of light and looked calmly at it.

In the far distance above the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, Lin Feng's real body, Qin Emperor Shi Yu, and Zhou Emperor Liang Pan stared at the celestial mountain as if nothing had happened to the dragons.

Within the core spatial illusion of the celestial mountain, the battle grew more intense and chaotic.

Zhu Yi took a silent peek at the sea of blood behind him. His starlight soul body derived from Great Sun Holy Man's Soul Remnant morphed into a humanoid shape. From each orifice over his body, an ethereal star rose into the air.

Standing above the Boundless Blood Sea, the starlight giant swung its fists, soaring through space and unleashed a deafening roar similar to that of a dragon.

In an instant, the aura of the fist from Horn Wood Serpent move of the Celestial Fist of Twenty-Eight Mansions obliterated one of the avatars belonging to the starlight soul body of Hell Shadow Holy Man!

At the same time he stepped onto the void with one foot so firmly planted that he almost seemed to have rooted in space, nothing could move him. This belonged to the move "Root Earth Raccoon."

His other feet launched a savage kick with "Neck Gold Dragon" at the golden crow who was closing in onto the Boundless Blood Sea.

The Horn Mansion was wood-typed and took on the form of a serpent, hence the name Horn Wood Serpent. It was the first mansion for the Azure Dragon region of the East. It consisted of two stars that seemed like the two horns of a dragon. Dragon horns represented the ferocious charge into battle, making this move the deadliest among all the mansions.

The Root Mansion was earth-typed and took on the form of a raccoon, hence the name Root Earth Raccoon. It was the third mansion of the Azure Dragon region of the East. The root represented one's basis and foundation. The root of a tree enabled it to grow unwaveringly.

The Neck Mansion was gold-typed and took on the form of a dragon, hence the name Neck Gold Dragon. It was the second mansion of the Azure Dragon region of the East. The neck of the dragon was protected by the horn of the dragon, and a single movement of the neck will lead to the quick follow up movements of the rest of the body, leading to swift assault!

These three ferocious moves forced the shadow and the golden crow to stop and deal with Zhu Yi's attack first before they could think about approaching the Boundless Blood Sea any further.

The golden crow screeched wildly. The Grand Sun Primordial Flame all over its body erupted together, forming a torrential wave of golden Grand Sun Primordial Flame stings that the golden crow launched at Zhu Yi.

If one of these golden Grand Sun Primordial Flame stings managed to hit Zhu Yi, it would have blasted a gaping hole on his starlight body.

Zhu Yi's assault did not stop there. He combined "Beak Fire Monkey," "Three Stars Water Ape" and "Well Wood Moose" three moves into one, closing both of his hands and squeezed. This move petrified the vast area of space in front of him which perfectly suppressed the Grand Sun Primordial Flame heading his way, preventing the flame from moving.

The Beak Mansion was fire typed and took on the form of a monkey, hence the name "Beak Fire Monkey." It was the sixth mansion of the White Tiger region of the East, forming the mouth of the tiger. The beak had long been seen as an auspicious symbol. Hence this move in the Celestial Fist of Twenty-Eight Mansions

defended its user, resolving dangerous situations that they might be in.

The Well Mansion was wood-typed and took on the form of a moose, hence the name "Well Wood Moose." It was the first mansion of the Vermillion Bird region of the South, where its constituent constellations gave it the shape of a net. Therefore the Well Wood Tiger move took on the form of a net, which seemed like a bottomless abyss, trapping any foe that got caught by it.

The Three Stars Mansion was water-typed and took on the form of an ape, hence the name "Three Stars Water Ape." It was the last mansion of the White Tiger region of the East, forming the chest of the tiger. As it was the last of the seven mansions of the East and yet formed an incredibly important area, it became a symbol of good luck. Hence this move became the killer move in the Celestial Fist of Twenty-Eight Mansions that was able to turn the outcome of the battle!

As Zhu Yi exerted greater force to his hand, the incredible pressure at the center of his palm crushed the Grand Sun Primordial Fire as well as the surrounding space out of existence.

Behind him, the Boundless Blood Sea redoubled its efforts to open the doorway at the center of the cloud of stars. As the Blood Sea exerted an immense force on the doorway, it finally seemed as if it was going to open.

Zhu Yi raised his right fist. The fierce aura of the fist around him slowly condensed into a surreal illusion, within which innumerable stars twinkled.

Divine Palm of Three Enclosures, Heavenly Market Enclosure  
Divine Palm!

# Chapter 773: Yeah, it's you

---

Zhu Yi unleashed the Heavenly Market Enclosure Divine Palm. Before the palm was out, merely the terrifying explosive force within was enough to cause the surrounding Void to collapse in huge patches.

The next instant, everyone in the Galaxy Illusion suddenly felt as if every single star in the universe has dimmed simultaneously for a moment.

The stars flickered, from bright to dim and back again; correspondingly, every single pore of the giant formed by Zhu Yi's starlight opened together, as if at this very instant, it was connected with the boundless Milky Way in the cosmos.

Countless stars were born, lived, and eventually destroyed, narrating the most ancient laws of the universe.

The universe changes, the stars shift.

Anything and everything, inevitably, experienced the process from gestation, birth, growth, aging, and eventually, annihilation.

Even for the most long-lived entities of the universe, the stars of the cosmos that have existed since the beginning of time, it was unavoidable. As constellations shifted and galaxies roamed, they headed towards death, towards the final destination of the cosmos.

The vast body, formed by starlight and sustained by Zhu Yi's soul, moved abruptly as it took three steps in an instant.

With the first step, his body swung sideways, seemingly melting to form countless projections at once, shining together like millions of stars.

With the second step, they became twenty-eight human forms, each taking up one position of the Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions and together, let out a loud yell.

With the third, final step, every single projection disappeared together, as if they have never appeared in the first place. Only Zhu Yi remained; the air of blood and masculinity boiled violently, like innumerable stars exploding at once.

The fatal move of the physical martial arts of Emperor Chen – Shifting Stars Technique!

With the three steps, the strength of Zhu Yi's body, formed by converging starlight, was at its extreme, as if a casual punch would blast a star apart.

From the bottom of the feet, to the legs, to the waist, all the way up along the spine and reaching the top of the head. The entire person shook violently; instantly, it was as if the stars rippled and the universe wavered!

After the three steps, Zhu Yi's body just disappeared from the field of stars. When he next appeared, his location has already shifted; however, he was not attacking the Golden Crow and the Dark Shadow, but was instead right in front of the Boundless Blood Sea!

Right now, as it attempted to take control of the Door in the Center of the Cloud of Stars, the Boundless Blood Sea was at a crucial time. Although its power was at Immortal Soul Third Level, but distracted and facing the massive explosive force of the Shifting Stars Technique, a gap was instantly ripped open in the turbulent Blood Sea.

Zhu Yi raised his right hand; the Heavenly Market Enclosure Divine Palm, ready to strike long ago, continued to blast the Boundless Blood Sea.

"Knowing my identity, with Big Senior's character, even if he had only a Starlight forged by the Remnant Soul of an Immortal Soul First Level cultivator – or even a Nascent Soul Starlight – he would still take the job of blocking the enemy without a second's hesitation and let me go and take control of the Door in the Center

of the Cloud of Stars."

Zhu Yi stared at the roaring Boundless Blood Sea silently, his gaze calm and composed. "What's more, yours is the Immortal Soul Third Level Blood River Prince?"

Although I can't be certain which was Big Senior, but I can be certain that you are definitely not!

Since you're not, what else is there to be said?

Yeah, it's you that I'm beating up!

You want me to block the enemies and create time for you, but do I not want you to try to take control of the Door in the Center of the Cloud of Stars?

With his own Abhijna hard to use, if he wished to defeat the opponent, who has controlled the Blood River Prince, Zhu Yi also needed him to focus on taking control of the Door so as to increase his chances of success.

Meanwhile, at almost the same instant that Zhu Yi made his move, the Starlight formed using the Hell Shadow Holy Man's Remnant Soul transformed into clouds of shadows. As they flickered, they converged again to form an ancient mirror, black as ink.

The light of the mirror, however, did not towards those present, but instead enveloped a ball of starlight in the distance.

It was a ball of chaotic Starlight without a Remnant Soul. It was flying towards the center of the Cloud of Stars from faraway; around the Starlight, bursts of milky-white flames floated about, forming the shape of a phoenix.

Those milky-white flames were none other than Pure Yang Primordial Fire, one of the Seven Legendary Primordial Fires along with the Grand Sun Primordial Fire.

This ball of Starlight was sustained by the Remnant Soul of a



Phoenix Grand Sage who died in the Ying Sea.

The light of the mirror fell on the Starlight surrounded by Pure Yang Primordial Fire. Hazy white spots instantly lighted up on the surface of the Dark Shadow Ancient Mirror; the next instant, it forcefully retrieved large amounts of Pure Yang Primordial Fire.

Grand Sun Primordial Fire, blazing golden and so bright it pricks the eye, appeared in front of the starlight of dark shadows.

The Starlight transformed into a black-clad Taoist priest, wearing a high hat and traditional robes. His face emotionless, the Taoist priest held up the Grand Sun Primordial Fire and Pure Yang Primordial Fire with both hands and abruptly clapped them together.

Immediately, an extremely terrifying aura radiated from before the black-clad Taoist priest.

Seeing this scene, Zhu Yi instantly smiled.

The person controlling the Starlight formed by the Remnant Soul of the Hell Shadow Holy Man was none other than Xiao Yan!

Although the black-clad Taoist priest was completely expressionless, but Xiao Yan laughed coldly as he stared at the Boundless Blood Sea before him. "Regardless of whether you and that man who cultivated the physical martial arts of Emperor Chen knew each other's identities, both of you cooperated before this. Your cultivation level is higher, but you rushed to take control of the Door in the Center of the Cloud of Stars and let your companion come to intercept us."

"Second Junior is good at strategy, but he's definitely not one who's shrewd but lacks determination. He is one of decisiveness and resolve, as well as the boldness to be the first. Even if we are well aware of each other's identities, if we were together and meet this sort of situation, unless it was obviously inappropriate, he would fight with me to be the one to stop the enemies."

"Zhener did not enter; Fifth Junior, Sixth Junior, Jieyu, Baiguang, Kui Cow King, Spiritual Sea Horse King, none of them could control the Avatar of an Immortal Soul Third Level Master so easily and effortlessly."

"I indeed do not know who you are, but I know that you are definitely not Second Junior."

"So, if not you, who should I attack first?"

The hands of the black-clad Taoist priest formed by the Starlight controlled by Xiao Yan's Soul started to move ceaselessly, forming countless arcane gestures. Countless spells were sent into the two Primordial Fires, both of which were almost going to lose control.

It's just that, as he attempted to forge the Heaven Fire Lotus, Xiao Yan also felt his Soul reverberating continuously, causing a kind of disconnect between it and his body of starlight.

As if two obviously incompatible things were forcibly integrated; not only are they not compatible, but they will wear down on each other.

"I am already using this Taoist's own Abhijna to recreate the Grand Sun Primordial Fire and the Pure Yang Primordial Fire; only the spell for the Heaven Fire Lotus was from myself. Even so, it experienced rejection?" Xiao Yan remained composed, without fretting. "This illusion is indeed troublesome."

"However, I had not demanded to succeed in unleashing the Heaven Fire Lotus this time," Xiao Yan suddenly started to chuckle. "That day when I failed to merge the Primordial Fires on Mount Yujing, I still have to be cautious. Now, I have nothing to fear!"

With a silent cry, the black-clad Taoist priest that Xiao Yan transformed into, carrying the two Primordial Fires - which were still violently colliding and did not merge - charged towards the Boundless Blood Sea.

"Failing to merge them simply means that I myself could not control the Primordial Fire either. If they were to actually explode, the destructiveness would not be much less than a fully-formed Heaven Fire Lotus!"

Obviously, the Boundless Blood Sea has realized this as well. Despite being severely wounded by Zhu Yi, it still steered the torrential Blood River Primordial Water, in an attempt to extinguish the fiery flames flowing towards it.

This action of Xiao Yan's allowed Zhu Yi to fully confirm his identity, and others did so as well.

The Golden Crow suddenly turned around and attacked towards Xiao Yan, but at this moment, Zhu Yi, again repelled by the Blood Sea, intercepted him once again.

Seeing this, Xiao Yan smiled as well. "Hah, so it is Second Junior. No wonder that previous battle was so enjoyable."

Facing the torrential Blood Sea, Xiao Yan detonated the two Primordial Fires, already at the edge of losing control, straight away. Even Blood River Primordial Water, used to everything filthy in the world, was blasted into disarray in front of such a violent explosion.

The dark shadow Starlight that hosted Xiao Yan's own Soul was damaged severely as well, becoming even dimmer. However, as he was already prepared, it was at least not fatal.

The Blood Sea, meanwhile, was in even worse shape than him. A deep pit was instantly blasted in it, and massive amounts of Blood River Primordial Water was incinerated and evaporated.

If not for the incredible defense and peculiar absorption of the Boundless Blood Sea, or if this was a complete dual Fire Lotus, this ocean of blood would have been completely destroyed.

However, even so, the Blood Sea was greatly weakened, to the extent that even the Door in the Center of the Cloud of Stars,

which has almost cracked open, appeared ready to close again.

The vast Blood River Primordial Water retreated swiftly, once again forming an Unholy Blood River that flowed around the Starlight.

With Zhu Yi's previous blow, it could still hold up, but Xiao Yan's hit wounded it gravely straight away.

This person was a decisive one as well. He abandoned the attempt to control the Door in the Center of the Cloud of Stars to avoid benefiting Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and the others, as well as to reorganize and recover.

However, at precisely this moment, Sanskrit Buddhist chanting sounded out yet again as the Monk Da Kong finally appeared.

Previously, he was severely injured by Zhu Yi and the Blood River Starlight together. Right now, he was extremely weak as well; his condition was much worse than even the Blood River Starlight.

However, the opportunity the Monk Da Kong found was very good. The Blood River Starlight has already paved the way for him, lacking only the last stroke. Without a moment's hesitation, the Monk Da Kong transformed into a ball of golden Buddha's Light, colliding with the Door in the Center of the Cloud of Stars.

"Hmph!"

The Starlight was silent, but the Souls of the four masters - Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi, Blood River, and Golden Crow – vibrated at almost the same time, as if they had snorted simultaneously.

"Crooked baldy, you think you hid yourself perfectly? You shall be used as the sacrifice to offer up to this Door!"

The next moment, the four turned together, their unrestrained attacks hitting the Monk Da Kong and the Door in the Center of the Cloud of Stars simultaneously.

The explosive force shattered the Monk Da Kong's Starlight

straight away. The Mana and Starlight merged into a raging torrent, blasting the Door in the Center of the Cloud of Stars open completely as well!

Bright light shined out from the door, casting its glow over the entire Galaxy Illusion.

Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and the other two charged into the door together as well.

Bright light flashed before his eyes; Zhu Yi felt the Starlight body hosting his Soul being annihilated gradually, but his Soul was uninjured. As the world spun before his eyes, everything suddenly brightened – he has returned to his own physical body again.

However, just one moment after his soul returned to the body – before he could communicate with Li Yuanfang and the others – the scene before his eyes changed tremendously as his entire person was teleported to an unknown location.

By the time Zhu Yi regained control of his senses, only he himself remained. Before him, was a pitch-black corridor that led to God knows where.

Outside the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, the three - Lin Feng, Liang Pan, and Shi Yu – were still in a standoff. Together, they witnessed Zhu Yi and the others blast open the Door in the Center of the Cloud of Stars and then, the obliteration of the illusion.

At the same time, the massive Yingzhou Celestial Mountain trembled in its entirety.

"The core illusion of the Celestial Mountain has been destroyed. Next, it would depend on who could achieve the recognition of the Celestial Mountain first and take control of it," Lin Feng's eyes narrowed slightly. "It was shrouded by the entire Celestial Mountains, and can't be seen clearly. However, it seems that some other extraordinary thing is hidden in the mountain. What could it be?"

# Chapter 774: Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp

---

Lin Feng stared at the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain below. Right now, the layers and layers of illusory realms covering the surroundings and inside of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain started to degrade.

Only the Nameless Ancient Formation that engulfed the celestial mountain remained. This left Lin Feng a little bothered. Without the illusory realms, the abnormally close relationship of the Nameless Ancient Formation and the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was exposed.

It was closer than what Lin Feng and the rest expected. Between both parties, there seemed to be a balance where they supplemented the shortcomings of the other party.

Although this connection was hidden, Lin Feng, Shi Yu, Liang Pan and the rest were still wary of it.

Without the layers and layers of illusory realms as barriers, Lin Feng and the rest could finally communicate with those on the celestial mountain through their powers.

"Master, we are fine, but everyone is separated." Xiao Yan laughed bitterly as he relayed the situation to Lin Feng, "As I burst into the door in the center of the cloud of stars, the shell that I consolidated from the starlight collapsed. My own soul returned to my own flesh and I was sent to somewhere I didn't know. I lost contact with Zhener and Fifth Junior too."

"Because the Heaven Fire Lotus was forcefully summoned in the illusory realm, my soul was inflicted with a little damage. But there's nothing serious."

Lin Feng said, "Seems like only you and Zhu Yi were separated as your positions were shifted. Just now, I contacted Yang Qing and

Yuanfang. Although their positions were also shifted, they were not separated."

"Zhu Yi is also fine. Continue to explore, and find a way to control the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain quickly. I will hold the fort for all of you from outside."

Xiao Yan nodded his head, "Yes, Master." After he finished saying, he looked at the pitch-black corridor in front of him and progressed forward.

After Zhu Yi finished his own conversation with Lin Feng, he also advanced forward in the corridor.

As he walked, Zhu Yi noticed the movements around him. He felt that the illusory realm that covered the entire Yingzhou Celestial Mountain had disappeared. Zhu Yi pondered, "As the core illusory realm is broken, the other illusory realms have also disappeared. But this doesn't mean that they have collapsed completely."

"If someone can cultivate the celestial mountain, he can rebuild the core illusory realm. When that happens, the other illusory realms will come to life again."

Right now, Zhu Yi contacted Xiao Yan, Yang Qing, Li Yuanfang and the rest separately using his mana. He understood the rough situation after he conversed with them.

Those from the Celestial Sect of Wonders, besides him and Xiao Yan, that had entered the illusory realm were unable to reach the door of the center of the cloud of stars. Among them, there were a few whose shells, that they consolidated using starlight, were destroyed by others.

If the shells were purely crushed, their souls would not be damaged. Rather, they would be sent back to their flesh outside the illusory realm. But it's just that if they wanted to enter the illusory realm again, it was no longer possible.

In the illusory realm, if their shells and souls were damaged, the

injury would remain even if they left the realm.

After the core illusory realm had collapsed, besides Zhu Yi and Xiao Yan, the positions of the rest were also shifted. Right now, Yang Qing, Kui Cow King, Xiao Zhener and the Spiritual Sea Horse King were on one path, while Li Yuanfang, Bai Guang and Jieyu were on another path. Each group were in an unfamiliar corridor each.

Zhu Yi did not escape as he broke through space. That was because he could subtly feel that the immense pressure of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and the Ying Sea still remained. Furthermore, after the illusory realm had disappeared, that pressure had become more direct.

Before the situation was clear, attracting too much attention might cause himself to be the target of the celestial mountain and the Ying Sea.

"Oh?" As he walked, Zhu Yi's gaze flashed and he stopped in his tracks.

He could clearly feel that on the other side of the corridor, which was still very far away, there was someone walking towards him.

Just during the moment when Zhu Yi stopped in his tracks, the other party also stopped.

The both of them could clearly sense the presence of the other party even though they were separated by an unknown distance in the dark corridor.

After keeping a silent for a moment, Zhu Yi started to laugh and he moved forward again.

And after the party on the other side pondered for a moment, the other party also continued moving forward.

When the both of them were so close until they could confirm each other's identity, they stopped again. Zhu Yi clasped his palm and fist together and said while smiling, "Princess Xingyun, I



didn't expect that we'll meet so soon."

For those who entered the door, besides him and Xiao Yan, the identity of Monk Da Kong was also confirmed. But the identities of the two people that relied on the Blood River Prince and the Golden Crow Grand Sage were still unknown.

The person who came arrived without any companions. From the looks of it, the person must have had relied on either the Blood River Prince or the Golden Crow Grand Sage.

From the other side, a laughter was also heard, "Sorry for offending you earlier, Comrade Zhu. Please forgive me."

Very soon, a lady in yellow came before Zhu Yi. She was in the Intermediate Stage of the Nascent Soul Stage. She smiled while bowing towards Zhu Yi, "Comrade Zhu, you are indeed powerful. Even the Grand Sun Holy Man's Divine Palm of Three Enclosures and the Shifting Stars Technique were unleashed because of you."

Zhu Yi sized her up, "It seems your Starlight Avatar is from the Blood River Prince?"

Shi Xingyun nodded her head and answered honestly, "I can't hide things from your sharp eyes indeed. I did have the intention to work with you, but as Comrade Xiao Yan also arrived at the door, I knew that any hopes for our collaboration were gone."

"Although I do not have any ill intentions, I did mislead you. If I have offended you, please do not blame me."

Zhu Yi replied, "I am not offended. But now that we have met, what are your plans?"

Shi Xingyun laughed, "If you ask me, I think that our previous collaboration can still be furthered, until we decide who the celestial mountain belongs to. "

The two of them were separated by some distance, but the both of them could sense that between the both of them, there was a three-way junction. Besides the area that the both of them were in,

there was another path leading in another direction.

Shi Xingyun laughed, "Previously, in the core illusory realm of the celestial mountain, I had the intention of revealing your identity, so that all of us could work together. But who knew that because of the illusory realm, all of us were deaf and dumb."

"Now that we are facing each other, we can reveal everything and settle what to do."

Zhu Yi lifted his eyelids but his expression did not change, "Oh, your words sound a little weird. If I'm not wrong, before everyone entered the illusory realm, all the arrangements should have more or less been made."

"Besides picking the candidates to enter the illusory realm, I believe prior preparations have also been made to protect our physical flesh and activate backup plans in case someone else appears."

"Two Immortal Soul Stage Elders from the Great Zhou Empire have arrived. One of them is Monk Da Kong and the other is the Tidal Sword Elder. Monk Da Kong entered the illusory realm and there is a high possibility that the Tidal Sword Elder stayed behind to protect the body of Monk Da Kong."

"I believe the Great Qin Empire must have done roughly the same. Besides you, I believe only one of Prince Jingfang and the Vivant Joy Holy Man entered into the realm."

Zhu Yi placed both his hands behind him and said slowly, "I guess the person who entered is Prince Jingfang. Am I right?"

Although he was posing a question, he did not expect Shi Xingyun to reply. Rather, he followed by saying, "Even if one is strong, the newly-created entity from the starlight in the illusory realm may not be equally strong. But from the look of that Golden Crow, I believe that it is only able to have such a performance under the command of an Immortal Soul Stage Elder."

"The Great Zhou Empire may have someone as powerful as you in the Nascent Soul Stage, but I don't think that's much of a possibility. That's why I believe it's Prince Jingfang who entrusted his soul to the Golden Crow starlight instead of you."

"Then, besides you and I who entered the door, there are also Monk Da Kong and my senior Xiao Yan. The last person must be Prince Jingfang then."

Zhu Yi looked at Shi Xingyun and asked seriously, "If the both of us collaborate, who will we deal with?"

Shi Xingyun was not troubled and seemed to expect that Zhu Yi would reply in this way. She laughed, "Didn't you mention that Da Kong is around too? The illusory realm is miraculous and unpredictable. Furthermore, he is also one with a lot of secrets. Although his Starlight Avatar was crushed by the four of us and his soul was further damaged by us, I believe that he is still not dead yet."

Zhu Yi answered, "Even if he is not dead, with the grave injuries that he has sustained, I myself will be enough to deal with him."

Shi Xingyun looked at Zhu Yi and a smile appeared across her face. She shook her head, "Because I offended you earlier, I can't blame you for being wary."

"You don't have to be like this. To say that I didn't come for the celestial mountain, it would seem very pretentious. But I am aware of my own abilities. If I have to fight for the celestial mountain by myself, the hope of getting it will be slim."

"By taking a step back, I hope to obtain something from the celestial mountain. To obtain this thing, I will need a magic treasure of yours, the Eternal Night Demonic Stele."

Zhu Yi did not reply and his mind flowed with thoughts, "Her cultivation is not beyond the Intermediate Stage of the Nascent Soul Stage yet, but she is able to restore the powers of the Blood

River Prince to this state. Not even a normal Immortal Soul Stage cultivator will be able to do so."

"She has a big secret too. She seemed to hint at something else with her words, and also seems to have some other motive. She is not just purely a Great Qin Empire princess. When we found out that she was birthed from a dragon soul, Master and I were already suspicious of her background and history."

Shi Xingyun continued saying, "Naturally, I won't let you do all this for nothing. If things progress smoothly, you may obtain a magic treasure in the metaplasia realm."

After pausing for a moment, Shi Xingyun followed by saying, "The magic treasure may be greatly damaged and may have fall to the gestation realm. At the same time, the original soul of the magic treasure may have been destroyed too. Regarding this, I have no guarantees. After all, I have not seen the current situation of this magic treasure."

"Comrade, you don't have to worry about assisting me to find this treasure and cause any delays in seizing control of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. We can continue exploring and find a method of cultivating this mountain. As long as you activate the powers of the Eternal Night Demonic Stele, the thing that I want will appear on its own."

She was not hiding anything this time. She relayed the truth honestly. After that, she stood where she was and waited for Zhu Yi to make his decision.

"Employing the help of the Eternal Night Demonic Stele to find this thing, don't tell me..." Zhu Yi thought of something and asked, "What is this thing that you are finding?"

Shi Xingyun replied, "I am finding something called the Hornless Dragon Spirit, which is shaped like a dragon. From what I know, this Hornless Dragon Spirit was attached to the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp of Zhi Guang Zen Master that was lost on the

Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. Although the Zhi Guang Zen Master used the Amogasiddhi Mantra to form the Golden Form of Buddha, the core power concept of the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp originates from the Forever-Bright Tathagata Mantra."

# Chapter 775: Meeting Da Kong Zen Master Again

---

"Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp..." Zhu Yi repeated this name silently. When Shi Xingyun mentioned the Eternal Night Demonic Stele earlier, Zhu Yi had already thought of the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp in his mind.

The Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp was a Buddhist treasure from the Antiquity Age. Its power concept also originated from the Forever-Bright Tathagata Mantra. During the Middle Ages, it landed in the hands of Zhi Guang Zen Master and became a magic treasure that he brought around with him.

Although the Zhi Guang Zen Master used the Amoghasiddhi Mantra to cultivate the Golden Form of Buddha, he also had a deep understanding of the Forever-Bright Tathagata Mantra. As he commanded the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp, he achieved a good connection with the magic treasure and both parties supplemented each other.

After Lin Feng gave the Eternal Night Demonic Stele to Zhu Yi, Zhu Yi cultivated it. To further increase his efficiency in commanding this magic treasure and unleash its full powers, Zhu Yi did not only comprehend the way concept within. He also tried to understand the background of the magic treasure.

During the Middle Ages, the original owner of the Eternal Night Demonic Stele was the Thousand Night Demonic Elder. Although both he and the Zhi Guang Zen Master were complete opposites in their path of cultivation, the both of them shared a close personal relationship. During the start of the Middle Ages when the demonic arts and the righteous arts were still not completely at loggerheads, the both of them interacted quite frequently.

Their magic treasures, the Eternal Night Demonic Stele and the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp, became good 'friends'. Both of

these magic treasures, which were in the metaplasia realm, shared a rather good relationship.

It was only when the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp went missing and the Zhi Guang Zen Master perished during the War Between the Two Worlds did the relationship between both magic treasures terminate.

After the Zhi Guang Zen Master passed away, the Thousand Night Demonic Elder once brought the Eternal Night Demonic Stele to find the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp. But he did not have any clues and nothing came out from the search.

But he never expected that this treasure was lost on the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

Zhu Yi looked at Shi Xingyun, "How did she know this?"

He summoned the Eternal Night Demonic Stele. The original soul of the stele converted into a light projection of a middle-aged man in black. After hearing Zhu Yi's description, the original soul of the Eternal Night Demonic Stele, which was called Eternal Night, seemed to be a little agitated.

Eternal Night did not rush to reply. Rather, it sensed the surroundings quietly and expanded its powers. Rings and rings of black ripples spread out.

After a while, Eternal Night said in a deep voice, "Bodhi Soul indeed appeared here before!"

"The spiritual power of the celestial mountain is too immense and has disrupted my sensitivity. I can't determine its actual location, but it's somewhere around here."

After receiving an affirmative response, Zhu Yi nodded his head. He said to Shi Xingyun, "If you have the sincerity to work together, let's start now."

Shi Xingyun replied, "I only want the Hornless Dragon Spirit. To me, as I step foot on the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, the

mountain is naturally the most important target. But the Hornless Dragon Spirit is the more realistic option."

The two of them met at the junction before they left together on the other path. Indeed, it was another dark corridor.

Zhu Yi turned his head to look at Shi Xingyun. He wondered what the Hornless Dragon Spirit was and why Shi Xingyun placed so much attention on finding it.

Zhu Yi had never heard of this so-called Hornless Dragon Spirit before. He did not know what it was used for or whether it was dangerous.

What he was more curious about was that even if Shi Xingyun was transformed from a dragon soul, how was she able to restore the powers of the Blood River Prince to such a state in the illusory realm previously?

From what Zhu Yi observed, Shi Xingyun had never cultivated any Blood River spells or any abhijnas from the Blood River Sect.

Besides being unable to replicate the Tao fruit of the Blood River Prince, who was in the Immortal Soul Third Level, she was practically a duplicate of the Blood River Prince.

But this was normal. For Da Kong Zen Master who revealed the Pure Land of Industry, that was the true abnormality.

From Shi Xingyun's understanding of the way of the Heavens and Earth and control of the soul as she commanded the Blood River Prince Starlight Avatar, she must have had at least be in the Immortal Soul Stage in order to do so.

Just like how Prince Jingfang was able to control the Starlight Avatar of the Golden Crow Grand Sage.

Zhu Yi was not arrogant, neither was he too modest. Besides Xiao Yan and a few fellow disciples of his, there were not many people in the Nascent Soul Stage who could so.



Especially since Shi Xingyun was transformed from a dragon soul. In her previous life, she was a Demonic Saint, and could not have been so adept in understanding the essence of the cultivation of an Immortal Soul Third Level cultivator. More accurately speaking, if she tapped on the powers of her previous life, the difficulty would be even higher.

The abnormality in this area was what left Zhu Yi extremely suspicious.

But he did not say much. After all, everyone had their own secrets.

"It's nearby!" Eternal Night was jolted alive and he turned his attention towards the deep end of the corridor.

Zhu Yi and Shi Xingyun looked at one another. They quickly burst forward. But not far after they advanced, they soon slowed down.

Eternal Night also felt ominous at the same time, "It's indeed Bodhi Soul. But there's someone else too!"

And at almost the same time, the other party seemed to be notified of their presence. Zhu Yi and Shi Xingyun only moved a little, but they were quick, In the dark corridor, a bright and pure radiance was shone. As Zhu Yi and Shi Xingyun got closer to the radiance, they saw an ancient lamp in front of them. There was only a wick on the lamp stand in front of them. The top of the wick shone not with a small flame, but an extremely pure radiance.

Just by scanning it, Zhu Yi could feel a forever-bright radiance, which contained the miraculous concept of perfect nature.

Right now, the Virtuous Zen Master of the Celestial Sect of Wonders cultivated the complete version of the Forever-Bright Tathagata Mantra. Besides the foundational sutras – the Supreme Light Mantra and the Three Thousand Illumination Spell – the core outline of the Amitabha Sutra was also complete.

Under the approval of the Virtuous Zen Master, Zhu Yi once studied the complete version of the Forever-Bright Tathagata Mantra. Although he did not cultivate it properly, his understanding of this brilliant mantra was not inferior to that of many descendant disciples of the Great Thunderclap Temple.

In the white radiance, the figure of a white, mystical dragon could be seen. It was very small, as if it was only a streak of light. In space, it kept on swimming, but it did not cross the core boundary of the radiance.

"This is the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp, and that mystical dragon is the Hornless Dragon Spirit that Shi Xingyun wants..." Zhu Yi turned to look at a middle-aged monk standing beside the treasure lamp. He was Da Kong Zen Master.

Da Kong Zen Master was conversing with the original soul of the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp right now. He was attempting to cultivate and retrieve this magic treasure.

Although he looked tranquil, his gaze was dimmer than it seemed before he ascended the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

After the starry illusory realm was inflicted with heavy damages, even Da Kong Zen Master's vital energy was hugely damaged.

He relied on the sarira of Zhi Guang Zen Master to find the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp, but it was not convenient for him to forcefully cultivate the lamp. He could only interact with it slowly. But who knew that Zhu Yi and Shi Xingyun would find him.

Although he was hurt in the hands of Zhu Yi and Shi Xingyun, Da Kong Zen Master was not psychologically affected. Even as he was injured, he was still in control of his own state of mind.

But an ominous feeling rose in his heart. His desire to obtain the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp seemed set to bring him more problems.

As Eternal Night saw the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp, he opened his mouth and said, "Bodhi Soul, long time no see. I can't believe that you were lost on the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain."

The Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp resonated with a peaceful voice, "Apologies for making myself a laughing stock in front of you, old friend."

The Eternal Night Demonic Stele and Zhu Yi had a telepathic connection. They said to the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp instantly, "Bodhi Soul, although this Da Kong Zen Master has Zhi Guang Zen Master's sarira, he is a rogue monk that has betrayed his elders and ancestors. I believe that you can sense it too, that he has cultivated Zhi Guang Zen Master's sarira!"

Bodhi Soul was silent and the spiritual light above the wick shook for a moment. Because he discovered this point, he did not allow Da Kong Zen Master to cultivate the lamp.

Da Kong Zen Master recited a Buddhist chant and smiled, "Buddha is only in one's heart. If one has Buddha in his mind, he can become Buddha too. "

"My cultivation may still be low, but I know that a peaceful state of mind will allow one's cultivation to progress on the right path. Although the elders have all passed on, they did not leave behind things for their successors to worship. It's just that our generation of people worship our elders to seek a peace of mind."

"But to our ancestors, as a person passes on, it's just another cycle of life. The belongings of the past no longer matter anymore."

"Inheriting the Buddhist teachings of Buddha and passing them on to the others is the best way of worshipping our ancestors. It's not the physical things that they leave behind that count."

Zhu Yi said indifferently, "You are indeed very glib. But there's something I don't understand. Don't tell me that from your perspective, destroying the Great Thunderclap Temple is your way

of passing on the legacy of Buddha?"

The light from the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp flickered and the voice of Bodhi Soul sounded, "Is that real?"

Eternal Night said in a low voice, "Bodhi Soul, you have been trapped on Yingzhou Celestial Mountain for countless years, but you don't know that the Greater World has already changed greatly. The Great Thunderclap Temple has been destroyed many years ago!"

"The destruction of the temple is linked to him. He was the one who allied with the troops who targeted the Great Thunderclap Temple."

Bodhi Soul was shocked, "How can this be? The Great Thunderclap Temple has the protection of Mount Meru, how could he have been destroyed so easily?"

Da Kong Zen Master listened to the accusation by the Eternal Night Demonic Stele quietly and did not deny them. Rather, he said honestly, "Till this day, I don't regret what I did. Elder Fangzhang and the rest started to ascend the wrong path and they betrayed the teachings of Buddha. This caused the Great Thunderclap Temple's reputation to be tarnished.

"All of you say that I annihilate Buddhism, but from what many of my comrades and I think, it's a rebirth for Buddhism!"

He looked at the Forever-Bright Bodhi Lamp calmly, "I believe that the Zhi Guang Zen Master thinks the same way if he's still alive!"

"Elder Bodhi Soul, if you want to know what happened truly, I suggest that you leave with me. After that, I can tell you everything. Right now, it's not very convenient."

# Chapter 776: Golden Body Of The Great Sun, Rise Into Nirvana

---

The Da Kong Zen Master wore a calm expression, and even though he looked little pitiful, there was absolutely no trace of remorse or regret.

The Buddhist light around the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp flickered and a voice came out from within. "I have been stuck inside the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain for millennia and I have no idea what has become of the outside world. I no longer know how to distinguish right from wrong."

Bodhi Soul's voice had a peaceful undertone, but nobody knew whether his mental state was truly able to recover its stability.

He said quietly, "If I can ascend, leave the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and return to the Divine Lands, I will investigate the truth behind the matter myself. I will not listen to the words of others without evidence. However, I'm not leaving with you."

Besides the Hornless Dragon Spirit swimming inside the lamp, an old monk appeared within the Buddhist light. He looked amicable and friendly as the light shadows condensed and materialized into a body – it was the Bodhi Soul revealing itself in physical form. He glanced at the Da Kong Zen Master before he turned back towards Zhu Yi and the Eternal Night Demonic Stele and asked, "After the destruction of the Great Thunderclap Temple, what happened to the thousands of disciples of the Buddha?"

Zhu Yi replied, "Most were chased away into exile. However, there were a few relatively stubborn monks who perished in battle."

"After that, due to the fact that the Great Thunderclap Temple was located within the Great Zhou Empire, the Great Zhou Empire oppressed the remaining monks and sent people after them – many

died."

A haze of faint grief came over the Bodhi Soul as he turned towards the Da Kong Monk. "You speak of the slander and profanity of the Buddha's reputation. Did the disciples who died have a part to play?"

The Da Kong Monk deliberated for a moment before he heaved a heavy sigh. "The main perpetrators were the Abbot and the other inner-circle elders of the Great Thunderclap Temple. Only second-level Golden Form disciples from my generation, like myself, knew about it. Most others were clueless."

The Bodhi Soul's expression instantly changed into anger as his eyes widened like a Vajra. "Then the disciples who died in the process, those that had no clue what was going on before they were forced into exile, and even chased down and killed in droves – did they deserve to die?"

The Da Kong Monk answered, "After the Great Thunderclap Temple had been laid to ruin, most of the disciples that were being chased down and arrested did not actually die. The only ones that did were those that tried to resist capture and arrest. Even though I have joined the Great Zhou Empire, I have created a small haven for these innocent disciples to seek refuge."

"Based on what I know, the Great Void Sect had been taking in these exiled Buddhist disciples in secret as well."

Zhu Yi and Shi Xingyun exchanged a look as they heard this revelation and could see the sparkles in each other's eyes.

The words of the Da Kong Monk only served to prove one thing – the fact that the Man of Polycoria, Shi Tianyi, was able to practice the authentic Acalanatha Tathagata Mantra and eventually master the Unmovable Nagaraja Buddha Being to remedy the natural weakness of his physical body was because of the Great Void Sect.

The Da Kong Monk heaved another heavy sigh. "I am

heartbroken about the disciples who lost their lives. However, I do not regret the choice I made all those years ago. If I had allowed the Abbot and the other elders to carry out their devilish ambitions, the entire Divine Lands would have decayed and descended into hell and the life of the world would have been extinguished."

The air of fury and wrath around the Bodhi Soul dissipated gradually as his wrinkled face was expressionless once more. He stared straight at the Da Kong Monk and said, "If I am able to escape from the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, I will definitely investigate the truth of the matter. But before that, you have to leave behind the relics from Zhi Guang and the others!"

"I have to admit that I don't have the Buddha's level of mastery. However, I cannot allow the Buddhist relics to be tainted by others – not even you!"

The Da Kong Monk shook his head. "Forget it, you will understand my intentions in the future. Control of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain shall be determined shortly and time is of the essence. If you don't wish to travel together with us, then I have to bid you farewell."

With Zhu Yi and Shi Xingyun still there, coupled with the fact that he was heavily injured, the Da Kong Monk dispelled the notion of forcefully assimilating and re-forging the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp as he turned around to leave.

He completely disregarded the Bodhi Soul's request as well.

Zhu Yi stepped forward and said, "Monk, you can have a sweet tongue but don't think you can just leave like that."

"Our multiple engagements inside the illusion at the core of the mountain was highly restrained and limited. I want to test your mastery of the Buddhist mantras again."

As he spoke, he wrapped the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel

around his body and unleashed his cosmic form.

The Da Kong Monk wasted no words as Buddhist light flowed around his body and the illusion of a Great Roc appeared from within. The illusion of the Great Roc integrated with his body and his whole body transformed into a stream of light as he cut open the void and was about to vanish inside before anything else could happen.

The Garuda Windsurfing Technique was one of the most powerful Vanishing Spells of the Great Thunderclap Temple. The speed of travel was similar to the maximum speed of a Golden Roc and was practically unrivaled.

However, Zhu Yi had already prepared for this. The spiritual form of the Dragon, Phoenix, Spirit Turtle and the Qilin appeared around his body all at once and surrounded the Da Kong Monk within.

The Da Kong Monk was calm and he said, "You may be able to take on Shao Qingcheng but that doesn't mean you can handle me. Even though I'm a little weaker than usual, don't think you can step all over me."

He raised his right hand and clenched a fist as he spoke. The illusion of the Great Roc let out a ear-splitting howl as it started to materialize and retracted its wings.

In the next moment, its wings extended outwards explosively and ferocious squalls surged outwards with overwhelming strength.

Following this incredibly powerful move, the Da Kong Monk punched out with his other hand and went directly for the Sky Revolution of Zhu Yi's Four Appearances Sky Formation.

This was the Supreme Great Roc Fist, a formidable Martial Way of the same lineage as the Garuda Windsurfing Technique. It had the ability to release the full power of one's body in a single explosive instant.



Zhu Yi remained expressionless as he slapped his palms together. Similar to his engagement with Shao Qingcheng, the Sky Formation started to transform once again.

The Sky Revolution trembled violently and started to separate by itself and morphed into a thick light mist that permeated the entire area. Rice-sized sparkles of light flashed constantly within the light mist and gushed around, blazing a mystical trail that resembled the rotations of the stars in the night sky.

The light mist was a like an independent tiny universe that could absorb anything as the brute strength of the Supreme Great Roc Fist vanished into nothingness.

The Da Kong Monk's face turned dark. He grunted and immediately unleashed the Amoghasiddhi Buddha Form and his right palm started to form the Full Circle Of Life Swastika Palm Print as he struck down towards Zhu Yi.

At this moment, the Bodhi Soul intervened and exclaimed, "Da Kong, leave the relics behind."

A ray of light flashed across the magic lamp as the roaming Hornless Dragons Spirit scattered and a great burst of Forever-Bright Buddhist light crashed towards the Da Kong Monk.

The Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp was unable to channel its maximum power as it did not have an owner to direct it. However, the Da Kong Monk was already injured and was now distracted by Zhu Yi's Sky Formation and the Bodhi Soul's entry into the fray meant trouble for him as he had to take care of two different sources of attacks.

Zhu Yi managed to find loopholes on his side as the Da Kong Monk's attention was split into two sides.

He turned around on the spot as the void beneath his feet started to crack and crumble. Incredibly explosive forces that resembled supernovas were directed from his feet to his thighs, then to his

waist and followed his spine to reach the top of his head.

Zhu Yi's tilted forward as his whole body flashed forward like a shooting star and arrived in front of the Da Kong Monk in the blink of an eye.

The Emperor Chen's killer move – the Shifting Stars Technique!

Zhu Yi was able to slowly grasp and make out the essence of this powerful Martial Way through the power of the universe illusion and was able to replicate the same technique with his own physical body.

Zhu Yi's physical body was nothing too out of the ordinary, and he was only in the nascent soul advanced stage while the Da Kong Monk was in the second-level Golden Form stage. Therefore, there was no way he could unleash the true power of this martial way to achieve its desired effect. However, he did not intend to use this technique as a form of attack and simply wanted to ambush him.

He continued to direct the Four Appearances Sky formation was uncountable rays of flowing light shot towards the Da Kong Monk like a blanket of shooting stars.

However, the situation changed unexpectedly once again.

The Da Kong Monk's Amoghasiddhi Form trembled violently as another human figure shimmered into vision from within the rays of Buddhist light.

Even though the human figure was gold-colored all over just like the form of the Amoghasiddhi Buddha, Zhu Yi could tell with one look that this human figure was the individual that he had just been temporarily implanted in – the Great Sun Holy Man!

However, back inside the universe illusion, it was an artificial body formed from the remnant soul memories of the Great Sun Holy Man. The golden figure before him now was the real physical body of the Great Sun Holy Man!

"Legend has it that the Great Sun Holy Man's death had nothing

to do with the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and was connected to the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain instead. Looks like the powerful physical body of the Great Sun Holy Man was preserved and had been in the hands of the Great Zhou Empire all along."

"It seems as if this body had been damaged for some reason, and the Great Zhou Empire tasked the Da Kong Monk with the recuperation of this physical body with his Buddhist lights and whatsoever," multiple thoughts ran through Zhu Yi's head. "The Da Kong Monk is injured as well, and is now in a dire strait under the continuous onslaught from both me and the Bodhi Soul. He's no longer able to suppress this powerful physical body. It practiced the mantras of Emperor Chen and has a life of its own – even though it's ultimately still an empty shell, it was awoken and triggered by my Shifting Stars Technique."

Once he understood what was going on, Zhu Yi continued to direct the Four Appearances Sky Formation against the Da Kong Monk as he prepared to unleash the Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions. However, his target was the golden body of the Great Sun Holy Man and wanted to use the powers of his martial ways to trigger the Great Sun Holy Man's golden form even more.

The Da Kong Monk's facial expression was extremely grave at this point. His eyes darted between Zhu Yi and the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp before he turned to look at the mutinous golden form of the Great Sun Holy Man. He made a decisive quick judgment and let go of the Great Sun Holy Man's physical body without hesitation.

"Rise into nirvana!" After letting go of the golden form of the Great Sun Holy Man, the Da Kong Monk started to chant scripture after scripture as his Amoghasiddhi Buddha Form erupted with bright colors and innumerable streams of colorful light expanded outwards in all directions. The sheer force of this move shocked the Bodhi Soul and even Zhu Yi was slightly taken aback.

The colorful rays of light destroyed the void all around.

This was an esoteric technique of the Great Thunderclap Temple that only powerful cultivators above the second-level Golden Form stage were able to master – they were able to damage their own Buddha Spell Body in exchange for a temporary wave of frightening destructiveness.

When the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp chased away the Hornless Dragon Spirit, Shi Xingyun had taken the opportunity to capture it and did all she could to suppress it. She was not involved in the battle and still enjoyed full autonomy, but she heaved a faint sigh as she watched Zhu Yi and the Bodhi Soul clash with the Rise Into Nirvana Spell and let go of the Hornless Dragon Spirit in her hands.

The Hornless Dragon Spirit vanished into nothingness in an instant and Shi Xingyun could no longer be bothered with it as she grunted and her soul immediately departed from her physical body.

# Chapter 777: The Secret Cave Inside The Mountain

---

The appearance of Shi Xingyun's soul was not that of a human but that of a vivacious Immemorial Celestial Dragon. It was clear and vivid as if it were corporeal.

The dragon soul stared at the Da Kong Monk with such a ferocity that the monk felt chills creep down his spine. "This girl's soul is too powerful for a nascent soul stage cultivator. Even if she assimilated the dragon soul of an undying demonic stage dragon into her own soul, she shouldn't be at this level... Wait, maybe she's the incarnation of a Celestial Dragon?"

The Celestial Dragon Soul opened its mouth and let out a piercing roar.

The roar shook even Zhu Yi as his magic treasures started to react with faint trembles.

It was very different from the battle she had with Sang Luohe during the Spiritual Conference of Huanghai. She had held back most of the strength of her soul, but she was unleashing every ounce of it now. It was not just the pressure that came from her power – she channeled esoteric techniques that were previously unbeknownst to the world.

The Dragon Emperor's Celestial Roar!

The rippling strength of the dragon soul stirred up the clouds all around as the space-time in the immediate vicinity started to twist out of proportion.

The power of her soul reached a level that it even affected matter and had an effect on material things. This power was rarely seen even in immortal soul cultivators.

Shaken by Shi Xingyun's Dragon Emperor's Celestial Roar, the Da Kong Monk could already feel the immense pressure on his

Buddha Spell Body that had already sustained multiple injuries. He felt as if he was a sand-castle faced with a tide of crashing waves.

The intensely destructive of the Buddha's Rise Into Nirvana spell held off Zhu Yi and the Bodhi Soul, but now it had to contend with the Dragon Emperor's Celestial Roar. Under the overwhelming pressure from all sides, there was no way the Da Kong Monk could sustain it and it was cut off in its midsection as the air of Buddhist lights all around dissipated in an instant.

Zhu Yi fired rows of Light and Darkness Characters as they started to form a paragraph which eventually transformed into a sprawling golden bridge that surged towards the Da Kong Monk.

There was nothing the Da Kong Monk could do. With a long sigh of defeat and exasperation, the Da Kong Monk waved his arm and dozens of relics were tossed outwards.

The Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp changed his stance as he swept up the relics in a burst of Buddhist light but withdrew his assault on the Da Kong Monk.

The Da Kong Monk started treading slowly across the void and white lotus flowers appeared beneath his feet with every step.

The appearance of the white lotus flowers blocked off Zhu Yi's golden bridge, but the formidable force of the golden bridge caused the white lotus flowers to break apart and shatter continuously.

The Da Kong Monk continued forward as white lotus flowers continued to appear beneath his feet to replace the ones that were destroyed by the golden bridge. This was another powerful Escaping Spell of the Great Thunderclap Temple – the Lotus Flower March.

It was dissimilar to the pure speed of the Garuda Windsurfing Technique. The nature of the Lotus Flower March was similar to the Celestial Spell of Elusiveness from the ancient Heaven's Gate Sect – it had a unique and profound strength to it and was used to

break through or fend off against the obstructive spells of the adversary.

Even though his injuries were getting worse, he no longer had to suppress the golden body of the Great Sun Holy Man and the Da Kong Monk actually became a little more powerful than before.

Zhu Yi watched the Da Kong Monk with his escaping spell as he sat cross-legged on top of the Kirin cosmic form. He stood up all of a sudden as all four forms started to chant words and eight limbs worked together to produce books, pen and paper, rulers and even a zither as they performed an ancient ceremony.

With the support of the Supreme Holy Ancient Apparel, the Essay of the Sages was even more powerful than usual as the golden bridge erupted with power and collectively suppressed the lotus flowers beneath the Da Kong Monk's feet.

The Four Appearances Sky Formation transformed into a patch of thick light mist that blanketed the cosmos and clashed heavily with the Da Kong Monk's Buddha Spell Body.

The Da Kong Monk grunted a single time as his Buddha Spell Body started to crack like a porcelain vase that was about to shatter.

"Have mercy on my soul, Buddha!" The Da Kong Monk exclaimed as a golden cloth banner appeared on the forehead of his Buddha Spell Body with rows of scripture written in red ink.

There was no overwhelming aura of destructiveness, no flashing of Buddhist light and neither were there any special transformations.

However, the Da Kong Monk's cracking Buddha Spell Body miraculously re-solidified itself with the appearance of the golden banner. Even though the web-like cracks were still there, it stopped spreading.

At this very moment, in the space above the raging battlefield,

the void finally descended into chaos as uncountable numbers of black holes appeared in midair and tore the void into pieces.

After experiencing the Da Kong Monk's Rise Into Nirvana Spell, Shi Xingyun's Dragon Emperor's Celestial Roar and Zhu Yi's final assault, the spiritual energy in the midsection of the mountain finally lost control and became highly unbalanced. The power of the Ying Sea and the defensive mechanisms of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain were triggered as the mountain sought to suppress the disturbance.

The pressure from the cracks were too much as Zhu Yi's eyes started to flash with bright lights – he had no idea where he was about to be sent to by the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

The Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp was with him as the Da Kong Monk was swept away by another black hole, and Shi Xingyun as well.

The Da Kong Monk exchanged a final look with Zhu Yi before they were separated as he gazed deep into Zhu Yi's soul with an expressionless face and nodded his head in silence.

Shi Xingyun was in a slightly more jovial mood as she pointed towards somewhere behind here. If one followed the direction of her finger, one would be able to see that the Hornless Dragon Spirit that she had let go of was not so lucky and ended up being sucked into the same black hole that Shi Xingyun was in.

The environment around Zhu Yi changed in an instant as blinding colors flashed in front of his eyes. When he finally settled down and oriented himself, he found himself at the entrance of another tunnel.

"Thankfully, we haven't been expelled by the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain," Zhu Yi chuckled as he turned towards the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp and then at the stirring Great Sun Golden Form that was still being suppressed by the Eternal Night Demonic Stele.



"Bodhi Soul Senior, what plans do you have after this?" Zhu Yi was the first to speak as the Bodhi Soul entered a state of contemplation.

He was a metaplasia-level magic treasure, and without the direction of an owner, it would be extremely difficult for him to move around.

The Eternal Night Demonic Stele transformed into the form of a black-clothed middle-aged man and said, "Leave with us. Even though the leader of our sect is born only into the current Age, his level of mastery is unprecedented and he has great potential. He will have the power to seek justice for the Great Thunderclap Temple in the future."

"The leader and his disciples, including my master, Zhu Yi, will try our best to find the remaining missing relics and return them to the pagoda forest inside the Great Thunderclap Temple for a proper burial. There's also an immortal soul stage cultivator from the Great Thunderclap Temple taking up residence with our sect, and he's collecting the missing archives and encyclopedias from the Great Thunderclap Temple."

The Bodhi Soul's expression changed a little. "Oh? If that's the case, then I'm willing to travel with you guys."

He turned towards Zhu Yi. "It seems like the group of you have an interest in the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain as well. I am willing to travel along and do my best to help you realize your ambitions, although I hope you will help me return to the Divine Lands as well. If what he said is the truth, then you and your sect will be the savior of the Buddhists – I am also willing to be assimilated and refined to serve the greater good."

Zhu Yi immediately nodded his head and answered, "If that's the case, then let's go."

He retrieved the Great Sun Golden Form from beneath the Eternal Night Demonic Stele and continued forth into the tunnel

that had appeared in front of him.

The illusion at the core of the Yingzhou celestial Mountain had been broken, and wresting control of the mountain was at hand.

Zhu Yi felt his heart skip a beat as he was walking and could feel thick waves of spiritual energy at the end of the tunnel. The feeling of his destination was vast and profound with no end in sight, as if it was an independent world.

It was not just the volume that was incredible – even the quality was extraordinary.

Zhu Yi found his discovery a little strange as he quickly stepped forward. In no time, his eyes flashed once as he reached the end of the tunnel and found himself the witness of a spectacular sight.

He was inside a gargantuan stone cave, and it resembled an independent world with no Sun and Moon.

The midsection of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was hollow – a giant cave existed within.

There was an enormous jade-stone pillar inside the cave that extended from the ground all the way up, and was so tall that Zhu Yi could not even see its tip. His guess was that the pillar extended directly into the summit of the mountain and had a height that was over ten thousand feet high; it was like mountain inside a mountain.

Zhu Yi stared at the white jade-stone pillar that seemed as if it bore the weight of the world upon it and started to feel the formidable forces of power stored within.

Even though it was hidden away in the midsection of the mountain, this giant jade pillar still gave off an aura as if it could support the entire world.

As calm and composed as Zhu Yi typically was, a haze of astonishment came over him as this white jade pillar somehow felt increasingly familiar.

"I've seen this before somewhere... The Celestial Wonders World, inside the Yin-Yang Sea beneath Mount Yujing!" Zhu Yi took in a deep breath as he started to write 'calm' a few times with his right index finger in midair to actually calm himself down.

"I've seen this during the battle of Xiling City, when master battled the Saintly Celestial Sword and the Great Void Holy Pavilion!"

"I've seen it during the clash between the Immortal Dragon City and the Imperial Palace!"

"I've seen it inside the Yin-Yang Sea, inside that golden sphere!"

Zhu Yi's mouth curled a little as he exclaimed, "This is a Magic Treasure Embryo that can give birth to a destiny-level magic treasure!"

He continued to feel the concepts of power contained within. It was nothing like the overbearing aura of the golden sphere inside the Yin-Yang Sea that forced people to turn away.

On the contrary, the power contained within was a lot more mature and stable. It was much more extensive and colossal in volume, and there was a greater level of autonomy about it.

Even though the golden sphere inside the Yin-Yang Sea was also a Magic Treasure Embryo, it was still far from ripening and maturing. On the other hand, the white jade pillar before him was clearly a mature Magic Treasure Embryo that could be used by powerful cultivators to forge a destiny-level magic treasure right away.

Still, the process of forging a destiny-level magic treasure was tedious and would take a long time. Furthermore, there were other uncertain factors such as luck and whatnot.

The tremendous energies contained within the white jade pillar proved that this Magic Treasure Embryo had fully matured and was as autonomous as it could get. This was completely dissimilar

to the golden sphere, which could lose control at any moment.

Zhu Yi suddenly recalled his discussion with Lin Feng, Li Yuanfang and the Green Glass Soul about the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and the Nameless Ancient Formation.

"The Nameless Ancient Formation is not man-made, and came about by natural forces along with the rise of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. The changes of the ancient formation will therefore cause the nature of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain itself to change along with it."

"The formation has become weaker and weaker over the years. In comparison to the strength of the mountain, the latter should be moving towards the other end of the spectrum – it should be getting more and more powerful."

"This kind of strength cannot be exhibited purely in the concept of power of the mountain."

"It's not a complete impossibility that the mountain could start to develop a certain level of intelligence as well."

Zhu Yi ran through these discussions in his head and glanced at the white jade pillar before him. He started to feel a little dizzy as thoughts raced about in his mind.

Who would have thought that the changes in the nature of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain would lead to such a situation? It was not as simple as the mountain developing its own intelligence – it was something far more frightening.

The mountain took the mysterious connection it shared with the Nameless Ancient Formation and the Ying Sea and concentrated the spiritual energies around the Ying Sea into itself to give birth to a Destiny-Level Magic Treasure Embryo!

This phenomenon could be said to be unprecedented and never to be replicated.

The value of the white jade pillar itself could rival even that of

the entire Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

He confirmed his own judgments and analysis before he tried to voice-project his discovery to Lin Feng but was unable to do so.

Zhu Yi frowned as he exited from the stone cave and tried to set up communications again. However, the dome-like mass of spiritual energy coming from the white jade pillar cut off even the tunnel from the outside world.

There was no way out on the other end of the tunnel and Zhu Yi returned into the stone cave. He started to feel a headache coming on as he stared at the white jade pillar.

He was unable to contact the outside world, and he was not powerful enough to assimilate the white jade pillar himself. If someone gained control of the mountain, it was possible that the white jade pillar would end up in this person's hands. Leaving the tunnel would be a mistake as well as he ran the risk of relinquishing this precious item to someone else who found their way into this tunnel.

His master was holding the fort outside and was standing off against Liang Pan and Shi Yu. If he knew what was happening, he could help Zhu Yi make the decision.

Zhu Yi heaved a sigh of defeat. The precious item that he had just discovered unintentionally suddenly became a hot potato.

# Chapter 778: All Beings Return Into The Earth With The Chirps Of The Cicada

---

Outside the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, Lin Feng glanced downwards at the mystical mountain as the strange feeling in his mind intensified. "Somehow I feel like there's something hidden within the mountain."

Even though the illusion at the core of the mountain had been broken, the connection between the mountain and the Ying Sea was still stable. This caused the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain to be enveloped and covered by a barrier that resembled a thin layer of mist. There was no way Lin Feng could see through into the secrets hidden within the mountain without being down there himself.

Both Shi Yu and Liang Pan had a similar feeling as the auras of the Imperial Palace and the Immortal Dragon City started to grow in power, as if they were getting ready to make a move.

Lin Feng reacted the same way as the peaceful stand-off between the three forces was getting weaker by the second.

"The Original Ancient Skyrider should be getting closer to the Penglai Celestial Mountain..." Lin Feng felt a tingling in his heart as his eyes turned deep and profound.

At this moment, in the southern regions of the Ying Sea in a place far away from the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, a dust particle-like speck of light was surging through the thick white clouds like a shooting star before it abruptly stopped in its tracks.

This tiny dot of light started to expand and transformed into intertwining black and white characters.

A giant human-like figure appeared within the concentration of runes and characters as he stood within the void like a pillar that held up the Heavens – he stood at a height of more than three thousand feet.

This giant figure had baggy sleeves and loose clothing and looked exactly like Lin Feng's original body. All his physical features and characteristics were the same, down to the clothing and his skin. He was pretty much a colossal carbon copy of Lin Feng.

It seemed more like a figure made from air, however, and the flickering of the airy figure resembled the beginnings of heaven and earth.

This giant was called the Original Ancient Skyrider, and was a physical spell body forged by Lin Feng using the Original Heaven Splitting spell. At the same time, it was also the most powerful spell body that Lin Feng could conjure. When the Original Ancient Skyrider was in play, Lin Feng's original body would be unable to use the Original Heaven Splitting Technique, the Fist of the Great Heavenly Sun, the Spell of the Boundless Sea amongst other mantras and abhjinās.

However, its battle prowess was superior to that of the Great Heaven Flaming Emperor and the King Of the Boundless Sea spell bodies. During his stand-off with Liang Pan and Shi Yu, this spell body could help him execute his plan to search for the Penglai Celestial Mountain.

There was a tiny speck of light on the forehead of the Original Ancient Skyrider – it was the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl. The golden pearl was flickering with weak flashes of purple light, but the flashes were becoming stronger.

"Oh, we are getting closer to the Penglai Celestial Mountain."

Lin Feng's consciousness was connected to the Original Ancient Skyrider, and he knew that he was on the right track under the guidance of the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl. This also meant that the rumor that the Penglai Celestial Mountain was located in the Southern regions of the Ying Sea was true.

All of a sudden, the lights from the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl began to flash violently once again. However, it was a little

different from the trembling from when it crossed over the Penglai Celestial Mountain.

Lin Feng realized what was happening. "The Yingzhou Mountain is located in the North-Eastern region of the Ying Sea. If it's not the Penglai Mountain, then it must be the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain that's in the hands of the Great Zhou Empire."

The black and white characters that surrounded the Original Ancient Sky rider started to condense once again as the giant figure withdrew into the speck of light with a single burst of light. It transformed back into a dust particle-like dot of light that appeared like nothing more than a grain of dust in the air.

The Two Elements Micro-Dust technique was created by Lin Feng from his continuous derivation of the third chapter of the "Heavenly Classic of The Way's Virtues", the "Two Elements Chapter". It was attained during his process of breaking through to the second-level immortal soul stage.

This spell body was still incomplete and required Lin Feng to officially reach the second-level immortal soul stage. At the same time, Lin Feng had to finish the "Two Elements Chapter" before the spell would be officially mature and complete.

However, it was still functional as of current. The use of this spell body was beneficial for his journey to break through to the second-level immortal soul stage and the completion of the "Two Elements Chapter", like building a bridge across a vast river.

In the next moment, the void above the sea started to tremble. Nothing could be seen, but there was a feeling that something invisible and gargantuan just passed by this exact location.

"The Fangzhang Celestial Mountain..." Lin Feng laughed inside as he witnessed the passage of the mountain.

The Great Zhou Empire was fully invested in this endeavor and it was clear that they perceived the conflict of the Ying Sea as a



substantial determinant of the future of their sovereignty as an empire.

Liang Pan took the Imperial Palace to take control of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain while Zhu Hongwu and the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain was responsible for seeking out the Penglai Mountain.

The Great Zhou Empire had most of the initiative in this competition as they already had a mountain under their control. They were using the mystical connection between the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain and the Penglai Celestial Mountain to search for the latter.

Lin Feng started to channel the Two Elements Micro-Dust technique again with the Original Ancient Skyrider as he proceeded forward in the same general direction. "It seems like they will reach the Penglai Celestial Mountain before I can."

As he was considering his options, Lin Feng suddenly felt a violent tremble from the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain in amongst the dense blanket of clouds above the Ying Sea.

The white clouds suddenly turned into a patch of gold as vast amounts of golden light flowed out between the golden clouds and the space all around started to twist out of proportion.

A rectangular colossal mountain surged into vision from within the golden light as the clouds were instantaneously dispersed.

From the moment the gigantic mountain appeared, boundless volumes of light started to condense at its core and transformed into a dull gold-colored ray of Heart Of The Sky Fangzhang Celestial Light and shot towards something in the distance. Every part of the void that was touched by the ray of light was destroyed and crumbled into nothingness.

Initially, Lin Feng thought he had been discovered but immediately realized that he was not the target of the Heart of the

Sky Fangzhang Celestial Light beam.

A human figure appeared from the void in the trajectory of the beam of light. The person grinned and said, "Seems like I followed a little too closely behind."

He placed his palms together as he spoke and Buddhist light flickered around his body. A giant form of the Buddha materialized in the sky above his head; it was pure gold and emanated traces of blue light.

The ancient Buddha form sat upon a lotus throne that was supported by eight elephants. It held the Vajra Rod in one hand and a giant bell in the other – it was the Acala Buddha Spell Body.

The Acala Buddha Form started to chant Buddhist scriptures as a golden sphere of light appeared in front of it. The light sphere shimmered with an independent Pure Land, which it embodied true happiness and unwavering satisfaction.

The Pure Land of the Acala Buddha was called the Pure Land of Happiness. The profound enlightenment and knowledge embodied within was something that could transform all worries and anxieties into happiness and satisfaction. It could achieve this without fear and hesitation as its true nature was that of the Adars'ajñana, also known as the Great Mirror Wisdom. (Translator's Note: This is one of the Four Great Wisdoms of the Buddha.)

The light shadow was one of a young and relatively good-looking monk who was clad in grey. Surprisingly, he had a level of mastery higher than that of even the Zhi Guang Zen Master and his display of the Pure Land Of Happiness was a lot more mature and immense than the Da Kong Monk's Pure Land Of Industry.

The light sphere started to expand and transformed into a complete patch of Pure Land – and immovably and fearlessly, it faced off against the Heart of the Sky Fangzhang Celestial Light beam.

At the same time, the young monk raised his right hand and clenched his fist.

The Acala Buddha Spell Body above his head mimicked his action and an omniscient concept of power that could dictate the future and alter the past, yet was immovable and unwavering at the same time, flowed out of it.

It was the most powerful defensive martial way technique of the Buddhist mantras – the Unmovable Nagaraja Buddha Cloak!

The combined appearance of both the Unmovable Nagaraja Buddha Cloak and the Pure Land Of Happiness formed an impenetrable wall and absorbed the Fangzhang Celestial Light beam like the tides crashing against the rocks by the oceanside; it did not matter how ferocious or how powerful you were, but I could never be moved as you broke yourself apart in front of me.

Inside the great hall of the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, Liang Pan's avatar watched the grey-clothed monk quietly and said, "Golden Cicada Master, we went our separate ways not too long ago, and now you're so eager to leave again?"

The Golden Cicada Master chuckled and replied, "I don't think I can leave this time. If I leave, the Penglai Celestial Mountain will end up in the pockets of the Great Zhou Empire."

Liang Pan said, "If that's the case, then stay behind and let's catch up."

"You were not there during the battle of the Great Thunderclap Temple all those years ago. It's been my regret, as well as that of the other participants, that you were not able to show up."

The Golden Cicada Master placed his palms together and started muttering under his breath. "This is supposed to be my responsibility and my punishment, but I ended up pulling down the Great Thunderclap Temple to its ruin."

Zhu Hongwu was standing below Liang Pan inside the great hall

and said softly, "You were like a coward all those years ago and you refused to participate in the battle. Now you're back to stir things up – don't you feel ashamed of yourself?"

The Golden Cicada Zen Master casted his gaze towards the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain. His eyes seemed to pierce through the layers of void and stared straight into the souls of Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu. "The Buddha does not condone emotions of anger and vengeance, but he still has the power to vanquish all evil. All karma and fate will be resolved in the end – why are the two of you so adamant about fighting a war of words with me?"

"The sweet tongue of the Buddhists – is that not one of your 'powers' as well?" Liang Pan smiled faintly. "However, I agree. A war of words is indeed unnecessary."

As he spoke, the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain started to tremble violently once again as an immeasurable number of glyphs and runes shot out from the void and chained themselves onto the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain.

The giant rectangular mountain, which was a good five thousand miles long and wide, was immediately enveloped in a layer of dull golden light.

The golden light followed along the transparent chains and caused these chains of runes to turn into a dull golden color as well. The patch of sky all around were tainted gold in the next moment as Heaven and Earth continued to shake while runes and glyphs continually appeared from between the flashes of light – it was as if the entire world was crying out.

The power of the entire Ying Sea seemed to be integrated into the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain as everything crashed towards the Golden Cicada Zen Master.

Lin Feng nodded his head in approval as he witnessed this powerful execution. "This is the most powerful state of the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain – drawing on the power of the Ying

Sea to defeat its enemies. Even third-level immortal soul stage cultivators are not able to face this kind of power. It's quite similar to the formidable auras of the Imperial Palace or the Immortal Dragon City."

At this moment, the Golden Cicada Zen Master felt as if he was all by his lonesome with no place in the world and even Heaven and Earth were against him.

Even the Pure Land of Happiness and the Unmovable Nagaraja Buddha Cloak trembled under the immense pressure.

The Golden Cicada Zen Master heaved a light sigh and said, "It's a pity that I have yet to master the complete version of the Vairocana Sutra. If the Five Tathagata Dharmas of the Compass were complete, then I can experiment using Buddhist powers to challenge the Initial Catastrophe and I won't be stuck in the third-level Golden Form stage."

The Golden Cicada Zen Master was still calm despite his utterances – he only felt a little regret and not fear.

All of a sudden, the chirps of cicadas rang out from between the heavens.

The chirps embodied the true meaning of freedom and liberty of the Buddhist teachings, and only in its deepest recesses could one detect an ounce of ferocity.

"Chirp, chirp, chirp..."

One chirp rang out after another as the entire patch of void became filled with the sounds of cicadas.

In an instant, the world started to shake as everything seemed to descend into a path of decadence and towards the end of time. It was as if the season was transforming from summer to late autumn and into winter as all beings in the world returned to the Earth. Heaven and Earth were becoming nothing, and the great laws of nature along with them.

Even the fearsome Fangzhang Celestial Mountain seemed to be masked in a layer of rainstorm as it lost all its former glory and color.

Lin Feng, who was hidden inside the Two Elements Micro-Dust, Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu all shared a strange reaction.

"The Alpha and Omega, the Vipralopa Realm!"

The voice of the Golden Cicada Zen Master could be heard from the cacophony of chirpings. "My demonic form had reached the end of the path, but I found another way to ascend to the next level by studying the Buddhist mantras all those years ago. However, I never expected that when I resurfaced into the world after going through the tribulations, the Great Thunderclap Temple had been laid to ruin because of me."

# Chapter 779: The Hysterical Dance Of The Demons

---

The Golden Cicada Master was still dressed like a young monk as he positioned himself in the middle of the void. However, the aura of Buddhist light emanating from his body was starting to recede.

In the void above his head, the shadow of a giant cicada shimmered into vision. The surface area of this giant cicada was slightly bigger than that of even the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain.

The giant form of an insect, while it was charged with the freedom of the Buddha, it was also extremely frightening and possessed an overwhelming and overbearing aura.

People like Liang Pan, Lin Feng and Zhu Hongwu were not too distressed by the aura. What triggered their strange reactions were that there seemed to be a dreadful and deathly aura surrounding the giant cicada. It gave off a dreary feeling that could envelope people, even Lin Feng and the others, in a haze of great terror that came from the deepest parts of their hearts.

Lin Feng was familiar with this concept of power. He had experienced the very same aura from the black chess piece of the Vipralopa Chess Game on top of Mount Yujing.

It was the energy of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe, of the Five Decays of Heaven and Man!

Even this demon could channel the power of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe.

Lin Feng watched the Golden Cicada Master in silence as he listened carefully to the chirping of the cicadas.

When this demon joined the Great Thunderclap Temple to practice Buddhist mantras, the Vairocana Sutra had already been lost. Even after the multiple efforts to consolidate and arrange the

remnants of the Sutra, the outline of the Sutra – the Vairocana Zen Palm Fist Print – was still missing. This was the reason why his mastery of the Buddhist mantras remained at the peak of the third-level Golden Form and he was unwilling to take the next step.

If he took this step, he would have face the phenomenon that would seize even immortal soul stage cultivators in apprehension – the Five Decays Of Heaven and Man, the Power-Destroying Catastrophe!

All man would perish in the end, in one way or another, and their fates and destinies would return into the earth. Death was the great fear of man, but there was something even more frightening – the devastation of the world, and the end of all fates and destinies.

Over the journey of his cultivation, Lin Feng attained greater a understanding of the cycle of fates and destinies and corrected a few of his misunderstandings in the past and understood a lot more than he used to.

Even third-level immortal soul stage cultivators were helpless when faced with the Power-Destroying Catastrophe, the Five Decays of Heaven and Man. Once the Catastrophe hit them, they would be struck down on the spot.

The Greater World on the path of the Omega, the end of times, the arrival of the apocalypse – nobody could escape this fate.

The birth of destiny-level magic treasures was one of the solutions in the perennial struggle to find a way out. A great number of powerful cultivators also put in a lot of effort to increase their personal mastery in the hope of crossing the bitter ocean and reach the paradise on the other side.

As humans reached the third-level immortal soul stage, and as demon grand sages reached the third-level undying demonic soul stage, the path onward was the same. In order to raise their level of mastery, they had to put themselves through the Three



## Tribulations of Destiny.

The legendary tribulations of the Collapse of Destiny and the Apocalypse consisted of three parts. In the first stage, all beings that had life and spiritual energy and everything that was birthed by the destiny of the world had to accompany the entire world to go through the great tribulation of the Five Decays of Heaven and Man.

This stage was called the Alpha Destiny Tribulation, and was also known as the Power-Destroying Catastrophe, the Five Decays of Heaven and Man.

This phenomenon originated from the most mysterious sea of the Grand Celestial Seven Seas – the Death Sea.

The Death Sea was quite unlike its counterparts such as the Starry Sea, the Void Sea and the Ying Sea. The other seas had a fixed geographical location, but the Death Sea was nowhere to be found but seemed to be omnipresent at the same time.

Once powerful third-level immortal soul stage cultivators had reached a certain level of mastery and mustered enough courage, they could attempt to communicate with the Death Sea. Once communications were established, they would bring an instance of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe upon themselves.

The self-initiation of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe meant that there was no other way for the cultivator to defend himself. He could not use destiny-level magic treasures as well as the Power-Destroying Catastrophe was targeting him and him alone. There was no way he could use self-destructive methods to overcome it either.

The arrival of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe there meant that the cultivator could only rely on his own personal mastery to resist it. Failure simply meant he would pass into the void on the spot.

Even if he was able to pass the test of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe, all was not yet fine and dandy. The Five Decays of Heaven and Man would hang around his neck like an albatross, and would cause him great agony. He would have to search for exotic items and other esoteric methods to beat this malady and recover.

If he was able to resist the first instance of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe, it could be said that he had reached the Cardinal Tribulations Beginning Stage.

The meaning of the Cardinal Tribulations Beginning Stage was that this cultivator was able to resist and survive his first instance of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe, or even several more. The process of repeated recovery and the survival after every instance of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe constituted the tough journey of personal development beyond the third-level immortal soul stage. However, he would not be able to go beyond this stage if he was unable to recover by himself and required external help. This cultivator would be able to repeatedly increase his level of mastery by continually plugging the gaps in his masteries and grinding his foundations till the point where he was beyond the Cardinal Tribulations Beginning Stage.

The Cardinal Tribulations Beginning Stage could be said to be a stage, but it was more like a journey or a process. This path could only be taken by those who had reached a certain level of the third-level immortal soul stage and mustered enough courage to do so. Once they had reached a point where they no longer needed external help to recover from the damage done from every instance of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe, they would have officially completed this stage and they would ascend into the Cardinal Tribulations Final Stage.

Even cultivators in the Cardinal Tribulations Final Stage would still suffer from the Power-Destroying Catastrophe and there was still a limit to the number of times they could attempt this

tribulation. However, if they were not completely ravaged in the process, they could recover by themselves in a relatively shorter period of time.

At this point, these cultivators could channel the Power-Destroying Catastrophe themselves as an offensive move. However, they would have to go through the agony of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe themselves in the process of wielding it. This was the reason why the Cardinal Tribulations Final Stage was also known as the Vipralopa Stage.

There were two main criteria to determine whether one was in the Vipralopa Stage. Firstly, this individual would be able to recover by himself after each instance of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe. Secondly, this cultivator would be able to channel the Power-Destroying Catastrophe himself as an attacking move.

This was the reason why cultivators in the Vipralopa Stage could have greatly varying levels of mastery. There were different mantras and foundational standards in the first place, and the number of instances of Power-Destroying Catastrophes that they could take were different as well. Some people could only sustain a handful, but others could survive a lot more.

Between them, without using the Power-Destroying Catastrophe as an offensive move, there were differences in abhijnas and mana strength as well.

Destiny-level magic treasure had different limits for the number of Power-Destroying Catastrophes that they could take. With the help of their masters, they would be able to recover in a certain period of time after experiencing an instance of the Catastrophe. The only thing was that they would be unable to initiate the Catastrophe by themselves. Destiny-level magic items had their own variances in powers and abilities, and when faced with Vipralopa Stage cultivators, victory can only be determined by an actual battle.

It was hard to say whether Vipralopa Stage cultivators would be able to emerge victorious against destiny-level magic treasures using their own abhijnas and mantras and without channeling the Power-Destroying Catastrophe.

However, if the cultivator channeled the Power-Destroying Catastrophe, the victor would therefore be determined by which party was able to survive a greater number of instances.

During the battle of Xiling City, Lin Feng used the black chess piece of the Vipralopa Chess Game to damage the Saintly Celestial Sword and forced back Xin Longsheng.

Xin Longsheng was unsure as to whether Lin Feng was actually in the Vipralopa Stage, or he was just using some special method to channel the Power-Destroying Catastrophe. However, the Saintly Celestial Sword was far too important to Mount Shu, thus he was unwilling to gamble that the sword was able to take a greater number of instances than Lin Feng could.

If that was not the case, if Xin Longsheng himself was in the Vipralopa Stage, he would have fought Lin Feng to the very end to determine who could take more instances of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe.

The Golden Cicada Master was the Golden Cicada Grand Sage of old. Even though his mastery of the Five Tathagata Dharmas of the Compass was incomplete, which was also the reason why he was unwilling to risk experiencing the Alpha Destiny Tribulation with just his Buddhist abilities, his mastery of the Buddhist mantras brought his demonic abilities to another level. He had already ascended beyond the third-level undying demonic soul stage and completed the Alpha Destiny Tribulation with his demonic powers and was currently in the Vipralopa Stage.

The Golden Cicada Master watched the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain and said nothing more as the chirping of the cicadas in the void chained together with such seamless harmony that it felt

as if this was the only sound left in the world – it was just the endless and eternal ear-splitting symphony of cicada chirps.

Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu glanced at each other. "Hongwu, you might have to push forward the original plan."

Zhu Hongwu answered, "Yes, your majesty."

Liang Pan shook his head lightly and said, "If my original body was here, I might have been able to challenge the Golden Cicada Master with the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain by channeling the power of the Ying Sea."

The Fangzhang Celestial Mountain was still connected to the Ying Sea via the golden chains of runes and glyphs. Faced with the incessant chirping of the cicadas, the chains were starting to decay and rust but Liang Pan was holding on through his communication with the Ying Sea.

The endless rays of dull golden light receded a little and transformed into a sphere of light. Between the illusory transformations of space-time, its surface area began to minimize as its power started to concentrate onto a single point. It felt as if the entire power of the Ying Sea was collapsed into the center of the light circle.

The power of a Destiny World was unleashed. The light circle resembled an independent world, and even though it was not as profound as a Destiny-level magic item, its strength was greatly increased as it battled against the demonic powers of the Golden Cicada Master.

"Even though the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, along with the power of the Ying Sea, cannot be considered a destiny-level magic item, it's still more powerful than a third-level immortal soul stage cultivator. If you don't channel the Power-Destroying Catastrophe, you may not be able to break the Celestial Mountain."

Liang Pan smiled faintly and said, "I wonder how many times can

you survive the Power-Destroying Catastrophe?"

There was one more thing that had yet to be spoken, but everybody understood what his words meant. If the Golden Cicada Master used the Power-Destroying Catastrophe as an offensive move, and even if he was victorious, the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain would be completely ruined by the continuous struggle against repeated instances of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe.

Besides the fact that the destruction of this mountain was a regrettable act in itself, this Celestial Mountain was intricately connected with the life of the Ying Sea. In the end, the Golden Cicada Master ran the risk of provoking the entire Ying Sea. If the Ying Sea condensed the entirety of its power to resist him, the Golden Cicada Master would be stuck between a rock and a hard place even if he was in the Vipralopa Stage.

This consequence had been exemplified by the powerful cultivators that ventured into the Ying Sea all those years ago.

The Golden Cicada Master still wore that glittery smile on his face as his voice rang out from between the chirps of the cicadas. "Master Liang, you are a true tactician and you can be considered one of the giants of the era. The Great Zhou Empire has finally flourished and has firmly planted its feet into the history books."

"However, you are too ambitious and too hasty as well. If your original body and the Imperial Palace were here, then you probably would have an eighty-percent chance of pocketing the Penglai Celestial Mountain. Even though you've lost the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, you'll return with something – you would have brought the Great Zhou Empire to another level ever since the War of Buddha Annihilation."

"It's a pity that the Great Zhou Empire wants to swallow all three Celestial Mountains. You're just building castles in the sky."

The Golden Cicada Master chuckled and said, "Lei Yuan, do you want the Penglai Celestial Mountain that's still undiscovered, or

the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain that's right before you?"

A giant gash appeared in the sky as a giant Golden Roc burst into sight. It had wings so huge that it could eclipse the world as golden light sparkled in its cold demonic eyes. This Golden Roc had a dense and formidable aura, and it was the Golden Roc Grand Sage that had assimilated the Hades' Dark Mantra all those years ago inside the Cloud Forest World.

Lin Feng, Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu's eyes turned solemn and serious as they witnessed the grand arrival of the Golden Roc Grand Sage.

Purple energy surged about the golden feathers on his wings, and the rippling of his demonic powers was far greater and terrifying than their last encounter in the Cloud Forest World.

There was another beast by his side. It had a pair of wings on its back and a porcupine-like hide but had the physical appearance of a cross between a tiger and a cow. The evil aura that it emanated made his identity obvious – it was the Qiong Qi Grand Sage.

A formation map glimmered above his head with an intense radiance that seemed to pierce through the heavens as the starlight of the Nine Luminaries sparkled and flickered.

# Chapter 780: The Great Heavenly Wheels

---

Compared to their last encounter inside the Cloud Forest World, the Qiong Qi Grand Sage was a lot stronger than before as well. This was effect of the Celestial Spirit Snow Dew that the Golden Roc Grand Sage gifted him back in the Cloud Forest World. He was originally in the peak of the second-level undying demonic soul stage, and he managed to break through to the next level and was now in the third-level undying demonic soul stage.

The Golden Roc Grand Sage had been in the third-level undying demonic soul stage all along. The Syncretic Star Soul great demon was rippling with mana and power with a strength far more terrifying than before.

Liang Pan opened his mouth first. "Lei Yuan, are you following the orders of the Golden Cicada Master now? Seems like you've given up your ambitions of becoming the demon emperor."

The gigantic golden roc's pair of ice-cold guys started to sparkle with golden light, and had a sharpness that resembled flashes of lightning.

"My ambitions have never wavered. However, that doesn't mean I won't find allies along the way."

The Qiong Qi Grand Sage guffawed and said, "Don't even try to sow discord amongst us. It's like the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain – you, the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders and that bastard Shi Yu are holding down the fort together and forbid demons like us from getting near."

"It's the same with the Penglai Celestial Mountain. You humans don't even have to think about trying. Seems like now it's not just the Penglai Celestial Mountain – you don't seem to be able to hold your grasp on the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain either. Yet, you still want to swallow all three mountains for yourself. Let's see if you have the ability to do so."



"Even if I do wish to have a showdown with the Golden Cicada Master, it will be after I clean the lot of you up."

Liang Pan laughed as he shook his head. "You can't count yourself lucky when I let you escape with your life back in the Cloud Forest World. And here you are, buzzing like a mosquito."

The Qiong Qi Grand Sage grinded his teeth and smiled wryly but said nothing more. The Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formation was completely released at this point as gashes started to appear in the heavens and the Nine Luminaries orbited the universe with an increasingly crushing pressure.

Now that the Qiong Qi Grand Sage was in the third-level Undying Demonic Soul Stage, the Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formation was a lot more powerful than before. Even though the magic treasures required for a perfect set-up was still incomplete, the raw power of the magic formation was far greater than it was back in the Cloud Forest World.

Under the support of the Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formation, he was practically able to sweep all third-level immortal soul stage cultivators. His battle prowess was not that far from the Golden Roc Grand Sage beside him.

However, Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu still paid more attention to the Golden Roc Grand Sage.

Zhu Hongwu's eyebrows twitched as he spoke. "You've already made that step, haven't you, Lei Yuan?"

Liang Pan eyed the Golden Roc Grand Sage and said after a moment of thought. "You need to act now, Hongwu."

Zhu Hongwu nodded his head in acknowledgement and said, "Yes, your majesty."

With that, Zhu Hongwu directly stepped out from the protection of the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain and stood in midair in front of the Golden Cicada Master, the Golden Roc Grand Sage and the

Qiong Qi Grand Sage.

The meaning of his entire lifetime of martial ways seemed to be on full display in images as they started to materialize.

A dozen independent microcosms seemed to appear in the layers of void above his head and connected to form a wheel-shaped figure. There was a statue of a divine Buddha within every tiny world and they were all chanting Buddhist scriptures; a thousand worlds, a thousand divine Buddhas.

The wheel started to rotate and was charged with an unstoppable concept of power. It felt as if this wheel represented natural law itself and anchored down the heavens, and everything that stood in its way would be crushed into pulp.

There was no room for retaliation, no room for doubt.

The Golden Cicada Master shook his head as he witnessed the scene. "You are indeed impressive, Zhu Hongwu. You have incorporated the teachings of the ancient Heaven's Gate Sect, and taken after the lineage of the Emperor Tai. I can even see the Buddhist teachings from the Great Thunderclap Temple. You have taken all three powerful lineages and combined them into one."

"Even though you are still in the second-level immortal soul stage, many third-level immortal soul stage cultivators over the course of history would have been no match for you." The Golden Cicada Master's tone was calm as his eyes remained trained upon Zhu Hongwu.

On the other side, the Qiong Qi Grand Sage looked a lot more solemn. The Qiong Qi was one of the Four Immemorial Evil Beasts, and their existence was also typically superior to most of the other demonic races. He had just ascended to the third-level Undying Demonic Soul Stage not too long ago and his battle prowess was truly formidable.

However, when he looked Zhu Hongwu, he began to develop a

feeling that he would have been no match for this second-level immortal soul stage cultivator in front of him if he did not channel the Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formation.

"It's a pity. If you wish to actually make an impact in this battle, it's not enough – unless you can make the step into the Way Of The Virtual Entity in one step, right here and right now." The Golden Cicada Master was straightforward with his words as he continued, "If you wish to engage into combat with me or the Golden Roc Grand Sage, then I shall take this opportunity to test a theory. In the War of Buddha Annihilation all those years ago, there was a powerful magic treasure in play – I want to see if it's the legendary Great Heavenly Wheels!"

Zhu Hongwu surveyed his adversaries as his eyes shifted from the Golden Cicada Master, to the Golden Roc Grand Sage and finally to the Qiong Qi Grand Sage before he started to laugh.

"The reason why we had to expend so much effort to destroy the Great Thunderclap Temple was because we wanted to save our strength to defeat you. If not, we wouldn't have needed the Formation Bursting Drum from the Great Void Sect to overcome the Vairocana Formation."

Zhu Hongwu began to extend his hands forward. His hands were pale and smooth, but it seemed to contain unimaginable strength. He clenched his right hand into a fist as he raised it into the sky.

This movement seemed nimble and agile, but gave people a dense feeling as if he bore the weight of the world with just one hand.

The void began to twist out of proportion as the power of Zhu Hongwu's fist integrated with the lights that flashed out from the void.

"All beings are born to die, and even Heaven and Earth cannot escape from this insufferable fate. I control the destinies of all things with the celestial wheel in the sky, and I push on forward, I cannot turn back and I cannot be stopped!"

His expressionless voice was like the divine songs of the Gods in the sky as it resonated between the heavens.

There was a dense concentration of light within his palms but nothing material could be seen. However, one could feel that there was a formless light wheel rotating inside.

A concept of power that was so formidable it felt as if it could blanket the skies and control the destinies of all beings. The worlds in existence would tremble at its feet as this overwhelming aura started to permeate the heavens.

The Greater World suddenly seemed to have a will of its own and wanted to change the fates and the life and death of everything.

The destiny-level magic treasure of the ancient Heaven's Gate Sect, the magic treasure that ended the Antiquity Age along with the powerful Heaven's Gate Sect cultivators, and the magic treasure that overthrew the last human emperor from his divine throne – the Great Heavenly Wheels!

Lin Feng nodded his head softly. "Seems like my guesses are right. The Great Heavenly Wheels ended up in the hands of the Great Zhou Empire, into the hands of Zhu Hongwu."

He looked a little closer at the formless light wheel that seemed to incorporate the existence of all the worlds in existence and realized that the statues of divine Buddhas were slowly rising into the air.

"The Great Heavenly Wheels had been heavily damaged before. It appears that Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu have expended a great many treasures and relics from the Great Thunderclap Temple to aid in its recovery. The multiple Buddha statues are all material representations of these relics."

"The relics have been used not just to repair the Imperial Palace – they have been used on the Great Heavenly Wheels as well."

This formidable aura made even the Golden Cicada Master and

the Golden Roc Grand Sage look a little more wary and anxious. Even though this magic treasure was wielded by a second-level immortal soul stage cultivator, it was the Great Heavenly Wheels after all and they could not possibly underestimate its power.

The Great Heavenly Wheels was not like the Imperial Palace, which was still a step away from returning to its former glory. The Great Heavenly Wheels was already back in its peak condition.

This magic treasure was dissimilar to the other magic treasures such as the Imperial Palace and the Immortal Dragon City. Those magic treasures had other capabilities and could even fit people inside; the Great Heavenly Wheels was a weapon of pure destruction.

It was hard to say whether the Great Heavenly Wheels could withstand the pressure of the Power-Destroying Catastrophe. However, its offensive capabilities were far superior to that of most other destiny-level magic treasures.

"What's with all the self-praise?" The Golden Roc Grand Sage chided coldly, "During the Battle of Buddha Annihilation, the Great Heavenly Wheels was not channeled to its maximum possible power to reserve its strength to face the Golden Cicada Master. However, was it not also because you couldn't truly control this magic treasure as well? Was it not also because the magic treasure had not been fully repaired and completed? I'm not blind – I can see that the fact that Great Zhou Empire used a great many resources from the Great Thunderclap Temple to repair your two great destiny-level magic treasures."

"Even so, and even if it's the Great Heavenly Wheels – so what?"

The Golden Roc Grand Sage opened his eyes a little wider as streams of purple light burst out in all directions with an equally violent aura. The spectacle rivaled the powers of the Golden Cicada Master, the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain and even the Great Heavenly Wheels.

Zhu Hongwu nodded his head in approval. "So that's it. Not only have you managed to assimilate the Hades' Dark Mantra, you have also obtained the Hunyuan Demonic Code from Long Ye and the Sirius Grand Sage. This is the reason why you've been able to recover and recuperate from the Five Decays of Heaven and Man so quickly after incurring the Power-Destroying Catastrophe. You're back in your peak condition now with increased strength and power."

"However, no matter how fast you are, how many times have you experienced the Power-Destroying Catastrophe? Once, or twice?"

"Even though you are in the Cardinal Tribulations Beginning Stage, I won't even need the Great Heavenly Wheels to defeat you if I were in the third-level immortal soul stage. With the Great Heavenly Wheels, you don't stand a chance at all." Zhu Hongwu raised the Great Heavenly Wheels into the sky as he stood in midair like a God before he turned towards the Qiong Qi Grand Sage.

Liang Pan heaved a heavy sigh on top of Fangzhang Celestial Mountain. "I intended to reserve this for the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. However, the Golden Cicada Master and the Golden Roc Grand Sage are indeed powerful adversaries and I cannot hold back any longer."

As he spoke, two human shadows flew out from inside the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain.

The Qiong Qi Grand Sage gawked as he recognized one of them who was dressed in priestly clothes and had a long black beard. "So you're officially on board with the Great Zhou Empire, Luofu?"

The Luofu Holy Man smiled and answered, "I will only act when I encounter demons like you."

The Qiong Qi Grand Sage garbled, "Our last encounter at the border between the worlds was just a skirmish. Do you really think you can defeat my Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formation?"

The middle-aged sword cultivator, who was dressed in a sea-blue robe beside the Luofu Holy Man, laughed coldly and interrupted the Qiong Qi's exclamations. "You think you're the only one with a magic formation?"

"We have always intended to ambush you right here. Do you really think you can turn the tables just because you 'took us by surprise'? This spot was chosen by us – why do you think we chose this location?"

The Qiong Qi Grand Sage glanced at the middle-aged sword cultivator. "The Vast Sea Swordmaster..."

The person standing beside the Luofu Holy Man was the leader of the Vast Sea Sword Sect – the Vast Sea Swordmaster. His right hand began to cast a spell as he said, "I may not have the same confidence to battle against the Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formation on land, but here... we are inside the endless oceans."

The tides and waters of the oceans beneath him started to flash a radiant blue as streams of sword Qi shot up into the sky.

The Qiong Qi Grand Sage cackled and said, "Yes, even the most powerful formation of the Vast Sea Sword Sect is being used. Aren't you afraid of losing everything you have? It's going to be very problematic for you to set up your mountain defense formation all over again from scratch."

The Vast Sea Swordmaster answered, "It may not be as mobile as the Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formation, but the Sword Formation of the Endless Oceans can be set up anywhere without much effort as long as there is a sea nearby."

The Qiong Qi Grand Sage's smile turned sinister. "And? This formation can't outmatch the Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formation in the first place, and you're only in the second-level immortal soul stage. How many times do you think you can withstand the assaults of the Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formation?"

The Luofu Holy Man was calm as he said, "With the help of the Vast Sea Swordmaster and his formation, I may be able to take you on. Even though I can't say I will easily emerge victorious, I can confidently say that you will be unable to aid the Golden Roc Grand Sage or the Golden Cicada Master within this period of time."



# Chapter 781: The Penglai Celestial Mountain

---

The Qiong Qi Grand Sage could feel his heart sinking the moment the Luofu Holy Man started to speak as he had already guessed their plan.

With the Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formation, the Qiong Qi Grand Sage was confident that he could defeat the pitiful alliance between the Luofu Holy Man and the Vast Sea Swordmaster. The outcome would be the same even if the Vast Sea Swordmaster was channeling the power of the Sword Formation Of the Endless Oceans.

If the Luofu Holy Man channeled a magic formation of the same level as the Nine Luminaries Heaven-Crushing Formation, then it would be another story altogether.

However, under such circumstances, no matter how confident the Qiong Qi Grand Sage was, there was no way he could achieve victory in a short period of time. It was undeniable that he would be held back by the Luofu Holy Man and the Vast Sea Swordmaster.

On the other side, the outcome of the battle between Zhu Hongwu with his Great Heavenly Wheels against the Golden Roc Grand Sage was also hard to say.

The protective state of the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain also meant that it would be difficult for the Golden Cicada Master to emerge victorious without incurring the Power-Destroying Catastrophe to destroy the mountain.

At this point, the situation seemed a lot more balanced than before. This would undoubtedly cause problems between the three great demons as they were temporarily aligned with each other in the first place. The moment the tides of the battlefield turned against them or they were no longer a hundred percent confident of victory, their brief alliance was bound to be affected.

This was a purely psychological phenomenon and had nothing to do with the intelligences of the three powerful demons. The simple reason was because the Ying Sea was not just occupied by them and the Great Zhou Empire, and third parties could enter the fray at any moment. Even though it was unlikely there was someone powerful enough to actually participate in the battle at this level, it did not mean that there were none.

This was the reason why the seemingly balanced battlefield was in actual fact disadvantageous for the Golden Cicada Master and the other demons.

Still, the arrow had already been nocked and they had no choice but to fire away. Similar to what the Golden Cicada Master said before, if they were to retreat at this moment, they would probably lose the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain along with the Penglai Celestial Mountain to the Great Zhou Empire.

Both sides entered tense standoff. Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu were not too hasty to act as they harbored similar considerations. If they were able to force back the Golden Cicada Master and the other demons without doing anything, that would be the best-case scenario for the Great Zhou Empire. However, if they were to engage in a battle to the death, this would benefit the bystanders waiting for the perfect opportunity to enter the fray.

This was an especially important consideration as Liang Pan was still uncomfortable about Lin Feng's mysterious actions and behavior back in the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

Inside the Two Elements Micro-Dust, Lin Feng suddenly laughed. The Great Zhou Empire had been forced to reveal their entire arsenal, and it was no wonder that they were not afraid to fight in two battlegrounds at the same time. It was apparent that they treated the reappearance of the three mountains as the fight for their continued sovereignty and supremacy.

Lin Feng had already predicted that the Great Zhou Empire were

secretly going after the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain. The Fangzhang Celestial Mountain held substantial importance in Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu's plan – not just for the convenience of searching for the Penglai Celestial Mountain, but also as a powerful force to fall back on.

The Great Zhou Empire was unable to bring the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain out of the Ying Sea and they would never have such a big appetite and risk taking on so many powerful individuals at the same time.

Even so, they had to align themselves with the Luofu Holy Man for help, and there must have had been a mutually beneficial exchange.

The Ying Sea was in the Divine Lands after all. The number of demons that could venture within was limited, and this was the reason why Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu were not afraid of standing off against the Golden Roc Grand Sage and the Golden Cicada Master without the Imperial Palace.

"No matter what, I have to thank Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu," Lin Feng grinned. "Thank you, Golden Cicada Master and the Golden Roc Grand Sage."

During the standoff, Lin Feng had taken the opportunity and departed the battlefield inside the Two Elements Micro-Dust. He followed the guidance of the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl and was far away from the battleground in no time.

With the positional guidance of the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl and when he was following the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain before, Lin Feng was confident that he was very near to the Penglai Celestial Mountain.

After a short period of travelling, the Golden Pearl started to flicker with purple light with an unprecedented radiance.

Lin Feng felt his spirits lift and exclaimed, "Found it!"

He pierced through the layers of clouds and mist and easily overcame a few powerful illusions before he found himself in a patch of black sea. As if it was levitating in midair, sprawling and immense, with raging tides and terrifying tsunamis that surrounded it at the center of the black sea – a celestial mountain!

"That's the Penglai Celestial Mountain?" Lin Feng sized it up. The Penglai Celestial Mountain was a lot smaller than the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain but slightly larger than the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and had a circumference of roughly five thousand miles.

The black-colored waters surrounding the mountain was known in the legends as the Dark Sea, and was also known as the Vast Black Sea. Upon closer inspection, one could see that the immense Dark Sea had boundaries and formed a circular shape in the ocean. From far away, the Dark Sea looked like the midsection of a sphere.

It was visually similar to Mount Yujing and the Yin-Yang Sea.

Even though the color looked physically similar, the nature of the Yin-Yang Sea was completely different from that of the Dark Sea. The black waters of the Yin-Yang Sea were the result of the concentration of energies of extreme Yin, darkness and coldness which materialized to form a spiritual sea of sorts.

The Dark Sea was more like the Void Battleground, a vast and endless ocean that simply existed in the void.

Lin Feng was not too hasty to act. He waited for the circumstances of the deadlock between Liang Pan and the Golden Cicada Master to change.

He waited until both parties had reached the climax of their battle before he carried out the next step of his plan.

Lin Feng knew he had to be swift in his execution. Breaking through the Dark Sea would undoubtedly attract the unwanted attentions of the Golden Cicada Master and Liang Pan and the

others. This was especially so for Liang Pan as he was in control of the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain due to the mystical connections between the three magical mountains. It was highly likely that Liang Pan would be the first to detect the sudden change in the situation over such a short distance.

He withdrew the Two Elements Micro-Dust and the Original Ancient Skyrider's colossal body shimmered into existence once again. He pointed towards the Vast Black Sea and a stream of black-colored liquid that was similar to that of the Dark Sea streamed out of his fingers and surged towards the Vast Black Sea.

In his journey to the Southern regions of the Ying Sea, Lin Feng had defeated and killed a great many space monsters. Space Monsters were unique to the Ying Sea, and they typically attempted to deceive the adventurers into an illusion before they sapped the spiritual energies of the dead cultivators as nutrients for themselves.

Lin Feng managed to discover from the Red Dragon King that the Purple Sea Dragon King had refined the blood of space monsters to break the barrier of the Dark Sea – this stream of black liquid was forged from the blood of space monsters.

This piece of news was reliable as the blood of the space monsters formed a stream of water that pierced through the black waters of the Dark Sea like a hot knife on butter.

It was a spectacular sight. The deep gash appeared between the raging tides of ocean water and opened up a thin hole. The rolling waters were unable to fill up the space as if there was an invisible barrier blocking them.

At the same time, Lin Feng could feel something changing in the battle between Liang Pan and the demons. The violent trembling of spiritual energies abruptly stopped at the same time, as if they were frozen in place.

In the next moment, multiple streaks of hostile energies surged

across the void and concentrated towards the Penglai Celestial Mountain.

The scared barrier of the Vast Black Sea had been broken. It did not seem like much, but it was enough to disturb the flow of spiritual energy around the mountain and immediately exposed the exact location of the Penglai Celestial Mountain as Liang Pan and the others detected it instantaneously.

Lin Feng completely disregarded the arriving parties as he rocketed through the pathway he had just opened and into the Penglai Celestial Mountain.

The composition of the Penglai Celestial Mountain was similar to the Yingzhou and the Fangzhang Celestial Mountains. There were all kinds of spiritual herbs and plants on the surface and the tranquil springs and waterfalls made it appear like a saintly paradise.

However, the most prominent feature of the mountain was a great hall located at the summit of the mountain. Multiple courtyards and pavilions clustered together and resembled a holy royal palace.

At this moment, Lin Feng felt his heart skip a beat as he felt as if something from inside the royal palace was staring at him.

Before he even got near the palace, a ray of purple light shot out and came straight for the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl between the eyes of the Original Ancient Skyrider.

More accurately put, the ray of purple light was targeting Big Luo's soul inside the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl.

Big Luo watched the ray of purple light surge towards him with apprehension. However, he felt a certain warmth that came from the bottom of his heart, and the complicated mix of emotions made him a little disoriented.

Lin Feng could tell that this ray of purple light did not intend to

hurt Big Luo. Instead, it was trying to establish a connection, as if to determine his identity.

He did nothing to stop the incoming ray of purple light but simply stopped in his tracks and absorbed the ray of light into his body.

The ray of purple light entered the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl and circled around inside it before it swept up the Original Ancient Skyrider and the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl and brought them both into the great hall.

Lin Feng's eyes closed into slits once he entered the great hall as he realized that there was an enormous purple-colored light shadow sitting on top of the throne.

It had physical characteristics and features that resembled that of a human, but there were purple light patterns riddled all over his body as if they were etched onto his skin. The hair on his head was a patch of silver-white, and it extended down his body from his spine all the way to his tailbone.

He had a long furry tail that was drifting behind his body and three curved horns grew out from his forehead with mystical glyphs engraved onto every single one.

It was a beast of Hades, just like Big Luo.

There was an unspeakable aura of dominance surrounding this mystical beast, as if it was born to be a dictator of Heaven and Earth and all beings within.

It was not even a real person – the purple light shadow was enough to petrify onlookers with such an overbearing aura.

Lin Feng nodded his head slowly. "One of the three most powerful demons in the history of the Grand Celestial World, the most powerful being of the Modern Age and a demonic emperor that once reigned supreme – the Hades Emperor, the Heavenly Sea Hades. Impressive, impressive."

By observing the light shadow, Lin Feng immediately understood that the Penglai Celestial Mountain had ended up in the hands of the Hades Emperor a few thousand years ago, way before the Great Zhou Empire had even set foot upon the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain.

However, this secret was only known to the Hades Emperor and unbeknownst to the outside world and he never leaked a single ounce of information in his lifetime. When he met his demise in the two war of the worlds, he ended up carrying this secret into the grave.

The eyes of the Hades Emperor flashed with purple radiance as he stared at the Original Ancient Skyrider and the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl before his gaze finally landed upon Big Luo.

This light shadow did not have an independent will or intelligence, but Big Luo felt as if the mouth of the light shadow curled into a faint smile.

Lin Feng extended his consciousness into the purple light shadow. "No remnant soul memories, no essence of blood and no trace of the demonic true spirit... this is purely a remnant of his demonic powers. Under such circumstances, no matter how powerful he was before he died, he cannot return to life."

Once he was sure it was safe, Lin Feng decided to send the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl directly into the Hades Emperor's light shadow.

In the next moment, purple light burst out and lit up the entire great hall as countless glyphs flowing with purple light blanketed the entire Penglai Celestial Mountain.

However, a voice rang out from behind him on the mountain. "Indeed – the Penglai Celestial Mountain was in the hands of the Hades Emperor all along."

The grey-clothed young monk appeared in the space above the



great hall – it was the Golden Cicada Master.

Lin Feng watched him in silence. The Golden Cicada Master had an equally calm expression as he retrieved a jade earring-like object with his right hand. "Well met, leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. This must be a physical spell body of yours?"

"I had the luck of excavating somewhere that belonged to the Hades' Emperor and found this jade earring inside. This is the reason why I am faster than Liang Pan, even though he has the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain."

"However, time is of the essence. Liang Pan and the Golden Roc Grand Sage and the others must be arriving pretty soon, and that means I have no time to chat idly with you. If I let you assimilate and control the Penglai Celestial Mountain, it will be difficult for me to take it from you in a short period of time. I guess I have to make it quick, so do forgive me if I end up offending you in some way."

# Chapter 782: The Shell-Shocked Golden Cicada Master

---

Lin Feng's Original Ancient Skyrider flew out of the great hall and stood in front of the Golden Cicada Master. Suddenly, he started to laugh as he said, "This is the second time we're meeting each other, is it not?"

The Golden Cicada Master returned the smile and said, "The last time we met, it was my avatar the Vairocana Monk and your original body. Today, it's my original body with your spell body. Our fates are clearly intertwined together – perhaps we may have a proper meeting in the future."

Lin Feng nodded his head in agreement. "If my estimations are correct, besides the Vairocana Sutra, you have collected the other mantras of the Five Tathagata Dharmas of the compass. You have an avatar for every one of the Dharmas, am I right?"

"This is just a cheap trick in order to further my understanding of the Buddhist teachings," the Golden Cicada Master shook his head and sighed.

Lin Feng chuckled and said, "Nonsense. A demon adept at the Buddhist mantras – you have discovered and achieved what nobody in history even thought of."

The Golden Cicada Master was unblinking as he smiled again. "Before the grace of the Buddha, I was but a ignorant cicada chirping away in the fall of autumn. The teachings of the Buddha made me into everything that I am today – from the very first step I took in the practice of demonic powers, all the way from the demonic commander stage to the undying demonic soul stage, and till now."

"My heart has always been with the Buddha. I am very glad that I managed to realize my dreams those few thousand years ago."

Lin Feng was wearing a straight face but thoughts were already racing in his head. "It is actually him. The Golden Cicada Grand Sage was infamous during the Antiquity Age, and managed to survive into the Middle Ages. However, he suddenly vanished and disappeared without a trace during the end of the Middle Ages. Not many people could even fathom the possibility that the Golden Cicada Grand Sage of old has turned into the Golden Cicada Master of today."

"The Golden Cicada Grand Sage had quite a reputation in the Grand Celestial World all those years ago. Besides the fact that he was extremely powerful, his identity and background was a mystery to all. Is it possible that he was just a tiny insect, and anointed by the Buddha?"

As he was thinking, Lin Feng surveyed his surroundings and chuckled. "Good move."

The Golden Cicada Master laughed together with him as the chirps of cicadas rang out from between Heaven and Earth. It was a crescendo – the chirps started off softly and gently but quickly grew into a ear-splitting cacophony.

The Original Ancient Skyrider Spell Body started to decay with immediate effect.

The Golden Cicada Master could tell that even though the Original Ancient Skyrider was just Lin Feng's Spell Body, it possessed great battle prowess. During the battle of Xiling City, Lin Feng unleashed the power of the Holy Light of Creation, and even though a spell body was different from an avatar, spell bodies were still able to channel the power of the Holy Light of Creation.

In that case, the power of the Original Ancient Skyrider would be stronger than before. Under such circumstances and in order to end the battle as quickly as possible, he resorted to using his own demonic mantras instead of Buddhist ones.

Even though he had yet to trigger the Power-Destroying

Catastrophe, he was already in the Cardinal Tribulations Final Stage – the Vipralopa Stage – and the incredible powers of his abhijnas were frightening forces to be reckoned with.

In an instant, Lin Feng started to feel the same aura similar to that of the Imperial Palace, the Saintly Celestial Sword and the Immortal Dragon City.

Two rays of divine light surged out of the Original Ancient Skyrider's body. One was white and the other was black as the two rays of light trail-blazed across the void to create an independent world that barricaded the chirping symphony of the cicadas outside.

However, the incessant chirping of the cicadas continued to erode the barrier powers of Lin Feng's Holy Light of Creation.

"If you continue with the use of the Holy Light of Creation, I'm afraid this spell body of yours will be expended in no time," the Golden Cicada Master grinned, "However, that's still too long for me. Time waits for no man."

As he spoke, the chirping of the cicadas grew even louder as the void trembled above them. A giant light shadow of a cicada shimmered into vision above the Penglai Celestial Mountain and eclipsed the Sun as it covered the entire mountain like a dome.

Lin Feng's brows furrowed a little as he began to cast the Original Heaven and Earth Splitting Mantra. The incredible force that could separate the grounds beneath their feet continued to support the Holy Light Of Creation to isolate the cicada chirps.

However, the space and void around him twisted and rippled out of proportion and it seemed like Lin Feng was at a huge disadvantage.

Due to the unique effects of the Original Heaven and Earth Splitting Mantra, the Original Ancient Skyrider was made differently from other spell bodies and was unafraid of being

grinded down by others.

The Golden Cicada Master increased the strength of his spell and was close to breaking the upper limit of the Original Ancient Skyrider.

Even though the spell body could channel the Holy Light of Creation, it was far inferior to the power of his original body.

A thought flickered in Lin Feng's head as the Original Ancient Skyrider placed his palms together and rows of black and white runes and characters glimmered in the void above him and transformed into tiny specks of dust.

There were a total of eighteen specks of dust, and they all exploded outwards with crackling booms as enormous volumes of energy were released. They disintegrated into boundless rays of light and every spot of dust seemed like an independent world.

In that moment, it felt as if heaven and earth had lost all color and liveliness.

This was the same for the people that were still travelling towards the Penglai Celestial Mountain. Liang Pan, Zhu Hongwu and the Golden Roc Grand Sage immediately felt the world change around them as if only their senses of hearing and of sight were still working.

One could only hear the continuous chirping of the cicadas, and one could only see the blinding brilliance of light.

In the next moment, the light rays started to dim and the cicada chirping softened – however, the chirping sounds returned with a vengeance and became ever stronger!

The Golden Cicada Master chuckled with a mocking sigh and said, "What a powerful abhijna. How many spells does your spell body actually carry? If it's not an infinite number, it's still not enough."

Lin Feng clasped his palms together and laughed. "You are indeed

a force to be reckoned with, Golden Cicada Grand Sage. It will be such a glorious thing to do if we ever get to sit down and share our knowledge of the world with one another."

The Golden Cicada Master grinned and replied, "Anytime – I will be waiting for you on top of the Penglai Celestial Mountain for your grand arrival."

Lin Feng stared into his eyes with a roguish smile. "You've gotten it upside down."

"Eh?" The Golden Cicada Master felt his heart skip a beat as something seemed off. In the next moment, a tiny and unimpressive jade stone appeared in the void in front of the Original Ancient Skyrider.

The Golden Cicada Master reacted as quickly as he could and raised the power of his cicada chirps to the highest possible level. The light shadow of the giant cicada above his head flapped its tremendous wings and came crashing down upon the Penglai Celestial Mountain!

However, at this very moment, the crystal-like jade began to emanate a formless stream of mana – there was no light, no air of energy, and it made no sound at all.

This stream of mana enveloped the Golden Cicada Master and the Original Ancient Skyrider in an instant and both of them vanished into thin air.

The Penglai Celestial Mountain fell back into its original tranquility once again. The cicada chirps could no longer be heard as the giant cicada, along with the Golden Cicada Master and the Original Ancient Skyrider, were nowhere to be seen. It felt as if they had never been here in the first place.

It even felt as if the battle that just occurred never took place, as if the space above the Penglai Celestial Mountain had never been tainted by the Original Ancient Skyrider or the Golden Cicada

Master.

"This place is..." the Golden Cicada Master suddenly found himself in a patch of plains and forests under a dusky sky that seemed familiar yet unfamiliar at the same time. "...I've been here before. This is one of the plains inside the Barren Expanses!"

The Golden Cicada had been through rain and shine over thousands and thousands of years, ever since the Antiquity Age all the way till now. He was already in the Vipralopa Stage and had studied the teachings of the Buddha for a long time and his mind was in a kind of unassailable state. Despite all this, he was rendered speechless at this very moment.

Even when he was faced with Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu of the Great Zhou Empire, the entity that led the charge against the Great Thunderclap Temple and eventually laid it to ruin, the Golden Cicada Master had been calm throughout it all and never once showed a trace of anger or fury.

However, he started to feel his blood boil in his veins and there was no way he could calm himself down.

Even if someone had beaten or defeated him, injured him or even hurt him to the point where he died on the spot, or if someone had captured him alive, he would not have been so shaken.

Just one of Lin Feng's physical spell body, whose spell-power and whatnot were clearly far inferior to his own, could teleport him from the Ying Sea, a place where there were no inter-world tunnels, directly into the Barren Expanses!

Throughout the entire process, he was unhurt and felt no forceful streams of mana whatsoever. Nobody was holding down his masteries, and neither were his powers being drained away. However, there was nothing he could do and he did not even have a chance to react!

This feeling was akin to a wolf lunging at a helpless rabbit, and

becoming blinded in the next moment before the wolf found itself in a place a million miles away from where it was just a second ago. Even though the wolf was uninjured, how could he not feel intense trepidation at what just transpired?

Lin Feng grinned and said, "The Fangzhang Celestial Mountain cannot leave the Ying Sea, so there is no way I can use the same trick on them. Zhu Hongwu should thank you, the Golden Cicada Master as I originally intended to use this trick on him and the Great Heavenly Wheels."

As he spoke, the Original Ancient Skyrider appeared to be slowing down, but it was simply minimizing on the spot and instantaneously vanished into thin air as it returned to the Penglai Celestial Mountain in the blink of an eye.

All this happened in a second's time. The Golden Cicada Master wanted to suppress the Original Ancient Skyrider but immediately realized that the Original Ancient Skyrider had a mystical and inexplicable connection with that strange and simple-looking jade stone and he was obstructed for just that tiny moment.

And it was in that tiny moment that the Original Ancient Skyrider was back inside the Ying Sea.

"Travelling between worlds without any inter-world passages?!" The Golden Cicada Master was truly speechless and shell-shocked as he watched Lin Feng disappear. He recovered after a long while as he shook his head continuously and forced out a faint laugh.

"Leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, what a fantastic move."

After his initial astonishment, the Golden Cicada Master finally realized what had happened. The Original Ancient Skyrider was back in the exact same spot on the Penglai Celestial Mountain, so a teleportation spell was probably used. They departed from the Penglai Mountain and he returned to the mountain at the exact same spot; this was not the same as free movement between the two worlds.



Even so, the Golden Cicada Master was still unable to fathom the real principle behind what just happened.

There was one point he was confident of, however. If he were to head back towards the inter-world passage and back into the Divine Lands, and then towards the Ying Sea and then to the Penglai Celestial Mountain, there was no way he could reach his destination in time even though he was a Vipralopa Stage cultivator.

The situation inside the Penglai Celestial Mountain would have concluded long before he even returned to the mountain and there would be nothing left for him to do.

The Golden Cicada Master heaved a defeated sigh and muttered under his breath, "Leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders... Truly mysterious and unpredictable."

Once he returned to the Penglai Celestial Mountain, Lin Feng glanced at the Barrier-Breaking Stone and heaved a similar sigh as well. The Golden Cicada Master did just take a bullet for Zhu Hongwu and the Great Heavenly Wheels after all. The Barrier-Breaking Stone could not be used again in such a short period of time after teleporting away such a powerful Vipralopa Stage individual, and would only be functional again after a period of recuperation.

The destination of the teleportation spell was completely down to chance. If he the Barrier-Breaking Stone had teleported the Golden Cicada Master somewhere close to the East Sea of the Divine Lands, then he could come back in no time at all.

Products from the System was unreliable after all. Still, if they were used appropriately at the right time and with the right opportunity, they could achieve unimaginable effects.

The act of teleporting himself back to the same place also required preparation and meticulousness. If he used the stone properly, like he just did, then all would be fine and dandy.

However, if he mde a mistake, he would have found himself somewhere far away as well.

Lin Feng returned the Barrier-Breaking Stone into his pockets and raised his head towards the horizon. The shadowy outline of the gargantuan Fangzhang Celestial Mountain had already emerged from the equator.

# Chapter 783: Penglai versus Fangzhang!

---

Only a tiny period of time had passed from the moment the Golden Cicada Master appeared to the end when he was teleported by Lin Feng into the Barren Expanses.

The Golden Cicada Master used the jade earring he had obtained from the Hades Emperor to get a head start and reached the Penglai Celestial Mountain before Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu did.

However, it was just a tiny head start as Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu caught up in no time with the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain.

"Eh? Where's the Golden Cicada Master?" Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu felt the blood rushing in their veins as they saw the celestial mountain they had been dreaming off for so long. However, they settled down quickly, swept the mountain with their eyes and immediately discovered that the Golden Cicada Master was nowhere to be seen.

As they came into contact with the Original Ancient Sky rider, the cultivators of the Great Zhou Empire fell into silence.

This was not because Lin Feng's appearance was a surprise to them. Liang Pan and the others had been wary of this possibility all along, but they had to play the hand they were dealt as the pressure from the Golden Cicada Master, the Golden Roc Grand Sage and the Qiong Qi Grand Sage forced them to reveal their entire arsenal.

The moment Lin Feng showed himself, their doubts and suspicions were alleviated.

However, the mysterious disappearance of the Golden Cicada Master gave them a new wave of doubts.

They had felt the aftershocks of the battle between Lin Feng and the Golden Cicada Master from far away, and they could even tell that the Golden Cicada Master had the clear advantage.

In the next moment, the battle was over and the Golden Cicada Master vanished while Lin Feng's spell body was still at the same spot. The Golden Cicada Master had been unable to vanquish Lin Feng's spell body.

However, it was quite improbable that Lin Feng's Original Ancient Skyrider was able to turn the tables and ended up defeating the Golden Cicada Master instead.

No matter at which angle they perceived the puzzle from, the Original Ancient Skyrider could not possibly have the ability to do so. Furthermore, if the Original Ancient Skyrider was somehow able to overcome the Golden Cicada Master, it was highly unlikely that a Vipralopa Stage great demon from the Antiquity Age did not leave a single trace behind. His 'instant defeat' seemed as if he had never set foot on the Penglai Celestial Mountain at all.

A past encounter started to surface in their minds. Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu recalled the time when Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar used the Barrier-Breaking Stone to escape from their grasp.

However, this was not consistent with the scene before them either. By using the Barrier-Breaking Stone, it was possible for the Original Ancient Skyrider to escape from under the nose of the Golden Cicada Master – but that did not explain the disappearance of the Golden Cicada Master and presented yet another unimaginable possibility.

The relatively more believable conclusion was that Lin Feng had aligned himself with the Golden Cicada Master!

Even though they were not present during the battle, according to Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu's deductions of the outcome based on the ripples of manana demonic powers, it was highly unlikely that the Original Ancient Skyrider was able to defeat the Golden Cicada Master. However, Lin Feng had always been mysterious and frequently hid his true powers. It was possible that he could have used some special technique to hold the Golden Cicada Master back

and prevent him from achieving a quick victory.

In that case, in order to fend off the arrival of the Great Zhou Empire and the Golden Roc Grand Sage, the Golden Cicada Master could have proposed an agreement to Lin Feng – Lin Feng would help him gain control of the Penglai Celestial Mountain in exchange for certain benefits.

The great demon was nowhere to be seen, and it was possible that he was deep inside the mountain and was halfway through assimilating it.

Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu were deeply troubled by the possibility of Lin Feng working together with the Golden Cicada Master.

Liang Pan was connected with the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, and after quietly sensing the mystical connections between the three mountains, his face turned even more solemn than before. "The Golden Cicada Master is not on the mountain!"

The Penglai Celestial Mountain was incomparable to a powerful demon like the Golden Cicada Master. If he had assimilated the mountain, ripples and aftershocks were inevitable and would even attract the attention of the entire Ying Sea.

"What is going on? It can't be possible that the Golden Cicada Master tucked tail and ran and gave up the Penglai Celestial Mountain," The Vast Sea Swordmaster was equally doubtful and apprehensive. "Unless, the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders bought the withdrawal of the Golden Cicada Master in exchange for a great price. Then again, how outrageous must this value be for him to give up the Penglai Celestial Mountain?"

Liang Pan shook his head slowly. "This is not consistent with Lin Feng's personality. He is open to agreements, but he will never settle it so simply. This possibility is highly unlikely."

The Vast Sea Swordmaster's brows furrowed into a bunch. "But it

can't be possible that he used just a physical spell body to defeat the Golden Cicada Master in an instant."

Liang Pan could feel his head start to throb.

The situation was still unclear, and the group of Great Zhou Empire cultivators were already unsure of where they stood and what they should do.

Lin Feng hovered above the Penglai Celestial Mountain and chuckled to himself as he witnessed their discussion. He could feel that the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl was about to be completely fused with the light shadow of the Hades Emperor.

The Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl had taken in Big Luo's soul and established a connection with him, but Lin Feng had assimilated and nurtured the pearl since a long time ago, therefore he was still the real controller of the Golden Pearl.

He started to feel that there were nine streams of divine energies spiraling around the Penglai Celestial Mountain. The streams of energies were pure and elegant as they concentrated towards the great hall on top of the mountain.

Even though the Hades Emperor had already passed away, he built a convenient stepping stone for Lin Feng and the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl to assimilate the mountain and made the process relatively simpler and much swifter.

It was this moment of hesitation from Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu that provided just enough time for the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl to integrate completely with the light shadow of the Hades Emperor and fully absorbed the nine divine energies of the mountain.

Lin Feng felt his eyes light up and the Penglai Celestial Mountain seemed to become a part of his own body, just like his arms and legs.

What was more important was the fact that Lin Feng could feel

the deep connection between him and the Ying Sea. The perilous ocean that was riddled with powerful illusions and other dangers suddenly felt like the backyard of his house and could move around freely.

The nine streams of colorful energies transformed into giant rainbows as they connected with Heaven and Earth and shook up the entire Ying Sea.

Liang Pan's eyes narrowed as he witnessed the spectacle and said, "It doesn't matter what happened anymore. We can't wait any longer – we are losing our grasp on the Penglai Celestial Mountain!"

Zhu Hongwu lowered his voice and said, "Do not worry, your majesty. The Penglai Celestial Mountain will belong to us."

As he spoke, he stepped out of the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain and into the void as he transformed into a shooting star and surged towards the Penglai Celestial Mountain.

The Fangzhang Celestial Mountain broke through the layers of space and crashed down towards the Penglai Celestial Mountain as well.

The dull-golden chains began to extend into the void once again. They drew upon the powers of the Ying Sea as the multiple chains extended towards the nine rainbows that connected the Penglai Celestial Mountain with the Ying Sea.

Lin Feng minimized the Original Ancient Skyrider's body mass and entered the great hall of the Penglai Celestial Mountain. The light shadow of the Hades Emperor had disappeared, and only the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl was left.

The only difference was that the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl was originally the size of an adult's fist, but was now more than twice as large.

Purple light rays permeated from the pearl like layers of mist that

circulated around the great hall and established an intimate connection with the other living things on the mountain.

Uncountable black and white runes and characters drifted around inside the purple light mist.

Lin Feng tapped the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl and it started to tremble violently as the purple radiances receded. However, the powers did not grow weaker with the receding lights but simply became more concentrated.

The spherical pearl floated up to the top of the great hall as the entirety of its strength was injected into the ceiling; it felt as if the golden pearl was now part of the great hall as it fixed itself in place.

The purple energy around the great hall even connected with Lin Feng's Original Ancient Skyrider spell body.

Lin Feng chuckled as he watched the ferocious arrival of Zhu Hongwu and the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain. With a single thought, the nine streams of divine energy spiraling the mountain transformed into a nine-colored divine light and exploded outwards.

Nine Energies True Sky Divine Light!

A glorious ray of nine-colored divine light directly destroyed the dull-golden chains that connected the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain to the Ying Sea like a knife dicing cheese and a sharp blade chopping on hair.

"The Three Mountains of the Ying Sea all have their different battle capabilities," Lin Feng's voice rang out from between the heavens. "Even though they each have their own offensive and defensive moves, the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain is relatively better at defense and applying pressure."

"The Nameless Ancient Formation of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain is more adept at confusing its enemies, and the illusions



on top of the mountain are considered some of the most powerful and mutable ones."

"However, in terms of offensive capabilities, there is no doubt that my Penglai Celestial Mountain is most superior!"

Another pillar of the formidable nine-colored divine light burst out of the great hall and smashed into the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain. The violent force of the strike continually pushed back the colossal Fangzhang Celestial Mountain.

Liang Pan's face darkened as more and more dull-golden chains extended out of the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain. It drew upon the powers of the Ying Sea as it charged up a ray of the Heart of the Sky Fangzhang Celestial Light to clash with the Nine Energies True Sky Divine Light to stop his backward movement.

"Oh? You want to compare offensive capabilities? Can you outmatch the Great Heavenly Wheels?" Zhu Hongwu's figure appeared in the sky above the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain as he muttered coldly, "Lin Feng, if your original body was here you might have a chance to survive. But your spell body – stop dreaming!"

The formless wheels started to spin within his palms again as he slammed them down upon the Penglai Celestial Mountain with a heaven-crushing force as everything seemed to crumble along with it.

The immense energy of the wheels riled up the Dark Sea around the Penglai Celestial Mountain as the black waves churned to block the incoming onslaught.

However, the explosive power of the Great Heavenly Wheels repeatedly pushed back the black waters and ripped apart the thick layers of the Dark Sea like it was ripping apart tissue paper.

The tides of the Dark Sea continued to roll as the sky around the Ying Sea grew ever so gloomy – the entire Ying Sea had been

triggered by the explosive nature of the Great Heavenly Wheels, and the natural defense mechanisms of the Ying Sea worked with the Dark Sea against Zhu Hongwu and the Great Heavenly Wheels in an attempt to suppress them.

Zhu Hongwu hovered in midair fearlessly like a God with the Great Heavenly Wheels in his hands. He did not retreat a single step as he clashed directly with the forces of the Ying Sea.

Liang Pan channeled the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain to challenge Lin Feng's Penglai Celestial Mountain for the control of the gargantuan strength of the Ying Sea world. The obstructions caused by the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain resulted in reduced support and maintenance of the Dark Sea. Once the pressure on the Great Heavenly Wheels was reduced, Zhu Hongwu immediately broke open the Dark Sea and bore down upon the Penglai Celestial Mountain.

The Golden Roc Grand Sage and the Qiong Qi Grand Sage appeared at the same time in the far end of the horizon as they glared at the two celestial mountains.

Zhu Hongwu waved the Great Heavenly Wheels in the air once again as he lunged towards the Penglai Celestial Mountain.

Lin Feng's voice suddenly rang out from inside the mountain. "Go and accompany the Golden Cicada Master."

Zhu Hongwu frowned at his words as his movement slowed in anticipation of Lin Feng's hidden tactics.

In the next moment, the felt a violent tremble from the Penglai Celestial Mountain as the nine-colored divine light enveloped the mountain – and the Penglai Celestial Mountain flew in to the sky and crashed towards the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain!

Lin Feng smiled wolfishly and said, "Let's lose both mountains together."

Liang Pan's expression turned grave and sullen as the Vast Sea

Swordmaster started to curse, "He's crazy! What a crazy bastard! He loved to pull this trick with Mount Yujing, and now he's doing the same with the Penglai Celestial Mountain?"

Before anything else could happen, the Penglai Celestial Mountain crashed into the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain!

# Chapter 784: The Great Zhou Empire In Distress

---

Initially, Liang Pan was not too concerned about Lin Feng's bizarre attempt at using the Penglai Celestial Mountain to crash against the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain as they were both aware that the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain had the best defensive abilities amongst the three mountains.

However, Liang Pan noticed that Lin Feng chose a very specific target – he came straight for the group of dragon illusions on the top of the mountain and Liang Pan's face changed.

Two gargantuan mountains that were so huge they could pass as a tiny island, collided together!

The first consequence was the complete scattering and dissipation of the dragon illusions at the top of the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, while the dull-golden radiance mixed together with the nine-colored divine light. The sky above the mountains became murky as it was tainted with a strange combination of colors.

The entire southern region of the Ying Sea felt like a giant painting that was being stretched and twisted by somebody.

An immeasurable number of illusions were eradicated as a comparable number of space monsters residing in the Ying Sea were pulverized into dust. Herbs and spiritual plants perished as several cultivators moving around inside the Ying Sea lost their lives as well.

On top of the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, Liang Pan and the other Great Zhou Empire cultivators and the other beings that did not belong to the mountain were shaken off like fleas from a layer of fur.

Liang Pan himself was severely injured. However, what made

him even more grievous was the fact that he had lost his connection with the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain!

Zhu Hongwu was a step too slow as he failed to stop the star-like advance of the Penglai Celestial Mountain. However, he managed to channel the Great Heavenly Wheels and bore down upon the nine-colored divine light before he shattered the divine light rays into pieces.

Lin Feng's Original Ancient Skyrider was more powerful than Liang Pan's avatar, but he had to clash with the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain and take a direct hit from the Great Heavenly Wheels and ended up falling off the mountain as well; like Liang Pan, Lin Feng lost his connection to the Penglai Celestial Mountain.

Before he was jolted out of the great hall, he turned back and glanced at the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl one last time before he laughed heartily and inserted the Barrier-Breaking Stone amongst other magic treasures into the pearl – then the tremendous force of the collision threw him off the mountain.

Lin Feng's never intended to emerge victorious from this head-on collision. With Zhu Hongwu and the Great Heavenly Wheels by his side, the Penglai Celestial Mountain was outgunned and he still had to account for the Golden Roc Grand Sage and the Qiong Qi Grand Sage who were waiting for the prime opportunity at the side.

The plan he had in mind all along was to pay the price of the Penglai Celestial Mountain to take away the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain from Liang Pan!

"I don't want the Penglai Celestial Mountain anymore – don't think you can keep the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain either."

The Golden Roc Grand Sage and the Qiong Qi Grand Sage were slightly taken aback by what just transpired. However, they had considered the possibility of Lin Feng doing something suicidal

under the immense pressure of their besiegement. In the next moment, they found their opportunity and lunged towards the Penglai Celestial Mountain.

On the other side, Liang Pan and his men attempted to return onto the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain.

Zhu Hongwu's eyes never left Lin Feng's Original Ancient Skyrider. His eyes radiated with ice and fire as he raised the Great Heavenly Wheels for yet another strike!

Lin Feng chuckled as he watched Zhu Hongwu. "Nobody has ever see a collision of the mountains of the Ying Sea. However, from the memories of the Hades Emperor's light shadow, I discovered that the great demon had attempted to tame the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain using the very same method when he was still alive."

"As for the outcome... Heh!"

The ripples and aftershocks of the collision were subsiding as the heaven and earth gradually returned to tranquility and their original calmness.

However, in the next instant, the tides started to churn as the white clouds above the Ying Sea began to scatter and dissipate. Towers of ocean water spiraled up into the sky as the layers of spatial illusions became intertwined with each other.

A tsunami that was charged with vast amounts of spiritual energy covered half the sky as the entire southern region of the Ying Sea trembled – it was the Illusory Sea Tide!

The violent collision between the Penglai and the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain directly incurred the Illusory Sea Tide, which was not due for another generation inside the Southern region of the Ying Sea!

Liang Pan and the others never expected this to happen and a haze of terror came over them all as they had lost the protection of the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain. Every single one of them ended

up stranded in the raging maelstrom like tiny dinghies that could flip over and sink at any time. Even the third-level immortal soul stage Luofu Holy Man felt mired in a precarious situation.

The Golden Roc and the Qiong Qi Grand Sage found themselves in a slightly better situation. However, faced with turbulent and unforgiving tides of the Ying Sea, they had no way of breaking through and ascending the celestial mountains. All they could do was watch as the Celestial Mountain that came so close into their grasp start to slip further and further away.

Multiple powerful and mysterious spatial illusions were mixed into the Illusory Sea Tides as they appeared and popped like air bubbles on the ocean surface.

What were originally forces that were only meant to confuse and deceive people were now completely converted into explosive spiritual energies that made the stormy tides all the more ferocious. The seething waters of the Ying Sea swept over anything that stood in their paths.

Due to the fact that it was only an Illusory Sea Tide that was triggered by the Fangzhang and the Penglai Celestial Mountain, it did not extend to the entire Ying Sea and was restricted to this particular region. However, the destructiveness was a lot more fearsome and terrifying than usual.

The Penglai and the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain were quickly swallowed by the raging tides and disappeared underneath. The two celestial mountains returned into hiding from the sudden occurrence of the Illusory Sea Tide – if they were to be found, the adventurers had to wait for the next reappearance of the three mountains.

The Golden Roc and the Qiong Qi Grand Sage were filled with regret and exasperation. If they had not been fishing for profit and waited at the side, and instead aligned themselves with the Great Zhou Empire against Lin Feng and the Penglai Celestial Mountain,

they would have never given Lin Feng the opportunity to throw the Penglai Mountain against the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain.

Over at the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, the Immortal Dragon City, the Imperial City and Mount Yujing were still holding down the fort and their chances were miniscule. All they could do now was watch as the Penglai and Fangzhang Celestial Mountains descended beneath the waves of the Illusory Sea Tide. This meant that the two of them were destined to return empty-handed from their venture into the Ying Sea this time around.

Compared to the exasperation of the Golden Roc and the Qiong Qi Grand Sage, the Great Zhou Empire's distress was a lot more acute.

The Golden Roc and the Qiong Qi Grand Sage had never possessed the Penglai Celestial Mountain and had simply perceived it in front of their eyes. However, the Great Zhou Empire had the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain firmly in their hands but lost it an instant from right under their nose – this was more frustrating and generated resentment more than anything.

During the previous appearance of the Three Mountains of the Ying Sea, the Great Zhou Empire had secretly taken control of the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain. This was also one of the reasons why they were able to expand their sovereignty with such influence and efficiency. This also gave them an innate advantage in the current episode of the Three Mountains, and they could be said to have half the initiative of the entire battlefield.

With Lin Feng's head-on collision, not only did the Great Zhou Empire fail to obtain the Penglai Mountain, they even threw away the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain that was already in their backyard!

Despite Liang Pan's stability of mind, he glared at Lin Feng's Original Ancient Sky rider spell body with fire bursting out of his eyes and was speechless for a long moment.



Zhu Hongwu wasted no words and time as he wielded the Great Heavenly Wheels for yet another round at Lin Feng. He completely disregarded the Illusory Sea Tides in front of him in his desperate attempt at vengeance.

The Original Ancient Skyriders flashed a smile as he stopped all resistance of the Illusory Sea Tide and allowed himself to descend into the depths of the maelstrom and he was pulverized into dust instantaneously.

He laughed again at Zhu Hongwu before he vanished under the waters as he pointed in the direction behind Zhu Hongwu.

Liang Pan's first-level immortal soul stage avatar, the second-level immortal soul stage Vast Sea Swordmaster and the other Great Zhou Empire's cultivators which even included some princes, were struggling for their lives inside the Illusory Sea Tides.

The third-level immortal soul stage Luofu Holy Man was only able to protect himself and there was no way he could extend aid to the rest of the company. All he could do was watch as a few relatively weaker cultivators were swallowed by the monstrous ocean.

Zhu Hongwu fumed as he watched the final moments of the Original Ancient Skyriders before it was crushed by the waves. "Lin... Feng!"

He withdrew the Great Heavenly Wheels and rushed to the aid of the Liang Pan, the Vast Sea Swordmaster and the others. Using the Great Heavenly Wheels, he assisted his comrades in their resistance against the Illusory Sea Tide and brought everyone out of the dire situation.

The colossal tides extended throughout the entire Southern Region of the Ying Sea. However, the waters were the most violent at the spot of the collision. Places more distant from the epicenter experienced relatively weaker tides, and at the end, the tides could

no longer compare to the normal ones that permeated the Ying Sea from day to day.

Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu could only heave a sigh of relief as they narrowly escaped with their lives. The Golden Roc and the Qiong Qi Grand Sage went their separate ways as well and had disappeared since a long time ago.

"We failed to obtain the Penglai Celestial Mountain and lost the Fangzhang Mountain in the process. Only the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain is lost – we can't let this opportunity slip between our fingers again."

Liang Pan was slowly settling down from the emotional outburst.

His original ambition was to take control of all three Celestial Mountains. He had even mobilized his entire Empire in this endeavor and bargained and gambled with the sovereignty of his nation.

In the end, the fate of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was still uncertain as the Celestial Sect of Wonders and the Great Qin Empire were still there and they were still in a deadlock. They had greater confidence with the Penglai Mountain, but that target failed to come true in the end. What gave them a bigger headache was the fact that the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, which they had controlled for so many years, was lost in the process!

The other human parties and adventurers that were in the Ying Sea would probably just go home empty-handed, and with limited losses as well. However, if the Great Zhou Empire was unable to take the Yingzhou Mountain, not only did they not get anything at all, they would return home with a substantial loss.

The Great Zhou Empire had fallen from a superior position to the very bottom of the valley. They had all the advantages they could possibly have, and they were as close as it could get to the dictator of the battlefield.

Such a psychological trauma shook even the minds of immortal soul stage cultivators.

Liang Pan was a superior being after all as he forced himself to calm down before he made a decisive judgment. "Hongwu, go towards the North-Eastern region of the Ying Sea right now – we cannot lose the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain!"

"Yes, your majesty." Zhu Hongwu's voice was like a muffled thunderclap as he rode on the Great Heavenly Wheels, channeled it to the maximum possible speed and pierced the layers of void in his journey towards the North-Eastern region of the Ying Sea.

With both the Imperial Palace and the Great Heavenly Wheels, the Great Zhou Empire was confident of taking both the Immortal Dragon City and Mount Yujing on at the same time in their desperate attempt to control the Yingzhou Mountain. If not, the Great Zhou Empire would return home with irreparable losses.

If either the Celestial Sect of Wonders or the Great Qin Empire took control of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and the Great Zhou Empire ended up losing the Fangzhang Mountain without obtaining the Penglai Mountain, the influence of the Great Zhou Empire would be greatly damaged after this expedition into the Ying Sea.

The Ying Sea was connected to the East Sea, and the East Sea had always been treated by the Great Zhou Empire somewhere in their own backyard. Their failure in the Ying Sea was equivalent to a fire in their own backyard and the collapse of the residence with people still sleeping inside.

The loss of the Fangzhang and the Penglai Celestial Mountains had a far-reaching impact on the future of the Great Zhou Empire. It was likely that this would cause a chain reaction that would further erode the situation for the Great Zhou Empire, and this was completely unacceptable for them and their ambitions.

Over in the North-Eastern sector of the Ying Sea, above the

Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, Liang Pan's original body was seated on the throne inside the Imperial Palace as he stared at Lin Feng with a piercing gaze.

Lin Feng's original body was seated upon Mount Yujing as well. It was needless to say that he was completely aware about the situation of the Penglai and the Fangzhang Celestial Mountains.

The Great Zhou Empire no longer had any say with the Penglai and the Fangzhang Celestial Mountains. Therefore, it was highly likely that Zhu Hongwu would be on his way to the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain along with the Great Heavenly Wheels. The speed at which they would be travelling meant it would not be long before their arrival.

Lin Feng chuckled on top of the Black Heavenly Treasure Tree as he stood up. "It's about time. The battle can start now."

# Chapter 785: Is Lin Feng Tearing Down His Own Defenses?

---

As Lin Feng stood up on the tip of the Black Heavenly Treasure Tree, the Steel Tree Avatar was at an impasse with Shao Dongtian of the East Heaven's Gate Sect in the seas ten thousand miles away from the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. The Steel Tree Avatar smiled and said, "It's about time. We can make a move now."

Shao Dongtian, who was on the other side of the ritualistic magic formation, felt something in his heart as his white eyebrows twitched and he stared ahead at the Steel Tree Avatar.

Lin Feng was still holding down the Red Dragon King with the Two Elements Micro-Dust spell as he interrogated him with a voice-projected message. "How do I work this magic formation?"

The Red Dragon King's eyes spun around their sockets for a while before he revealed secrets of the ritual.

Lin Feng said nothing more as he released twenty-four streams of mana that transformed into purple runes that inserted themselves respectively into the twenty-four light pillars that were rising out from the sprawling oceans.

The water bubbles that were created by the twenty-four tokens trembled violently as the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain shimmered into vision between the light shadows of the twenty-four light pillars.

Shao Dongtian was still expressionless as his eyes were fixated on the light shadow of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

Initially, he was assigned as the back-up by Liang Pan in the off-chance of unforeseen circumstances. He could be activated at any time to assist the Great Zhou Empire in the wrestle for the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

The Red Dragon King and the Falling Waves Dragon King set up

an esoteric ritual that was aimed at triggering an Illusory Sea Tides phenomenon in the immediate vicinity. Upon discovering this plan, Liang Pan and Shao Dongtian decided to keep this ritual magic formation as their special last resort.

When his orders were passed down, the Great Zhou Empire's position in the conflict of the Ying Sea was still relatively favorable. They still had the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, and were already in a far superior position. If the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was fated to slip out of their grasp, they would attempt to trigger the Illusory Sea Tide to swallow the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, and plot their return the next time the mountains resurfaced.

Once the illusion at the core of the mountain was broken, the Da Kong Monk had voice-projected a message that he had been severely injured inside the illusion, and was in a disadvantageous position relative to Zhu Yi, Xiao Yan, Shi Xingyun, Prince Jingfang and Shi Lin and the others.

This piece of news pushed Liang Pan and Shao Dongtian even further to prepare their response for the 'worst-case scenario'.

The magic formation had been successfully set up and it was not difficult to channel it. The reason why Shao Dongtian and the others were still there was because they were afraid of what Lin Feng could or would do to the magic formation.

However, all of a sudden, the situation in the Ying Sea took a turn for the worse for the Great Zhou Empire. Not only did they fail to obtain the Penglai Celestial Mountain, they threw away the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain that had always been in their backyard.

Before their expedition into the Ying Sea, Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu and Shao Dongtian had planned long and hard for the various possibilities, uncertainties and outcomes. There was no doubt that losing the Penglai Celestial Mountain and throwing

away the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain was the worst possible outcome.

Under such circumstances, if the Great Zhou Empire wanted to reverse the situation, they had to take control of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

The information that Liang Pan's original body received was naturally passed down to Shao Dongtian and the latter was up to speed about the recent happenings.

This magic formation of theirs was all the more important as the situation became a lot more delicate. Lin Feng would probably not be too hasty to obstruct the magic formation, and Zhu Hongwu and the Great Heavenly Wheels were well on their way.

Lin Feng made the crazy decision to throw the Penglai Mountain at the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, and Shao Dongtian was positive that Lin Feng could be possessed by the same insanity once again. It was possible that Lin Feng would trigger the Illusory Sea Tide himself to swallow up the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

There was nothing much for the Celestial Sect of Wonders and the Great Qin Empire to lose in the first place. The return of the three mountains into the Ying Sea would simply mean that the Great Zhou Empire had thrown away the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain for no reason at all.

As he watched Lin Feng attempt to trigger the magic formation, Shao Dongtian was already raring to interfere.

However, upon closer inspection and with a little bit of shock, he stopped himself and let Lin Feng cast his spell.

Shao Dongtian had already extracted the entirety of the secret manual to the magic formation and could clearly see that there was something strange going on in the transformations.

Shao Dongtian's moment of hesitation gave the magic formation just enough time to become operational.

The twenty-four light pillars encircled the light illusion of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and became brighter and brighter while the giant water bubble in the deep sea became increasingly smaller.

A dragon scale that was shaped like a raindrop glimmered inside the water bubble.

Shao Dongtian raised an eyebrow and exclaimed, "Indeed! The magic formation has been reversed. However, it's not a pure reversal..."

He could feel the strength of the Falling Waves Dragon King, whom he had imprisoned, getting stronger by the second. However, this rise in strength was complicated and disorganized and led to a disharmony between his demonic soul and his dragon body.

The magic formation did not incur the Illusory Sea Tide, but had another effect instead. The Red Dragon King and the Falling Waves Dragon King, coupled with the powers of the scale of the old undying demonic soul stage dragon king that was in the form of the water bubble, found their esoteric powers increasing as a result.

The Falling Waves Dragon King's blood essence was being extracted to sustain the magic formation and was very weak at this point. Even if his powers were heightened, there was a limited overall effect and Shao Dongtian was not too concerned – his attention was focused on Lin Feng's side.

Under the effects of the power boost, the Red Dragon King rose up explosively and tried his best to break through the imprisonment of the Two Elements Micro-Dust. He wanted to take this opportunity to regain his freedom.

The Eight Barrens Divine Lightning was channeled to its maximum possible power as the rolling thunder crackled incessantly. The explosive and destructive natural talent of the



thunder dragons was already one of the more outstanding ones amongst the myriad of dragon races, and this sudden concentration of power far exceeded the Red Dragon King's usual limit.

His demonic soul was a little at odds with his dragon body, to the point where the Red Dragon King felt a little giddy and his consciousness became murky. However, he was determined not to let this precious chance slip through his fingers and gave his all in his desperate attempt to escape.

Lin Feng was not worried at all and chuckled at his feeble attempt. "You sure have a short temper. I wasn't going to take your life, but since you asked for it, then I will not show you any mercy."

As he spoke, the Two Elements Micro-Dust started to collapse inwards and became smaller than it already was.

The apocalyptic concept of power was more prominent than that of his Celestial Small Worlds spell and crushed the Red Dragon King's meek resistance in an instant.

The secondary effects of the Red Dragon King's boost in powers and the crushing pressure of the Two Elements Micro-Dust sucked the life out of the Red Dragon King and he seemed like he was gasping on his final breaths.

Lin Feng watched the agony of the Red Dragon King as an idea suddenly came to him. "Oh... Wait. When I created the Steel Tree Avatar and practiced human mantras, it wasn't so appropriate but I never knew where this inappropriateness stemmed from."

The Steel Tree Avatar practiced the same mantras as Lin Feng's original body. Even though its power was clearly inferior to his original body, it was superior to that of the Avatar of Ares, which was at the same level of mastery. With reference to its battle prowess, the Steel Tree Avatar was as good as an avatar could get.

However, outside of battle, Lin Feng had always felt that the Steel Tree Avatar was a little inappropriate and unsuitable for normal cultivation.

"As my level of mastery increased over time, this deep-seated conflict and disproportionality only kept becoming stronger. It felt as if I have been on the wrong path the whole time, and I am straying further and further away from the right one..."

At his current level of mastery, his senses and the power of his perceptions were strong enough for him to tell that this disproportionality was not some mental barrier or some psychological reaction. He was confident that this feeling originated from the fact that his methods was at odds with the laws of nature.

However, the only problem was that he never did find out the exact reason and only had a rough idea all this time.

"I shall take the chance to correct my mistakes and try another path. My Saros Steel Tree won't be wasted anyway."

He made up his mind and turned towards the Red Dragon King. "Your secret powers have unbalanced your demonic soul and your dragon body, but it will help me fulfill my wishes."

He immediately revealed the cosmic form of the Steel Tree Avatar and lunged straight for Red Dragon King!

"You..." the Red Dragon King roared as a haze of terror came over him. Even so, his body was so weak that this 'roar' sounded more like a squeak.

In the next moment, the Red Dragon King's body started to twist and tremble as sparks of lightning flickered in his giant eyes.

Lin Feng swiftly assimilated the original soul of the Red Dragon King and managed to integrate himself into his Undying Demonic Soul and ultimately took over the dragon's body.

Shao Dongtian was perplexed and frowned as he witnessed the

entire process. "You wish to take over that thunder dragon?"

Shao Dongtian immediately reached out to interfere, but Lin Feng was already prepared for that possibility. A few specks of the Two Elements Micro-Dust shimmered into vision and transformed into endless patches of light that acted as a barrier against Shao Dongtian.

That single moment of obstruction gave way to a bright dragon howl that rang out from somewhere deep in the dome of light. A purple-scaled sky dragon surged out from the blinding lights as the Two Elements Micro-Dust retracted the radiance and reverted to its original form, leaving just the purple-scaled dragon hovering in midair.

As he stared into the sparkling eyes of the dragon in front of him, Shao Dongtian was positive that this thunder dragon was now Lin Feng's new avatar – Lin Feng had melted down the dragon's soul, assimilated it and inserted himself into the body.

The ripples of mana that came from this avatar was of pure demonic power, which was starkly different from the Steel Tree Avatar. Even though the Steel Tree Avatar was fundamentally demonic, it practiced human mantras and channeled human mana.

Above the original Steel Tree Avatar, the cosmic form reappeared but seemed to have lost a bit of its spirituality. Subsequently, the cosmic form reintegrated itself into the Steel Tree Avatar as the Steel Tree Avatar immediately started to make some rapid and shocking transformations.

It shed its human form and returned into the form of the Saros Steel Tree – black branches, golden leaves with an aura of eternal existence. The integration of the cosmic form completed the process and it seemed as if it had become a magic treasure.

Shao Dongtian's brows furrowed ever so tight. He had seen powerful immortal soul stage cultivators assimilating and taking

over demonic grand sages before. Even though Lin Feng's Steel Tree Avatar was only in the nascent soul stage, its true power could not be gauged by typical standards of other nascent soul stage cultivators. Furthermore, the Red Dragon King weakened himself with his explosive but short-lived rebellion and benefited Lin Feng instead. The fact that Lin Feng could use the Steel Tree Avatar to steal his soul was therefore nothing out of the ordinary.

However, Lin Feng kept the demonic powers of the Red Dragon King and did not convert the new avatar to his own mantras and lineage. This baffled Shao Dongtian as Lin Feng's actions weakened his battle prowess.

The Thunder Dragon Avatar was in the first-level Undying Demonic Soul Stage, so this meant that Lin Feng managed to skip the painful and tedious process of ascending to the immortal soul stage from the nascent soul stage.

However, the powers of the Thunder Dragon Avatar were the same as the Red Dragon King when he was still alive, and its strength was clearly inferior to that of the Steel Tree Avatar.

It was needless to say that if the Steel Tree Avatar had ascended to the immortal soul stage by itself, juxtaposed with its current superiority to the Red Dragon King, it would possess a battle prowess that would be vastly more powerful than the current Thunder Dragon Avatar.

Even if Lin Feng could not wait to increase his level of mastery, this was an inappropriate solution as it would make him weaker.

Even though the Saros Steel Tree had been re-forged into a magic treasure, and it would probably be a relatively powerful one as well, the reality was that it was a new-born magic treasure and it needed time to be nurtured and developed. Furthermore, it was not that simple for the Saros Steel Tree to enter the Gestation stage, and the Thunder Dragon Avatar was a pure demon as well and was not suitable for channeling magic treasures and would

thus be unable to channel the maximum power of this new magic treasure.

This was a crucial moment of the battle for the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain – how could he do such a thing, which was equivalent to tearing down his own defenses?

Shao Dongtian continued to watch Lin Feng with a doubtful look as he was unable to fathom the rationale of Lin Feng's actions.

# Chapter 786: Summoning the Illusory Sea Tide Again

---

The huge figure of the Purple Scales Celestial Dragon floated in space. In its eyes, there were the flashing of lightning.

Lin Feng could slightly feel the demonic realm inside of this Thunder Dragon avatar. Although he did not convert it to his Heavenly Classic of the Way's Virtue cultivation, he had been trying to achieve resonance with it.

"Indeed, indeed..." Lin Feng sighed before revealing a smile on his face, "Although it's a little late, it's still on time."

He turned to look at the Saros Steel Tree. As he thought of something, the huge trunk of the tree shrank, eventually converting into the look of a small branch. The black steel-like branch and golden leaves started to flash with a rainbow radiance around them.

"This treasure shall be called the Saros Magical Tree." Lin Feng thought, "However, it still needs to be nurtured and cultivated, before it can truly become a powerful treasure. I just have to make do with this at the moment."

As he thought, he watched the draconic soul of the Red Dragon King, as he tried to find the cultivation manual to summon the formation in the sea beneath.

After that, the huge dragon head blew out a gust of air towards the sea beneath, which converted into lightning. After that, it evolved to form ancient sigils that descended into the sea.

Shao Dongtian's white brows raised as he stared at Lin Feng. He said, "Master Lin, why do you even bother doing such things which are not beneficial for you or anyone else?"

As he said, he extended his hand, trying to grab Lin Feng.

As he noticed that Lin Feng had placed not just one Two Elements Micro-Dust, Shao Dongtian took precautions this time round. The light wheel in his huge palm had almost consolidated to form a real entity and it was spinning non-stop.

As if countless worlds were spinning at the same time and the fate of all matter in the Heavens and Earth were controlled by it, the palm twisted void space within the area that it covered.

This was the Celestial Treasure Wheel from the Heaven's Gate that was summoned from the Heavenly Hands of Shao Dongtian. Its power concept was superior to the previous attack.

The Two Elements Micro-Dust in front of Lin Feng was unleashed. Amidst in its tininess, there was a magnificent and overwhelming power. It was as if the micro-dust developed a world on its own.

Shao Dongtian's gaze flashed and his left hand raised towards the sky. His five fingers started to shine with light.

Seven streaks of eye-blinding, crimson-red flames gathered around his ring finger. They started to revolve and converted into a huge, revolving fire wheel.

It was the Fire Wheel of Mars, an abhijna of Mars which came from the Celestial True Spells of the Seven Planets of the Heaven's Gate.

And above Shao Dongtian's left middle finger, chilly energy gathered.

It was the Deadly Ice Billow of Mercury, abhijna of Mercury which came from the Celestial True Spells of the Seven Planets.

These two abhijnas were unleashed by Shao Dongtian, who was in the Immortal Soul Third Level. He was much stronger than Shao Qingcheng who was only in the Immortal Soul First Level. The powers of ice and fire were summoned, causing space to burn and freeze at the same time.

What was more frightening was that on the left thumb of Shao Dongtian, there was golden lightning flashing intensely, as if streaks of sword radiances were going to cut apart the Heavens and Earth.

It was the Golden Sword Lightning of Venus, abhijna of Venus from the Celestial True Spells of the Seven Planets.

Above Shao Dongtian's index finger, a towering willow tree was swaying amidst the wind, releasing a thick aura of life.

It was the Life-Reversal Holy Tree of Jupiter, abhijna of Jupiter from the Celestial True Spells of the Seven Planets.

Above Shao Dongtian's pinkie, there was a huge mountain filled with black rocks.

That mountain was extremely majestic, as if it suppressed and carried everything. It supported the Heavens and stabilized the Earth.

It was the Ancient Holy Mountain of Saturn, abhijna of Saturn from the Celestial True Spells of the Seven Planets.

As Shao Dongtian's five fingers spread apart, the five abhijnas of the Celestial True Spells of the Seven Planets were unleashed.

As the lightning, willow tree, billow, fire wheel and the holy mountain appeared, an illusory crack opened in the Heavens.

Venus, Jupiter, Mercury, Mars and Saturn started to flash with radiance together. The radiance became stronger and stronger, as well as eye-catching against the backdrop of the sky. It was as if the skies were falling.

The magnificent powers of the luminaries supplemented Shao Dongtian's powers, causing them to be even more terrifying.

Lin Feng found out that these five abhijnas of Shao Dongtian helped one another to increase their powers, allowing its might to reach a new level.



"Celestial Stars-Descending Great Palm Print!"

Shao Dongtian's right hand used the power concept of the Celestial Treasure Wheel to summon the Heavenly Hands, whereas he used his right hand to summon the powers of the stars. As he unleashed the Celestial Stars-Descending Great Palm Print, it came smashing towards Lin Feng.

The powers of the stars and luminaries were already very magnificent, and was not a power that a normal person could resist. After Shao Dongtian included the five appearances of the lightning, willow tree, billow, fire wheel and holy mountain within, the power was further boosted.

Lin Feng's micro-dust shook violently as its defense was struck by the palm print.

The world developed by the Two Elements Micro-Dust seemed to have faced the attack of the luminaries, leaving the world in a torn and tattered state.

And at this point, the Heavenly Hands of Shao Dongtian also landed. As the light wheel in his palms spun, the Celestial Small World collapsed too.

Shao Dongtian's left and right hands worked together to break through the defense of Lin Feng's Two Elements Micro-Dust.

Lin Feng saw this scene and smiled, "The Heaven's Gate indeed possessed powerful abhijnas. But now it seems like there's still a flaw with your Celestial Treasure Wheel."

With regards to the imminent attack of Shao Dongtian, Lin Feng was unbothered. He continued to summon the formation at the bottom of the sea.

In void space, the sounds of a bell rang. The sound broke through space and reached the Ying Sea. It was Lin Feng's natal magic treasure, the Bell of Destiny.

If he did not prepare earlier, Lin Feng wouldn't have recklessly

convert the Steel Tree into the Thunder Dragon avatar.

However, Lin Feng's actual body wasn't here. The newly cultivated Thunder Dragon avatar was not prime to summon the magic treasure. That was why although the Bell of Destiny converted into the Door of Life Creation Taiji Soldiers were not birthed. Instead, it remained above Lin Feng's head.

At the same time, the Saros Magical Tree landed on the Door of Life Creation and under the nourishment of the strong life aura of the Door Life Creation, it grew rapidly. Its own aura became more stable and complete. A normal awareness had been developed in the tree.

Shao Dongtian creased his brows and his palms grabbed the top of the Saros Magical Tree and pulled hard.

But eventually, the Saros Magical Tree shook a little, but it was not pulled apart by Shao Dongtian. Rather, it remained fixed on the Door of Life Creation.

"It's not fully cultivated, but its defense is so strong?" Shao Dongtian thought, and he pulled with a greater strength.

But the Door of Life Creation continued to supply strength to the Saros Magical Tree. Shao Dongtian could not do anything to the Saros Magical Tree.

"The defense of this treasure is indeed shocking. If it is fully cultivated, just an Immortal Soul Stage First Level Elder will be needed to control it in order to keep me at bay." Shao Dongtian's expression sank, "Although the one controlling it is only Lin Feng's demonic avatar, it is nourished by the Door of Life Creation. This is a tough one."

Shao Dongtian thought of something and a black, ancient print flew out. Its tremendous power could bear down on the Heavens.

One of the nine treasures of the Heaven's Gate, Xuan Heaven Seal of the North!

Although it had fallen to the metaplasia realm, through many years of cultivation by Shao Dongtian, it had restored to the peak of the metaplasia realm and was only a step away from the Mahayana realm.

As this magic treasure appeared, Lin Feng's Door of Life Creation did not react, but the Saros Magical Tree jerked a little.

The Xuan Heaven Seal was rumored to be cultivated by the leader of the Heaven's Gate, Tian Dikong. When he was finding a fortune land for the sect, he cut off the top of a celestial mountain and used the flat peak of it to construct the foundation of the Heaven's Gate. He then cultivated the top of the mountain that was cut out into the Xuan Heaven Seal.

During the Antiquity Age, this seal was very notorious. It was the magic treasure among the nine of the Heaven's Gate with the highest kill rate.

Although its realm had fallen, it was still very ferocious. It had emerged victorious over many magic treasures in the metaplasia realm. It was even comparable to magic treasures in the Mahayana realm.

If it was also in the metaplasia realm, the Saros Magical Tree would be unafraid of the Xuan Heaven Seal. But now it was only in the gestation realm. The defense of the tree was likely to be broken by the Xuan Heaven Seal and it was even in danger of being completely destroyed.

"Xuan Heaven Seal, ha!" Lin Feng laughed and retrieved the crystal of his Holy Light of Creation.

The crystal unleashed a shocking radiance in space. Black and white flashed together, and a Sun that seemed to intersect with Yin and Yang rose gradually.

The powerful Holy Light landed on the surface of the Saros Magical Tree, coating a layer of black and white radiance on it.

In the next moment, Shao Dongtian's palm and the Xuan Heaven Seal landed on the Saros Magical Tree.

The branches of the tree twisted and even the indestructible power concept was almost dissipated. It was on the verge of snapping!

But with the support of the Holy Light, it was able to withstand the attacks. Whereas the power of the Door of Life Creation continued to support the Saros Magical Tree and the Holy Light of Creation. Eventually, Shao Dongtian did not make any headway again.

As it was converted from a crystal, even with the Door of Life Creation to support it, this Holy Light of Creation was quickly expended. But Shao Dongtian could not be excited. His pupils shrank. That was because his actions allowed Lin Feng to complete the summoning of the formation beneath.

The liquid state of the dragon scales converted into the appearance of bubbles again. 24 blue tokens defended it and birthed 24 beams of light that shot straight into the skies.

The void space surrounded by the beams of light surfaced the projection of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain again.

Following that, the projection of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain resonated with the bubbles. Ripples around the bubbles expanded and shook the sea.

Visible waves surged, as if a tsunami was about to be started.

The water from the Ying Sea was dragged into the skies. The layers and layers of illusory space also became very messy. A boundless tide filled with spiritual energy and had the bubbles at its center exploded out.

Illusory Sea Tide!

The Yingzhou Celestial Mountain at a distance also jerked a little. As Liang Pan received news from Shao Dongtian, he stood up from

his seat in the Imperial Palace.

## Chapter 787: Power of Mount Yujing, Heaven Extreme Universal Light!

---

After summoning the Illusory Sea Tide, Lin Feng did not bother with Shao Dongtian anymore. The Thunder Dragon avatar converted into a streak of purple light and dragged the Saros Magical Tree up along with the Door of Life Creation. They rushed towards the bubbles in the sea.

Shao Dongtian wanted to chase them, but the few Two Elements Micro-Dust in front of him exploded, blocking his way.

The purple light dashed into the bubbles and the tide had already fully surged up. It expanded in all directions. Its scale was the biggest as it rushed towards the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

The 24 tokens that surrounded the bubbles were all crushed, whereas the bubbles moved with the flow of the tide, as it approached the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

As the tide surged, Shao Dongtian sighed. Even if he destroyed the bubbles, there was no more meaning.

Moreover, as he faced the Illusory Sea Tide, he was out of time too. This Illusory Sea Tide was not as huge and intense as the one at the south of Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, when the Fangzhang and Penglai Celestial Mountains collided.

But it was sufficient to keep him on his toes as he dealt with it. He had no more energy to care about anything else.

Shao Dongtian followed the bubbles that flowed away and creased his brows, "So it's like that. After he borrowed the body of that dragon, he could remain in the bubbles converted from the dragon scales. His Saros Steel Tree Avatar cannot form the Immortal Soul in the short term, so it converted into a dragon?"

"Sacrificing the future potential to obtain an upper hand now.... but I feel like it's not so simple."

Since things were at this stage, Shao Dongtian resisted the attack of the Illusory Sea Tide while rushing towards the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

Liang Pan received news from Shao Dongtian and was unsettled. He looked at Mount Yujing, "Master Lin seems to have gone overboard."

After Lin Feng borrowed the body of the Red Dragon King to cultivate the Thunder Dragon avatar and re-cultivating the Saros Steel Tree into the Saros Magical Tree, the supernatural awareness that Shi Yu and Liang Pan attached to his body were wiped clean.

Although he was not as well-informed as Liang Pan, Shi Yu could also feel the immense change from afar. After liaising with the arrangement of the Red Dragon King and the Falling Waves Dragon King, he discovered what happened as well.

Shi Yu creased his brows too and asked, "Master Lin, why do you have to do this?"

Lin Feng smiled, "Don't be offended, my fellow comrades."

As he said, a Taiji Diagram appeared on his forehead. The Taiji Diagram started to spin. As Liang Pan and Shi Yu sensed, Lin Feng seemed to convert his entire person into a huge Taiji Diagram instantly, which also seemed to dominate the universe.

The leaves of the Black Heavenly Treasure Tree on Mount Yujing started to sway a little. From a comfortable sway, they seemed to become rushed. They agitated the Heavens, as if they were gathering the spatial power of the entire world around them.

Balls of Heaven-Revolving Purple Clouds started to rumble. Within the Purple Clouds, the images of countless matter appeared. Everything was present.

But what made Liang Pan and Shi Yu most bothered was that on Mount Yujing, there was a sudden jerk that caused the mountain body to become transparent and pure like glass. The colorless

mountain body flashed with countless images. Each of them was different and they kept on changing.

Liang Pan did not hesitate and summoned the Imperial Palace directly. Inside the palace, countless human figures that were converted from illusion to reality started to sing in unison. They increased the power of this magic treasure instantly.

A huge chaos hole appeared above the Imperial Palace. Purplish-golden radiance kept on gathering within it. Following that, one black and one white light beam formed a spiral structure that burst out from the palace towards Mount Yujing.

It was the Dual Polarity Chaos Cave Divine Light summoned by the Imperial Palace.

As Lin Feng faced this divine light, he looked at Shi Yu and the Immortal Dragon City and said suddenly, "The Fangzhang Celestial Mountain of the Great Zhou Empire was captured by me using the Penglai Celestial Mountain at the south of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain because of me. Now, both these mountains are hidden within the Ying Sea because of the Illusory Sea Tide.

"The Great Zhou Empire can only target the remaining Yingzhou Celestial Mountain now."

Shi Yu heard this and his gaze flashed. Lin Feng used the Penglai Celestial Mountain to capture the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain of the Great Zhou Empire. Shi Yu was not there, but for such a huge occurrence as that, he naturally received news about it.

Shi Yu would not fully believe Lin Feng's words. But through observing the movements of Liang Pan and Shao Dongtian, he could tell many valuable things.

Under Shi Yu's guidance, the Immortal Dragon City converted into a huge light dragon before converting back into a ring. This ring expanded outwards, but did not cut into the battle between Lin Feng and Liang Pan. It only surrounded the area outside of the



Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

The Illusory Sea Tide was approaching closer and closer.

Lin Feng held the fort at Mount Yujing. His gaze was as calm as water, just like a flowing time river.

But at this point, this river seemed to be flowing even slower and slower. It was almost as if it was stopping.

Streaks and streaks of special radiances landed in the Heavens and Earth, with Lin Feng as the center. As he was bathed by these radiances, Lin Feng seemed to have controlled the secrets of the eternity of time and the miraculous power concept of eternity.

Eternity was the extreme of time. Even the Heavens and Earth will destruct then. Who was able to get close to eternity?

Eternity was too long and could not be grasp. To capture the short instant was the same as capturing the true meaning of time. It was as if the future was unpredictable, but one could control everything now.

As he accompanied the eternal radiance, there was some of it that flashed on his body. They might seem brief and insignificant, but they contained the true meaning of an instant.

It was like the everlasting eternity, but it was like the brief instant too. Eternity and instant were the two extremes of time. To comprehend the concept of both would be equivalent to solving the secrets of time.

And right now, Lin Feng infused both concepts together. The aura around him was miraculous, as if it controlled the secrets of time.

And under Lin Feng's control, Mount Yujing unleashed a chaotic radiance that expanded in all directions. Everything became blurry and chaotic, and what was left was only a patch of grey and white.

With Mount Yujing as the center, it expanded non-stop. All

matter in the Heavens and Earth seemed to have lost their color.

The spiritual energy that flowed in space seemed to have stopped. The gentle clouds that rumbled above Ying Sea seemed to have become dense rocks, but they didn't fall.

The surface of the sea beneath that was initially surging with waves seemed to become stoned in position too. The waves that raged froze in space. They were bright and clear, but they did not land or disappear. They did not move either. They looked extremely weird.

The streak of frightening Dual Polarity Chaos Cave Divine Light stopped in space too. The spiral-like radiance still maintained its spiral shape, but was stationary. The tip of it was less than a thousand meters away from Mount Yujing.

The naked eye could see the practical form of the light from Mount Yujing.

Whoever was struck by the radiance of Mount Yujing could not think, move, see, hear and smell. Their lives stopped at that instant.

Only the Imperial Palace was able to avoid this effect, forcibly. But the purplish-golden radiance surrounding it became dimmer and was pale-white and grey.

Above the Imperial Palace, the singing voices stopped as the human figures were frozen in their position.

Liang Pan was in the Imperial Palace and realized his own thinking and reaction had slowed down.

His expression was very serious, "His mountain, treasure tree, Purple Clouds are all infused with his own body. He has combined their powers to summon a power concept of the mountain to its extreme. He has comprehended the true meaning of time. This is indeed exceptional."

Under the radiance of Mount Yujing, Liang Pan even felt that the

powers of the Imperial Palace and himself were being expended by time. They were disappearing quickly.

The Imperial Palace was still fine. But if this went on, Liang Pan could not take it himself.

Shi Yu was outside the boundaries of the radiance of Mount Yujing. As he saw this scene, he was extremely shocked, "The Eternal Glow summons the true meaning of eternity to its extreme, but there's still a layer between it and the true meaning of an instant."

"This radiance by Master Lin is able to combine both eternity and instant, touching the true meaning of time. In this way, even the Imperial Palace is restrained. If I summon the Immortal Dragon City in, I believe it will be suppressed too."

Even the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was within the boundaries of the radiance. The Nameless Ancient Formation was also dissipated. But as it came into contact with Mount Yujing, the world of the Ying Sea retaliated, blocking the radiance of Mount Yujing.

Lin Feng was targeting both the Imperial Palace and the Immortal Dragon City and did not target the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. Thus, he did not continue to attack the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and put all his attention on Liang Pan.

He summoned with all his powers and pushed the true meaning of time to its extreme on Mount Yujing, consolidating to form the Heaven Extreme Universal Light. The surrounding time stopped. Even the Imperial Palace was trapped.

Although the Immortal Dragon City had the Eternal Glow, if it entered within the Heaven Extreme Universal Light, it might fare better than the Imperial Palace but could not do anything much either.

But if this light suppressed two magic treasures in the destiny

realm at the same time, the burden on Lin Feng and Mount Yujing would be very huge. The amount of time that the light could sustain would shrink rapidly.

Shi Yu commanded the Immortal Dragon City to retreat, which left Lin Feng relieved. Everything that was happening was a fight against time. A moment could change a lot of things and could determine victory.

"If Comrade Shi has any arrangements, you can carry them out now." Lin Feng looked at Shi Yu and the Immortal Dragon City and laughed, "Before Zhu Hongwu and the Great Heavenly Wheels arrive, I can suppress Comrade Liang."

Although Shi Yu had a similar character as Liang Pan, Lin Feng would not believe that the Great Qin Empire would continue to sit and wait while the Great Zhou Empire was already giving their all.

Shi Yu said calmly, "When you told me that Liang Pan had lost the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, I had already contacted the external world. Right now, both Uncle Gunyang and Anliang have both entered the boundaries of the Great Zhou Empire."

Prince Gunyang, Shi Zongmao, and Prince Anliang were of the same seniority level. He had retreated in cultivation, but his cultivation was in the Immortal Soul Third Level. Ever since the War Between the Two Worlds, he had not revealed himself for a few thousand years.

## Chapter 788: Shi Yu's Plan

---

"Uncle Gunyang and the others won't touch Tianjing, but I believe they will lay a move on the 10 states in the east of the Great Zhou Empire."

Shi Yu remained calm, but his words were frightening.

When most people focused on the Ying Sea, the Great Qin Empire worked on two fronts. On one hand, they entered the Ying Sea trying to capture the three celestial mountains – Penglai, Yingzhou and Fangzhang. On another hand, they put their focus on the Great Zhou Empire.

For the three celestial mountains of the Ying Sea, the Great Zhou Empire went all out. Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu brought along the Imperial Palace and the Great Heavenly Wheels into the Ying Sea respectively. Even the Vast Sea Sword Sect and the previously low-profile East Heaven's Gate joined in.

They even paid a certain price for it, as they invited the Luofu Holy Man to help them. They displayed their earnest desire for the three celestial mountains.

As compared to them, the Great Qin Empire might have Shi Yu who brought along the Immortal Dragon City, but their determination did not seem as great.

Referencing to Shi Yu's habitual prudence in dealing with things, it was understandable. But when viewed in the context of the Great Zhou Empire, the Great Qin Empire seemed to lack some conviction, which betrayed their abnormal thinking.

After all, besides Shi Yu himself, the Great Qin Empire also had two Immortal Soul Third Level cultivators in Prince Gunyang and Prince Anliang.

But now it seemed like Shi Yu was ready to become radical in his actions, and it was a radicality that was beyond the expectations of

many.

As thoroughly as possible, he was going to exploit the Great Zhou's Empire advances on the Ying Sea to engage them in a surprise attack.

Inside the Imperial Palace, Liang Pan was resisting the Heaven Extreme Universal Light while looking at the Immortal Dragon City in the distance. He remained as calm as possible.

Since they had been adversaries for many years, Liang Pan naturally expected the Great Qin Empire to do a surprise attack on the Great Zhou Empire.

But he had a different set of beliefs from Shi Yu. To Liang Pan, rather than focusing on two fronts, he rather consolidate all his power on one front.

To a certain extent, if the Great Zhou Empire could obtain all three celestial mountains as they wished and control the entire Ying Sea, even if they lost half of their territories in the Divine Lands, they would not be at a disadvantage. Relying on the Ying Sea would prevent their vital energy from being damaged. They would still have the chance to regain what they lost.

But now it seemed like their plan to obtain the three celestial mountains was ruined. What made it worse was that the Great Qin Empire had taken the opportunity to further exploit their weakness.

"Trying to accomplish everything at once is equivalent to acting like a gambler. How can it be the actions of a ruler?" Shi Yu's gaze transcended void space as he looked at Liang Pan calmly. "Liang Pan, the Great Zhou has risen greatly these few years. You are moving too quickly and being too rushed in achieving success."

His attention turned to the Illusory Sea Tide which was coming closer and closer, and he said, "You are trapped by Master Lin in here and I am there too. Zhu Hongwu and the Great Heavenly

Wheels can only choose to come here and save you, but not remain in the Divine Lands."

Lin Feng and the rest used their supernatural awareness to interact and they expressed their intentions clearly. It might sound complicated, but it was not exactly so.

"Prince Gunyang and the rest are bound to succeed on their mission. As for the future..." Shi Yu looked peaceful, "After losing the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain and not obtaining the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, even if you and Zhu Hongwu can leave this place alive, both of your vital energies will be damaged too. There's no way the both of you can exact revenge on the Great Qin Empire."

He did not mention further on how the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain should be settled. But Lin Feng and Liang Pan knew that he was going to give it to the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

He would use the Immortal Dragon City to block the Illusory Sea Tide temporarily, while the Celestial Sect of Wonders cultivated the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. After that, he would release the Illusory Sea Tide and allow the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain to be hidden, so that it will no longer be the target of the Great Zhou empire.

Of course, the Celestial Sect of Wonders could also choose not to hide the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, but use it as a battle tool against the Great Zhou Empire. This depended on what Lin Feng wanted.

Although they also held the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain in high regard, under the circumstance that the Penglai and Fangzhang Celestial Mountains were hidden, if the Great Qin Empire could obtain the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, their powers were bound to supersede that of the Great Zhou Empire. At the same time, as they found their feet in the East Sea, they would have an upper hand over the Great Zhou Empire in the East and West.

But Shi Yu's train of thought was very clear. The things that he could certainly obtain were the most precious. Besides the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, there were also the land and resources of the Great Zhou Empire, which were more practical.

As the Penglai and Fangzhang Celestial Mountains were hidden, the next time they would appear again, the Great Qin Empire would still have a chance. Now, if they gave the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain to the Celestial Sect of Wonders, both sides could still maintain a cordial relationship. When the time comes, they would still have an upper hand over the Great Zhou Empire in the East and West.

At the same time, Shi Yu believed Lin Feng would cooperate with him and trap both Liang Pan and Zhu Hongwu.

Otherwise, if Lin Feng faced the Imperial Palace and the Great Heavenly Wheels on his own, even if he was not afraid, how could he be as relaxed as when there was the Immortal Dragon City assisting him?

Liang Pan looked at Shi Yu, "You are still as prudent as before, Shi Yu."

Shi Yu had been biding his time. He waited to confirm that the Great Zhou Empire had lost the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, observe the might of the Heaven Extreme Universal Light, calculate that the combination of the Immortal Dragon City & Mount Yujing could overcome the combination of the Imperial Palace & Great Heavenly Wheels and decide that the Great Zhou Empire would have no more reinforcements to the Divine Lands before he acted.

At the same time, the Great Zhou Empire did not obtain the Penglai Celestial Mountain, lost the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain and lost hope for the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. This prevented them from increasing their powers from the Ying Sea. When everything concluded, if he wanted to seek revenge against the



Great Qin Empire, he would be totally unconfident.

Lin Feng sat on Mount Yujing and smiled. Suddenly, a black figure jumped off from the mountain and landed in the direction of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

That figure was tall and huge. His facial features were similar to Lin Feng. But the energy that he unleashed was extremely hot, as if he was the burning Sun.

He was Lin Feng's Avatar of Ares.

As they saw this avatar, Liang Pan and Shi Yu were both stunned. That was because Lin Feng's Avatar of Ares had been in the Void Battleground for a long time and did not seem to return to the Divine Lands. When they were planning, while they did not neglect his presence, they placed him at the last priority.

Right now, Lin Feng's Avatar of Ares appeared and left them surprised.

Liang Pan and Shi Yu did not know that because the avatar was obtained from the system, Lin Feng could summon him back beside him. But because he left the Avatar of Ares in the Void Battleground to search for Shi Tianhao's parents, he wouldn't summon it back easily.

This time, he summoned it back not for the three celestial mountains. It was because the Avatar of Ares had an unexpected reward in the Void Battleground. That's why Lin Feng summoned him and the reward back.

Coincidentally, as Lin Feng was observing the Imperial Palace and the Immortal Dragon City, he allowed his Avatar of Ares to cultivate the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. Although the Avatar of Ares was an avatar specializing in physical martial arts, it was not weak in terms of spells. Cultivating the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was nothing difficult for him.

Liang Pan looked at Lin Feng's avatar landing at the bottom of

mountain and his expression turned ghastly. He stared at Shi Yu, "Shi Yu, you have wasted a lot of effort. Liaising between the Ying Sea and the Divine Lands is not easy."

"But if I don't lose the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain and even obtain the Penglai Celestial Mountain, do you know what will happen to you?"

After listening to how calm Liang Pan was, Shi Yu raised his brows. He wanted to speak but he suddenly felt that the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain seemed to have experienced a change.

"Oh?" Not only Shi Yu, even Liang Pan sensed it too. As he resisted the Heaven Extreme Universal Light, he turned his supernatural awareness to scan what was happening.

He felt a sudden awakening of an awareness in the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

Lin Feng's Avatar of Ares just landed on the mountain and had already crossed the broken Nameless Ancient Formation, as it sprinted towards the peak of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

Lin Feng thought, "It seems like there is something hidden inside this Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. It must be this thing that is experiencing a change."

"But the question is, what or who caused it to experience a change?"

As he thought, Lin Feng used his mana to communicate with his disciples on the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. Everyone replied him except for one person.

Zhu Yi.

Lin Feng asked, "Zhu Yi, did you find something?"

At the same time, Liang Pan and Shi Yu communicated with their own people on the mountain too. Liang Pan did not find out anything, but Shi Yu found out that he could not contact Prince

Jingfang, Shi Lin.

Right now, inside a cave of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, there were two parties fighting around a white jade pillar.

One of them was a black, mysterious water that was exerting a force on the surface of the white jade pillar, from the bottom to top.

The other party was a chapter from a scripture filled with words of light and darkness that exerted a force from top to bottom.

The water and the chapter met at the center of the pillar, but they were reluctant to give way to each other.

At the same time, two figures were fighting inside the cave.

One of them was Zhu Yi, while the other person was Shi Lin. Shi Lin had given up his human form now and did not even summon his Immortal Soul Avatar. Rather, he revealed his own virtual entity and converted into a ten feet tall middle-aged man in black, who wore a crown on his head and a python robe (a robe with python images on it). He was formed from a light projection.

In space, a streak of black sword radiance wound around like a flowing black river. It surrounded Zhu Yi's Eternal Night Demonic Stele and Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp.

This black river sword was a magic treasure in the metaplasia realm. Under the command of Shi Lin, it was able to unleash its full powers. It was like another Immortal Soul Second Level cultivator.

As it faced the Eternal Night Demonic Stele and the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp, while it was outnumbered, it was still able to spare some strength. If it not was for the fact that the demonic stele and the heart lamp were both well-cultivated, they would have been easily suppressed by the black river sword.

Zhu Yi wore an ancient costume and as he faced Shi Lin, he felt a little pressed.

Shi Lin's cultivation was weaker than Monk Da Kong, but he was not injured like Monk Da Kong. Right now, Shi Lin was even in a perfect state. As he unleashed his full powers, it was not easy for Zhu Yi to deal with him.

Although he was unafraid, if he wanted to defeat his enemy, it was difficult for Zhu Yi.

Shi Lin unveiled his virtual entity and his powers were summoned to the extreme. But he was also wary of Zhu Yi, as he did not want Zhu Yi to retaliate and damage his virtual entity.

What left Zhu Yi bothered was that he was at the losing end now, as both parties fought for the white jade pillar.

Magic treasure embryo in the destiny realm naturally had a dense foundation. To cultivate it, it was not just a comparison of the strength of one's powers, it was also related to the understanding of a cultivator towards the great way of the Heavens and Earth.

Although Zhu Yi did resonate with the Great Sun Holy Man's soul and gained a deeper understanding of the Immortal Soul Stage, he was naturally inferior to Shi Lin who was already in the Immortal Soul Second Level.

## Chapter 789: Risky Move!

---

With regards to the black, mysterious water and words on its surface, the huge white jade pillar did not ostracize them. It remained calm as it continued to erect there.

The white jade pillar had no preference as to who should cultivate it. Just like a world on its own, it accommodated countless life spirits in the Heavens and Earth and allowed them to prosper, until death and destruction arrived. It interpreted the vast changes in the Heavens and Earth.

The huge Qilin above Zhu Yi's head galloped and caused the black water to be destroyed. But even so, the water converted into streaks of water gas that surrounded and threatened to violate Zhu Yi's powers. (Translator's note: Kirin has been changed to Qilin over here. Just like Genbu, Kirin is the Japanese name for Qilin.)

"This cannot go on." Zhu Yi's vision landed on the white jade pillar. Over there was the real battleground.

In fact, whether it was him or Shi Lin, they could only cultivate the white jade pillar to a small extent. For them to ensure that it became a true magic treasure in the destiny realm, with their powers, there was still a very long way to go. Any mistake might cause this magic treasure embryo to be wasted.

But if they were at least able to cultivate it to a small extent and set the foundation, they could adjust the power of this magic treasure and defeat the other party.

To both Zhu Yi and Shi Lin now, a magic treasure in the destiny realm that was not fully cultivated yet was still able to decide the victor of this battle.

In terms of the battle, Zhu Yi could still sustain. But in terms of the cultivation of the white jade pillar, he was on the losing end.

As time passed, when the black water squeezed the words of Zhu

Yi out of the white jade pillar and claimed it to itself, Shi Lin would be able to cultivate this magic treasure embryo. When that happened, he could suppress Zhu Yi easily.

Although he was on the losing end and the situation was dire, Zhu Yi did not panic. He did not feel defeated, rather, he calmed himself down and his thoughts gathered quickly.

"Initially, I wanted to nurture it slowly, before cultivating it successfully at one shot. But now it seems like I have to make a risky move." Zhu Yi's gaze flashed, "In a safe state, when everything is prepared, success is almost guaranteed. But with external pressure, there is another form of motivation. The result may not be inferior."

As he thought till here, the ancient costume that Zhu Yi wore flashed with a bright radiance. His Cosmic Form released a deafening roar.

The initial Four Appearances Sky Formation re-surfaced the appearance of the Sky Revolution, causing Zhu Yi to be protected at the center. After that, they all landed on the Higan Golden Bridge (referring to the golden bridge commonly summoned by Zhu Yi).

As he faced Shi Lin, Zhu Yi took a defensive stance.

The Eternal Night Demonic Stele and the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp also converted into one dark and one bright crystal-like entity respectively. They combined to form a transparent construction that resembled a spiritual altar, trapping Shi Lin's Black River Sword within.

It was Zhu Yi's Great Boundaries of the Celestial Light and Darkness Mandala, which was exhibited by two magic treasures now, as it trapped the Black River Sword.

The Black River Sword kept on moving inside the boundaries and tried to escape, but the Great Boundaries of the Celestial Light and

Darkness Mandala gave up its offensive stance and focused on defending. This prevented the sword from escaping in the short-term.

Zhu Yi took in a deep breath under the protection of the golden bridge and the Sky Revolution, and he released the Great Sun Golden Form.

He had obtained the Great Sun Golden form for some time already. After meticulous analysis, he realized why the Great Zhou Empire passed the Great Sun Golden form to Monk Da Kong.

The Great Sun Holy Man perished on the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain. Although his soul was destroyed, his flesh was preserved. Through the nourishment of the Ying Sea spiritual energy, along with fate, it entered a miraculous state.

The physical martial arts of his body was preserved, but the soul was completely gone.

For a physical martial arts Immortal Soul Second Level cultivator like the Great Sun Holy Man, his virtual entity and his flesh were combined with each other. If his flesh and physical martial arts were preserved, they could be revived with sufficient nourishment.

But because of the strange suppression of the Ying Sea world, the flesh of the Great Sun Holy Man was unable to reform a spell body. This caused the existence of the Great Sun Holy Man's flesh to be special and suitable for a cultivator to cultivate into his own avatar.

After that, the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain landed in the hands of the Great Zhou Empire. The flesh of the Great Sun Holy Man also landed in the hands of Liang Pan. Liang Pan wanted to cultivate it into another of his avatar, an avatar that was capable of unleashing the powers of the Great Sun Holy Man like in the past. At the same time, he hoped to complete the physical martial arts mantras of Emperor Chen that the Great Sun Holy Man cultivated

in the past.

If this physical martial arts manual was passed to Zhu Hongwu to analyze and cultivate, it would allow his powers to reach a higher level.

To complete and re-surface the physical martial arts within, Liang Pan passed this Great Sun Golden Form to Monk Da Kong for him to safekeep temporarily.

But now, the Great Sun Golden Form landed in the hands of Zhu Yi. Furthermore, there was the pressure brought about by Prince Jingfang, Shi Lin, of the Great Qin Empire. Zhu Yi directly summoned the physical martial arts mantra of Emperor Chen that he comprehended in the environment of the celestial mountain and attacked the Great Sun Golden Form using it!

Since they came from the same source, they achieved a resonance.

The Great Sun Golden Form seemed to have something that caused a jerk. This even caused the entire golden form to release a huge and bright radiance.

Even the pupils of the golden form started to shine with a strange light, as they stared at Zhu Yi.

The Great Sun Golden Form that had always been stationary started to jerk, as if it wanted to stand up.

The golden Buddhist light that was on its surface was like a layer of gold foil. It was slowly stripped off. Wherever the golden light disappeared, a bright starlight would be emanated.

Right now, the Great Sun Golden Form was like a sleeping giant that was about to be awakened.

In the face of this Great Sun Golden Form, Zhu Yi seemed to be facing the stars and the universe. The acupoints of the flesh of the Great Sun Holy Man trembled, just like how the countless stars in the universe shone.



Zhu Yi formed a print with his palms and Purple Clouds revolved around the Great Sun Golden Form, converting into the appearance of the Eight Trigrams.

In the center of the Eight Trigrams, the images of Dragon, Phoenix, Turtle and Qilin were formed. Around them, the Essay of the Sages revolved.

The attack of Shi Lin continued, as if it was able to break down Zhu Yi's defense anytime.

But Zhu Yi was unbothered. He put most of his focus on what was happening in front of him. The pressure and sense of urgency that Shi Lin brought to him became his motivation. His comprehension of his own cultivation reached a new high.

Zhu Yi's soul had left his flesh at this point and was injected within the Four Images and Eight Trigrams that were formed from his powers. After that, he divided his soul and his thoughts.

Following that, he did not continue to summon the physical martial arts mantra of Emperor Chen. Instead, he infused the Four Images and Eight Trigrams as well as the words from the Essay of the Sages into the brows of the Great Sun Golden Form.

At this point, he had to use his own powers, otherwise he would not be cultivating the Great Sun Golden Form into his own avatar. On the other hand, his soul could be used by the Great Sun Holy Man.

As his soul entered the flesh of the Great Sun Holy Man, Zhu Yi felt as if he was entering an ocean of starlight. The face of someone subtly appeared. It was the Great Sun Holy Man.

Right now, in this Great Sun Golden Form, it seemed like the Great Sun Holy Man was cultivating his own physical martial arts and entered into a blur and confused state, like an infant. But at the same time, he was continuing to receive the great way of the Heavens and Earth.

Zhu Yi's soul combined with him and his thoughts became a little messy for a short moment. It was almost assimilated with that of the Great Sun Holy Man.

But Zhu Yi remained cautious and summoned the Heavenly Classic of the Way's Virtues. He cultivated the physical martial arts that was left in the flesh of the Great Sun Holy Man.

"I have to thank the illusory realm of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain." Zhu Yi understood. Right now, he was like when he was in the illusory realm, as he converted starlight into his body. But it's just that his soul and the Great Sun Golden form were more tightly linked.

"This is a physical martial arts avatar, cultivated from my own essence." After the whole process, Zhu Yi's soul returned to his own body. After that, he dripped his own blood essence on the forehead of the Great Sun Golden form.

The Great Sun Golden Form continued to remain coated with a layer of golden Buddhist light. But it soon cracked and revealed a huge figure. The facial features of the figure no longer resembled that of the Great Sun Holy Man, but that of Zhu Yi.

Zhu Yi's actual body and his Great Sun Avatar revealed smiles.

After he finished cultivating, his original cultivation realm of the Nascent Soul Stage had now possessed a true physical martial arts avatar of an Immortal Soul Second Level cultivator.

Zhu Yi's soul had completely combined with the Great Sun Golden form. He felt as if it contained boundless strength. Its energy seemed to have changed completely.

The pores around its body seemed to have transcended the barriers of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and resonated with the luminaries in the sky.

The countless understanding of the way of the Heavens and Earth by an Immortal Soul Stage cultivator were all feedbacked to

Zhu Yi's actual body. Some of them were already understood by him, but there were some that benefited him greatly.

"With this Great Sun Golden Form, I can clearly feel that I am a step closer to the Immortal Soul Stage!"

"It's a pity that when I cultivated this avatar, although I used my own powers to cultivate it, my soul completely infused with the physical martial arts mind of the Great Sun Holy Man. This has caused this avatar to be only capable of unleashing the physical martial arts mantra of Emperor Chen. If my powers are unleashed, they won't be fully unleashed."

"However, this is sufficient enough for me."

Zhu Yi's Great Sun Avatar roared and the vigorous strength it possessed was frightening. Zhu Yi released the Sky Revolution and the Higan Golden Bridge. The Great Sun Avatar's energy intensified and it converted into a streak of starlight that burst towards Shi Lin!

Shi Lin heard about Zhu Yi's battle exploits with Shao Qingcheng from Shi Xingyun and the Vivant Joy Holy Man. As he saw Zhu Yi adopt a defensive stance, he did not let down his guard. On the other hand, he became warier.

He did not try to destroy Zhu Yi's defense, but went to cultivate the white jade pillar.

Whatever was the key to solving the problem, Shi Lin could tell very accurately. Once he cultivated this magic treasure embryo, Zhu Yi couldn't do anything anymore.

The black water washed the white jade pillar of the words of the chapter.

The black water continued to ascend the pillar. As it was only a step away from the top of the pillar, Zhu Yi let go of his defense at this point. A radiance that was like a shooting star burst towards Shi Lin.

As he felt that vigorous power, Shi Lin's eyelids twitched, "Why is there an Immortal Soul Second Level cultivator?!"

# Chapter 790: White Jade Pillar Obtained!

---

Just like a shooting star, Zhu Yi's Great Sun Golden Form flew towards Shi Lin. As he smashed his palm down, a loud boom resonated. The entire space was smashed by this palm!

Shi Lin was slightly stunned, "Heavenly Market Enclosure Divine Palm?! Immortal Soul Second Level appearing in the Ying Sea... you are the Great Sun Holy Man, Wang Hao, you are not dead?!"

But he realized that he looked like Zhu Yi.

"You...you cultivated the flesh of the Great Sun Holy Man into your avatar?" Although Shi Lin knew that Zhu Yi was beyond most Nascent Soul Stage cultivators, he was shocked as he saw that Zhu Yi could cultivate an Immortal Soul Second Level Avatar even though he had yet to form the Immortal Soul.

Although he looked like he could only exhibit the physical martial arts of Emperor Chen, his cultivation strength seemed to suggest the rebirth of the Great Sun Holy Man. His powers were not inferior to that of Monk Da Kong in his peak state.

Shi Lin's virtual entity recited a spell and black water converted into a black dragon in front of him, as it received the attack of Zhu Yi's Great Sun Avatar. But its head was easily crushed by Zhu Yi's Great Sun Avatar. Following that, both the hands of the avatar became claws that grabbed onto the body of the dragon. The dragon was torn into pieces instantly.

And on the other side, Lin Feng's actual body exhibited the Four Appearances Sky Formation. The Sky Revolution covered the white jade pillar, and was about to trap the black mysterious water on the white jade pillar, preventing it from rising any further.

Right now, the black water was only a step away from the top of the white jade pillar.

But this step seemed very far away now, as the water could not

inch closer any further.

Shi Lin had the intention to resist the attack of the Great Sun Avatar and cultivate the white jade pillar first. When that happened, even if Zhu Yi and the Great Sun Avatar attacked together, he would be unafraid. But who knew the Great Sun Avatar was too ferocious. If he dared to be distracted by the white jade pillar, the Great Sun Avatar would come nearer and nearer towards him.

Once the Great Sun Avatar came close to him, Shi Lin would be in real danger.

It was an opponent that even if Shi Lin tried his best, he might not be able to defeat.

As Shi Lin thought of something, he recalled the Black River Sword. But he soon realized that there was no more news of the Black River Sword. The Black River Sword did not return any news apart from a very slight connection.

As he looked over, he realized that the Black River Sword was trapped within the Great Boundaries of the Celestial Light and Darkness Mandala and could not move.

Initially, the Eternal Night Demonic Stele and the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp were struggling to deal with the Black River Sword. But now, it was the Black River Sword that was suppressed by these two magic treasures. It was not as dominating as before.

"Prince Jingfang, although I have not formed the Immortal Soul, this Great Sun Avatar is indeed in the Immortal Soul Second Level." Zhu Yi smiled, "As the Great Sun Avatar commands both the Eternal Night Demonic Stele and the Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp, it is able to unleash their full powers."

"Any one of them is not inferior to your Black River Sword."

Shi Lin's heart sank for a moment. He realized that Zhu Yi cultivated the Great Sun Avatar and did not just possessed an

avatar in the Immortal Soul Second Level. He also had a powerful magic treasure with him that greatly increased his powers before imagination.

As he thought till here, Shi Lin calmed down. He was focused on the battle with the Great Sun Avatar and did not dare to be distracted.

And after Zhu Yi used the Great Sun Avatar to repress Shi Lin, he used his actual body to cultivate the white jade pillar.

Fortunes changed. Previously, Shi Lin's black, mysterious water swept Zhu Yi's words off the pillar. But now, it was Zhu Yi's turn to take care of his black, mysterious water.

But Shi Lin's black, mysterious water was extremely miraculous. Above the water, there was a shining radiance. Wherever this radiance shone, the black water was unable to be touched. Even Zhu Yi found it challenging.

"Have you cultivated the power concept of the eternal radiance into your black, mysterious water?" Zhu Yi shook his head and revealed a light spot the size of a piece of gravel. It was the Instant Heavenly Gravel. With the true meaning of the power of an instant, it managed to dissipate the eternal radiance of Shi Lin.

As he saw the Instant Heavenly Gravel, Shi Lin sighed. His last hope was lost too.

He was not the Immortal Dragon City. The Immortal Dragon City could not be curbed by the Instant Heavenly Gravel. But the eternal radiance that he comprehended from the Immortal Dragon City could be dissipated by the Instant Heavenly Gravel.

The black, mysterious water on the white jade pillar was pushed down and the words of Zhu Yi quickly filled the white pillar.

After the words filled the white pillar, regardless whether it was Zhu Yi or Shi Lin, they could feel that the entire Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and even the entire Heavens and Earth was shaking.

Zhu Yi could subtly sense that his own thinking and awareness had infused with destiny. It was extremely vast and majestic.

But this strong vibration of power had fully broken through the barriers of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, revealing it to the world.

Lin Feng's Avatar of Ares had landed on the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and was ready to cultivate the mountain. Suddenly, he felt the vast aura and sensed the concept of destiny contained within. He understood immediately, "Magic treasure embryo in the destiny realm, Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, no, this is a magic treasure embryo nurtured by the Ying Sea!"

As the Master, Lin Feng was naturally the person most familiar with his disciples. Immediately, he could differentiate the aura of the magic treasure embryo. He realized that it caused such a huge movement as Zhu Yi cultivated it to a small extent thus far.

Zhu Yi knew his boundaries. His Great Sun Avatar was used to repress Shi Lin. His actual body had yet to form the Immortal Soul, thus he did not cultivate the magic treasure embryo blindly. He only controlled it slightly, but just through that, he could control the white jade pillar and clear the mountain.

Regardless whether it was Shi Lin, Monk Da Kong, Tidal Sword Elder or the Vivant Joy Holy Man, they could not stop him.

Both Liang Pan and Shi Yu also noticed the change in the celestial mountain. They were shocked, "It is a magic treasure embryo. Don't tell us that the weird combination of the Nameless Ancient Formation and the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain summoned the power of the Ying Sea that resulted in such a magic treasure?"

Shi Yu's face was blocked by the drooping bead curtain of his crown. It was a little dim and things were unclear.

The Immortal Dragon City converted into a light dragon whose ends could not be seen and flew in void space.



Shi Yu's plan was to give the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain to Lin Feng in exchange of his suppression of the Great Zhou Empire. This would allow him to obtain the east territories and resources of the Great Zhou Empire. It was also his bottomline.

But now that another magic treasure embryo had appeared suddenly, Shi Yu had to adapt and change his plan.

It was not greed that blurred his logic. Things changed from being fair to overly unfair and exceeded Shi Yu's predictions.

Liang Pan remained calm and did not seem to be bothered by the invasion of the Great Qin Empire on the Great Zhou Empire in the Divine Lands.

"Shi Yu, there is no conflict between pushing for success and planning carefully." Liang Pan was very mature and said confidently, "The key is in one's powers, whether they are sufficient enough to adapt to different changes."

Shi Yu's expression did not change. He communicated with the Great Qin Empire Elders outside of the Ying Sea again.

In the Divine Lands, at the east end of the Great Qin Empire, which was also the west area of the Great Zhou Empire, a huge golden light dragon revolved around in space. Eventually, it converted into an elder with a python robe. He looked at the clouds above the Great Zhou Empire land.

The clouds changed their shape in space and slowly revealed the facial features of a lady. She looked as if she was a middle-aged lady, but at the same time looked like a little girl who had not grown up.

And this face revealed from the clouds covered half the sky. As she looked at the elder, she smiled, "Prince Gunyang, please."

The elder was silent. At this point, Shi Yu's called for him. The elder replied, "Yun Yuanzhen is here."

After he spoke, the elder did not add anything on. Shi Yu did not

probe any further too. But they knew that the original plan was not feasible anymore."

Shi Yu looked at the Imperial Palace and Liang Pan, "Although Yun Yuanzhen is Yan Mingyue's Master, with regards to such things, Yun Yuanzhen is bound to have her own judgment. What deal did you make with the Great Void Sect?"

Liang Pan answered, "There's no deal. Half of it is Yan Mingyue's personal favor. And the other half is, as you said, Yun Yuanzhen making her own judgment."

Shi Yu nodded his head, "The Great Void Sect wants to keep the Great Zhou Empire and does not want you to lose too much power. Unless you really lose the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, I'm afraid Yun Yuanzhen won't make a move."

After the battle at Xiling City, the position of the Great Void Sect in the human cultivation world was disrupted by Lin Feng and the rest. The Celestial Sect of Wonders, Great Qin Empire, Great Zhou Empire, Purple Clouds Sect, Royal House of the Northern Tribes and the other great powers combined together to deal with the Great Void Sect.

But this was not exactly a harmonious alliance. The Great Qin and Great Zhou Empires were naturally at odds with one another. At the same time, the Celestial Sect of Wonders and the Great Zhou Empire were getting increasingly frustrated with each other.

If the Great Void Sect wanted to reverse the situation and return everything back to the situation at Xiling City, they had their own plans.

This time, as the three celestial mountains of the Ying Sea appeared, because of some other reason, the Great Void Sect would not interfere in this matter. But they were also observing the situation. As long as the three mountains did not land in the hands of the demon clan, they did not bother.

However, when needed, they lent a hand to the Great Zhou Empire. They continued to maintain the conflict between the opposing parties. They had a reason for doing so.

If the Great Zhou managed to obtain the three celestial mountains this time, the Great Void Sect would observe the situation and help the Great Qin Empire. They might even help the Celestial Sect of Wonders which went against them at the start.

They maintained their beliefs, but their methods changed. Whether anyone was their friend or enemy, it depended on the situation.

The Great Void Sect had a plan right from the start. That was why Yun Yuanzhen was willing to make a move. Even the elders from the Great Void Sect adopted an attitude of silent consent.

However, the limit was helping the Great Zhou Empire settle their problem in the Divine Lands. The rest had to depend on the capabilities of the Great Zhou Empire.

Lin Feng stood on top of Mount Yujing, but he remained calm. With regards to the weird movement of Shi Yu and the Immortal Dragon City, he seemed to turn a blind eye.

He smiled, "Comrade Shi, in Xiling City, I used the Heaven-Destroying Sword to help you cultivate the Immortal Dragon City. You also gave me the Eternal Glow. We have benefited greatly."

"Since we have time today, let's exchange a few tips."

As he said, Lin Feng extended his left hand and a radiance flashed on his index finger. It disappeared and appeared quickly, acting out the instantaneous change of time. It was a miraculous way concept.

# Chapter 791: Terms that Can't be Rejected

---

Lin Feng's fingertip flashed with a radiance and he smiled while saying, "The Instant Sword of Radiance swordplay of the Sword of Radiance Sect contains a deep understanding of the true meaning of an instant. But there is still something lacking. I analyzed the Instant Heavenly Gravel and referenced to the Eternal Glow, obtaining some valuable information in the process. I wonder if Comrade Shi will like to know?"

Initially, the Great Qin Empire was prepared to challenge the Celestial Sect of Wonders for the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. But since there was only one of it, it was not easy to allocate the benefits. Lin Feng had a better idea himself, thus no agreement was formed. But now a magic treasure embryo in the destiny realm had appeared. The situation was different now.

Over at the Divine Lands, the Great Qin Empire had no more chance. Even if Shi Yu immediately sent the Immortal Dragon City to reinforce the attack, it would be of no use too. The Great Void Sect did not just have Yun Yuanzhen.

Yan Mingyue and Yun Yuanzhen's actions were in line with the thinking of the Conservative Faction of the Great Void Sect. Thus, if they needed more help, they could borrow from them.

However, because of personal reasons, the Great Void Sect would not take the initiative to attack.

Under such a circumstance, the target of the Great Qin Empire was certainly bound to be the Ying Sea again. Lin Feng had enough reason to believe that Prince Gunyang and the rest were rushing over to the Ying Sea now.

Given that Shi Yu had always been very meticulous, another Immortal Soul Third Level Elder of the Great Qin, Prince Nanming, Shi Zongtang, would continue to hold the fort at Xiling City. But this was difficult to tell too.

To the Great Qin Empire, the ideal result was to collaborate with the Celestial Sect of Wonders and force the Great Zhou to leave. As for the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and white jade pillar, they could each take one.

If they could deal a huge blow to the Great Zhou Empire, that would be good.

But to Lin Feng, he was determined to get both the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and the white jade pillar. However, if he was going to do this, it was a very irksome thing to the others.

Everyone knew that if one could challenge the whole world, it might sound very enjoyable and domineering. But even if he had the power to, if there was no need to, Lin Feng would not do so. That was because it was very tiring. If he could complete the task easily, Lin Feng would not try to make it more difficult for himself.

He loved to reduce the difficulty of the tasks that he did and tried not to compromise the principles of others. He wanted to unite more people and gain more friends. When there were less enemies, everything would be smoother.

He wanted to seize both the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and the magic treasure embryo this time, but he had to pay a price naturally.

The new Instantaneous Glow that Lin Feng cultivated was the price he was willing to pay.

In fact, three years ago in the Greater World, after the Immortal Dragon City was fully cultivated, Lin Feng had already recognized the importance of the secrets of the instance of time, as he faced the Eternal Glow.

The rules that the Great Void Sect ceased to exist anymore. Unless there were weird movements in the Barren Expanses that gave pressure to the human cultivators, there was bound to be conflicts between the different powers as well as schemes to usurp

power in the human cultivation world.

For example, the Great Qin Empire had already been eyeing the art of swordplay of the Sword of Radiance Sect. However, after the battle at Xiling City, the Sword of Radiance Sect got close to the Celestial Sect of Wonders. With the external pressure of the demon clan as well as the internal protection of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, the Great Qin Empire could not make a move so easily.

Adding on with what Lin Feng said, the Instant Sword of Radiance swordplay of the Sword of Radiance Sect was still a little bit off from the requirements of the Great Qin Empire. That was why the Great Qin Empire died down their interest after a while.

Not long ago, Lin Feng consolidated the powers of Mount Yujing and figured out the Instant Heavenly Gravel of the Sword of Radiance Sect. He managed to cultivate the corresponding Instantaneous Glow to the Eternal Glow. Although it was only a prototype, and seemed a little simple as compared to the Eternal Glow of the Immortal Dragon City, in terms of power concept, it was enough to raise the attention of Shi Yu.

When the Great Qin Empire tried to figure out the Eternal Glow, they achieved a lot of understanding on the power concept of time. But they could not unravel the secrets of the instance of time. They were only a little off from understanding. If they obtained Lin Feng's Instantaneous Glow, they did not have to spend so much effort in trying to understand it anymore. The road in front was clear for them to proceed.

If the Immortal Dragon City obtained the Instantaneous Glow, its powers were bound to increase. Furthermore, it would be a substantial increase.

Shi Yu stood above the Immortal Dragon City and revealed a smile on his face. When it came to Lin Feng's and his level, a small hint could lead to chemistry between each other.

With the current situation, the Great Qin Empire could never

cooperate with the Great Zhou Empire. Although there were only Liang Pan and the Imperial Palace now, Zhu Hongwu and the Great Heavenly Wheels were already on the way. They could be here anytime.

As three magic treasures in the destiny realm combined, they might be able to defeat Lin Feng. But after that, when the Great Qin and Great Zhou clashed, most of the benefits were likely to land in the hands of the Great Zhou Empire. As compared to the Celestial Sect of Wonders claiming everything to them, this was a situation that was more unacceptable to the Great Qin Empire.

But if they let the Celestial Sect of Wonders enjoy all the benefits, Shi Yu would not agree naturally. He guided the Immortal Dragon City in a weird movement previously to test what was Lin Feng's reaction.

When it came to Lin Feng, Shi Yu and Liang Pan's level, besides unresolved conflicts between one another, they were also unable to become friends forever. But they were not enemies forever too. There were only profits in their minds.

As long as they had a certain chip in their hands, they could do what they wanted to do and lay their schemes. As to whether they would succeed or how much rewards they would reaped, it depended on whose plan was the most genius and who had the most chips.

More accurately speaking, even if they were arch-enemies that could not resolve their conflicts, there would be certain times when they had to work together.

However, the conflict between the Great Qin and Great Zhou was too deep. They were distrustful of each other to a great extent. They would not collaborate unless it was extremely necessary.

But if there was a better choice, Shi Yu would not collaborate with the Great Zhou Empire.

This point was also recognized by Lin Feng, that was why he laid down his price.

To Lin Feng, Shi Yu and the rest, the best would be for mutual benefits to be reaped.

"You are very sharp. You have come up with terms that I can't reject." Shi Yu looked at the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and felt the aura of destiny from the white jade pillar inside. He shook his head gradually.

Lin Feng passed the Instantaneous Glow to him. This was not damaging to him, as he was just sharing the Instantaneous Glow.

But the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and the white jade pillar had both landed in the hands of the Celestial Sect of Wonders now.

The matter of the Ying Sea had come to an end finally. The Celestial Sect of Wonders and the Great Qin Empire would interact again in the future. With Lin Feng's character and temperament, he would give some welfare to the Great Qin Empire in terms of resources and continue to make amends. But the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and the white jade pillar were the two things that he won't give up.

But to the Great Qin, since they obtained the Instantaneous Glow, this was not a wasted trip.

At the same time, they possessed both the Eternal Glow and Instantaneous Glow. This would enable the Immortal Dragon City to boost its power concept of time. A new abhijna could be birthed, which might not be inferior to the Heaven Extreme Universal Light of Mount Yujing.

However, for the Celestial Sect of Wonders, their powers would increase even more.

But this was the best choice that the Great Qin Empire could make right now. It was better than letting the Great Zhou Empire benefit.



Furthermore, as the Celestial Sect of Wonders and the Great Qin Empire combined together, the Great Zhou Empire might not have just lost the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain on this trip!

As Lin Feng flicked his fingers, the Instantaneous Glow landed in the Immortal Dragon City. Shi Yu received it and the Immortal Dragon City started to shine, as if a layer of light was covering it.

On the walls of the Immortal Dragon City, the radiance disappeared gradually. But this did not reveal its weakness, but revealed a stronger and more miraculous power concept. It was as if a long river of time was bursting forward.

And at the same time, the Imperial Palace exploded with a frightening strength.

Boundless radiance spread and the purplish-golden color dissipated. What remained was only a pure and primitive light.

Inside this light, a huge ball of chaos could be subtly seen. It was extremely unstable and kept on jerking, twisting and changing shape.

An immense power concept that left Shi Yu and Lin Feng stunned was unleashed. In the next moment, a huge spatial crack appeared on the ball of chaos.

As this crack appeared, the immense strength seemed to tear the Greater World into half. The entire space of the Ying Sea jerked, and even the external worlds started to shake.

The earth-shaking strength tore the Heaven Extreme Universal Light apart!

Lin Feng and Shi Yu stared at that crack and shouted at the same time, "Extreme Emperor Heaven-Splitting Mantra!"

At the end of the Primordial Age, the human race rose to resist the demons. Ever since Emperor Shi, they kept on resisting. As the war carried on for many years, many powerful cultivators rose and perished.

It was only till the Great Void Holy Man and Emperor Tai combined forces and caused a destructive war did the rule of humans by the demons end.

That was a true collapse of the Heavens and Earth. The Grand Celestial World was torn into half and converted into the Barren Expanses and Divine Lands. The demons and humans occupied these places respectively.

Emperor Tai also became the last human emperor of the Primordial Age. He was also the first human emperor of the Antiquity Age.

The Extreme Emperor Heaven-Splitting Mantra was different from Lin Feng's Original Heaven and Earth Splitting Mantra. It was deduced by Emperor Tai himself. When the Heavens and Earth collapsed, he witnessed everything and comprehended the powerful way concepts of life creation and destruction. Eventually, he created the Extreme Emperor Heaven-Splitting Mantra.

As compared to Lin Feng's Original Heaven and Earth Splitting Mantra, the Extreme Emperor Heaven-Splitting Mantra was more domineering and destructive. It was also more intense!

Liang Pan did not even need to wait for Shi Yu and Lin Feng to reach an agreement. When he saw the Instantaneous Glow, he made his mind up to regain his movement.

Lin Feng could only give the white jade pillar to Shi Yu at most. He wouldn't give both the white jade pillar and Yingzhou Celestial Mountain to the Great Qin Empire.

The Instantaneous Glow could allow the Immortal Dragon City to be boosted greatly. Although its value was lower than the white jade pillar, sharing the benefits with the Celestial Sect of Wonders was better than sharing the benefits with the Great Zhou Empire. To Shi Yu, there wasn't even a choice he had to make.

The collaboration of the Great Qin Empire and the Celestial Sect

of Wonders was a huge threat to Liang Pan and the Imperial Palace before Zhu Hongwu and the Great Heavenly Wheels arrived. If Lin Feng could cultivate the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain in time, Liang Pan would be in graver danger.

Hence, as he saw the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, Liang Pan did not hesitate anymore. He did not conserve anymore. Whatever price he had to pay, he needed to leave as quickly as possible.

Lin Feng said, "The Imperial Palace inherited the Extreme Emperor Heaven-Splitting Mantra. This is not too surprising. But the Imperial Palace is not unleashing the mantra in its peak state. Not only is the might of the mantra greatly reduced, it is also harmful towards the Imperial Palace."

"However, so what if it's the Extreme Emperor Heaven-Splitting Mantra?"

Lin Feng conjured a spell with both his hands. As they clasped, the Purple Clouds on Mount Yujing revolved and the leaves of the Black Heavenly Treasure Tree shook.

The Heaven Extreme Universal Light reformed again and covered the Imperial Palace again!

And it was even more powerful than before!

Liang Pan had been controlling himself. To guard against Shi Yu and the Immortal Dragon City, Lin Feng did not use his full strength earlier.

# Chapter 792: Zhu Hongwu Who Can't Make it in Time

---

As he was trapped by the Heaven Extreme Universal Light Again, Liang Pan remained calm, "It's a pity that the Imperial Palace can't restore to its peak state yet."

He was in the Golden Hill Grand Pavilion inside the Imperial Palace. Around him, purple gas started to flow. A royal stature was unveiled. Among the purple gas, there was a sense of might and dominance. A human figure that resembled a ruler appeared.

Liang Pan's Royal Purple Gas that he inherited from Emperor Tai appeared. The stature of the Imperial Palace was boosted and the purplish-golden radiance surrounding it became stronger and stronger.

A huge purplish human figure appeared in the Imperial Palace subtly. He looked fierce, as if the late Emperor Tai had reborn.

The immense power shook the Heavens and Earth. The ball of chaos formed from the Extreme Emperor Heaven-Splitting Mantra cracked completely at this point.

The ball of chaos split into half. Each of these broken halves then reformed into a smaller, complete ball.

This instantaneous process re-enacted the scene where the Grand Celestial World split to form the Divine Lands and the Barren Expanses.

Boundless spiritual energy was destroyed and the huge spatial boundaries started to be torn apart.

Liang Pan used the Imperial Palace to summon the powers of the Extreme Emperor Heaven-Splitting Mantra to the fullest. The space of the Ying Sea jerked tremendously.

Void space kept on cracking. Through the cracks, Lin Feng and

Shi Yu could see the dark universe filled with stars.

The Extreme Emperor Heaven-Splitting Mantra tore a huge crack in the spatial boundaries of the Ying Sea.

This immense strength tore the Heaven Extreme Universal Light of Mount Yujing apart again

However, it was obvious that the various light projections on the Imperial Palace were slowly collapsing. It was as if countless bubbles were being popped.

It's a pity that even though the Heaven Extreme Universal Light had been overcome, there was still Shi Yu and the Immortal Dragon City.

Just like an all-conquering wall, the Immortal Dragon City came crashing down on the Imperial Palace.

And Lin Feng summoned Mount Yujing to proceed forward again, as they surrounded and attacked the Imperial Palace.

But at this point, Lin Feng, Liang Pan and Shi Yu felt something. They looked at the sea region far away.

They did not see anything that was worth catching their attention.

But they soon heard the voices of a cicada ringing in their ears.

Lin Feng's pupils shrank and he saw a cicada rising with the waves in a blue sea far away.

That cicada was like a leaf. Even if someone was standing in front of it, they might not even notice it. But Lin Feng could see it clearly.

The cicada was shining with a golden radiance. In the next moment, a young monk in a grey robe appeared in the light. It was the Golden Cicada Master. He clasped his palms while smiling at Lin Feng, "Master Lin, you have really opened my eyes to the world. I am impressed.

"I may have made some arrangements, but I am unable to be like Master Lin and determine where to go. I am sorry for making myself a laughing stock."

"It took me a while to rush back to the Ying Sea, but it was somewhere near here. I believe that things at Penglai Celestial Mountain should be settled, thus I rushed over here. I apologize for anything rude that I did."

He spoke very politely, but his actions were not slow. As he stepped out, he was about to ascend the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

For someone in the Vipralopa state like him, he was not just powerful in terms of his strength. He also had many tricks up his sleeves. Even Lin Feng was slightly surprised. He did not expect that the Golden Cicada Master would arrive earlier than Zhu Hongwu.

This person had the powers and method to transcend boundaries and he even had a pretty crude method of finding a specific location. That was why he was able to rush over so quickly. But as he mentioned, the place where he landed was a little far from the southern region of the Ying Sea and was closer to the north-eastern part of the Ying Sea.

As he returned to the Ying Sea, he felt the movement of the Illusory Sea Tide at the southern region of the Ying Sea. He knew that he could no longer count on the Penglai Celestial Mountain, thus he decided to come over to the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

He had no interest in saving Liang Pan. His target was the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

Before Lin Feng's Avatar of Ares cultivated the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, once the Golden Cicada Master was allowed to ascend the mountain, no one could stop him anymore. Zhu Yi controlled the white jade pillar, which allowed him to suppress the others, but it was useless in front of the Golden Cicada Master.

Lin Feng looked calm, "Master, you have travelled a long way. I believe that you are tired. Please get some rest first."

As he said, there was a sudden flash of radiance on Mount Yujing. The Heaven Extreme Universal Light descended towards the Golden Cicada Master and was about to cover the Golden Cicada Master.

The Golden Cicada Master turned to look at Lin Feng and he said, "I have not asked before, but how many Power-Destroying Catastrophes can you receive, Master Lin?"

As he said, the voices of cicadas filled the Heavens and Earth. A light projection of a huge cicada was revealed above the head of the Golden Cicada Master. Suddenly, a streak of black gas on the body of the huge cicada converted into a black line and shot towards Lin Feng and Mount Yujing!

Five Decays of Heaven and Man, Power-Destroying Catastrophe!

To prevent getting shifted by Lin Feng's Barrier-Breaking Stone again, the Golden Cicada Master decided not to use any abhijnas this time. He just unleashed the Power-Destroying Catastrophe at Lin Feng. He did not care about its power, but was confirming his target.

Wherever the black gas passed, even the Heaven Extreme Universal Light started to decay and destruct.

All matter in the Heavens and Earth walked towards destruction under the violation of time. The only variable was the speed.

But as the world walked towards its end and received destruction, all matter became nothing. Even time ceased to exist. The next cycle of destiny was awaited and everything would restart again.

Without Lin Feng and Mount Yujing repressing him, Liang Pan fought Shi Yu alone. The purplish-golden radiance above the Imperial Palace turned to purple suddenly.

Countless ancient and mysterious runes with unclear meanings appeared on the light projection of Emperor Tai's spirit above the Imperial Palace.

As Shi Yu saw this, he creased his brows, "You are only concerned with the short-term benefit, are you not afraid that the Imperial Palace will fall apart?" He might say so, but if he was in Liang Pan's position, he would most certainly do the same thing.

Above the Immortal Dragon City, radiances were flashing. Suddenly, nine light spots shone. Seven were bright and two were dim.

Above the Ying Sea, an illusory crack appeared, revealing the stars in the universe. The nine luminaries shone together and the immense force supplemented the Immortal Dragon City.

As the two magic treasures clashed again, the Immortal Dragon City was pushed back and above the Imperial Palace, the light projection of Emperor Tai's spirit was almost crushed.

Taking this opportunity, the Imperial Palace converted into a streak of purple light, as it escaped into the horizon.

The Immortal Dragon City followed closely and did not give the opponent any breathing space.

Above the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain on the other side, Lin Feng's expression remained the same as he sat on Mount Yujing. "How many Power-Catastrophes can you take then, Master?"

As he said, the leaves of the Black Heavenly Treasure Tree started to sway furiously. Many of these leaves even fell off from the branches.

These jade-green leaves converted into streaks and streaks of rainbow radiances in mid-space, which revolved around Mount Yujing. The entire Mount Yujing was dragged into void space.

The Power-Destroying Catastrophe of the Golden Cicada Master landed nowhere!



"Oh?" The Golden Cicada Master was shocked. As he looked at Mount Yujing, he saw that it appeared and disappeared in void space. He could clearly see it, but he lost all sense of it.

Once the Power-Destroying Catastrophe was initiated, it was not possible for the opponent to hide in void space to avoid it. This was a destructive power that could end the world and initiated the five decays in the opponent. At the same time, the cultivator unleashing it would also experience the Power-Destroying Catastrophe.

But right now, the Golden Cicada Master was experiencing the Power-Destroying Catastrophe, whereas Lin Feng and Mount Yujing avoided it.

The gaze of the Golden Cicada Master landed on the swaying Black Heavenly Treasure Tree, "It's not the mountain rocks, but the brilliance of that magic tree..."

In the next instant, rings and rings of radiances that revolved around Mount Yujing had disappeared. Lin Feng and Mount Yujing revealed themselves. The huge sword casket of the Heaven-Destroying Sword was erected beside Lin Feng. As Lin Feng tapped it, a ferocious, clear light shot into the skies and the Heaven-Destroying Sword landed in Lin Feng's hands.

The Golden Cicada Master recited a Buddhist chant and the light projection of the huge cicada above his head moved its wings. Streaks and streaks of dark light filled the skies to receive Lin Feng's Heaven-Destroying Sword radiance.

But his path was stopped by Lin Feng and he could not ascend the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

This slight delay caused the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain to jerk tremendously. The originally collapsed Nameless Ancient Formation reformed and was about to cover the mountain again.

As the Golden Cicada Master saw this, he knew that the Yingzhou

Celestial Mountain had been cultivated. The vibration of that power was similar to Lin Feng.

Thus, he quickly turned around and escaped. He did not want Lin Feng to command the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and tap on the power of the Ying Sea to surround him.

At the same time, a light wheel rose from the sea far away. The clouds above the Ying Sea could not hide its radiance. In the next moment, the wheel had already arrived close and attacked the Immortal Dragon City!

Even with Shi Yu's cultivation, as he stood on the Immortal Dragon City and faced this radiance of the wheel, he could not help but feel a sense of death.

"Great Heavenly Wheels...Zhu Hongwu, you are too late." Shi Yu turned to the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. He revealed a slightly complex expression. He commanded the Immortal Dragon City which clashed with the Great Heavenly Wheels.

On Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, as they felt that the Nameless Ancient Formation had reformed, the Great Zhou and Great Qin cultivators also realized that the mountain had been cultivated by someone. They did not dare to stay for any longer. They quickly escaped.

The light wheel gradually shrank and revealed Zhu Hongwu's figure. He dragged the cultivators from the Great Zhou Empire and stared at Mount Yujing and Yingzhou Celestial Mountain expressionlessly.

Behind the radiance of the Great Heavenly Wheels, the Imperial Palace was revealed. But the previously mighty Imperial Palace seemed to be on a decline now.

Inside the palace, Liang Pan looked at Mount Yujing expressionlessly too. "Let's go, Hongwu. We can't handle things anymore."

The Illusory Sea Tide that had been initiated was already coming closer and closer. As the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain came into contact with the Illusory Sea Tide, it would hide itself naturally. Whereas Lin Feng and Mount Yujing could hide themselves in void space and disappear.

Even if they did not leave, Lin Feng's Mount Yujing & Yingzhou Celestial Mountain along with Shi Yu were still able to deal with the Imperial Palace, Great Heavenly Wheels and the Golden Cicada Master. Furthermore, the relationship between the Golden Cicada Master and the Great Zhou might not be better than that between the Great Zhou and Great Qin Empire.

To attack or to spare them, Lin Feng had the power to decide.

"Yes! Your! Majesty!" Zhu Hongwu's gaze flashed with a radiance and he answered word by word.

Although he was determined, as he was powerless to decided, he felt in low spirits.

He labored across half the Ying Sea to reinforce Liang Pan and finally arrived, but everything had been settled already. There was nothing for him to do anymore. All his efforts were wasted.

# Chapter 793: Only One in the World

---

Even if they were unwilling, the Great Zhou Empire subjects had no choice but to retreat.

But this time, their losses were too huge. Not only did they not obtain the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and the Penglai Celestial Mountain, they even lost their own Fangzhang Celestial Mountain. The Imperial Palace had not recovered till its peak state, and even sustained more damage.

As the three celestial mountains appeared, the Great Zhou Empire invested a lot of effort to gain an advantage. But eventually, they suffered greatly. This result was bound to make Liang Pan, Zhu Hongwu and the other Great Zhou subjects depressed.

In fact, as the Penglai Celestial Mountain was used by Lin Feng to snatch the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, even if they got the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, they would still be at a disadvantage.

They had planned for years and made a lot of preparations. They even invited the Luofu Holy Man to help them. But all these were eventually wasted. Since they could not obtain a second celestial mountain, their efforts went down the drain.

Only if they could get both the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain and the white jade pillar could their broken hearts be mended.

But it's a pity things didn't go their way at all.

Zhu Hongwu kept the Great Heavenly Wheels and returned to the Imperial Palace. He looked gloomy, "I am useless and affected Your Majesty's plan."

Liang Pan shook his head and his expression restored to normalcy, "I can't blame all of you. This failure is due to two things. Firstly, news of our control of the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain was leaked. Secondly, I was too greedy."

The Great Zhou controlled the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, which gave them a huge advantage in the mission to obtain the rest of the celestial mountains. But news of this was leaked beforehand, and left the Great Zhou Empire in the limelight. The other great powers were observing the Great Zhou Empire. Under normal circumstances, they would collaborate together to resist the Great Zhou Empire.

And under such a circumstance, the Great Zhou Empire continued to attack. They tried to seize both the Penglai Celestial Mountain and the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, thus giving themselves control of all three celestial mountains.

Liang Pan sat on the dragon seat in the Imperial Palace and sighed, "As I was too greedy, my reasoning was blurred. This is a huge shame."

Zhu Hongwu and the rest of the Great Zhou subjects said in unison, "We are all guilty."

Shao Dongtian, who had also returned to the Imperial Palace, sighed, "If it was not because of the leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders, news of our control over the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain would not have been leaked. If the Celestial Sect of Wonders did not interfere, we could have had a chance."

The East Heaven's Gate had always kept a low profile. This time, for the grand scheme, they revealed themselves. Revealing themselves was an immeasurable, intangible loss for them.

Zhu Hongwu said, "Without Lin Feng, there may be Zhang Feng, Li Feng or any other person. Rather than thinking about all this, we should reflect on how we can do better."

He placed both his hands behind his back. His fingers moved a little, "The thing that you've always desired, I shall give it to you."

Shao Dongtian's brows raised as he looked at Zhu Hongwu.

After the two of them looked at each other for a while, Shao

Dongtian nodded his head, "Whatever you want, I shall give you too."

Liang Pan did not move and looked at Shao Dongtian. He said calmly, "Shao, go back and retrieve some treasures over. Try to restore your Xuan Heaven Seal as quickly as possible."

The Great Zhou lost the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, which meant that they lost their fort in the Ying Sea. In the future, it would be difficult for them to obtain any more treasures from the Ying Sea. At the same time, the Imperial Palace was damaged and required a lot of resources to mend it. But Liang Pan did not hesitate to make an edict to assist Shao Dongtian in restoring the Xuan Heaven Seal.

Shao Dongtian's brows shivered a little. He did not feel excited, rather, he sighed.

But he remained calm on the exterior and thanked Liang Pan, "Thank you Your Majesty for your generosity."

After that, he paused for a moment before saying respectfully, "My daughter's cultivation is poor. She damaged the Diplomatic Immunity Certificate that you gave to her. I am shameless and I hope to request one more from you. I hope Your Majesty can be generous."

Liang Pan revealed a smile on his face and said slowly, "Granted."

The Tidal Sword Elder asked the Vast Sea Swordmaster, "Master, Shao Dongtian is being greedy. If he did not think that the Great Zhou Empire has been weakened, would he have the guts to demand so much? Although the Great Zhou has suffered in their conquest this time, I don't believe that it has affected their vital energy that much?"

The Vast Sea Swordmaster did not reply to the question directly, "Shao Dongtian is smart. He is faster than me, but the East Heaven's Gate is indeed stronger than the Vast Sea Sword Sect by a

little. Since he has already taken the first step, it's not good for me to follow him."

The Tidal Sword Elder felt ridiculous, "Master..."

The Vast Sea Swordmaster shook his head slightly, "Is there any free lunch in the world?"

"Master, are you saying that Shao Dongtian is doing it in an opposite way..." The Tidal Sword Elder was enlightened. He laughed, "He is indeed sly. Is he not scared that the next mission that the Great Zhou Empire gives him is one that will cripple the East Heaven's Gate?"

The Vast Sea Swordmaster shook his head and did not speak, but he looked worried.

Before today, the Great Zhou Empire had been on a rapid rise and kept on expanding.

As the three celestial mountains appeared, if the Great Zhou Empire could obtain the Penglai and Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, they would be able to control the entire Ying Sea. Following that, the power of the Great Zhou Empire was set to rise again.

But that was not meant to be. The end result was that the powers of the Great Zhou Empire fell. This defeat also made sure that the momentum of the Great Zhou expansion was halted.

In the future, the Great Zhou Empire had to be wary of every step they took. Otherwise, if they were not careful, not only would their development be halted, they might even fall. There was no room for carelessness.

How should the Vast Sea Sword Sect proceed then?

Just like the East Heaven's Gate, the relationship between the Vast Sea Sword Sect and the Great Zhou Empire was very close. They were almost inseparable....

Unlike the Vast Sea Swordmaster who was depressed, the

Celestial Sect of Wonders could rejoice.

After bidding goodbye to Shi Yu and the rest, Lin Feng commanded Mount Yujing to transcend void space, while the Illusory Sea Tide was devoured by his Avatar of Ares. The celestial mountains disappeared within the misty conditions of the Ying Sea.

Countless transparent, circular jade appeared and stacked upon one another to form a huge transparent ball-like entity. Like a shell, it covered the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

After Lin Feng cultivated the celestial mountain, he received the power of the Ying Sea to reform the Nameless Ancient Formation.

However, to restore it to its previous powers needed more time.

The core illusory realm of the celestial mountain was restored. This core illusory realm was highly regarded by Lin Feng. Zhu Yi, Xiao Yan and the rest who had entered this realm understood the powers of the Great Sun Holy Man and Hell Shadow Holy Man through the pattern of the combination of the stars in this realm.

And the core illusory realm of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was able to allow the remnant souls of the cultivators that had perished in the Ying Sea to be cultivated into the powers of the stars.

Although Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and the rest feedbacked that it was difficult to deduce the mantras and they were only able to comprehend the abhijnas, and even only part of them, this was a treasure chest that was invaluable.

The bigger problem was that the powers of the stars in this realm that had died off were unable to be restored again. There was only one chance to consolidate these powers of the stars using the remnant souls of the perished cultivators. Previously, in order to crack open this illusory realm, Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi, Monk Dakong, Shi Xingyun and the other battled continuously. This caused



around half of the stars inside this realm initially to collapse.

The collapsed stars would be converted into a line of red light and this light would gather in the heart of the river of stars. This formed the door into this illusory realm.

However, Lin Feng believed that as time passed, there would be more cultivators who will perish in the Ying Sea. Most of the remnant souls would be gathered and converted to the powers of the stars in this realm.

Before Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and the rest ascended the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, and faced the attacks of countless powerful cultivators and time, the defensive mechanism of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain was already very weak. After Lin Feng cultivated the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, he realized that this core illusory realm still had a lot of uses. For example, the powers of the stars within could be released to tackle enemies. In a short span of time, each ball of these powers could unleash the original abilities of the owner of the souls.

Although these powers dissipated quickly as they leave the realm, as they came together, their strength was also extremely significant already.

Besides the Nameless Ancient Formation and the core illusory realm, there were many other restrictions on the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. But Lin Feng had just cultivated the mountain only. There were many things for him to further study and analyze.

In terms of resources, besides the core illusory realm of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, the most valuable thing was that Jade Nectar Spring.

Lin Feng understood the spiritual energy within and discovered that the spring water was indeed very useful in nourishing magic treasures. Its value was significant.

As for the other spiritual flowers and herbs as well as resource mines, they were also in abundance.

Because of the celestial mountains, Lin Feng could also obtain the treasures from the sea much more easily.

"Master, we have reaped a lot of rewards this time." Xiao Yan laughed as he came forward to greet Lin Feng along with the rest. After greeting him, he pointed at Zhu Yi. "Especially Second Junior. He has benefited greatly this time."

Zhu Yi smiled widely. But he was neither proud nor modest, "I have indeed benefited greatly."

His Great Sun Avatar dragged along the white jade pillar and he came in front of Lin Feng, "Master, please deal with it."

Lin Feng laughed, "This is your own destiny. I won't interfere. I will only guide you along, so as to help you cultivate this treasure quickly. It will be good if it can become a magic treasure in the destiny realm in the future.

Zhu Yi blinked his eyes and he bowed towards Lin Feng, "Thank you Master!"

Although he knew that according to past experience, Lin Feng would not take the treasures that they obtained based on their destiny, the white jade pillar was a very valuable magic treasure embryo. It had a total different meaning. Even the Great Void Sect, Mount Shu Sword Sect and the Great Zhou Empire would try to secure it. Firstly, it was out of safety. Next, it was also to ensure that it could be cultivated successfully.

In the entire world, Lin Feng was probably the only one who would leave such a magic treasure like the white jade pillar to his disciple.

# Chapter 794: Rewards Beyond Expectations

---

Xiao Yan and the rest looked at Zhu Yi and the white jade pillar that was being dragged by the Great Sun Avatar, but they were not jealous. But they were, to some extent, envious.

The rarity of a magic treasure in a destiny realm was clear for everyone to see. Strictly speaking, in the entire Celestial Sect of Wonders, there was no true magic treasure in the destiny realm.

In the entire Divine Lands, there were only six magic treasures in the destiny realm that were controlled by someone and could be used anytime. They were the Supreme Heavenly Mirror, Great Void Pavilion, Saintly Celestial Sword, Immortal Dragon City, Great Heavenly Wheels and the Imperial Palace.

Regardless whether it was the golden light ball in the Yin-Yang Sea or the Life and Death Book of the Hallmaster of the Hall of the Dead, or even the Divine Body Armor, they were all only like this white jade pillar. They had the potential to reach the destiny realm.

Just like the golden light ball nurtured by the Celestial Wonders World, this white jade pillar was nurtured from the powers of the Ying Sea. It was also a miracle that could not be replicated.

Zhu Yi had not formed the Immortal Soul, but he had such a destiny. This left everyone in the Grand Celestial World envious of his luck.

Of course, even with the hope of reaching the destiny realm, it did not mean that success was guaranteed. Hope was something that was not entirely reliable.

There were those who succeeded, like the Immortal Dragon City. But there was also those who failed, like the Divine Body Armor.

Zhu Yi could sense Lin Feng's trust and expectations of him. But it was not a pressure to him. Instead, it made him more motivated.

"Master, I will deal with things prudently." Zhu Yi paused for a moment before saying, "I will like to spend some time on Mount Yujing to retreat and cultivate."

Confidence didn't mean one was blinded by it. Zhu Yi obtained permission from Lin Feng to keep the white jade pillar. Naturally, he would not go around flaunting it. That would be a clear sign to the rest of the cultivators to snatch it from him.

Lin Feng smiled, "Zhu Yi, go and figure this white jade pillar. It will be beneficial for your own cultivation."

Zhu Yi nodded his head, "Yes, I understand."

At this point, Jieyu and Bai Guang approached. They greeted Lin Feng and Bai Guang said, "Thank you Elder Lin for letting me follow on this trip. I have learnt a lot from this experience on Ying Sea. But I have not helped out much. I feel guilty."

Lin Feng looked at her, "You entered the core illusory realm too?"

Bai Guang replied, "Indeed. After I entered, the remnant soul I was entrusted with came from a dragon king that had formed the Undying Demon Soul. I have learnt a lot."

"I see." Lin Feng said. "You can retreat and cultivate for a while before pushing for the Advanced Stage of the Demon Lord realm. You can also form your Cosmic Form."

Jieyu and Bai Guang bowed towards Lin Feng, "All thanks to you, Master Lin."

"Don't thank me. This is your destiny. I brought the both of you here to the Ying Sea to see if whether any of the dragon clan members who came for the three celestial mountains had fate with the both of you."

As he said, Lin Feng's Thunder Dragon avatar also came to the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. His voice was sonorous, "But now it seems like I didn't have to do anything."

Xiao Yan laughed, "Master, this time, we obtained the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. Second Junior even got a magic treasure embryo in the destiny realm. We did not make a wasted trip after all. Furthermore, you caused the Great Zhou Empire to lose the Fangzhang Celestial mountain. But it's a pity both the Penglai and Fangzhang Celestial Mountain have gone hidden again."

"I say, if we can get all three mountains to us, it will be the best."

Lin Feng smiled mysteriously and communicated with Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi, Yang Qing and Li Yuanfang using his mana, "Just leave Fangzhang as it is. As for Penglai, wait for a moment, it will be here soon."

Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and the others focused, but they maintained the same expressions on their faces.

After Jieyu, Bai Guang, Kui Cow King and the rest left, Xiao Yan asked Lin Feng excitedly, "Master, your words just now mean that the Penglai Celestial Mountain..."

"Follow me." Lin Feng laughed. The Thunder Dragon Avatar brought to the four of them down Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. They travelled across the Ying Sea.

After a while, everyone felt void space in front of them jerked. After that, the clouds spread apart and a smaller celestial mountain as compared to the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain appeared. It was surrounded by a dark and desolate sea.

"This is the.... Penglai Celestial Mountain?!" Everyone from the Celestial Sect of Wonders was shocked and excited.

Xiao Yan laughed, "Haha, we have obtained both the Penglai and Yingzhou Celestial Mountain this time. Let's wait and see when we'll surprise the others."

Lin Feng brought them up Penglai Celestial Mountain. The raging sea opened a path for them and guided them up the mountain.

In the pavilion on the mountain, a huge figure approached them. He had the figure of a wolf and his limbs were like dragon claws. He also had silvery-white fur and three horns on his head. Around him, purplish radiance flashed. He was Big Luo.

As Big Luo saw Lin Feng, he bowed towards him and said respectfully, "Master Lin."

Xiao Yan and the rest looked at him curiously. Lin Feng spoke in bits and pieces and introduced them.

Although Big Luo was humble and polite, and repressed his powers intentionally, Yang Qing and Li Yuanfang were still able to sense the huge pressure. Xiao Yan and Zhu Yi looked at each other, "Master, he is a little abnormal."

After the few of them were introduced to one another, they became less restrained in their actions. After that, Xiao Yan and the rest went to explore the Penglai Celestial Mountain.

Lin Feng looked at Big Luo, asking while smiling, "How do you feel?"

Big Luo sighed slightly, "I managed to reason out a few of my broken memories and understood some things. But I feel that my doubts are getting more and more."

Lin Feng smiled, "Calm down, don't be too anxious."

"Nurture your soul first. Cultivate your demonic mantras. When the time is ripe, you can reform your body." Lin Feng paused for a while and looked at Big Luo. He said calmly, "Some other day, you can go to the Barren Expanses. Over there, you may find more answers."

Big Luo nodded his head, "Yes, Master Lin. I understand."

After that, he said embarrassedly, "It's just that as I inherit the cultivation manuals from the projection of the Hades Emperor, I am still uncertain of some things even though I feel comfortable."

Lin Feng replied, "More haste, less speed. You are encountering too many deep stuff now. The jump you have to make is too big. There are naturally many things that you won't understand.

"With regards to demonic cultivation manuals, I am not very well-versed in them. But I can go through them with you."

Big Luo nodded his head. His eyes started to flash with radiance. Huge amounts of weird runes were revealed in the radiance. They floated in mid-space.

Lin Feng looked at them for a while and felt that the Thunder Dragon body was jerking tremendously. The demonic powers, blood, spirit and Undying Demon Soul resonated with one another.

"It's only the incomplete Demonic Book of the Heavenly Tao..." On Mount Yujing, Lin Feng's actual body was also shaking slightly. He thought, "I gave up the avatar of the Steel Tree to cultivate a pure demonic avatar. It was the right decision. I have indeed taken a shortcut previously."

Lin Feng's actual body was walking on Mount Yujing slowly. As he walked, he was pondering.

The Penglai Celestial Mountain had many resources too. It was not inferior to the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain. But from what Lin Feng saw, the most valuable thing was, apart from the Penglai Celestial Mountain itself, the combination of the projection of the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl and the Hades Emperor.

Besides them, one of the main ingredients of the Trāyastriṃśa Elixir of Creation, the Curled Condensed Crystal was obtained.

This was Lin Feng's secret. So far, no one in the Grand Celestial World knew how valuable it was to the Celestial Sect of Wonders.

"The Fangzhang Celestial Mountain has hidden itself. But I have both the Penglai Celestial Mountain and the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain in my hands. I also have a little of the Heart of the Sky

Fangzhang Celestial Light I obtained earlier. Finding the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain in the future will be less tedious."

"After these two celestial mountains have been cultivated and controlled, half of the Ying Sea will really belong to me. For those who are plotting against the Ying Sea, a surprise will be in for them."

As compared to what was known in the outside world, the real rewards of the Celestial Sect of Wonders were beyond expectations.

"I wonder if I can obtain the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain before the celestial mountains appear again?"

After a while, Lin Feng stopped and he flipped his palm. He retrieved something and there was a circular disc as big as a peach on his palm. It did not seem eye-catching. It was black, dirty and even a little damaged.

This was something that his Avatar of Ares took from the Void Battleground intentionally.

This thing piqued Lin Feng's interest. That was because in the Void Battleground, this thing was the center of a fight between two parties.

Conflicts arose frequently in the Void Battleground. They were not rare. But what made Lin Feng bothered was that both the parties were under the Hall of the Dead.

One party was protecting the circular disc and was hiding in a wreckage within void space. And the other party was doing a surprise attack. They were ruthless as they attacked. They killed all those who were protecting the disc and snatched it away.

The party protecting the disc did not do anything else except protecting the disc.

And the party that snatched the disc did not cultivate it. They protected it as they escaped, as if they were rushing somewhere to



pass this disc to someone.

Lin Feng rounded them up, but they knew nothing much. They were only carrying out orders. The only valuable information that Lin Feng got out of them was that King Chujiang of the Ten Kings of Hell was the one who gave the order. He was also the person they were supposed to pass the disc to.

Lin Feng followed the clues they give and proceeded to the rendezvous point. But he found out nothing. King Chujiang did not appear even after a long while. He was unsure whether King Chujiang discovered something amiss or did something happen.

Since he left empty-handed, Lin Feng considered for a while before sending this disc back to the Divine Lands along with the Avatar of Ares.

That was because as Lin Feng pondered, he realized that this disc was a magic treasure that involved the reincarnation cycle of life. But it was just that it could only be used once. After it was used once, it would become useless and it could not be used anymore.

The secrets of the reincarnation cycle of life was deep and insightful. Even Lin Feng's understanding in this area was limited. But he could tell from the disc that the last person to used it was of a very high cultivation. His cultivation was probably above the Ten Kings of Hell.

Furthermore, this magic treasure was very ancient and old.

This treasure must have been used more than once. It was also complemented with other types of magic treasures and magic rituals that allowed it to unleash its prowess.

The two parties that fought for this disc were from the Hall of the Dead. This left Lin Feng curious.

His mind emerged with the scenes when he tried to interact with the Hall of the Dead. He had a blurry train of thought. Although it was not clear, it became complete gradually.

# Chapter 795: Returning to Kunlun

---

After Lin Feng pondered for a moment, he had a complete train of thought in his mind, "Oh, if I want to test my hypothesis, it seems like I have to wait for a while."

After keeping the disc, which was called the Reincarnation Disc, Lin Feng retrieved another piece of Voice-Projecting Crystal. He crushed it and Yan Mingyue's voice resonated from within, "Congratulations Master Lin on obtaining the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain."

Lin Feng smiled, "It's a good thing for me, but it may not be so for you."

Yan Mingyue laughed too, "How can everything go according to plan? The error in the Great Zhou's plan is also something we all can't do anything about."

Mount Yujing revealed itself in void space. A streak of purple light extended into the distance. Two human figures landed on the purple light and they were guided to the top of the mountain.

One of them was Yan Mingyue, while the other person was a little out of Lin Feng's expectations. It was Miao Shihao.

What made Lin Feng thought was interesting was that Miao Shihao, who had always detested the Great Void Sect cultivators, was now standing beside Yan Mingyue. He did not look disgusted, but he looked serious. He seemed to be thinking about something and was a little distracted.

After ascending Mount Yujing, Miao Shihao regained his awareness and looked at Lin Feng. His eyes shone, "Master..."

Lin Feng did not wait for him to speak finish and threw something over. Miao Shihao caught it in his hands. It was a piece of jade pendant.

This jade pendant was slightly special. It seemed like a solid

material, but was actually like flowing water, as it kept on changing its shape. At times, it was like a round moon, but at times, it was like a crescent.

A piece of jade pendant kept on transforming and changing its shape.

"Flawed jade pendant." Miao Shihao nodded his head. This was something that he wanted. It was a special resource that was indigenous to the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

Miao Shihao was not too rushed in obtaining it. He kept it and continued to stare at Lin Feng. "Master Lin, I have been looking for you very hard."

Lin Feng pursed his lips and ignored Miao Shihao. He knew that the more he bothered with him, the more nonsense he would come up with.

Miao Shihao was not upset too. He smiled, "Forget it, I shall chat with you later."

He turned to look at Yan Mingyue and his smile disappeared. He said, "You have told me a lot this time and it has indeed benefited me quite a bit. But I shall not thank you."

Yan Mingyue pushed the streak of hair on her ears back and smiled, "You are too kind. I hope you can reach the Immortal Soul Stage soon."

Miao Shihao raised his brows. He walked towards one side and retrieved an exquisite file. He started to file his own nails.

Yan Mingyue turned to look at Lin Feng now, "Master Lin, when the conflict in Ying Sea was going on, there were some changes in the Divine Lands that are worth paying attention to."

"Oh?" Lin Feng asked, "What happened?"

Yan Mingyue said, "The Path of the Heaven-Born, Path of Hungry Ghoul and Path of Beast collaborated to make it seem like they

were coming to the Ying Sea. The Path of Asura, Path of Hell and the Path of Humanity tried to exploit this situation by attacking the seemingly empty fort of the Path of the Heaven-Born."

"Eventually, they all fell into the trap and suffered greatly."

"Now, the Path of Heaven-Born, Path of Hungry Ghoul and the Path of Beast have started to counter-attack. They were already in a leading position in the internal conflict within the Samsara Sect. But now, they are likely to become victorious."

Lin Feng's expression did not change, "The conflict has been ongoing for some time. How did the three Paths fall into the trap so easily?"

"Forgetting the others, the leader of the Path of Humanity, Zhang Enrui, has been involved in countless conflicts. Although he is not versed in gambling, he is also not one to be greedy. How could he have been so careless?"

Yan Mingyue shook her head gently, "I only heard it from my senior. As for the details, I am unsure."

Lin Feng laughed, "Is the Great Void Sect not going to care?"

"All thanks to you, Master Lin, the Divine Lands has seen the rise of a Samsara Sect that is going to be unified. This may not be a bad thing for the Great Void Sect." Yan Mingyue laughed lightly, "As long as no Immortal Soul Stage Elders perish, the Great Void Sect will not bother."

Lin Feng shook his head, "I believe even if an Immortal Soul Stage Elder perishes, as long as the consequence is not too serious, the Great Void Sect won't bother?"

"To be like the past, the Great Void Sect has to wait till they control the situation first."

"This is not purely because of me. You have also contributed greatly."

Yan Mingyue laughed. She revealed a rare cheeky look, "I am an unfilial disciple. I am about to be expelled from the sect."

Lin Feng thought that it was nonsense. For Yun Yuanzhen to make a move, many problems must have arisen.

But it's just that the direction in which Yun Yuanzhen, Yan Mingyue and the rest proceeded in was unlikely to be followed by the leader of the Great Void Sect immediately. It should still be in the midst of testing and observation. Otherwise, the Great Void Sect would not watch as the Samsara Sect became more unified under one rule.

For the Samsara Sect to come under one rule, as compared to the rest of the Divine Lands, the Great Zhou Empire would be the most concerned. Both parties were neighbors. They were only separated by the Great Swamp of the Ancient Regions. In the past, they had quite a few conflicts.

If such a situation in the Divine Lands happened in the past, the Great Zhou Empire would not watch and wait for things to happen.

But now, the Great Zhou Empire was dealt a huge blow because of the Ying Sea matter. The Celestial Sect of Wonders took control of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain while the Great Qin Empire clamped down on them. They could not act as brazen as before. The Samsara Sect had no better opportunity than now.

How did the Path of the Heaven-Born manage to predict the future and know that the Great Zhou would get into trouble at the Ying Sea?

They exploited this time to make a move. There must be some insider news.

Lin Feng looked at Yan Mingyue. She remained calm and her expression did not change.

After they finished discussing serious matters, they chatted

leisurely for a while. After that, Yan Mingyue bade goodbye and left the mountain.

Lin Feng watched as she left. Miao Shihao finally spoke now, "Master, Yan Mingyue is no longer with the Conservative Faction of the Great Void Sect. But she does not seem to be affiliated so closely with the Great Zhou. What does she want?"

"Her, or rather, they want to create a new path between the Conservative and Radical Faction of the Great Void Sect." Lin Feng replied. "In this process, she, the Conservative Faction and the Radical Faction have their own personal agendas and plans. At times when their ideals converge, they will work together. At times when they have conflicts, it depends on whose tactics are more brilliant."

"As things change, the end result will change too. Maybe they are working with the Conservative Faction to suppress the Radical Faction. Or maybe they are working with the Radical Faction against the Conservative Faction."

"At times, the Conservative and Radical Factions may come together to control them. Things may happen."

Lin Feng smiled, "During the battle at Xiling City, they worked with the Conservative Faction to help me restrain the Radical Faction. But in a blink of an eye, the Radical Faction, Yan Mingyue & the rest, the Great Zhou Empire and I myself collaborated to overthrow the system that the Conservative Faction had on the Divine Lands."

"Collaboration and conflict change all the time. Many times, it is very common to see agreement and disagreement over a certain matter."

Miao Shihao gave a thoughtful look, "Yan Mingyue is playing this very big. Even Yun Yuanzhen cannot back her up. Don't tell me there's the Qing Yi Holy Woman?"

The current master-disciple relationships in the Great Void Sect that were publicly known were: Tai Yi Holy Man & Yan Nanlai, Yan Nanlai & Lin Daohan and Lin Daohan & Chen Xingyu.

The Zheng Yi Holy Man passed on his skills to Kuang Heng who passed on to Shi Tianyi.

The Qing Yi Holy Woman passed on her skills to Yun Yuanzhen who passed on her skills to Yan Mingyue.

As for the Xuan Yi Holy Man, his disciples were unknown. The Xuan Lin Holy Man and the Elegant Cloud Holy Woman came from the same Master, the Yan Yi Holy Man. But he had already perished for many years. The Xuan Lin Holy Man then passed on his skills to Pang Jie.

Besides these, the Tai Yi, Zheng Yi, Qing Yi and the rest did not just have Yan Nanlai, Kuang Heng, Yun Yuanzhen and the rest as their successors. But it's just that it was difficult for people to spy on the situation on Mount Baiyun. Many things were kept a secret.

Lin Feng laughed, "This may be unknown. There are still many things we don't know."

For example, was it Yan Mingyue who suggested everything and got the backing of those behind her, or did she follow the wishes of those backing her?

Miao Shihao pondered for a moment and shook his head, "Forget it, let's not think about him."

He lifted his head to look at Lin Feng, "Master Lin, Yan Mingyue told me something just now..."

Miao Shihao became more serious. Lin Feng listened to him as he repeated everything from head to toe. He displayed a look of contemplation too, "This is quite similar to what I expected, but there are also things that are beyond my expectations."

"What are your plans?" Lin Feng asked. Miao Shihao's eyes drooped and he answered, "I shall wait till I form the Immortal

Soul. After that, I will find a successor and teach him."

"I hope Master Lin can take care of my successor too."

Lin Feng nodded his head, "You can rest assure. As for the thing that you are finding, those from the sect can help you."

Miao Shihao laughed and looked at Lin Feng, "Master Lin, I know that you have been missing me all this while."

Lin Feng's lips spazzed a little, "I knew that if we talk longer, you will become abnormal again."

After sending Miao Shihao off, Lin Feng shook his head and commanded Mount Yujing to leave the Ying Sea and return to Mount Kunlun.

On Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, the Avatar of Ares was holding the fort. Whereas the Penglai Celestial Mountain was controlled by the Thunder Dragon avatar. As time passed, the Illusory Sea Tide was about to explode out.

Lin Feng commanded Mount Yujing to re-surface in the Divine Lands. He thought, "After obtaining the Starry Purplish Grass Pill, the ingredients for cultivating the Trāyastriṃśa Elixir of Creation will be all be complete."



# Chapter 796: Cultivating the Trāyastriśa Elixir of Creation

---

Lin Feng and the rest returned to Mount Kunlun. As they arrived, Dao Zhiqiang sent news from the Cloud Mirror City that he managed to obtain the Starry Purplish Grass Pill.

This was a task given to him by Lin Feng a few years ago. Although the Starry Purplish Grass was not like the Curled Condensed Crystal that was produced only in the Penglai Celestial Mountain, it was still a very rare treasure. It was mostly produced in the Ancient Desolate Galaxy.

Now that the Ancient Desolate Galaxy was controlled by the demon clan, it was quite difficult to obtain such a treasure from the Divine Lands. The Starry Purplish Grass Pill was also a rare material in the Ancient Desolate Galaxy. Dao Zhiqiang expended a lot of time and energy, and went through a lot of procedures in order to obtain the required amount that Lin Feng demanded.

Lin Feng looked at the pill in front of him. Without him even summoning it, it was able to float in mid-space, as if it had a life on its own.

The dark purplish surface flashed with countless, thin radiances. They were like small stars that captivated anyone who saw them.

"It's a pity that the quantity is only enough for one round..." Lin Feng was calm as he pondered, "Ancient Desolate Galaxy..."

He kept the pill and his fingers lightly tapped in space. A ball of clouds appeared in his palm. Amidst the ball of clouds, a crystal-like entity could be subtly seen. The clouds gathered and separated at times. When they gathered, they formed the crystal-like entity. When they separated, they became clouds again.

On closer look, after they form the crystal-like entity, inside this crystal, light mist could be seen. It was miraculous.

This was the Curled Condensed Crystal from the Penglai Celestial Mountain. When the three celestial mountains of the Ying Sea were just birthed, before anyone could cultivate the Penglai Celestial Mountain, someone did ascend the mountain for a short period of time and took this treasure out.

According to the knowledge of the Grand Celestial World, the Curled Condensed Crystal was not a spiritual medicine. It was just a decent material to cultivate a magic item. But no one used it to cultivate a pill.

As Lin Feng obtained the Penglai Celestial Mountain, he no longer had to worry about the quantity of the Curled Condensed Crystal. Previously, he obtained the Spiritual Feather Vine from Shen Qifeng. After spending some time to nurture it, although its scale was not that huge yet, it was sufficient if it was used to produce only one type of pill.

Whereas for the Starry Purplish Grass Pill, it had to be rationed.

As he thought till here, Lin Feng summoned Xiao Yan over. After Xiao Yan came, he looked excited.

Lin Feng looked at him and smiled, "What's your reward from experiencing the core illusory realm in the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain with Zhu Yi?"

Xiao Yan laughed while nodding his head, "The physical martial arts of Emperor Chen is indeed powerful. The Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions was derived from the Four Appearances of the Twenty-Eight Mansions. The four appearances were that of the Jade Green Dragon, Great White Tiger, Blood Red Sparrow and the Xuanwu. Each of them contained the changes of seven mansions.

"As I referenced it to my own physical martial arts, I benefited greatly."

Lin Feng said, "During the Primordial Age, there were many human cultivators who cultivated physical martial arts. Most of

the human emperors in the Primordial Age were also well-versed in the physical martial arts. But because of many reasons, very little of the Primordial Age physical martial arts were passed down. There's not much that we can benefit from either."

"When the Antiquity Age came, mantras became more and more popular. Countless manuals appeared. There was only one person who could ascend the throne of the human emperor with physical martial arts. He was Emperor Chen."

"His physical martial arts was unrivalled. Even the Great Sun Holy Man who was his descendant disciple was unable to inherit all of Emperor Chen's powers."

"In the entire human cultivation world during the Antiquity Age, the physical martial arts of Emperor Chen was the cream of the crop."

Lin Feng looked at Xiao Yan, "If you wish to, you can try using our sect's cultivation as the foundation to figure out the physical martial arts of the Great Sun Holy Man during your cultivation. With the rewards that you have obtained, you have the potential to develop further. Interact with Zhu Yi's Great Sun Avatar. This will be beneficial for the both of you."

"Our sect's mantras and cultivation is your foundation. But whatever goes above can be varied. I have always encouraged all of you to broaden your minds and open your eyes up to the world."

Xiao Yan nodded his head, "Please rest assure, Master. I understand."

"Oh, I believe Zhu Yi has benefited from your tips on the spells and abhijnas of the Demonic Shadow Sect?" Lin Feng laughed while asking him. Xiao Yan laughed too, "If we really have say, when both Second Junior and myself were in the core illusory realm, the powers unleashed by the realm might have been even stronger if the stars that we encountered individually were exchanged."

Lin Feng laughed while shaking his head, "To let the both of you battle in an environment where your weaknesses are more pronounced, it's a good thing. The benefits are greater."

He passed the various ingredients needed in the preparation of the Trāyastriṃśa Elixir of Creation as well as the formula to Xiao Yan, "Next, take a look at this."

Xiao Yan looked at the formula of the pill and scanned the contents on its surface. He could not help but revealed a stunned look, "Curled Condensed Crystal? Flying Stone Pith? These are all ingredients for cultivating magic treasures. How can they be used to cultivate pills?"

But very soon, Xiao Yan's stunned look disappeared. He became serious slowly, as well as a little shocked.

He read the formula slower and slower. After finish reading it, he read it for a second time. This time, he read word by word.

After a while, Xiao Yan breathed out. He focused his mind and looked at Lin Feng, "Master, this Trāyastriṃśa Elixir of Creation is not simple!"

"If it really has such a miraculous effect, it will cause an earth-changing impact to the Celestial Sect of Wonders."

Lin Feng replied, "It's effects are indeed true. There's no need to suspect its falsity. One's own cultivation has to depend on himself. The pill is only just a supplement. But when used appropriately, its effects can be witnessed."

Xiao Yan nodded his head repeatedly, "This is indeed the case. I will go back to the Celestial Golden Pavilion to prepare. I have to cultivate this pill."

He was a little excited. He was more excited than when he learnt about the physical martial arts of Emperor Chen from Zhu Yi. He was even a little eager to begin.

Xiao Yan was not greedy for the effects of the pill. He was

talented in cultivating pills and medicine. With regards to this pill, he was also interested. Now that he had seen such a rare and valuable formula, he could not help but want to begin exploring it.

After going through some of the ingredients, he formed a knot with his brows, "There's too little of the Starry Purplish Grass Pill. It can only be used once."

He looked at Lin Feng and his eyes shone, "Master, when everything is prepared, let's enter the Ancient Desolate Galaxy. Even if it's not for the Crucible of the Divine Lands, it's also good to get more Starry Purplish Grass Pill.

Lin Feng was amused as he looked at Xiao Yan. He saw that his eyes were almost becoming like the Starry Purplish Grass Pill, as they rumbled in his eye sockets.

After sending Xiao Yan off, Lin Feng walked towards the Tripitaka Block. He saw that Zhu Yi was still there flipping through the collections of mantra. Just now, both Xiao Yan and him were here as they discussed about mantras. At the same time, they converted their experiences in the core illusory realm of the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain into words in these collections. They further used the special powers of the Tripitaka Block to fill in the parts that were missing.

The remnant souls of the Hell Shadow Holy Man and the Great Sun Holy Man were both incomplete. The amount of information that they could provide were naturally incomplete.

The Tripitaka Block was able to fill in any missing information for certain cultivation manuals. For example, even if only one of the mansions of the Celestial Fist of the Twenty-Eight Mansions was known, the rest of the other 27 mansions could be deduced by the Tripitaka Block.

But for the other physical martial arts of Emperor Chen, if there were no clues, no more deductions could be made.

Lin Feng left Zhu Yi on his own and he tried to use the Tripitaka Block to fill in the incomplete Demonic Book of the Heavenly Tao.

But the result was not positive. After various tries, Lin Feng was able to confirm that the Tripitaka Block could only complete human cultivation manuals. It was helpless when it came to demonic cultivation manuals.

Lin Feng creased his brows slightly and he passed the first and second level of the Tripitaka Block and came to the third level, which was the topmost level.

He picked a bamboo chair and sat on it. He closed his eyes slightly.

Lin Feng used this third level of the Tripitaka Block to comprehend the Two Elements Micro-Dust and the Heaven Extreme Universal Light. Now, as he came up here again, he tried to figure out the secrets of the incomplete Demonic Book of the Heavenly Tao. He referenced to his own mantras at the same time.

After a long while, Lin Feng opened his eyes slowly and stood up. He descended the Tripitaka Block.

"I was right to cultivate the Thunder Dragon avatar. I roughly know how to proceed from now on too. But I always feel like there's something blocking my vision and prevent me from seeing things clearly."

As he pondered, Lin Feng exited the Tripitaka Block. He walked on the peak of Mount Yujing and he thought of something suddenly. "Oh, Hongyan is about to overcome the Void Lightning Tribulations?"

The Void Lightning Tribulations did not care where one was. As long as it was activated, it would transcend layers and layers of void space and attacked the person.

Lin Feng turned to the direction of the Blizzard Valley and saw the flashing of lightning.

At the same time, a streak of dim purple light shot into the skies. It clashed with the Void Lightning Tribulations.

As if it was enraged by the head-on collision and stubbornness of the other party, the lightning became extremely ferocious. But no matter how violent and brutal it was, it was unable to overcome the purple light. In the end, it disappeared slowly.

A ferocious wave of mana was unleashed from the Blizzard Valley. It was followed by a gust of intense energy. It was like a volcano.

From the Inferno Precipice, Heavenly Temple, Nirvana World, River Abode and the Qingwu Pavilion, treasure lights also shot into the skies. A few voices shouted in unison, "Congratulations Fourth Junior on forming the Nascent Soul." "Congratulations Fourth Senior on forming the Nascent Soul."

Above the Blizzard Valley, a purple figure appeared. The long hair of the human figure swayed in mid-space, as if they were raging flames.

After hearing the congratulations from Xiao Yan and the rest, on Mount Yujing, the Successive Disciples exited from their abode and congratulated Yue Hongyan.

The young lady with crimson-red brows and hair clasped her palm and fist in air and bowed towards everyone. She also revealed a smile on her face.

In the next moment, she transcended void space and came in front of Lin Feng. She kneeled, "Greetings Master!"

Lin Feng's ears resonated with a notice from the system, "Congratulations Master Lin's disciple, Yue Hongyan, on forming the Nascent Soul within 50 years. The number of disciples who have formed the Nascent Soul within 50 years has increased to 4 now."

"Bloody system, you didn't include Wang Lin. Otherwise, the

number should be 5 now." Lin Feng laughed while shaking his head. He looked at Yue Hongyan and smiled, "Hongyan, congratulations on forming the Nascent Soul."

Even though Yue Hongyan was always very tough, she was very excited now. Her voice trembled as she said, "It's all thanks to Master's guidance."

Lin Feng shook his head and laughed, "You have achieved what you have today because of your own talent, determination and destiny. I am just someone who guided you."

His right index finger tapped on his brow lightly, and he laughed, "Right, when each of you form the Nascent Soul, I will give each of you a magic treasure."



# Chapter 797: Present Worries

---

After hearing Lin Feng's words, Yue Hongyan revealed a smile on her face. To a Nascent Soul Stage cultivator, an Immortal Soul Stage magic treasure was undoubtedly the most powerful strength that one could obtain. This was especially so for those who were only in the Beginner Stage. Although they were not able to effectively unleash the full power of the magic treasure, it was still very valuable to them.

If used appropriately, it could even be much more powerful than the cultivator himself.

To obtain the magic treasure in the Beginner Stage of the Nascent Soul Stage, Yue Hongyan was very happy. She was also not one to cover up her emotions. She was smiling very widely.

Ever since he knew Yue Hongyan was preparing to form the Nascent Soul, Lin Feng was already thinking what to give to her.

Ever since the Foundation Establishment Stage and the Aurous Core Stage magic item that Lin Feng gave to each of his Immediate Disciples, Lin Feng would ponder over what he should give to each and every one of them carefully. He would try to cater to their needs or try to increase their powers using the item that he gave them. Otherwise, he would try to boost the area in which they were weak in. None of the items or treasures that he gave were randomly allocated.

For example, Xiao Yan was very lethal in his attacks, but he was weaker in his defense.

That was why Lin Feng gave him the Divine Token of the Five Thrones, which was defensively sound. This boosted his defensive powers, to prevent any accidents from happening.

Yue Hongyan was in fact more ruthless, brutal and lethal in her attacks as compared to Xiao Yan.

Technically speaking, Yue Hongyan's talent was shocking. Her physical martial arts could be crude, but they could also be meticulous too. But in terms of style, they were all the same. She was always one to push forward!

As she pushed forward, she would normally be on the front foot in 90% of the cases. If her opponents were fierce, she would be even fiercer.

With such a style, even while her opponents might be unable to handle her, she was also inviting trouble for herself.

When Yue Hongyan fought, there were rarely any survivors. But she also had to pay a price sometimes.

This style was practically infused into the blood and soul of Yue Hongyan and formed her physical martial arts' mind. As she reached this stage, it could no longer be changed. If she really wanted to change, even if she did not have to disable her own physical martial arts, she would at least have to lose half of it in order to make the change plausible.

That was why Lin Feng did not plan to change anything. Since he did not want to change, he had to use some magic treasure to increase her own defensive prowess. This was to make her weakness no longer a weakness, so that she could continue to give her all and clash head on with her opponents.

When Yue Hongyan entered the sect in her Foundation Establishment Stage cultivation, the Aurous Core Stage magic item, the Ancient Jade Armor, that Lin Feng gave to her was a magic item used for defensive purposes.

Although the Nascent Soul Stage magic item, the Golden Crown of Angels and Demons, that was given to her when she was in the Aurous Core Stage, was not purely a defensive tool, it was effective in coordinating her attacks and defenses.

Now that Yue Hongyan was in the Nascent Soul Stage, the

Immortal Soul Stage magic treasure that Lin Feng wanted to give to her followed the same train of thought. It was also a defensively-oriented magic treasure.

But it was not the Holy Dragon Heavenly Armor that Lin Feng cultivated himself.

Instead, it was a magic treasure that he managed to get from the system after exchanging a few valuable resources for it.

The Seven Merciless Stars Armor.

This armor was a magic treasure in the gestation realm. It cultivated the powers of the Seven Merciless Stars, which were the most ferocious stars among all. This allowed the magic treasure to be extremely powerful in its attacks and defenses.

The Seven Merciless Stars were also called the Seven Evil Stars or the Heaven-Killing Stars. They were the luminaries that controlled the solitude and bitterness of life, as well as punishments and disasters. They controlled life and death too.

The Seven Merciless Stars Armor cultivated the powers of the Seven Merciless Stars. As an armor, its defensive powers were strong. But at the same time, it possessed a strong attacking ability. As the attack and defense combined, it would require a powerful cultivator to command it.

Lin Feng eventually decided to exchange for this treasure to give to Yue Hongyan for another reason. That was, as Yue Hongyan's cultivation increased, Lin Feng noticed that she was able to guide the resonance of the Seven Merciless Stars and the other luminaries.

Although Yue Hongyan's current cultivation was limited, the resonance achieved was still weak. But it was a fact that it existed.

As he took into account this point, Lin Feng did not choose to give the Holy Dragon Heavenly Armor to Yue Hongyan. He gave her the Seven Merciless Stars Armor.

Yue Hongyan received the Seven Merciless Stars Armor from Lin Feng. This magic treasure just came out from the system and started to form its original soul. The original soul was like an infant. It did not have any awareness or beliefs, which was the most suitable for Yue Hongyan to cultivate. This would allow them to grow together in the future.

As her fingers scratched across the armor, Yue Hongyan could feel the warmth from this armor. It was as if the armor was close to her.

The Seven Merciless Stars Armor jerked a little. Although Yue Hongyan was only a Nascent Soul Stage cultivator, this magic treasure was very friendly to her.

However, as the magic treasure cultivated the powers of the Seven Merciless Stars. Even if it was newly formed, it still revealed an aura of ferocity.

Yue Hongyan's eyes flashed with crimson-red fire and her killing intent was strong.

She was shocked and tried to calm down her emotions. But she found out that the armor initiated this killing intent in her.

Lin Feng smiled while shaking his head, "Very good, Hongyan, preserve this self-control ability. This is also a form of training for you, which will be useful to you when you push for the Immortal Soul Stage in the future."

Yue Hongyan looked at Lin Feng and bowed down to him again, "Thank you Master."

She bade goodbye to Lin Feng and brought the armor back to the Blizzard Valley. She planned to cultivate the magic treasure and nurture her newly formed Nascent Soul at the same time.

Besides Yue Hongyan, Yang Qing also started to retreat and prepare for the overcoming of the Tribulations of the Yin Wind. He was about to promote to the Advanced Stage of the Aurous Core

Stage.

Yang Qing's accumulation was sufficient already. But because he was distracted from guiding Zhou Yuncong, he remained in the Intermediate Stage of the Aurous Core Stage.

This time, it was much easier for him to overcome the Tribulations of the Yin Wind as compared to the times when he formed the Aurous Core and overcame the Tribulations of the Yin Fire. This left Lin Feng comforted.

Xu Yunsheng and Xu Miaoying followed Lin Feng, Zhu Yi and the rest back to Mount Kunlun. Xu Yunsheng settled his sister down. After preparing for a while, he bid goodbye to Zhu Yi and went out.

He had 10 years to reach the Aurous Core Stage. If he could form the Aurous Core and enter the Celestial Wonders World 10 years later to serve his hard labor, there might still be hope for him.

But if he couldn't, after 10 years, he was probably going to serve hard labor until he died.

But Xu Yunsheng was not worried nor panicky. He followed the steps and every step he took was calculated. He did not remain on Mount Yujing to cultivate blindly. He went out to the outside world and train his state of mind.

Whereas his sister, Xu Miaoying, remained in the Cloud Mirror City. After the appropriate arrangements had been made, she desired to ascend the Heart-Revealing Steps. She hoped to enter the Celestial Sect of Wonders like her brother.

As Lin Feng's Immediate Disciple, Yue Hongyan managed to form the Nascent Soul before 50 years. There were naturally many comrades who came to congratulate her. But she did not cause a huge uproar like Wang Lin or Zhu Yi did in the past.

It was not because her result was not outstanding. On the other hand, because it was too outstanding, no one felt that it was surprising.

After the cases of Wang Lin, Shi Tianhao and the others, the human cultivation world was numb to the outstanding achievements of the Immediate Disciples of Lin Feng.

When would Lin Feng's Immediate Disciple be a failure? When would everyone be shocked again?

In reality, even if Lin Feng had an average disciple, there might be some who would gloat over his misfortune. But most people would continue to observe the situation carefully.

Wang Lin was a good example. Everyone mocked him too early. But they were embarrassed greatly in the end. Every progress that Wang Lin made was like a slap on their faces.

Maybe, there would be one day where Lin Feng's Immediate Disciple could not reach the Aurous Core until he passed away. Or maybe even when he was extremely old, he could not form the Nascent Soul. He could only watch as he grew older. When that happened, news of it would spread across the world.

However, for those who wanted such a thing to happen, they could only wait. It was very rare for something like this to happen. It was so rare that it was practically impossible.

As the days passed, the matter of the Ying Sea was gradually forgotten and the Divine Lands was peaceful again. But it's just that things were still going on behind the scenes.

The Path of the Heaven-Born of the Samsara Sect could finally see the light at the end of the tunnel in their bid to reunify the sect. After the Path of the Hungry Ghoul and Path of Beast submitted to the Path of the Heaven-Born, the Path of Hell and Path of Humanity also started to submit towards the Path of the Heaven-Born.

Only the Path of Asura remained stubborn and refused to yield. But everyone could tell that the Path of Asura was slowly losing ground. The day when the Path of the Heaven-Born ruled the

Samsara Sect was about to come.

The result was clear, but the process was not. The others from the Divine Lands were unable to guess what the process was going to be like.

The Samsara Sec that had been bickering for years was going to be reunified just like that?

If it was so easy, why didn't they do so earlier?

During this conflict, Shi Tianfang and the other Path of the Heaven-Born cultivators did not reveal any special trump card. The only thing that was more eye-catching was that the Path of the Heaven-Born regained some of the secret manuals of the Samsara Sect that were rumored to be lost.

Those who were sharp could tell that this had something to do with the War of Buddha Annihilation under the leadership of Shi Tianfang in the past.

Before the Samsara Sect created their own set of mantras that became famous, it was once heard from the Great Thunderclap Temple that some of the mantras of the Samsara Sect borrowed the teachings of Buddhism. But the Samsara Sect eventually came out with their own ideas, which made their mantras now independent of any form of Buddhist teachings.

Shi Tianfang and the rest might have had some rewards during the War of Buddha Annihilation. They could have exploited the Buddhist teachings and figured out the lost manuals of the Samsara Sect.

But all these did not explain the sudden power of the Path of the Heaven-Born. They fought their way to victory and left most people from the Divine Lands in low spirits.

A unified Samsara Sect was something that the Great Zhou Empire would most hate to see. Although the powers of the Great Zhou Empire were more significant than them, they had many

concerns in different regions. In the west, there was the Great Qin Empire. In the east, there was the Celestial Sect of Wonders which occupied the Ying Sea and the celestial mountains.

The Great Void Sect and the Great Zhou Empire did not share a cordial relationship too. During the War of Buddha Annihilation, the Great Zhou Empire was also hostile to the Mount Shu Sword.

Thus, after the setback at the Ying Sea, the Great Zhou Empire could only keep a low profile. They had to await the right opportunity. As for the Samsara Sect that got on their nerves, they could only take cautionary measures. But they could not do anything.

After Lin Feng's glorious victory in the Ying Sea, he became quiet again. He awaited on Mount Yujing and observed the climate around.

However, to Lin Feng, there was something bugging him.

He was concerned about Wang Lin and Shi Tianhao in the Void Battleground.



# Chapter 798: Going Out Together

---

Because of the special condition of time and environment in the Void Battleground, even Lin Feng would find it difficult to locate someone from inside.

At the same time, the different kind of communication methods seemed to be useless.

That was why there was no news from both Wang Lin and Shi Tianhao as they entered the Void Battleground.

However, two years after they went into the Void Battleground, Wang Lin managed to return to the Greater World from the Void Battleground.

After Wang Lin returned to the sect, he came to greet Lin Feng first. As he looked at Wang Lin, he could not help but laugh.

Wang Lin was like both Zhu Yi and Xiao Yan as he managed to promote to the Advanced Stage of the Nascent Soul Sage. He managed to create his own Cosmic Form.

Wang Lin also revealed a smile on his face. He looked at Lin Feng and bowed, "Master, I am back."

Lin Feng looked at him and sensed his excitement. He pondered for a moment before he thought of something.

"The Nascent Soul Stage cultivator who massacred your hometown folks has been settled by you?"

Wang Lin laughed, "Yes." As he pointed with his fingers, there was a dim yellow soul floating around his fingernails. It was an elder with a fierce look.

Lin Feng once heard Wang Lin and Yang Qing described the appearance of this person. He knew that this elder was the one who massacred the folks from Wang Lin's hometown.

This elder sent his nephew to collect live souls, but who knew his

nephew was killed by an Aurous Core Stage cultivator in the Beginner Stage. He was naturally pissed and he did not only want to kill Wang Lin, he even wanted to kill Wang Lin's entire family.

Eventually, both parties ensued in a fierce battle. They were then dragged into the Void Battleground and a life and death battle continued.

Wang Lin promoted to the Intermediate Stage of the Aurous Core Stage and fought with this elder in a bloody battle. After destroying the Cosmic Form of this elder, Wang Lin was also gravely injured himself. Only after some time did he managed to reform his flesh and recuperate from his injuries, before he promoted to the Advanced Stage of the Aurous Core Stage.

After this elder's Cosmic Form was destroyed, he invited an Immortal Soul Stage Hall of the Dead envoy to kill Wang Lin in the Void Battleground. Eventually, he was captured by Lin Feng.

Following that, the situation became very messy. Wang Lin blinded one of Shi Tianyi's eyes and became the first among Lin Feng's Immediate Disciples to form the Nascent Soul. After that, he managed to work his way up to the Intermediate Stage of the Nascent Soul Stage.

The Hall of the Dead was greatly crippled in front of the Celestial Sect of Wonders. Even King Qinguang of the Ten Kings of Hell was suppressed and captured.

Wang Lin searched high and low for this Nascent Soul Stage Elder. He wanted to avenge his fallen family members. And this elder was very sly. After he knew that he was targeted by Wang Lin and the Celestial Sect of Wonders, he quickly hid himself.

But it's a pity that he was caught by Wang Lin in the Void Battleground. As he was found, he was cultivated into an Unholy Marionette by Wang Lin.

"I have finally avenged my family members. I have also managed

to form the Cosmic Form in the Void Battleground. After pausing for a while, Wang Lin said, "I will prepare to cultivate for some time, to prepare for the Immortal Soul."

"At the same time, I have to seriously think of the last spell of the Four Appearances Boundary Spell"

The spell that Wang Lin deduced after analyzing the Four Appearances Heaven Cleaving Script was different from that of Xiao Yan, Zhu Yi and Shi Tianhao.

Although they were different, on the whole, they were all based on the four appearances. Once cultivated, they might come in different orders, might be difficult or easy to unleash and might be very different in other areas. But all these could be decided by them.

Yue Hongyan started to cultivate the Four Appearances Heaven Cleaving Script in the Advanced Stage of the Aurous Core Stage and she had her own understanding too. Although it was different from Shi Tianhao and the rest, it was also based on the four appearances.

Yang Qing managed to overcome the Tribulations of the Yin Wind. He also began experiencing this process. He had retreated over the past year, but he did not tell Lin Feng anything. His progress was unknown.

Whereas Wang Lin's Four Appearances Boundary Spell cultivated four types of demonic manuals and formed four worlds. The process was progressive.

When the first manual was opened, the first world could be entered. After the second manual was opened, the second world could be entered. This would go on and on.

Before cultivating the Cosmic Form, Wang Lin managed to cultivate the second world out after he managed to cultivate the first world.

Now that he had formed the Cosmic Form and reached the Advanced Stage of the Nascent Soul Stage, he cultivated the third world.

But the fourth world could not be cultivated yet.

Lin Feng advised him, "If you want to find out the last spell, you may want to find the Virtuous Zen Master in the Celestial Wonders World. You will benefit from him."

Wang Lin nodded his head repeatedly, "I have the same thought too. After finding you, I decided to go to the Celestial Wonders World to find the Virtuous Zen Master."

He was a person that moved quickly. After bidding goodbye to Lin Feng, he returned to the Forest Abode to see his disciples. After advising them on their cultivations for some time, he quickly went to the Celestial Wonders World.

"Wang Lin is back safe, but it's a pity there's no news from Tianhao yet." Lin Feng watched as Wang Lin left. After that, he turned his attention towards the Nirvana World. After a few days, Yang Qing finally ended his retreat.

But he was a little startled as he came to find Lin Feng. He reported his progress.

After seeing Lin Feng, Lin Feng was very relaxed as he smiled at Yang Qing, "Don't feel disheartened. You have the right approach in cultivating the Four Appearances Heaven Cleaving Script, but you lack some experience. This is not something that you can complete just by remaining on the mountain."

"Descend the mountain to train. You may gain something out of it."

Yang Qing nodded his head seriously, "I will do so. But before I leave the mountain, I will like to watch over Yuncong as he overcomes his difficulty."

"Yuncong's accumulation is sufficient. If he challenges the

obstacle now, there's a high chance of him succeeding."

Lin Feng smiled, "You can decide whenever you want to go down the mountain. It's also good if you can bring Yuncong along. He also lacks some experience."

Yang Qing smiled widely, "I think so too."

Because of his Yang Incinerating Entity, Zhou Yuncong fought very ferociously. He also cultivated very quickly, but he was under a lot of risks during his cultivation process.

The most risky thing during the initial stages of cultivation was the formation of the Aurous Core. As a cultivator with a Yang Incinerating Entity first formed the Aurous Core, he would immediately initiate the Tribulations of the Yin Fire. It can't be stopped.

Under such a situation, if he can overcome the Tribulations of the Yin Fire, he would reach the Intermediate Stage of the Aurous Core Stage.

But if he can't, the Yin Fire would burn his body to ashes.

Because of this, after forming the crucible successfully, he had remained in the Advanced Stage of the Foundation Establishment Stage for some time. As he followed Yang Qing's advice to cultivate and accumulate his powers, he might be able to overcome the Tribulations of the Yin Fire and reach the Intermediate Stage of the Aurous Core in one shot.

But it didn't mean that after he reached that stage, there would be no more risks. The cultivation path of a Yang Incinerating Entity cultivator had to be treaded on carefully. If a step was taken wrongly, dire consequences would await.

Under Yang Qing's supervision and part of Lin Feng's attention, Zhou Yuncong managed to cross this stage successfully.

As he managed to do so, Yang Qing relaxed and revealed a smile on his face.

Zhou Yuncong retracted his powers and remained silent. But he kowtowed towards Yang Qing respectfully.

As Yang Qing saw this scene, he could not help but think of Lin Feng and himself. He used his hands to lift Zhou Yuncong up. Many emotions ran through him.

As everything was prepared, Yang Qing was ready to bring Zhou Yuncong out with him. As Yue Hongyan heard news about this, she brought Zhao Huan over to the Nirvana World.

"Fifth Junior, where are you planning to go?" Yue Hongyan asked. Yang Qing pondered for a moment before answering, "I am planning to go to the Southern Wilderness. Over there, there are many boundary pathways to the Barren Expanses. The environment is dangerous and complex."

"This time, I am planning to train my mind as I hope to complete my understanding of mantras. There will be a suitable place."

Yue Hongyan said, "I am planning to bring Zhao Huan somewhere south of the Great Swamps of the Ancient Regions. The death anniversary of my Liefeng Covenant comrades is coming soon."

"Their graves are near to the Southern Wilderness. I believe we can go together."

Yang Qing agreed readily.

Yue Hongyan just exited the Nirvana World and saw a youth in white on the top of Mount Yujing who was looking down, seeming a little distracted.

"Elder Kang?" Yue Hongyan was a little surprised, "You are out from your retreat?"

The youth in white turned around. He was Kang Nanhua. He looked at Yue Hongyan and smiled, "Hongyan, you have formed the Nascent Soul too. Congratulations."

Kang Nanhua's vision landed on Zhao Huan and his smile became even wider, "Zhao Huan has also erected the crucible."

"Congratulations to Elder Kang for finishing your retreat." Zhao Huan was also elated.

Yue Hongyan looked at Kang Nanhua carefully, "Elder Kang, you have formed the Cosmic Form and promoted to the Advanced Stage of the Nascent Soul Stage?"

Kang Nanhua shook his head and laughed, "I am not comparable to all of you. I heard that Xiao Yan and the rest are in the Advanced Stage of the Nascent Soul Stage."

Yue Hongyan said, "Eldest Senior and the rest of them are geniuses. Their cultivations are all within expectations. But it's all thanks to Master. Otherwise, I couldn't have formed the Nascent Soul so fast. If we cultivate the same mantras, I will be inferior to Elder Kang."

Kang Nanhua shook his head, "Let's not talk about all these anymore. Are all of you going out?"

Yue Hongyan described things briefly. Kang Nanhua sighed, "I have been retreating all these years. I have not visited their graves for some time. If you don't mind, I shall join you."

Yang Qing and Zhou Yuncong exited from their cave at this point. After they greeted Kang Nanhua, they said, "Since we are moving along the same way, Elder Kang, you can follow us."

"Count me in too." At this point, a voice resonated from void space. In the next moment, a youth decked in purple robe and had a head full of long, white hair, walked out from space. He landed on the top of Mount Yujing. It was Wang Lin, who had just visited to the Virtuous Zen Master in the Celestial Wonders World.

Yang Qing, Yue Hongyan and Kang Nanhua were all a little shocked as they looked at him. As he faced them, Wang Lin was not indifferent. He smiled, "I received some advice from the

Virtuous Zen Master and I'm going to the Southern Wilderness to find something that will be useful for my cultivation."

On the branch of leaf on the Black Heavenly Treasure Tree, Lin Feng watched as they left the mountain. He could not help but shrugged his shoulders, "This group is so huge, which is a little off from my expectations. But it's fine. With Wang Lin around, I feel more at ease with their safety."

His gaze flashed a little. His attention turned to the Thunder Dragon avatar on the Penglai Celestial Mountain. Over there, the cultivation of this avatar reached a critical stage.



# Chapter 799: Actions of the Great Void Sect

---

After the Ying Sea had experienced the Illusory Sea Tide, it returned to its peaceful outlook again.

At times, there would be some humans or demons that would pass through the boundary pathway at the East Sea of the Divine Lands to enter the Ying Sea. They tried their luck to obtain some of the precious treasures and resources.

Naturally, they would also have to face the various illusory realms of the Ying Sea. There were many people who were lost within these realms. Nevertheless, there were still many of them who went to try their luck.

However, unlike the time when the Great Zhou Empire obtained the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain, it was a publicly known thing that the Celestial Sect of Wonders had obtained the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain.

There were those who tried to scheme behind the scenes. But as they considered the powers of the Celestial Sect of Wonder, they could only repress their ideas and change to an attempt to make a deal with the Celestial Sect of wonders.

Lin Feng and the Celestial Sect of Wonders obtained the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, but they were able to unearth more than just the resources of the mountain. At the same time, they could overlook many of the realms in the Ying Sea and locate treasures within the Ying Sea. It was definitely much easier for them as compared to the others.

And it was only after controlling the mountain did Lin Feng roughly estimate how much benefits did the Great Zhou Empire reap from the Ying Sea after they obtained the Fangzhang Celestial Mountain.

As they accumulated for days and months, regardless whether it

was in terms of quantity or quality, there was no room for underestimation.

However, everyone only knew that he obtained the Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, but they did not realize that he got the Penglai Celestial Mountain too.

Amidst the thick clouds in the Ying Sea, Lin Feng's Thunder Dragon avatar sat in the pavilion on the Penglai Celestial Mountain, as he cultivated.

The Thunder Dragon avatar revealed its real form and converted into a purple-scales celestial dragon that was more than a thousand meters long. The whole body of the dragon was flashing with lightning.

Although the avatar revealed its true form, the pavilion that he was in did not seem to be too narrow. As space overlapped, it expanded as if there were no boundaries.

The Thunder Dragon clan cultivated the Eight Barrens Divine Lightning. It was around as powerful as the Chaos Cave Saint-Slaying Thunderbolt of Emperor Tai and the Great Way of the Nine Heavens Divine Thunder of the Thunder Lord.

Opposite the Thunder Dragon avatar, it was Big Luo, who had temporarily converted the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl into a demonic body.

Right now, Big Luo's body was shining with streaks and streaks of radiances. They gathered to form a purple light beam, which dragged his body up.

Countless ancient, mysterious and illegible words also surfaced in the beam of light.

Every word seemed to contain a deep and mysterious concept. As the words gathered together, they achieved resonance with the Heavens and Earth.

Through Lin Feng's guidance and Big Luo's own comprehension,

the entity formed from the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl was able to maintain its form for a longer time.

Lin Feng could slightly feel that as Big Luo cultivated on and on, the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl was also getting stronger day by day.

"Oh?" Lin Feng and Big Luo paused in their actions.

Big Luo revealed a surprised look on his face, "Master Lin, there is something weird going on with the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl."

Lin Feng nodded his head, "Cancel out the change that is going on with the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl and return it to its original state."

"Yes, Master Lin." Big Luo closed his eyes and his body jerked a little. A huge amount of light started to shine upwards from his body.

His body slowly converted into a ball of golden fog. Within the golden fog, there was the flashing of boundless purple radiance.

In the next moment, the golden fog started to gather towards the center. A huge treasure pearl surfaced. After that, the golden fog was absorbed into the treasure pearl.

Lin Feng and the soul of Big Luo quietly sensed the changes in the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl.

In their minds, the same image arose.

There was a white sea of clouds. Streaks and streaks of radiances shot out from the sea of clouds. They were very eye-catching and they intersected in the skies.

The streaks of radiance seemed to form the structure of the principles of the Great Tao in the Grand Celestial World. As the projection fell, it left everyone awed by it.

But Lin Feng could subtly feel that he had not enter the structure.

He was not even at the opening of the structure. He could not touch it nor see it.

Beneath that sea of clouds, the true secrets seemed to have been hidden.

As Lin Feng looked over, his pupils shrank. That was because he could subtly see a residence and a huge door in the deep ends of the sea of clouds.

Lin Feng felt that this scene was very familiar.

He reacted quickly and searched his own memory. He finally recalled that this happened when he first came to the Grand Celestial World, as he went to the Great Swamps of the Ancient Region and first met Kang Nanhua and Yue Hongyan.

He had not even established his foundation then and was only a Qi Cultivation Stage cultivator.

As he first met Kang Nanhua, he used the stone flute of Long Yue to help Kang Nanhua recover from his old injury. During that time, the stone flute projected an illusory realm. The image that he saw in that realm was different than what he was seeing now. But there was a slight similarity. The similarity laid in the residence and huge door that he was seeing now.

Lin Feng still thought that this was the residence of some powerful cultivator. But now it seemed like it was not so simple.

"This place has something to do with the Royal Hades' Region?" Lin Feng was a little surprised. "Otherwise, the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl would not have formed a connection with this place."

"Interesting. What exactly is this place? The Great Void Sect misses this place and it also has a connection with the demon clan."

Lin Feng pondered in his mind and thought of another question soon. "The Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl had not experienced such a weird change before. I have also never used the stone flute and stone stairs of the Great Void Sect to make contact with this

pearl before."

"Then, the only possibility is that the shining white sea of clouds experienced a change, which initiated its connection with the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl, which caused this movement in the Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl."

Lin Feng closed his eyes, "Let's assume that shining sea of clouds and that door are just like the Penglai Celestial Mountain, as they only have a connection with the Hades Emperor and have nothing to do with the Hades Tribe."

"At the same time, their connection with the Hades Emperor only exists in this Heavenly Oyster's Golden Pearl. It probably has no connection to the magic treasures that the Hades Emperor left behind. Now, after all these, we can deduce that the factor that caused this change in the sea of clouds is probably the Great Void Sect..."

This was a pure guess and deduction. There was no corroborating evidence. But Lin Feng's intuition told him that this deduction was accurate.

With his current powers, when ideas flowed in his mind, they were usually not just because of his gut feeling. Rather, his mind had some form of connection with the Heavens and Earth. Thus, it was probably a change in the Heavens and Earth that caused this feeling in him, which gave him the intuition.

Even if it was not entirely accurate, there was a high chance there might be some connection. It was not out of nothing.

After breathing, Lin Feng opened his eyes again and he became deep in thought again.

At the same time, the mountain of the Great Void Sect was still surrounded by clouds, causing it to be hidden. It was not easy for others to spy on them.

The average Great Void Sect disciples were going about their

routines normally.

But on the top of the mountain, there was a simple bamboo house which formed a ring shape. But its center was empty.

At this point, above the empty ground, there were a few people standing. They formed a circle and watched the ground beneath them, which was projecting a gentle ray into the sky.

These people looked very calm and their surrounding auras were not obvious, as if they were normal people.

That gentle ray was not eye-catching too. It might not even have been noticed by people if they were not observant.

But if there were others who saw this people around, they would be shocked.

One of them, who was standing on the most outer circumference of the circle, was Lin Daohan.

In front of him, there was a youth who was not much older who was standing in front of him. He had long, black hair, but his two streaks of fringe were white like snow.

He was Yan Nanlai, Lin Daohan's Master.

Beside Yan Nanlai, there was lady in white. She wore a smile on her lips and her facial features were charming. She had the style of a mature lady, but at the same time, she was like a little girl who had not grown up.

A member of the Supreme Elder Council of the Great Void Sect, Yun Yuanzhen.

Beside Yan Nanlai and Yun Yuanzhen, there were a man and a lady. The man wore a gentle smile on his face, whereas the lady had a fierce look on her face.

Member of the Supreme Elder Council of the Great Void Sect, Cai Fengzhou.

Member of the Supreme Elder Council of the Great Void Sect, Yu

Yuan Holy Woman.

Opposite Yan Nanlai and the rest, there were two more people. One of them was an elder in white whose hair was like snow. He was the Zheng Yi Holy Man.

Beside the Zheng Yi Holy Man, there was a lady who looked calm and a little indifferent. She looked younger than Yun Yuanzhen and the Yu Yuan Holy Woman. But as the both of them faced her, they were respectful.

She was the same seniority level of the Zheng Yi Holy Man and was the Master of Yun Yuanzhen & Grandmaster of Yan Mingyue, the Qing Yi Holy Woman.

Beside the Qing Yi Holy Woman, there was a middle-aged man. He had rich emotions buried in his eyes, as if he contained the emotions of all life. He was the Xuan Lin Holy Man.

At this point, he extended his right hand and there were mysterious runes flashing in his palm.

Yun Yuanzhen looked at the Xuan Lin Holy Man and smiled, "Besides Elder Tai Yi, you are the one with the deepest understanding of the secrets of the Heavens."

Xuan Lin Holy Man nodded his head and did not speak. Opposite him, there was an elder with a friendly look. But his eyes were closed, as if he had no vision.

But in the entire Grand Celestial World, no one dared to underestimate him. That was because he was the previous leader of the Great Void Sect, Yan Nanlai's Master, the strongest cultivator in the Great Void Sect, the Tai Yi Holy Man.

The Tai Yi Holy Man also extended his right hand and there were also mysterious runes that surged in his palm non-stop. They resonated with the Xuan Lin Holy Man.

If anyone who was aware of the background of the Great Void Sect saw this scene, he was bound to be astonished.

That was because these people were the powerful cultivators in the Great Void Sect who were responsible for most of the huge decisions of the Great Void Sect. Except for a few who could not be around as they were tied down by other things, those who were supposed to be here were here.

At this point, all of them had the Xuan Lin Holy Man and the Tai Yi Holy Man as their center. Yan Nanlai, the Zheng Yi Holy Man, Qing Yi Holy Man, Yun Yuanzhen and the rest started to flash with radiances on their bodies. As these radiances gathered, they converted into the gentle ray that shot into the sky.



# Chapter 800: Tenth Heavenly Palace

---

Many of the powerful cultivators from the Great Void Sect gathered together. Their powers were unrivalled. They formed a dim ray that shot into the sky.

This ray was not eye-catching, but it opened a hole in void space. In the layers and layers of void space, a huge and illusory light ball appeared.

Nine different illusory realms could be seen from the light ball. Each successive realm was higher than the preceding realm. Pleasant celestial singing voices surrounded these realms, as if there was a celestial choir preaching the principles of the Great Tao.

In the lowest realm, there was boundless light shining. There seemed to be a heavenly door that was opening slowly.

This door revealed a mysterious and miraculous feeling. It was like the beginning point of countless mantras and spells in the universe. If one could enter the opening of this door, his path of cultivation would be smooth.

Next, the second realm was a pitch-dark void space. There were countless stars.

Fog expanded in all directions and the countless stars gathered to shine on the Heavens and Earth. They subtly combined with the stars in the skies.

There was nothing special in the third realm. There was only a huge crack in void space. But void space was not filled with a darkness just like how it was when a normal cultivator broke through it. On the other hand, a blinding white light shone out of it.

The crack twisted and turned, and dragged everything around into it. The two sides of the cracks squeezed towards the center.

This was the result as the boundaries of two worlds exhibited the same effect. The Greater World seemed to be on the verge of being torn apart.

The fourth realm was a vast world. It was boundless, but it seemed to be on the verge of collapse.

As if it was a huge hand that opened into a palm, it covered the skies.

In a layer of clouds in the fifth realm, golden lightning rays twisted and rumbled. Countless lightning dragons flew around the clouds, but they did not just reveal a normal lightning essence and energy. They seemed to be filled with spirituality as well.

In the sixth realm, amidst the white clouds, golden light flashed. The city walls formed a huge city outline, as if there was a divine, celestial city, which was very majestic.

Inside this city, there was a strong aura of invincibility and immovability.

Above the city, in the seventh realm, there were six light rings which were yet to form circles. Each of them did not seem big, but on closer look, they seemed to form a world on their own. Each of these independent worlds had their own special characteristics.

The six worlds gathered to form a circle and they supported the eighth realm. In the eighth realm, there were white clouds all around and golden light flashed. Amidst the white clouds and golden light, there seemed to be countless human figures who were singing together.

The pleasant singing voices that came from the light ball originated from this eighth realm.

The ninth realm, which was also the highest, did not seem to have anything that was visible.

There was only a dim radiance. It was not bright, not eye-catching, not majestic and not awe-inspiring. As it reached one's

eyes, one could see nothing but this radiance.

This radiance could not be described. It was boundless, but could not be seen through.

These nine realms were the Nine Heavenly Palaces of the Great Void Sect. Each of these palaces was actually independent alternate plane of space. Since immemorial, they have created many legends and captivated the hearts of many.

But right now, above the glorious ninth realm, it continued to extend upwards. The outline of it could be briefly seen, but it was unclear. But one could observe that there was indeed another realm that existed above!

Even in the Great Void Sect, there were barely anyone who knew about the Tenth Heavenly Palace!

The long-standing definition of the Nine Heavens in the Divine Lands included the Central Jun Heaven, Eastern Cang Heaven, Northeastern Min Heaven, Northern Xuan Heaven, Northwestern You Heaven, Western Yuan Heaven, Southwestern Zhu Heaven, Southern Yan Heaven and the Southeastern Yang Heaven. But the Great Void Sect had another definition.

In the Nine Heavens, the first referred to the Zhong Heaven, second referred to the Xian Heaven, third referred to the Cong Heaven, fourth referred to the Geng Heaven, fifth referred to the Zui Heaven, sixth referred to the Kuo Heaven, seventh referred to the Xian Heaven, eighth referred to the Shen Heaven and the ninth referred to the Cheng Heaven.

The ninth heaven was the limit, but there was a place beyond the limit too. Beyond the Heavens lay the Great Tao. The Great Tao was boundless and had no limits to its brilliance.

And in the lineage of the Great Void sect, above the Nine Heavenly Palaces, the Tenth Heavenly Palace was where the Great Tao was at.

The Tenth Heavenly Palace, realm beyond the Heavens!

There were rumors that posited that the Great Void Holy Man, the founder of the Great Void Sect, achieved the Great Tao in the realm beyond the Heavens. Eventually, he formed the foundation of the Great Void Sect and the realm beyond the Heavens became the invincible holy ground of the Great Void Sect. In the time that passed, all of this was passed down, which created the countless powerful cultivators in the Great Void Sect.

However, around a hundred thousand years ago, this invincible realm was sealed and no one could enter anymore.

After this, many Great Void Sect Elders tried to reopen this realm. They tried many times and thought of many ways of doing so.

The stone flute and stone stairs were all products of the research to open this realm.

And now, under the combined powers of the Great Void Sect Elders, this realm was finally opened again.

"Previously, the Luofu Holy Man passed news that the Hades Tribe has re-surfaced and re-initiated the opportunity to open the realm beyond the Heavens. The time has finally arrived." The Tai Yi Holy Man closed his eyes and lifted his head up. It was as if he was "looking" at the light projection in void space.

Everyone present was quiet. A hundred thousand years ago, because of the Hades Emperor, the realm beyond the Heavens was sealed.

Whereas the Tai Yi Holy Man was injured during the War Between the Two Worlds because of him too.

The Tai Yi Holy Man had already cultivated his flesh into his Immortal Soul and stripped himself of his flesh. A normal injury would not be able to make him seem like he was blind.

But during the war, although the Tai Yi Holy Man killed the

Hades Emperor using the Supreme Heavenly Mirror, his own cultivation was also severely damaged by the Hades Emperor. This caused him to look blind.

Cai Fengzhou spoke, "The realm beyond the Heavens has experienced such a huge change, although it has reopened, it will be different when we enter as compared to a hundred thousand years ago."

"Losing the stone flute is still fine. But without the stone stairs, if we want to ascend to the realm, we have to waste a lot of effort."

Yan Nanlai said, "Anyway, the stone stairs only allows one person to enter the realm. If we use another method, the price to pay may be more, but there can be more of us entering the realm."

"This time, we are entering the realm beyond the Heavens to remove any changes made by the Heavenly Sea Hades, so that the realm can return to its original state."

He turned to look at the Tai Yi Holy Man, Zheng Yi Holy Man and the Qing Yi Holy Woman, "Elder Xuanyi has just overcome the Five Decays Catastrophe and is recuperating now. Although restoring the realm beyond the Heavens is important, we must also prevent any changes in the Greater World."

"This time, among the three of you, one of you have to at least stay to hold the fort on Mount Baiyun."

The Tai Yi Holy Man looked at the Qing Yi Holy Woman, "Junior Qing Yi, I will need you to do so. Both Zheng Yi and I will go up to the realm."

To restore the realm beyond the Heavens, the Tai Yi Holy Man had to be there for sure. One of the other two also had to be present to coordinate with the Tai Yi Holy Man.

After hearing Tai Yi Holy Man's arrangement, the Zheng Yi Holy Man nodded his head with a peaceful expression.

As the Qing Yi Holy Woman heard this, she lifted her head and

looked at the Tai Yi Holy Man. He had a warm smile. Although his eyes were closed, he seemed to have a sharp gaze that saw right through her.

The Qing Yi Holy Woman nodded her head lightly, "Please rest assure, Senior."

The Tai Yi Holy Man "looked" at the Xuan Lin Holy Man and the others, "Xuan Lin, Yu Yan, Fengzhou, Yuanzhen, the four of you shall follow me and Zheng Yi. Daohan, come along too."

The Xuan Lin Holy Man, Yu Yan Holy Man, Cai Fengzhou and Yun Yuanzhen all said in unison, "Yes, Elder Uncle."

Lin Daohan also bowed towards him respectfully, "Yes, Grandmaster."

The Tai Yi Holy Man nodded his head, "Junior Zheng Yi and Xuan Lin, we shall start."

As he said, he waved his hand in space. Streaks and streaks of flowing radiances appeared. They converted into a huge light ball in space. This light ball divided into nine different parts. From the looks of it, it was similar to the Nine Heavenly Palace, but it was just more illusory.

The Zheng Yi Holy Man lifted his palm up. White clouds gathered and converted into a mighty mountain. This mountain combined with the light ball of the Tai Yi Holy Man.

The spell in the hands of the Xuan Lin Holy Man changed. He floated in space and flew towards the sky. In mid-space, his Immortal Soul shook a little and changed its appearance, but did not reveal the avatar. Rather, his entire body became like light and converted into the appearance of a stone stairs.

The Tai Yi Holy Man and the Zheng Yi Holy Man supplemented the stone stairs with their powers. The stairs landed on the top of the Nine Heavenly Palaces, combining with the dim radiance on the ninth realm, forming a light bridge. After that, the ridge

extended to the Tenth Heavenly Palace.

Yan Nanlai, the Qing Yi Holy Woman, Yun Yuanzhen, Yu Yan Holy Man and Cai Fengzhou each cultivated a talisman. Each of these talismans converted into radiances.

These radiances were not bright or blinding, but they seemed to contain everything in the world.

From the looks of it, it was similar to the radiance on the ninth realm.

Under the support of these five radiances, the light bridge that was formed extended even more.

At this moment, the celestial voices started to quieten down. The clouds also disappeared gradually. Void space gradually became void and the skies became a miraculous concept that was huge but formless.

At this point, the Nine Heavenly Palaces seemed to connect with the great way of the Heavens and Earth and overlooked the Greater World.

As the Tai Yi Holy Man pointed, a piece of jade pendant flew out. This jade pendant converted into a formless radiance in space and infused with the light bridge of the Xuan Lin Holy Man. The surface of the light bridge was like a ripple, as it flickered a little. The radiance of the bridge dissipated and the entire bridge lost its shape too. It was as if the entire Heavens and Earth had disappeared.

But as the light bridge infused with that void concept, at the end of the light bridge in the deep ends of void space, a figure of a door appeared gradually.

The Tai Yi Holy Man smiled while saying, "Let's go."

He immediately ascended up the Nine Heavenly Palaces. There was still no flow of aura around him. It was as if he was a normal, blind elder.

But as he walked up, he crossed a Heavenly Palace and an alternate plane of space.

As he walked for nine steps, he had already landed on the radiance on the ninth realm. As he made his tenth step, he ascended the formless light bridge and walked towards the opening of the door.

The rest did not even discuss and followed behind the Tai Yi Holy Man under his leadership. They followed the Nine Heavenly Palaces up.

In an instant, only Yan Nanlai and the Qing Yi Holy Woman were left on the top of Mount Baiyun. They looked at the Tai Yi Holy Man and the rest. Yan Nanlai opened his mouth and said, "The leader of the Celestial Sect of Wonders should sense it too?"



# Table of Contents

[History's Number 1 Founder](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 701: Fireproof! Theft-proof! Lolicon-proof!](#)

[Chapter 702: Young Man, Your Script Was Wrong Since The Very Start](#)

[Chapter 703: Tearful Chu Yang](#)

[Chapter 704: A Successful Conclusion to the Spiritual Conference](#)

[Chapter 705: A Wild Hero](#)

[Chapter 706: Internal Daoist Naming Order](#)

[Chapter 707: First Disciple](#)

[Chapter 708: Let Me Show You the Way](#)

[Chapter 709: Scapegoat!](#)

[Chapter 710: Let's See How You Escape!](#)

[Chapter 711: Ready to Move Out!](#)

[Chapter 712: Go Up Righteously and Ask](#)

[Chapter 713: We Are Here for Her](#)

[Chapter 714: Heart Clear As Mirror, Sensitive To All Changes](#)

[Chapter 715: Our Founder Was Great Too](#)

[Chapter 716: A Stunning Move!](#)

[Chapter 717: An Illegal Occupier](#)

[Chapter 718: Biting the Hand that Once Fed You](#)

[Chapter 719: Utter Humiliation](#)

[Chapter 720: Easily Suppressing An Immortal Soul Stage Cultivator](#)

[Chapter 721: Where Does the Path Go?](#)

[Chapter 722: A Mortal Cannot Comprehend the Wonders of Fangzhang](#)

[Chapter 723: No Road Above, No Road Below](#)

[Chapter 724: Leaving Easily Like This](#)

[Chapter 725: You Lay the Rules of the Game, I'll Defeat It](#)

[Chapter 726: More Discoveries](#)

[Chapter 727: Unsuitable To Be Judged With The Standard System Of Judgment](#)

[Chapter 728: Capturing The Demon And Obtain The Pill](#)

[Chapter 729: With Great Waves, The Mystical Mountains Revealed Themselves Before Their Time!](#)

[Chapter 730: Preparations Are Important](#)

[Chapter 731: The Marquis of Jinghuan's List](#)

[Chapter 732: A Sudden Change Of Events](#)

[Chapter 733: A “Fed” Pig!](#)

[Chapter 734: Naked Pig](#)

[Chapter 735: Yin Yang Burning Heavens, Four-Colored Fire Lotus!](#)

[Chapter 736: Burning Heavens and Blazing Oceans, Nothing Remains!](#)

[Chapter 737: Spoils Of War](#)

[Chapter 738: The Most Substantial Factor](#)

[Chapter 739: The Thunderstorm Is Coming](#)

[Chapter 740: Rebirth!](#)

[Chapter 741: The Key That Can Solve A Lot Of Our Problems](#)

[Chapter 742: Half-Master](#)

[Chapter 743: Yingzhou Celestial Mountain, Green Glass Jade Stand](#)

[Chapter 744: Archenemies Are Bound To Cross Paths](#)

[Chapter 745: Issuing The Challenge](#)

[Chapter 746: Celestial True Spell of the Nine Planets](#)

[Chapter 747: Releasing the Ultimate Move on Sight](#)

[Chapter 748: No Zuo No Die](#)

[Chapter 749: Intimidation](#)

[Chapter 750: Four Appearances Sky Formation](#)

[Chapter 751: The Immortal Soul Stage Cultivator Almost Died From Anger](#)

[Chapter 752: Sky Revolution and Essay of the Sages](#)

[Chapter 753: A Good Stepping Stone](#)

[Chapter 754: A Voracious Appetite](#)

[Chapter 755: The Gift of the Gap](#)

[Chapter 756: Entering the Projection](#)

[Chapter 757: The Albatross Around Lin Feng’s Neck](#)

[Chapter 758: The Imperial Palace Is Here!](#)

[Chapter 759: The Clash Of Destiny-Level Magic Treasures](#)

[Chapter 760: Confidence](#)

[Chapter 761: According To The Original Plan](#)

[Chapter 762: The Clandestine Operation](#)

[Chapter 763: Touch Wood](#)

[Chapter 764: The Illusion At The Core Of the Mountain](#)

[Chapter 765: The Starlight Being, Memories Of The Dead](#)

[Chapter 766: The Battle Of The Stars!](#)

[Chapter 767: Ferry Everyone to the Opposite Bank](#)

[Chapter 768: Friend or Foe](#)

[Chapter 769: Intensified Battles](#)

[Chapter 770: Who is Everyone?](#)

[Chapter 771: Evil Doings that Benefits No One](#)

[Chapter 772: Heavenly Hand, Tiny Speck of Light](#)

[Chapter 773: Yeah, it's you](#)

[Chapter 774: Forever-Bright Bodhi Heart Lamp](#)

[Chapter 775: Meeting Da Kong Zen Master Again](#)

[Chapter 776: Golden Body Of The Great Sun, Rise Into Nirvana](#)

[Chapter 777: The Secret Cave Inside The Mountain](#)

[Chapter 778: All Beings Return Into The Earth With The Chirps Of The Cicada](#)

[Chapter 779: The Hysterical Dance Of The Demons](#)

[Chapter 780: The Great Heavenly Wheels](#)

[Chapter 781: The Penglai Celestial Mountain](#)

[Chapter 782: The Shell-Shocked Golden Cicada Master](#)

[Chapter 783: Penglai versus Fangzhang!](#)

[Chapter 784: The Great Zhou Empire In Distress](#)

[Chapter 785: Is Lin Feng Tearing Down His Own Defenses?](#)

[Chapter 786: Summoning the Illusory Sea Tide Again](#)

[Chapter 787: Power of Mount Yujing, Heaven Extreme Universal Light!](#)

[Chapter 788: Shi Yu's Plan](#)

[Chapter 789: Risky Move!](#)

[Chapter 790: White Jade Pillar Obtained!](#)

[Chapter 791: Terms that Can't be Rejected](#)

[Chapter 792: Zhu Hongwu Who Can't Make it in Time](#)

[Chapter 793: Only One in the World](#)

[Chapter 794: Rewards Beyond Expectations](#)

[Chapter 795: Returning to Kunlun](#)

[Chapter 796: Cultivating the Trāyastriśa Elixir of Creation](#)

[Chapter 797: Present Worries](#)

[Chapter 798: Going Out Together](#)

[Chapter 799: Actions of the Great Void Sect](#)

[Chapter 800: Tenth Heavenly Palace](#)